

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

American Society for Psychical Research

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

Volume XII

American Society for Psychical Research
44 East 23rd Street
New York
1918

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

American Society for Psychological Research

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

Volume XII

American Institute for Scientific Research

11 East 57th Street

New York

1928

6/23/37
Amer. Soc. for Psychological Research
Donor

133.07
A512P
v. 12
1918

TABLE OF CONTENTS

THE SMEAD CASE.

CHAPTER I. INTRODUCTION.....	11
CHAPTER II. EARLY INCIDENTS AND EXPERIENCES....	27
CHAPTER III. SUMMARY OF THE MARTIAN INCIDENTS..	46
The Martian Alphabet.....	61
List of Martian Words.....	62
Signs of the Martian Language.....	65
CHAPTER IV. THE HARRISON CLARKE PERSONALITY...	72
CHAPTER V. MISCELLANEOUS INCIDENTS.....	79
Maude L. Janes.....	83
Sylvester Smead	89
Burleigh Hoyt	94
Mr. George Morse.....	95
Mrs. Keliher	97
John Pratt	99
Frank Miller	101
Cecil Smead	105
Thomas A. Hanson.....	116
Unknown Friend	116
Mary E. Pollard and Rose Candlin.....	123
Briefer Incidents	124
Unverified Cases	127
Personal Incidents	128
Apparitions	130
Control	130
CHAPTER VI. THEORIES AND CONCLUSIONS.....	137

APPENDIX.

CHAPTER I. THE MARTIAN COMMUNICATIONS.....	176
Summary of Hieroglyphs.....	209
CHAPTER II. HARRISON CLARKE.....	231
CHAPTER III. MISCELLANEOUS INCIDENTS.....	269
ADDENDA TO THE SMEAD CASE.....	668
The Spiritistic Theory.....	688

317426

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE

CHAPTER I. INTRODUCTION	1
CHAPTER II. EARLY HISTORY AND DEVELOPMENT	2
CHAPTER III. THE PRESENT POSITION	3
CHAPTER IV. THE FUTURE	4

CHAPTER V. THE PRESENT POSITION	5
CHAPTER VI. THE FUTURE	6
CHAPTER VII. THE PRESENT POSITION	7
CHAPTER VIII. THE FUTURE	8
CHAPTER IX. THE PRESENT POSITION	9
CHAPTER X. THE FUTURE	10
CHAPTER XI. THE PRESENT POSITION	11
CHAPTER XII. THE FUTURE	12
CHAPTER XIII. THE PRESENT POSITION	13
CHAPTER XIV. THE FUTURE	14
CHAPTER XV. THE PRESENT POSITION	15
CHAPTER XVI. THE FUTURE	16
CHAPTER XVII. THE PRESENT POSITION	17
CHAPTER XVIII. THE FUTURE	18
CHAPTER XIX. THE PRESENT POSITION	19
CHAPTER XX. THE FUTURE	20
CHAPTER XXI. THE PRESENT POSITION	21
CHAPTER XXII. THE FUTURE	22
CHAPTER XXIII. THE PRESENT POSITION	23
CHAPTER XXIV. THE FUTURE	24
CHAPTER XXV. THE PRESENT POSITION	25
CHAPTER XXVI. THE FUTURE	26
CHAPTER XXVII. THE PRESENT POSITION	27
CHAPTER XXVIII. THE FUTURE	28
CHAPTER XXIX. THE PRESENT POSITION	29
CHAPTER XXX. THE FUTURE	30

APPENDIX

CHAPTER I. THE PRESENT POSITION	31
CHAPTER II. THE FUTURE	32
CHAPTER III. THE PRESENT POSITION	33
CHAPTER IV. THE FUTURE	34
CHAPTER V. THE PRESENT POSITION	35
CHAPTER VI. THE FUTURE	36
CHAPTER VII. THE PRESENT POSITION	37
CHAPTER VIII. THE FUTURE	38
CHAPTER IX. THE PRESENT POSITION	39
CHAPTER X. THE FUTURE	40
CHAPTER XI. THE PRESENT POSITION	41
CHAPTER XII. THE FUTURE	42
CHAPTER XIII. THE PRESENT POSITION	43
CHAPTER XIV. THE FUTURE	44
CHAPTER XV. THE PRESENT POSITION	45
CHAPTER XVI. THE FUTURE	46
CHAPTER XVII. THE PRESENT POSITION	47
CHAPTER XVIII. THE FUTURE	48
CHAPTER XIX. THE PRESENT POSITION	49
CHAPTER XX. THE FUTURE	50
CHAPTER XXI. THE PRESENT POSITION	51
CHAPTER XXII. THE FUTURE	52
CHAPTER XXIII. THE PRESENT POSITION	53
CHAPTER XXIV. THE FUTURE	54
CHAPTER XXV. THE PRESENT POSITION	55
CHAPTER XXVI. THE FUTURE	56
CHAPTER XXVII. THE PRESENT POSITION	57
CHAPTER XXVIII. THE FUTURE	58
CHAPTER XXIX. THE PRESENT POSITION	59
CHAPTER XXX. THE FUTURE	60

PREFACE

A brief summary of the Martian episode in this volume was published in the *Annals of Psychical Science*, and another in the *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*. They, of course, gave a very inadequate account of all the facts, as the present record will indicate clearly enough. The article published in the *Annals of Psychical Science* also contained a brief summary of the facts which pointed toward the supernormal and were evidence of it, but even these did not represent the full interest of the facts that at least assumed the appearance of that source. The summary of the Martian incidents would be taken by those who saw and read it as determining the character of the case and it is because such a view would wholly misrepresent its nature and importance that this detailed record has a value far beyond what would be supposed from so inadequate an account of it. The evidence for the supernormal in the work of Mrs. Smead at that time was so meager, as measured against what could be referable to secondary personality, that it was more important to emphasize the extreme incidents illustrating difficulties with a spiritistic interpretation than it was to offer the slightest apology for the phenomena. Even if I had recognized a spiritistic source for some of the non-evidential facts known to Mrs. Smead the Martian episode would have remained more or less an enigma, as so much seemed preposterous that we could not ascribe it to a spiritistic origin without adopting views of a spiritual world for which we had little or no evidence. But the Martian incidents obtained their chief interest from the fact that similar phenomena had occurred with Mlle. Hélène Smith under the care of Professor Flournoy, and some sporadic incidents through Mrs. Piper, not to speak of one or two other volumes. The interest lay, not in its being collective evidence for the fact of Martian life, but in the coincidences along that line of thought, and the whole thing was sufficiently romantic to excite a certain kind of scientific interest. For science it would have been better to have published the entire detailed record, as we now do, but the English Society, to whom it was

offered for the purpose, thought it contained too little evidence of the supernatural to be printed, not realizing as it should that science is not interested in the supernatural any more than it is in explanations that may eliminate the supernatural. Here was a fine case for the sceptic to use in his own interest, tho he might have been hasty in any assurance that it proved the capacities of the subconscious. Whether it proved this or not, it offered resources for difficulty and perplexity for the spiritist and that was its interest for me when seeking its publication.

The reader is entitled to a little history here. Immediately after publishing my first Piper Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI) I set about investigations to see if I could find facts which might weaken the hypothesis which I had defended there. I had maintained three points in the defence of it. They were (1) The Unity of Consciousness in the connections of the incidents; (2) The Dramatic Play of Personality, and (3) Mistakes and Confusions, especially with reference to proper names. In the course of the study of the Smead case I noted the primary fact that the incidents more or less completely simulating the evidential character of the Piper phenomena were nearly all known by Mrs. Smead. Only a small portion of those presented in evidence of the presence and identity of the "communicator" was unknown by Mrs. Smead. Hence it was apparent that the most of the record might be explained by subconscious memories masquerading as spirits. Accompanying these were a few instances of "dramatic play of personality" and the same type of mistakes and confusion with proper names, in spite of her knowledge of them, as is remarked in Mrs. Piper. Hence there was left intact only the unity of consciousness in the Piper case on which to rest the spiritistic theory, and I had always placed that first as an argument. The consequence was that this Smead record seemed to weaken the case for spiritistic communication, tho not setting it aside. It seemed that, if secondary personality could explain so much it left little on which transcendental agencies could be proved, and when proved, less for them to explain than the dramatic play of personality implied. The value of the Smead case, therefore, especially in its Martian incidents and the simulation of the Piper phenomena minus their evidential character, seemed to be in its offer of a field of objection to the spirit-

istic theory. But the further development of it turned the matter the other way. Care and patience with it and a change of control brought about a better type and a larger amount of evidence for the supernormal while it eliminated all the dreamerie of the Martian phenomena, and so tended to confirm the spiritistic hypothesis instead of weakening it. Hence it suggested to me the probability that the subconscious or secondary personality was the instrument of communication, with all the obstacles it interposed, instead of being the originating cause of the phenomena as a whole. Before, it had always seemed desirable to eliminate the subconscious from the phenomena, and this was true for the contents of messages, but not true for the machinery of communication, the subconscious being the vehicle or medium in the result when we could eradicate its normal contents and retain its functional service. The development of the case showed this interpretation of the facts and gave it a value scarcely less important than the evidential phenomena of the Piper case. That is the primary reason for printing the whole detailed record.

Mr. Smead fortunately kept nearly all his early records and obtains the credit for preserving them. They were not in the shape that the critical psychologist desires, as the automatic writing sometimes left the result to conjecture or memory rather than to other readers of it. But this affected the real or apparently evidential incidents more than it did the other material. Such as it is, however, it must accrue to his credit and we have only to lament that a trained psychologist could not have been the observer and experimenter from the outset, just for the sake of having possibly obtained more light psychologically on the processes involved. But at that stage of the interest in psychic research, the psychologist might have lost patience with the general tendency of the phenomena and might not have gotten the Martian matter at all. It required more openness of mind than the psychologist has usually manifested to get this product from the case. Whether it was really what it claims to be is not the first question in estimating its value, tho that is the view which the popular mind will take of it. The important thing was to let the mind of Mrs. Smead produce whatever it would and we could interpret it later. It would have been easy to have cut it off, just as Harrison Clarke was exorcised, and all that he mani-

fested forever terminated. Hence it may not have been so bad not to have had the psychologist experimenting with the case at that time, tho the future should lose no opportunity to put such cases in his hands, if he be properly trained, sympathetic, and open minded.

A number of years has passed since making this record and the notes. The increased experience which I have had with the subject has made me feel that the incidents, in many cases, especially in connection with the early appearances of my father and wife, are better than I assumed them to be at the time. This judgment, however, does not modify them evidentially. It only sees them in the light of other and later evidence which makes the spiritistic theory better than I could assert with confidence at the time of my personal experiments. The circumstances under which those personal experiments were made in 1901 at my own house deprive the results of their full importance, had no opportunity even occurred for casual information, but when seen in the light of subsequent experience and a better knowledge of the limitations under which the subconscious acts, they appear to me to be genuine even tho I cannot urge their evidential character as I should like to do. I was more interested in the development of the case than I was in the genuineness of communications from the source indicated. Subsequent events show what the difficulties were in regard to better results and the conditions necessary to make them what was desirable. But all that has occurred indicates that many phenomena were genuine that could not claim as much importance evidentially as is necessary for meeting all objections. Some theories like telepathy were assumed with more confidence at the time of these experiments than they are now, tho at no time considered as more than liabilities to be reckoned with in the problem. But in spite of modifications of view since the experiments the record will stand as it was. It is proper that the development of my own mind in the subject should be a matter of record as well as the phenomena.

In important instances I have examined the original automatic writing to see if I had exaggerated the interpretation of it or permitted any bias to misread it. I have found no reason in these instances to modify my judgment, except to strengthen

it and in one or two cases to change the interpretation in favor of better evidence. Nevertheless I note that in some cases the reading might have been affected slightly by knowledge of what it ought to be, but that was provided for in the original reading. On the whole the re-examination leaves the record intact.*

* This preface was written several years ago when it was expected that we should publish this Report at that time. But more pressing matters superseded it, and since that time the evidence for obsession has accumulated and Vols. IX, X and XI of the *Proceedings* have thrown so much light upon what may occur in secondary personality that there is less reason to treat it as a rival explanation of such phenomena, at least as not excluding the invasion of discarnate influences at the same time. This was the view taken of the present case when the Introduction was written, tho not associating it with obsession. The lack of proper evidence in cases of secondary personality or dissociation for foreign intrusion prompted me to experiment for cross references, and this resulted in the discovery of supernormal incidents proving that invasion where the experiences of the subject of them afforded no proof. This completely altered the view usually taken by psychiatrists regarding such phenomena. Hitherto secondary personality was supposed to exclude the connection of the discarnate with the phenomena, but obsession shows that such invasions may either account for dissociation or be interfused with it. Hence in the study of the present case this later development must be taken into account when studying the facts. Secondary personality is no longer an alternative to spirits, but a concomitant of them. This view was formed of these phenomena very early in my work on them, and this was some time in 1900. But it was held as a mere hypothesis to be confirmed or refuted by further investigation. As the case itself does not prove this contention the record stands as written, and we may regard later developments as helping in the interpretation of the phenomena and confirming the hypothesis, while we treat the record as additional evidence in the same direction.

The cases which must be studied in connection with this one are the Thompson-Gifford, the de Camp-Stockton, the Ritchie-Abbott and several shorter ones. Cf. *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vol. III and Vol. VII, pp. 429-569. *Journal* Am. S. P. R., Vol. VI, pp. 181-265, Vol. VII, pp. 698-706, and Vol. IX, pp. 209-229.

PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
AMERICAN SOCIETY
FOR
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

THE SMEAD CASE.

By JAMES H. HYSLOP.

PART I.

GENERAL SUMMARY.

CHAPTER I.

Introduction.

My attention was called to the interesting case which is here presented, in the following manner. I received on December 29th, 1900, a letter from the gentleman who shall be known in this story as Mr. Smead, stating the following facts. I do not quote the whole of his letter, but only such as bears upon the subject matter of this book.

"I have enclosed some manuscripts of some experiments that I have been able to make recently. The work is of the nature of automatic writing and as an aid to the psychic the planchette has usually been used, but it is not essential except as an aid. There is less personal fatigue when it is used. The psychic is my wife, Mrs. Smead. We have been married ten years and Mrs. S. is in every way normal as far as appearances go. She is never unconscious or abnormal in the least in these séances, but is not conscious of what is written by the intelligences.

"I send these messages by a spirit pretending to be a Mr. Harrison Clarke. We cannot identify him and know nothing about him, only as he makes himself known. He is very stubborn and important and will not tell anything except as it seems to strike his fancy. You will find out by an examination of the

records which I have made by the type writer the facts as he has been pleased to give them. The only facts that will aid you in identifying him are these: that his name is Harrison Clarke, that he was a printer, that years ago he was in the office of the New York *Herald*, that he used to set type, and was a man of marked personal characteristics.

"I wish you would take pains to see if you can get track of him. See if he can be found to have worked there at any time. I think that the records of the counting room or of the pay roll might have his name, if he ever worked there.

"Besides these Clarke messages I have a large number of communications that pretend to come from intelligences that have seen the planet Mars. I have maps, drawings of houses, gardens, lakes, people, ships, the Martian clock, their flying machine, an embroidery design, etc. If you would like to see them I shall send them to you."

I immediately acknowledged the receipt of Mr. Smead's letter and begged him to let me see the Martian messages. In the meantime I inquired in the *Herald* office and found that there had been no Harrison Clarke on its pay roll for the last sixteen years. Later information from Mr. Smead, however, showed that if he were found in the *Herald's* records at all, it would be at a much earlier date. Further details of my inquiries on this matter will appear in their proper place. On the arrival of the Martian material I saw at once that, if it could be accepted as genuinely automatic writing, it would prove a most interesting subject of investigation. I resolved, therefore, to make a personal examination of the case and ascertain the history of the phenomena so alleged. This I did nearly a month later. I summarize the results of this inquiry.

I was curious from the outset to learn whether the alleged messages and drawings from Mars were in any way influenced by the publication of M. Flournoy's interesting investigation, entitled "From India to the Planet Mars." I found that a part of the Martian material had been obtained after the publication of that book, but that some of the communications purporting to come from the planet Mars had been given as early as 1895, before anything was known of Flournoy's work in this country unless to a narrow circle of psychologists, and five years before Flour-

noy's book was published in English. There was no probability that Mrs. S., living in an obscure village and knowing nothing but the English language, had ever heard of those extraordinary phenomena. But it was interesting to learn that the *drawings* mentioned above had been produced after the translation and publication of Flournoy's work. Inquiry, moreover, showed that Mr. Smead had bought Flournoy's book in September, 1900, and that some of the drawings were after that date. Mr. Smead, however, states that he was careful not to permit Mrs. S. to read the book, and she affirms that she had neither read it nor looked into it, to her conscious knowledge, during the period of the communications. Also Mr. Smead states that he was careful to remove the book from his house and left it in the hands of a neighbor, the Professor X. of this narrative, during the whole period of the communications from Mars after the purchase of the book. There was possibly some conversation in the family regarding the general character of Flournoy's phenomena, and this might afford a suggestion to subliminal mentation, but it leaves open the explanation of details, as the later account of the facts will sufficiently show.

These facts and others in the case made it necessary to ascertain the whole history of the phenomena. Interrogation brought out the fact that the childhood of Mrs. S. had been associated with incidents bearing upon alleged supernormal phenomena. She very early became acquainted with the planchette and its working. These earliest experiences will show the kind of atmosphere in which Mrs. Smead's mind was living at time, though she maintained some scepticism from the start regarding the experiments with which she was connected at that period. But the situation was one calculated to make impressions which might very well serve both as a cue and a stimulus to subconscious mental action at a later date in her life.

But it was not until 1895 that any definite phenomena occurred of an experimental sort which might suggest supernormal action. These began in some alleged messages from the children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead and a brother of Mr. Smead, all of them deceased. Two of the children had been still-born, the third was a miscarriage, and the brother of Mr. Smead had been killed in an accident. Among their earliest communications some were

ostensibly from the planet Mars with references to Jupiter. An interesting feature of them was the dramatic form in which the messages appeared. The children were represented as unable to communicate easily without the help of their uncle, Mr. Smead's brother. He was required as a frequent assistant. Soon the appearance of drawings indicated attempts to represent particular objects in the planet Mars. The experiments, however, were soon interrupted and were not resumed until 1900. In response to inquiries regarding events that suggested the experiments in 1895 and the reasons for the complete suspension of them between that and 1900 Mr. Smead writes as follows:

"While talking with Mrs S. and some members of her family eight or nine years ago the subject of spiritualism was brought up and discussed in a casual way. The work of Mrs. S. with the planchette when a child was referred to and I resolved to procure one and see what would be the result. After a while I did so and we began our experimenting. The reason it was begun was largely curiosity and the fact that I knew from Mrs. S. that, when a girl, she had operated it. If you will refer to her account of herself given to you when you were here you will find reference to it (p. 31). The beginning of the planchette work was in H—— in 1892. But the results were not of special interest and very little time was given to the work. No thought was then entertained of any scientific consideration of this phase of spiritism. If you will refer to the record of the visions of Mrs. S. (p. 33) you will see that during the years at B——, H——, W——, and T—— these visions were the chief type of phenomena. During these years very little planchette work was done. Mrs. S.'s time was taken up with necessary church work. Also during this period until I lived at Bl——, 1895, I was a very busy man with studies at the seminary and for conference, besides all the regular work of preaching and visiting, so that it was impossible to do much work of a psychic nature, but during all these years the vision phase of Mrs. S.'s experience occurred, and of these visions I had her write out accounts at the time. All of these you have among your papers.

"This now brings the matter down to 1895 at Bl——, when

and where the Martian map and the first five words of the vocabulary were given.

"At B1—— we had more leisure and I began experiments. The first messages referred to the dead body of the little girl Maude and her presence in spirit. This message about the body (p. 272) excited my wonder and curiosity and I took notes of it carefully. These notes are in the large book I think. Then very soon came the strange Martian map and the words. All that followed you have in the large book.

"Now about the interim of five years. It occurred in this way. In 1896 we went to the farm of my father's at S—— (he has since sold it.) I dropped out of the regular work of the ministry and preached as a supply at East K—— for that year. During this time my youngest boy, George, (now very much alive) was born and a year elapsed without anything special occurring in psychic lines: only visions now and then, except the message from Maude Janes (p. 272) and possibly one or two others. Then in April, 1897, we went to Sd—— (not S—— above) into the full work of the ministry, and during 1897 we experimented very little. Mrs. S. was not very well and the boy was little. It was a new place and it took all the time to attend to things that had to be done. No work (psychic) was done of any account except that the message of the outstretched hands was given there, and also a brief message from the children Maude and Willis telling us that we did wrong not to tell them that we were going to the farm and away from it without telling them and without inviting them to go with us. I think this message is in the large book. The year 1898 at Sd—— was about like 1897. In 1899 we came to P—— and did nothing until the fall of 1900 when I met Prof. X who was a newcomer. I found out that he was a student of psychic science and that fact excited my interest anew. I then bought Flammarion's 'Unknown' in the summer and this interested me. This book I never read to Mrs. S. and talked about it with her very little. Then Flournoy's book came out and I read that and resolved to take time for experiments again in connection with Prof. X., Mrs. X., Dr. M. and Miss G. The extra Martian phenomena and the Harrison Clarke matters were the result. This brings the case down to date.

"One of the messages from Rev. Henry Smith was given in 1899, and the other in 1900." [See p. 274.]

Late in the year 1900 there appeared an alleged spirit, as referred to above, who claimed to be one Harrison Clarke and dispossessed the children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead completely. His communications and his history of himself can be told later. All that I shall remark at present is that he failed to establish his identity and when confronted with the difficulties connected with his statements refused to conform with the proper demands in this respect.

The later alleged communicators, whose messages cannot be profitably detailed at present, it will be remarked, show a very different character from that of Harrison Clarke. They accommodate themselves to the necessity of proving their identity, though this is somewhat disqualified by the knowledge which Mrs. S. has of many of the names and incidents concerned. But they have on any theory a most interesting plausibility for their claims, especially when compared with the personalities in M. Flournoy's case. The most interesting personalities in this class of communicators are Maude L. Janes, Mr. Hoyt, Mr. George Morse, and Mr. S.'s brother Sylvester. Some of them have a very decided look of the supernormal acquisition of knowledge on the part of Mrs. S., indicating apparently that we have to go beyond ordinary secondary personality and admit at least telepathy as an explanation of them. Much will depend on the trustworthiness of the evidence in favor of Mrs. S.'s ignorance of the facts. But I cannot discuss this question in this place. The reader must study it in the detailed record. What I am most interested in at present, is the suggestion of a comparison with the case of M. Flournoy, and the superior plausibility of this case to his in its spiritistic character, as its superficial features, to say the least, supply much that we should expect of spirits in trying to prove their identity. The difficulties of entertaining this conclusion will be discussed in the conclusion. But we may remark here that we cannot study the case without being curious as to the origin of its pretensions, and the acute subliminal intelligence displayed, if its purport is not real.

A few words regarding the characteristics of the automatic writing will be of some interest here. It is always continuous.

The words and sentences are written without taking the pencil off the paper, and as a consequence the t's are not always, in fact are seldom, crossed, nor are the i's generally dotted. When the end of a sentence occurs near enough the edge of the paper to require beginning at the other side the pencil draws a line across the sheet and tends to write the next sentence on this line or near it, though there is great irregularity in this. The cause of the habit is no doubt the use of the planchette which does not easily permit of raising the pencil. The habit, however, was continued throughout the whole period in which the personality of Harrison Clarke prevailed. Occasionally, as I have intimated, the t's are crossed and the i's dotted, and sometimes this appears quite regular, and coincides with a change of communicator. But I cannot lay any stress on this fact as significant of what it may suggest. I have remarked the facts in all cases in which I noticed them, and I think that I have not omitted to remark them in any important instances.

But the most interesting episode in the automatic writing is the facility of the Harrison Clarke personality in using three distinct types of it. I shall call them the normal, inverted, and mirror writing. He showed equal facility in all of them. The normal is the usual form of handwriting read from left to right. The inverted writing, however, was such that it had to be read by turning the sheet upside down, when it will appear normal, except that the lines were placed over instead of under each other, that is, have to be read from the bottom of the page toward the top. To one in the normal position the writing was from right to left and started at the top of the page and proceeded toward the bottom. The mirror writing was such that it could be read only in a mirror. That is, the writing was from left to right but the letters were upside down. Sometimes all three types of this writing would appear in the same sentence, written as freely as if there were nothing irregular or unusual in it. The only evidence of a change from one to the other in these cases was the illegibility of it in the normal position or without a mirror. The normal type exhibits two forms of letters. One of them is the usual manner of making them and somewhat resembles that of Mrs. S., but the other represents what I shall call *square* letters. In this latter the lines where curves should be made were drawn

in an angular form. All these features of the case need no further attention at present. But the most striking fact in the case is the remarkable facility with which these unusual forms of writing appear, in spite of the circumstance that Mrs. Smead is not specially trained in any of them except the normal. The origin of this subconscious skill would be a curious problem.

A few words must be said about Mr. and Mrs. Smead personally. The reader will wish to know what guaranty exists for honesty in assumption that the phenomena have any unusual psychological interest. This is an important matter in the present status of psychical research, especially as I have found it necessary to conceal the identity of the parties to the experiments, except myself. I have taken this question into account in my decision to consider it at all, and I think the person who takes the trouble to read the matter carefully will find that no questions or suspicions require to be entertained seriously.

Mr. Smead is a clergyman of the orthodox type and belongs to one of the largest and most respectable denominations in this country. His wife, Mrs. Smead, the subject of these experiments, is a member of the same church and an active worker in it. From the outset of my investigations I found no reason to suspect the character or intentions of either of them. On the contrary I found every evidence of sincerity and honesty, with the utmost readiness to coöperate in the attempt to get an explanation of the phenomena to which Mr. Smead first called my attention. Inquiry and acquaintance showed me that they bear the best of reputations among their neighbors and acquaintances. Prof. X. who is the President of the state educational institution in the same place, writes me as follows regarding both of them, being well acquainted with them personally, and having taken part in some of the experiments described in this record.

"I can speak unqualifiedly," says Prof. X., "in respect to the honesty of Mrs. Smead. I have never detected the least suspicious circumstance in any of my investigations. She writes equally well when engaged in conversation concerning subjects wholly foreign to the matter written by the planchette, and also while in the unconscious state. I can testify to the fact that she was wholly unconscious of the writing and work of the Martian incidents as well as all other writing done in my presence.

"At the beginning of the planchette writing Mrs. Smead did her work with her eyes open, but at each sitting I made it a point to engage her in conversation in regard to matters which did not relate to the subject of the planchette information, and thus to direct her attention away from the planchette. This made no difference. The writing went on just the same, and this conversation had no effect upon it. Later it was found that she could dispense with the planchette, and write with the pencil to even better advantage. Soon after this plan of procedure, she passed into the trance state, since which time, in my presence she has done her work in apparently deep sleep. Upon several occasions I have tried to interfere with Mrs. Smead's writing, with the purpose of changing the substance of her communications and to introduce thoughts foreign to the communications, but with absolutely no success."

I should add an incident of some interest to a certain class of persons who always wish first to know whether any financial rewards accompany work of this kind. In this case Mr. and Mrs. Smead have no pay for what is done. Mrs. Smead is not, and never has been a professional medium in any sense whatever and would scorn being caught among that tribe. Her phenomena have been carefully concealed from the public and all but the most trusted friends. This will be apparent to the reader when he notices the small number of sitters other than myself that have been admitted to the experiments. Mr. and Mrs. Smead desire no publicity and have had some fears that the confidence bestowed even upon the very few admitted might lead to their discovery, and in some cases I had to undertake the inquiries into the truth or error of the "communications" obtained, in order to avoid their detection. I have said that they have received no remuneration whatever for their work; they have, on the contrary, been at all the expense and employment of their time and energy for performing the experiments and keeping the record out of respect for the need of a scientific treatment of the phenomena. In fact the reader will have to look very far for any rational motives or evidence of anything but as honest a desire for the truth as will be found in any of our members. Mr. Smead is himself a member of the Society for Psychological Research.

The strongest fact in favor of the genuine psychological interest of the phenomena and the assumption of honesty in their production, in so far as the normal consciousness of Mrs. Smead is concerned, is the circumstance that both Mr. and Mrs. Smead recognize quite fully that much of the record has no legitimate claim to being what it purports to be, namely, communications from spirits. In this respect they contrast very decidedly with Mlle. Hélène Smith, the remarkable case of M. Flournoy. The latter would not listen to any disparagement of the spiritistic nature of the phenomena of which she was the subject. She insisted on eliminating secondary personality from consideration in the very instances where its claims seemed strongest. Not so with Mr. and Mrs. Smead of the present record. They are fully awake to the place of secondary personality in the case, and to this extent inspire respect for their judgment. Both would prefer to see the spiritistic theory recognized and proved, but they have been specially conscientious in reporting all that they knew and remembered that would tell against a spiritistic interpretation and in favor of secondary personality. The record will show this in innumerable instances, and I require here only to mention the fact as one that is inconsistent with any conscious desire or attempt to deceive either themselves or others. The circumstance recommends the record to consideration. The bias toward a future life scientifically supported which many of their notes exhibit is not inexcusable. The inference from such phenomena is perfectly natural, and only a thorough acquaintance with secondary personality and the possibilities of supernormal information unconsciously obtained can prepare any of us for resisting the claims of spiritistic theory. All that we can demand of any one in the study of such phenomena is a reasonable exemption from bias, and a willingness to submit to study and criticism. This spirit I have found in both Mr. and Mrs. Smead, and I am sure it will command respect for the record in a way that makes it unnecessary to suggest suspicious motives and influences in the narration of the facts.

Early in the history of his experiments Mr. Smead saw the value of keeping a record, and this was done with as much care as his knowledge of such phenomena suggested. It was this that first recommended the case to me as worthy of attention. The dates

of experiments, questions, answers, and drawings were so preserved as to enable me to give a reasonably accurate account of them. There were some defects in the earlier experiments which a psychical researcher must regret as making the record less perfect than is desirable, though it happens in many instances that the loss is not great. In one or two, however, the loss of part of the record is unfortunate and irreparable. But in the main the defects were such as superposition in the automatic writing which prevented my attempt to reproduce the exact statements in transcribing the record. Also there was a failure to remark the pauses, incidents of punctuation, difficulties with various names and words, and such characteristics as throw light upon both physiological and psychological phenomena in the case. But the experiments that follow my connection with the record, under my suggestion and directions, are much more free from defects of this kind, and can be studied in all their details, not excluding certain mechanical features associated with automatic writing, and the peculiar difficulties connected with subconscious phenomena. But on the whole, before I came into a knowledge of the case, there was an attempt to keep a record somewhat like that kept in the Piper case, though Mr. Smead is not familiar with that instance except as it has been exploited in the newspapers. He, of course, has to accept the responsibility for the facts in his experiments, while I stand sponsor only for my own and the importance of scientific consideration for the whole. My work is largely that of an editor and commentator.

In regard to the subject of this record there needs little to be said. She is a normal healthy woman, and no one would suspect, on seeing her, that she was other than what we remark in the majority of mankind. She is a woman of clear intuitions, a fact that does not at once betray itself, owing to some diffidence of manner and feeling. She exhibits a passive and reserved temperament, and withal is intelligent enough to dispel all suspicions of any unusual psychological characteristics like those that are the subject of this study. Her family physician writes me as follows:

"Mrs. Smead is a woman of sound health, normal nervous system, cool and collected, and not easily excited. There are no

tendencies to physical or mental abnormalities. I have been her family physician for two years."

To complete the study of the physical conditions accompanying the automatic writing it was necessary to apply some tests for anæsthesia. At the first sitting which I held in New York I had brought in my family physician for this and other purposes, and at the close of the sitting (p. 316) he applied a very severe test for anæsthesia of the hand and the following is his report.

"The test for anæsthesia was made with the æsthesiometer, decided pressure being made with the points of the instrument so as to penetrate the skin. It was applied chiefly upon the right hand and arm. There was no apparent sensation, as evinced by wincing or withdrawing the hand, neither was there any movement of the muscles of the hand and arm, nor any change evident in the muscles of the face. The pulse and respiration were unchanged during the course of the tests."

It was my intention to investigate more fully the phenomena of anæsthesia in this case, but the illness of Mrs. Smead while in New York for experiment prevented the execution of my plans. I wanted to ascertain by pneumographic tracings and other experiments certain physiological facts that might be of interest to those who wish to know that sort of thing. I do not regard them as of special importance in determining the nature and source of the phenomena to be explained, though they might show some unusual incidents as testimony to an active subliminal consciousness, where we might generally have only sleep and its accompaniment of suspended functions. But they would not throw any light on what we wish most to know. If the subject were suspected of any kind of shamming or conscious fraud, these physiological tests would be most useful in deciding such a question. But they would do nothing to determine whether the alleged supernormal information was to be explained by secondary personality, telepathy, or spirits. It is the choice between these theories that must be determined, and experiments that throw light only on the question of conscious fraud will not help in these more obscure phenomena. Hence, as all the facts seem to relieve the parties from suspicion, the most important aspect of the problem is the psychological, whose character and claims to

supernormal functions cannot be tried at a physiological court. This I think will be apparent to any scientific man who studies the record and the part played by Mr. and Mrs. Smead in sustaining the hypothesis of secondary personality.

An important fact must be mentioned for the reader to prevent his misunderstanding and misinterpreting the nature of the phenomena reported. Usually it is sufficient to show that the agent of the automatic writing is not acquainted with the facts written to establish their supernormal character. If the automatic writer happens to know the facts his or her secondary personality suffices to explain the phenomena. But if the knowledge of the facts is not possessed by the writer they are to be interpreted as evidence of the supernormal at the least. It happens, however, in the present case that Mr. Smead often or generally has his hand on the planchette. The importance of this fact is evident when it is known that he too can do automatic writing. There are two instances of it noted in records later. The consequence of this is that it does not suffice to show that the facts written are not known by Mrs. Smead. They must also not be known by Mr. Smead in order to appeal to the supernormal against scepticism. This is a truism with the psychic researcher, but I need to emphasize it here to prepare the reader for a right estimation of the phenomena. Mr. Smead does not hold his hand on the planchette all the time, but does so generally, and as he has not always made record of when he did and when he did not, we have to assume that it is on the planchette all the time of the experiment. He has told me that I shall have to assume this except when he states the contrary. The reader, therefore, is estimating the character of the case as a whole must keep in mind that the knowledge of both Mr. and Mrs. Smead has to be reckoned with in all questions of the supernormal.

It will also be important to remark for the reader that the trance condition was not developed in Mrs. Smead's case until the appearance of the Harrison Clarke personality. All the Martian incidents were obtained through the planchette while Mrs. Smead remained in a normal state. Much of the Harrison Clarke material was also obtained in the normal state but with the pencil rather than the planchette. Since that time the condition has varied, Mrs. Smead sometimes going into a trance

and sometimes not. This is indicated by Mr. Smead in his record of the facts.

In pursuance of the better study of the case and the possible influence on the results of Mrs. S.'s normal consciousness and convictions I determined to make inquiries in regard to various matters that might throw light on the questions involved. Mrs. S. answered the inquiries conscientiously and carefully. I embody here for the reader's information her own account of the matter in response to my inquiries.

In reply to the question, how early she had thought that her experiences might be caused by spirits she says: "When I was seven years old, when I saw the man in the cellar (p. 28). In relation to the planchette work, when it first began and when I was eleven years old. I thought that spirits might be the cause."

In reply to a question regarding the firmness of her convictions on the influence of spirits in the writing she says: "I think it is a good deal so. Some of it may be unconscious writing, but simply I think it to be due to spirits. My conviction is very firm that it is so."

I asked if anything had ever occurred in her experiences that appeared to contradict her religious ideas gotten otherwise, that is, from Sunday school teaching and preaching. Her reply is: "I cannot recall anything that contradicted these views. What came tended to strengthen these views."

In reply to the inquiry whether her study of the phenomena and conversation with others ever affected the matter and manner of the communications she says: "I cannot see that it had any effect as to the matter or manner of the communications. Nothing that I ever thought about or talked about ever appeared in any messages, except those joking allusions to secondary personality by 'Sylvester'" (pp. 292, 304).

I asked this question because I had noticed certain coincidences between matters mentioned to Mrs. Smead in conversation regarding difficulties in communicating and regarding dramatic play of personality and the occurrence of confusion in all my sittings and the rise of dramatic play in the communications between her and two of her children (pp. 454-456) and possibly in one or two instances in the later work of Harrison Clarke

(p. 253), after we had told him that he must help others to communicate if he was to be *persona grata* to us as investigators.

Relative to similar matters I asked Mrs. Smead if she ever felt any reluctance to have entire strangers at the sittings and experiments, and if so why. Her answer is as follows:—"Yes, great reluctance, because I do not like to be a *public* character in any way." I refer the reader to the detailed record for incidents that suggested my question, where the "communications" definitely professed to be only for Mr. Smead and the work for strangers was deprecated.

I also asked whether she had any natural preference for the type of "communicator" that she would wish to appear. Her answer is: "I do not like to have strangers come who give us no time for anything else, like 'John Pratt', or 'Rebecca Stines'. Any *friends*, of course, I will welcome. But I had rather let the whole matter alone for me in that sense."

I asked if she had thought much about the question as to how the communications were possible and whether she had tried to understand the problem and to form a theory about it. Her reply is: "I don't know, probably both yes and no. I don't think it possible for me to completely answer this question. I have thought much about it, but I cannot solve it. I have tried to form a theory about it."

I inquired whether a message ever came into her ordinary and normal consciousness before it was written, or after it without reading the writing, and she replied: "Never before it is written, but after it is written before it is read, once in a great while, very, very seldom."

In reply to the question whether she could feel the muscles acting while the writing was going on she says: "No, not at all. It used to seem, once in a while, as if some one had hold of my arm. It is not so now."

In regard to practice in either mirror or inverted writing in her normal state she says: "Never until after Harrison Clarke had written a great deal that way. Then I tried to see if I could do it. I had to write the word in the ordinary way and look at it to see the letters as they came in their order, so that I could make the mirror writing in my normal state. I have

tried it only once and took only the word "Smead". In regard to the inverted writing she simply replied in the negative.

I have divided the report on the case into a General Summary and Appendices. In the general summary of which we are just closing the first chapter I give a history of the case, its early development and the incidents associated with this, and brief accounts in respective chapters of the Martian episodes, the Harrison Clarke personality and various other alleged communicators distinct from this Harrison Clarke. I divide the appendices in the same way, except that I have separated from the Martian episodes some of the "communications" of a non-Martian character and more nearly related, on their superficial appearance at least, to what may have a claim to being spiritistic.

I must make one important statement here to the credit of Mr. Smead. Whatever merit attaches to the records of the case belongs to him. They were less perfect before my acquaintance with the case than afterward. I suggested very early in my connection with the case that the records should be made as in the Piper phenomena and Mr. Smead responded to this request and since that time the record in all but certain mechanical features, such as pauses, movements of the hand and physiological expression, is as complete as is desirable for a better psychological study of the incidents than would be possible in a merely running account of results. But the credit of making it such is Mr. Smead's. My work has consisted in revising Mr. Smead's transcript of the automatic writing and questions and comparing it with the original, often deciphering what he had failed to read. The record as it stands is simply this re-editing of the transcript of Mr. Smead, along with the notes which are my own except as other wise indicated.

CHAPTER II.

EARLY INCIDENTS AND EXPERIENCES.

The following incidents consist of two groups. They are much alike in kind, but differ in respect to their authenticity. The first group are dependent upon memory to a much greater extent than the second group. The former were narrated to me personally soon after I became acquainted with the case, and represent experiences occurring in childhood of which no other record was made than memory. The latter represent experiences of which the written record was made at the time of their occurrence. They are all valuable as throwing light upon the early conditions that lead up to the work with the planchette. They do not prove anything of a supernormal character, but should not be discarded on that account. I do not regard facts as important in proportion to their evidential relation to the supernormal, but only in proportion to their ability to illumine the perplexities of mental operations which may unveil what would otherwise appear inexplicable. It is not often that we can trace any history of the conditions that suggest the origin of such phenomena as this record shows, and hence I cannot but deem it important to ascertain the many spontaneous experiences that suggest the mental tendency of Mrs. S. to exhibit at a very early period the inception of secondary personality.

Group A. The first group of incidents consists of those which were narrated to me from memory. As will appear at the close they are corroborated by the testimony of Mrs. S.'s father.

The first incident occurred when she was about six years old. She heard her father and mother talking one night after she had gone to bed, and she wondered what they were talking about. The next morning she said to them: "Who were you talking with last night?" She received an evasive answer with some intimations that set her to wondering, though the answer was intended to leave on her mind the impression that it was no one

at all. She remembers that the conversation was on this subject of spirits.

The next experience was of a different kind. It was an instance of apparition.

"When I was seven or eight years of age, my sister and I were playing in the cellar. There was a cupboard near the stairway, and between this and the stairway there was an open place. The intention was to play hide and seek. Just as we began I felt as if something was drawing me back under the stairway. It made me nervous, and I told my sister that I did not want to play there, and so we went into the yard. After we had gone out into the yard, and with our backs to the window, I felt an impulse to look constantly at the window. My sister said to me: 'What do you want to keep looking into the window for? There is no one there.' I said I felt as if there was. After a little while I turned to the window and saw two large eyes. I told my sister that I knew some one was there, and that I would not stay there, and I wanted to go into the street to play there. We went up a stairway to the street and looked back toward the cellar to see if we could see any one. We saw a man—I would call it a vision of a man—in a white robe and he seemed to glide or float along rather than walk. All three of us—another girl besides my sister being with us—saw the figure. We were so frightened that we would not go into the house. Soon a lady, Mrs. Thurston by name, and who lived four or five houses from us, came to visit Mr. and Mrs. Mann, who lived in the house. We asked her to look in and see if she knew who the person was that we saw. She did so and said: 'Why, that is not Mr. Mann, and it don't look like him. It must be a ghost.' She then went into the house, saw Mr. Mann, and told him about what we and she had seen. He was reading the paper. He took a light and went into the cellar to search for the fellow and could not find anyone. He came back and said that there was no one there. Mrs. Thurston replied that she saw some one there. But she came back and told us that Mr. Mann could find no one in the cellar, and after that we saw nothing more, but were afraid to go into the house until father came out after us. For a long time we were afraid to go into the cellar without father. The house was one in which two families lived.

When I was eighteen years old I was relating the experience to

an old gentleman at the house of some friends, the old gentleman being perhaps 75 years old. He asked, 'What house is it in which you live?' I said No. 14. He replied that when that house was first built a man who lived in it was supposed to have been killed."

Another incident has some interest as provably an hallucination assuming the personal form. Not that the others are not of the same origin, but that we are able in this case to indicate the mark that makes its character indubitable, tho it may be veridical.

"My sister and I were accustomed to sleep together in a room on the floor with another family. This night my sister was away visiting my grandmother. I was reading in the room and the lady of the house came in and said: 'You had better go to bed and be up in time for school. I will put out the light. If you need any one in the night call for me.' Then she put out the light and went to her room. I went to sleep. Just as the clock began to strike twelve I awakened. I knew because I counted the strokes, having awakened so as to catch and remember the first stroke. It was moonlight. I looked toward the door and saw an apparition in the door. It looked like a man who was tall and masculine. I tried to call the lady of the house, but I could not utter a sound, and so I turned over with my face to the window, in order not to see the figure. I could see the lamplights in the city of Dorchester across the bay. (Dorchester was annexed to Boston in 1870, but evidently retained naturally enough its original name for some time afterward.) As I looked toward the window, I saw the figure standing at the window. My first thought was to get up and run out of the room, but I could not move. The apparition soon disappeared. In the morning I spoke to the lady and she said that she thought she heard some one walking on the stairs in the night and asked me why I did not call her. I told her that I had tried to do so, but that I could neither move nor utter a word. I should add also that as I awakened from sleep my cheek felt hot as if some one was breathing on it."

Comment is hardly necessary to indicate the evidence of hallucination in this instance. But the probable influence of all those circumstances and associations connected with sleeping

alone, involving some trepidation extending into sleep and the subconscious action of the subject, the added influence of any noise like some one on the stairs, and the shifting of the apparition with the motion of the head, show what the vision probably was.

The following incident has a different character and interest, as it reflects a sensible judgment of the experience and ultimately led to experiments with the planchette.

"There were five girls of us that used to play together in South Boston. They were Blanche Brown, Carrie Jones, Annie Berry, Mazie Harris, and myself. I was about 11 years old. One day we were on the door step of the house where one of the girls lived, when one of the five asked if we wanted to hear a ghost story that she knew. We laughed at her, and she replied in self defence that she could bring the spirits at any time. She had been in Brazil with her father, and had learned while on this voyage about the spirits. She said she knew there were such things and could show us. We asked her how she could do it, as we did not believe her. She said we would have to do as she told us. We thought she was going to play a trick on us, but we submitted to her directions. She took a box near by about 1 foot long, 6 inches wide and 6 inches deep, and placed it on the top of the steps to the door so that the edge of the box was just even exactly with a crack between the boards. We were told to take hands. She was in the middle, two being on each side of her. The box was about four feet off from us and no one touched it. She said: 'Now I am going to ask if there are any spirits present that they move the box.' The box moved about two inches from the crack and then back to its place. I said, 'There is a trick in it.' She replied 'No', and we took everything out of it and found nothing in it to indicate a trick. I told father when he came home and he said he believed it was due to spirits. I said that I did not believe it was spirits, but that I thought it was a trick.

After I had told father of the incident with the box he made a planchette, and one night after he came home from work he asked me to try it. I did so and it wrote for me at once. Three or four times a week for years my brother and myself, and occasionally others, would try the planchette and it always worked for me, and sometimes with others. Sometimes it gave the names of people that

I did not know, but the others present did know them. I do not remember any messages in particular, except one.

My brother, John Houston R——, died of scarlet fever when he was two and a half years old. We called him Usie. On one occasion when we were trying the planchette, father asked: 'Who is there?' The planchette wrote, 'Usie'. Father said: 'If it is you, Usie, can you tell me what you are doing in the other world.' The planchette in answer drew a train of cars on a large sheet of wrapping paper and put a man on top of the engine. My father asked what was meant by this and who that was on the engine. The reply was that it was grandpa sitting on the engine. I did not know who it could mean unless it was grandfather Lowry, who had died years before my mother was married and we children knew nothing of him. Father asked: 'What did you do that for?', and the answer was, 'For fun'. When asked what he did there, the planchette wrote that he played in the sand on the seashore."

In answer to a question from myself, Mrs. Smead says that she lived when a girl near the beach and used to play in the sand there and to gather pebbles.

The next narrative involves contact with mediumistic phenomena and one incident of the so-called telekinetic type.

"I had a brother Alphonso who died 3 hours and 20 minutes after birth. I was born after his death and of course never knew him. When I was a child he never came when I used the planchette. But when I was 18 years old I went to visit my grandmother in Charlestown (incorporated as a part of Boston in 1874). A medium lived next door in a house owned by my grandfather. I called there one day for my grandmother who had gone in on a visit. Several others were there and they were using the planchette on a marble table. I had never known the woman until that night. After a while I was asked to put my hand on the planchette. I hesitated, but said that I was not afraid, after being accused of it. I put my hand on the instrument, but nothing was written.

"There were five people present. Two of them I did not know, but there was a cousin, Eudora I. W——, and my grandmother, Susan A. R——. After the experiment with me for writing, all sat back and apart from each other, leaving the planchette on the table in the center of the room. The man present sat in the corner of the

room, my cousin in another corner, and I sat over at the side of the room. The medium sat on a lounge and my grandmother nearby, but there was the width of a door between all of us and hence none was in contact. My grandmother said that she would like to see the planchette write alone, and the medium said that it could. The planchette moved and wrote something in response to questions. I remember neither questions nor answers. But my grandmother said to the medium: 'Be careful, or you will go into a trance.' She laughed and said that there was no danger. But in a few minutes she went into a trance. She suddenly fell back upon the lounge, choked slightly, and a noise occurred as if the bones of her body were being rattled and scraped. After she got into the trance she sat up again, and began to talk about people she had never known. There was apparently an Indian control. She told my grandmother of the different children she had lost. I had never known of these children, and the medium could hardly have known anything about them, as she had lived in the house only a short time. In a few minutes she turned to me and said: 'Come up here, you young squaw.' I held back as long as I could, but my grandmother persuaded me to go to the medium. I did so and took hold of her hands. They felt cold and clammy as if dead. As soon as I took hold of her hand, she said that my brother wanted to communicate with me. My grandmother asked: 'Who is it?' The answer was 'John Houston'. This was correct. My grandmother farther asked if there was any one else to see me. The reply was: 'He wants to know if you are glad to have him come,' and added, 'There is another brother here', and gave his name as Alphonso. This was correct, and was all that was said about him, until further questions elicited additional statements. My grandmother asked several questions in order to identify him, and among them was one to know where he was born. The answer was South Boston, which was correct.

"The same night she told of an aunt of mine and mentioned one son of hers born before I was, and of whom there was no reason to suppose that the medium knew anything, though she knew this aunt.

"The woman came out of the trance in the same manner as she went into it. After she had come out my grandmother asked her if she remembered anything she did in the trance, and the reply was that she did not, except that, as she went into the trance she saw an Indian near her."

Mrs. Smead's father, who was still living when this record was made, certifies to the correctness of this account and states that his daughter talked about the incidents when she was a young girl. To his personal knowledge the greater part of them occurred and the others were told him at the time. He himself is a sceptic and not a believer. Mr. Smead also confirms the narratives as having often heard them told.

Mrs. Smead also told me the interesting fact that when at school she often experienced the following. When a new lesson in arithmetic was assigned containing examples that she could not solve, or if a difficult example was in any lesson that she could not solve, she would stand at the window at home looking out of the house at the wall on the opposite house and there she would see the example worked out in figures as if on a black-board. "My mother would call and ask me what the trouble was, and I replied that I was looking at my example over there. She could tell when I was thinking over the examples, and would worry about my studying so hard. This way of solving my examples occurred very frequently. It was the same with words that I could not spell, or with any problem I wanted solved. I had only to look at the wall opposite and see the words spelled out. This occurred when I was between nine and thirteen years old, and never happened after I left school. Also it occurred only when I did not know how to spell the words or to solve the examples." [Cf. *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, p. 56.]

Mrs. Smead also tells me that her oldest child, about ten years of age, shows the same tendency when learning to spell words dictated to him. He will look up at the wall as if projecting a visual image of the words on a screen. He often remarks, when he cannot do a thing in the evening, that when he gets up in the morning it will be all right, and it turns out so.

Group B. The following incidents are those of which a record was made at the time of their occurrence. Some of them were also experienced by Mr. S. Only a few of them were not recorded immediately. Those are indicated in the narrative.

June, 1890.

I awoke in the night and I saw a face that was enclosed in a veil of black. The face looked bright and like that of my husband. It

came so close to my eyes that it dazzled me and it frightened me, so that I called him and reached out to find him, and finding that everything was all right I went to sleep again. I know that I was wide awake for I had been looking out of the window in the closet and could see that the night was clear and the stars were shining brightly. Since then I have not seen any spirits or anything of that sort—so if there is not a life in the future what is the cause of this? Why is it that I have seen such things? It was not that I imagined these things, for I know that I was wide awake.

Aug. 17, 1890—4 A. M.

I was visiting at the home of my husband's mother and early one morning while there the rain woke me. I turned over so that I was lying with my face to the wall and when I turned I woke my husband and he spoke and wanted to know if there was anything the trouble. I told him that there was not, so we talked a while and he went to sleep again. After he went to sleep I turned back again, thinking perhaps I could go to sleep again. I was looking first out of the door into the sitting room and then out of the window when I looked up, so that I could look out of the door again, I saw two spirits, both women, one was an old lady and looked like my husband's mother—she was about 60 years old, I should judge, and was dressed in a robe of thin white and her hair was a silver grey. She had a small cap of white lace on her head, with a little bow on the cap. She was about as tall as myself, her eyes were dark also, and she was leaning over on the bed looking at me.

The other was dark and dressed in black and stood at the foot of the bed. She had dark eyes and hair and was not as tall as the other one, she looked like my husband. She stood at the foot of the bed and looked at us both. Both stood looking for about a minute, although it seemed longer, and then both disappeared. The elderly lady went out at the door into the sitting room. I do not know where the other one went, but she vanished at the same time. They did not frighten me as the first did.

I told this to Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mrs. S. wanted to know if I ever saw the picture of her mother. I told her that I had not, so she showed me one of herself and wanted to know if what I saw looked like it. I told her that it did, only that it was an older lady

and the cap and the dress were different and from the description both Mr. and Mrs. S. thought it was her mother and sister (long dead, that I had never seen).

Sept., 1890.

It was after Willis had gone back to the Hartford Seminary that I was sleeping in the south room up-stairs. It seemed very lonesome here alone. I had just gone to bed and lay thinking when I looked up. There was some one sitting at the head of the bed (a lady dressed in white). She spoke when she saw that I was afraid, and told me not to be afraid, that they would take care of me while Willis was gone, and then she disappeared, and after that I lay there as calm as could be, and before long went to sleep.

P. S.—This took place about the 15th of Sept., 1890, and the person I saw looked like my grandmother, and the voice sounded like hers when she spoke, and when I left Boston she was alive the June before this and I was very much surprised at the resemblance to her, as I thought that she was alive. The following week I had a letter from Nettie saying that grandmother died on the 13th of Sept., so I could see that it was possible that it could have been she.

Jan. 1st, 1890.

We had gone to bed and Willis turned over and went to sleep. I did not go to sleep for some time. I was looking out into the dining room to see if the fire was burning. There were two spirits sitting right near the door talking and whispering. One looked like an Indian and the other looked like my own aunt Fanny. They sat there for a few minutes and I began to think they might stay longer and so spoke to Willis to look at them and just as I called him they vanished.

I cannot tell just what night it was, but I was watching my husband. He had a bad cold and I felt so badly that every little while during the night I would wake up. The time I speak of was about 12:30, and I turned to see if my husband was sleeping all right, when I saw a small face lying between us. It had bright blue eyes.

It was a pretty little face just as bright as it could be and it looked as though it had a light back of it to make it shine. When I spoke to W. it vanished.

May 2, 1890.

It was about 6:35 P. M. I was sitting on the sofa thinking, when I decided to go out to the post office for the letters. When I started to go across the floor to get my hat I heard two loud raps at the dark closet door. They sounded as if some one was trying to lift the latch, but it only rapped twice and I wanted to see if they would come again, but did not, so I went out.

Nov. 6, 1892.

In the morning about 8:15 I was getting breakfast and came to the stove to cook the eggs and I thought that it was about time that Willis went up-stairs to call Mr. Moore to breakfast, and I called "Will", but received no reply, but heard a chord on the organ. The notes were do, fa, la in the upper part and do, fa for the base. They were loud enough so that I heard them about 30 feet from the organ. I called "Will" as soon as I heard it and came right to the door and opened it and said "Will". To my surprise I found no one in the room, and every stop of the organ was shut and in the time between the music and when I opened the door, it would have been impossible for any one to have shut the stops and get out of the room and also out of sight. I went out to the barn to ask George if he knew where Willis was, and he did not; so I came back and in about a minute or two George came in and wanted to know the same thing, so I went through the hall and looked out and saw Willis coming home from Mrs. Bartholomew's with the milk, where he had been for ten minutes, so that we knew that he was not in the house. (George is Ida's brother who was with us. I am positive neither I nor George nor Ida made the noise.)

April 25, 1892—The Raps on the Floor.

Willis had gone to the blacksmith to get the wheel for the team and I was lying down on the sofa in the sitting room when I heard

a rap very clear and sharp in front of the closet door and I waited for a few minutes and said to myself that if it was caused by the spirits that they could rap again, and I had no sooner said it than two more came and still louder than the others and I did not move, only looked toward the spot, and it seemed now that someone was talking in the room. I should have thought two or three parties and the voice of two seemed to be ladies and the other a man, or a boy 14 or 15, as far as I could judge. Their voices seemed to startle me more than the raps did, and I got up quickly and went out of the room to see if anyone was outside talking, and as I shut the door Willis spoke to me and then I told him of what had taken place while he was out, and he wanted me to come back and show him where it was, and tell him how loud they were; and while I was showing him or trying to do this, another rap came in the same place about as loud as the one I had heard. After Mr. S. heard it he went around the house and down cellar to see what it was, but found no cause for it.

May 7, 1892—Raps.

It was about 9:30 P. M. Willis was at T—— at Mr. A.'s, and I was in bed, Mrs. M—— sitting beside the bed, the little boy in her lap, and we were talking. When all at once we both said "What's that?" and the little boy wanted to know what that noise was. It was two raps following each other and they were on the wall back of the bureau and it seemed as if I could see a hand moving along and making the two raps. What the cause was I cannot tell.

Sunday evening, Dec. 29, 1891—The Music Experience.

We were sitting in the dining room, I with my back to the stove, the door was open to the oven and Willis was near the table about 4 feet from me, when I heard a strange musical noise that seemed to be at a distance, coming nearer all the time. When I heard it first I asked what it was and neither of us knew. After a little while the music was clearer and every note was distinct as it could possibly be and the whole thing seemed so strange that we both sat still and looked at each other and in a few minutes Willis went into the sitting room to see if there was anyone outside with a violin. There was no one around. He came back and sat down again to listen and in a

few minutes the music seemed to pass out of hearing. (There were 4 tones that Willis afterwards played on the flute that were very much the same, but he could not play them with the power they seemed to have.)

Wed. Afternoon, Jan. 20, 1892—More Music.

It was about 3 P. M. I had just come from the front door and sat down to work on the quilt, when again I heard some strange music. There seemed this time to be more tones than in the other case but just as clear and they followed each other very rapidly. The music lasted about 5 minutes and went away as suddenly as it came. It sounded much louder than the former instance and more like some one passing the fingers very quickly over the piano and over both sharps and naturals.

Oct. 19, 1891.

It was the second week in October. I had just put out the light and was thinking before I went to sleep of what would become of me were I to die before morning. I closed my eyes and began to pray. When I opened them there was a spirit. I think it was that of a lady. All I could see was the head and shoulders. The face was beautiful and quite clear and the face seemed to shine and I spoke to Willis. He could not see it, but it did not stay very long for as I watched it it seemed to pass out of sight. It went toward the other room. Then I could not see it any longer. After it had gone there followed it three raps. Two more raps came some time afterwards.

Feb. 21, 1892.

I was alone and in the dining room at the table when the door that opens into the back kitchen opened and 4 or 5 raps were as plain as could be. They startled me at first and I went and shut the door. I trembled so that I could hardly keep still for two or three minutes.

Conn., The Fourth Sunday in Sept., 1892.

It was on Sunday afternoon, Rev. Mr. Johnson was staying here

but had gone to C—— and Miss Maude Janes came to visit because I was alone, but before she came I was sitting near the west window in the northwest room when there were two steps on the porch at the front door. I got up to see, when there was, to my surprise, no one there. I turned to go in, when I saw Maude coming. After she had been here a little while I was reading the S. S. lesson. There was a rap on the floor so loud that it made me jump and Maude looked at me. I did not say anything. In a little while we were talking and the table began to move or rattle a little. This it did twice, after a little while there were two loud raps on the floor in front of the fire place and then I told Maude that there were strange things done in the house. About 6 o'clock Mr. Johnson came home and we were up-stairs. He came in and shut the front door and went through the dining room and kitchen into the woodshed and as he shut the door in the kitchen the latch at the front door went up and the door opened about a foot. After this we got ready for meeting.

The Second Sunday in September, 1892.

Mr. S. and George went over to East L——, where W. was to preach, and I came home from church. Florence Hubbell wanted to know if I would let her have a loaf of bread, as she had company. I told her "yes", and so expected that after dinner she would come for it. I was sitting at the desk in the study when there were 4 or 5 raps on the door in the winter dining room, and I thought that it was she. But to my surprise there was no one at either door. I went to each door as fast as I could one after the other. When I saw her I asked her if she came down to the house and she said "no", so I am sure that she did not do it.

Friday, Sept. 30, 1892.

Mr. S. and Mr. Jeffrey were sitting in the study talking about spiritualism and Mr. S. asked Mr. J. what he would do if he was to hear a rap on the floor, while they were talking, and he said that he should have to believe it (he was an Adventist and did not believe in the life after death). While they were talking there were two or three raps on the door and Mr. S. heard it and went to all of the

doors to see who was there and found no one. The other gentleman was hard of hearing and did not hear it.

Another Experience [Exact date uncertain].

I cannot tell just what night it was now, but I had been asleep I should think an hour or two when I awoke thinking it was morning. There seemed to be a very bright light in the room and I opened my eyes and there seemed to be a great many small lights moving around the room and they seemed to go around until they could form a hand or at least the fingers and could be seen very plainly. I called Willis and he saw them. We watched them for a while, then we went to sleep.

Dec. 19, 1892.

It was about 6 P. M. of this evening of which I write. Mr. S. and George were up at T—— and the King's Daughters had all gone home and I was sitting in the parlor about three feet from the dining room when I heard two loud raps on the table in the dining room. In about ten minutes I heard another which seemed to be in the same place and after I heard the second raps I thought that I would go out and set the table for supper, but I felt chilled and fear seemed to possess me, so I stayed where I was and sewed until about 6:30 P. M., when there were 3 very loud and clear raps on the table again. After this I trembled and was so cold that I put on my hat and shawl and went out to the store and Miss F. S. Hubbell came back with me. We heard nothing when we returned.

April 2, 1893.

I was in the parlor about 4 o'clock sitting by the organ playing when I heard a rap or a snap on the center table. I know my feet did not make the rap because they were still. I had stopped playing when the rap was heard. It startled me and I stopped and listened. Soon to my utter surprise and amazement I heard another. I then asked if it was a spirit and asked it to rap again, but never a sound. It was a queer experience. W. M. S——.

May 28, 1893.

The time was somewhere in the neighborhood of 3 A. M. When I awoke the clock struck 3 a few minutes afterwards and when I looked around me as I often do when waking in the night (it was moonlight) and I glanced toward the ceiling just over the bed when I saw a form just departing. It went or seemed to disappear over the head of my bed. The head and shoulders had gone out of sight when I first looked. Then the rest of the body went gradually. This form did not seem to have the shining robe that most of them do, but was just in its natural body. I was or seemed to be so overpowered that I could do or say nothing until it had almost gone. When I could speak I called my husband and he could not see it, but a few minutes afterward the room seemed to get very dark and again very bright and there were little lights that went from one place to another. They stayed for a few minutes and then all left as quickly as they came, leaving us in darkness again.

July 18, 1894—An Experience of Ours—My account will be given first—Ida's will follow.

At twelve o'clock I was awakened, how I do not know. I know I was awake, the room was light enough to see a little, a sort of dusk. I looked over towards the piano and it seemed as if I could see a man in the room. It was so real that I was frightened a little and thought that I should have to get up and tell him to get out or do something, what, I hardly knew, still I was not very much frightened and looked again to see if it was really a man in the room. This time I saw that I was mistaken, that the something was not a solid body for I could see through it and see the piano through the form that I was looking at. So I knew that it was a spectre, or an image of something, or a creation of my own brain; so I went to sleep saying nothing to any one. About 2 o'clock Ida had the experience that she will relate. The form I saw was face to face with me; it was medium height, well built, a dark suit of clothes and it seemed to glide over to the little table near by and I saw it no more. (W. M. S——.)

(Mrs. S——.) In the study where we slept about 2 o'clock I awoke and intended to go into the kitchen, when I saw the form of

a man standing near the lamp on the piano. At first I thought that someone had got into the house and was going to tell Willis, but I afterwards thought that I would watch the form, when he turned without any noise and walked to the study table and leaned over. I kept quiet to be sure that he would not think that I was watching him, when all at once he had disappeared.

He had light brown hair and a dark grey or drab suit and was a little taller than myself. I did not get up, as I first intended, but waited until about quarter of five, when I could see clearly. If I had got up when I had first intended I should have had to wake Willis to light the lamp. I at first thought that it was some one that had entered the room. Then I began to wonder how any one could have done this. Then it seemed as if something said it is "Vet" and I thought or seemed to say in my mind it is not, but when I looked at the height and the hair and the clothes I did not think any more of it after it had gone and so went to sleep. In the morning when I was making the bed I happened to tell Willis of my experience and I told him how I awoke at 2 P. M. and saw this man. Then he related his experience that same night.

Comments—By W. M. S.

My waking at 12 o'clock was strange. I do not remember of ever waking at 12 o'clock before. It was very strange that I should do this. I did not speak to Mrs. S. or wake her. She told me in the morning before she knew that I had seen anything. I saw mine first—so could not have been influenced by her. Neither of us had any thoughts in these lines. Both thought it was a burglar, yet neither of us was specially frightened—both waited to see—both concluded it to be a spectre or a spirit—both acted the same in both instances.

Aug. 22, 1897.

Willis, Nettie and I were sitting in the parlor after church, talking about almost anything, when Nettie asked if we wanted her to go into a trance. This seemed to set us all to thinking of the other world and we talked until after 10 o'clock and then went to bed.

After I had gone to bed, without the least sign of sleep in my eyes there were some strange things that happened. First, I felt my body being lifted up and rocked as if in a hammock and my head still resting on the pillow and I said to myself, if this is caused by the spirits why do they not lift my head up also with the rest of my body? All the while my eyes were open wide when to my surprise my head was lifted up with the rest of my body. My eyes were open. Then, some one began to put their fingers on my eyes and tried to shut them and as fast as they tried to shut them I opened them and they would shut them again until they finally rocked me to sleep and I supposed I had only been asleep for an hour or so until morning, and when I was relating my experiences to Willis, he said it was morning, for I was talking to Cecil and he heard me. When I first awoke from this sleep I saw a child. I could not see its face, but it was a child and it came running across the room with a small rocking chair and I started to move my head when the child went right over it (or my head through it). I lay awake for quite a while to see if I could see anything more. Then I got tired and turned over. It then seemed as though they began to go away for there were strange dark places with bright lights all around. They would come and go towards the door until about a dozen or more of them went and then all was very dark and I went to sleep.

Jan. 29, 1894.

I was in the sitting room this evening alone; the children were both asleep in the room off from this one and next to the dining room about 9:15 P. M. when I heard two very slow and distinct raps on the side of the door that went out into the small hall that opened into the front hall. It seemed so strange that it made me as cold as though some one had taken cold water and poured it on me. I thought that if I was to have heavenly visitors I would go to bed, for I was alone and would be for the night. When ready to retire I sat on the bed for a few minutes reading when there were two more raps in apparently the same place but not quite as slow and distinct. This made me quite nervous, so I put out the light and went to bed not intending to sleep, for I expected that perhaps Willis would return. After a while I thought that I had better not keep awake any longer,

so in a few minutes I was asleep, and had been for a number of hours when I felt some one touch me on my left shoulder as I was lying on my right side. I then turned my head and said "What?" and when I opened my eyes I turned half over to be sure that it was some one and of course thought that it was Willis and I looked again and said, "So you have come home". All this while the apparition was leaning over the crib looking into my face and I was looking at it and continued to look at it until it gradually began to grow less distinct and in about 5 minutes it had disappeared altogether. During all this time the fire in the sitting room was so bright that it lighted the bed room so that everything could be seen in it and I could watch the spirit until it was completely out of sight, it did not turn to go, but looked at me until it vanished from the spot where it was.

Feb. 23, 1898—In the Methodist Parsonage.

About 9 o'clock P. M. In the rear bedroom off from the sitting room. The windows were made completely dark with drapery of cotton flannel curtains. No light could get in except from a house about 500 feet distant and even if there had been a light there the rays could not have struck where I saw the lights that I am to describe. There was no possible way for a ray of light to reach where I saw the lights. Of all this I am as positive as I could be of anything, for I took pains to test it, besides I looked out of one window and all lights in the house, 500 feet away, were out. It was a very cold and stormy night in winter. No one would have been likely to have been out. It was impossible for a horse to travel on account of the blinding, driving snow. If any one had been out with a lantern the rays of light could not have reached the wall where I saw the lights because no ray could reach this wall only by being bent at a right angle—no ray of light is so bent unless by some prismatic or other mechanical means. Even if there was a ray of light from the stove in the sitting room it would have had to have gone around a corner to have gotten to the place where I saw the lights. Besides all this I was wide awake and the room was pitch dark until I saw the lights and they were not bright enough to light up the room, only bright enough to be seen plainly.

At first before I said anything I had noticed a bright spot over

the bed over Georgie's side and was looking at it. I saw it beyond a doubt. Ida said "Do you see that light," I said "I have been watching it, and I will get up and find out", so I got up and had just put my feet on the floor and out went the bright spot. We saw it all this time till then. (I got up to look out of the window as referred to.) About 15 minutes afterwards it came back again in the same place, looked a little stronger and brighter and seemed as if there were two spots near together. This time flashes of light like semi-bright lines and spots could be seen in the darkness and the whole room seemed somewhat lighter. Soon the light spots went out and all was dark and we finally dropped to sleep. W. M. S.

These experiences are not recorded here for any evidential purposes, at least as individual phenomena. They can have value only in a collection of such phenomena. Some of them seem to be collective in their character. Some are without credentials for veridical phenomena. But the reason for recording them is that such experiences, no matter what their character, are frequent with people who otherwise manifest psychic phenomena. They are a part of the record, whatever explanation may be offered.

CHAPTER III.

SUMMARY OF THE MARTIAN INCIDENTS.

The "communications" assuming a definitely spiritistic form did not begin with the Martian phenomena, but represented quite plausible messages from deceased friends and relatives, and they remained of this character for some time with only brief allusions to planetary matters until interest was evoked in the development of this curious phase of the work.

As I have already remarked, no serious attempt was made to experiment on any interesting line, in spite of earlier experiences, until 1895. The systematic effort at it was elicited by the interest in some casual sittings held by Mr. and Mrs. Smead and a record was finally kept of the experiments as they seemed to deserve it. The "communicators" in this case who represent themselves as the agents conveying this interplanetary information were the deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead and a deceased brother of Mr. Smead. Strange to say two of these deceased children had been still-born and one a miscarriage. The names of the children were Maude, Esther and Willis, and the name of Mr. Smead's brother was Sylvester. Maude and Sylvester were the chief personalities in the Martian matter. It is not possible at this date and with the apparent imperfections of the earlier record, to say whether these personalities were purely spontaneous or the result of interrogation in experiments not recorded and of which there is no indicated memory. This, however, would not affect the interpretation of the phenomena and may be dismissed as of no present importance.

The first record is of an experiment on June 3rd, 1895, Between this date and August 7th nothing of a planetary character was mentioned. But on this date, apropos of a question directed to a deceased daughter regarding the place

where she was, the answer was "everywhere". This was explained to mean that she could go where she pleased. Then after denying that she had seen heaven, though admitting that there was such a place, she was asked where all the spirits of the dead are and gave as answer, "everywhere, some are on the earth and some are on other worlds". The "communicator" was then asked if some of those who have died are living on other planets, and the reply was that "they can", and to the further query whether they were as a fact the answer was, "no, they can when they want to". To the question whether as spirits they could go to the planets the answer was, "Yes, but we like to go on journeys and come back". Two weeks later, probably at the next sitting, a drawing of a cow was made and in reply to the question who was present the answer came "Willis". He was one of the deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead, and when he was asked if he had any message, the following dialogue took place.

"Maude is away. (Where?) Mars. (Do you mean she has gone to the planet Mars?) Yes, with uncle Vester".

This was the beginning of the Martian incidents. At another sitting which is undated but which I have placed between August 21st and August 28th, Mars was spontaneously mentioned again and also the intended visit to that planet with this "uncle Vester". Maude was the personality purporting to communicate this time. Asked if she had ever visited any other planet the reply was in the affirmative and Jupiter was named when asked to indicate which planet had been visited. A crude map of its surface was drawn and in response to the request to say something about its people the statement was, "they are different than you: they know lots of things." (p. 185) At a later sitting Jupiter was called the "babies' heaven", whither they were taken after death "because they were better than grown up people." Even secondary personality does not seem to be in accord with the theology of Calvin or Edwards. There were also several statements made in connection with this reference to the infant's heaven that betrayed the influence of early teaching in the life of Mrs. Smead and indicated the material upon

which secondary personality had drawn for its "communications". They were perhaps memories of Sunday school teaching, supplemented by childhood memories and imagination of what the stars might be (p. 192).

It was, however, at the next sitting, August 28th, that the most interesting "communications" began regarding the planet Mars. The sitting started with the drawing of a map in considerable detail, giving the names of the zones which were represented on it. The "communicator" was Maude, the deceased child of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. The names given and interpreted for the several zones were "Zentin" (cold), "Zentinen" (very cold), "Dirnstze" (North Temperate Zone), "Dirnstzerin" (South Temperate Zone), and "Emerincenren" (Equator). Also the name "Mimtenirimte" (Continent) was given for the land represented in the map. After the map was drawn the following dialogue took place between the "communicator" and Mr. Smead.

"At it we had a fine time. We could go all around there easy. The people are bigger and there are not so many as on this earth. The people there could talk with the people here if they knew their language, but they do not. (Do the people in Mars have flesh and blood as we do?) Yes. (Do they look like us?) Some. (Are there big cities there?) No, the inhabitants are most like Indians. (American Indians?) Yes. (Are they highly civilized?) Yes, some are in some things. (What things?) In fixing the water. (How in what way?) Making it so that it is easy to get around it. (How do they do that?) They cut great canals from ocean to ocean and great bodies of water."

The bodies of water here referred to were represented on the map drawn at the beginning of the experiment. But at this point the "communications" stopped. The important fact to remark, however, in connection with these incidents is that an article on Martian life and civilisation was published in a paper taken by the family and dated one day after the time of the sitting. In this article reference was made to Percival Lowell's articles in the *Atlantic Monthly* for that year discussing the question of Martian inhabitants and canals.

Whether Mrs. Smead had seen the article in the paper depends on the question whether the paper was printed ahead of its normal date and was received before the sitting. Both Mr. and Mrs. Smead say that the article was not seen until after the sitting. They also say that Percival Lowell's articles in the *Atlantic Monthly* had not been seen and the incidents rather show that they are most probably correct in their statement (p. 186). But one need hardly make a point of this because the names of the zones are not given in any of the articles and the resources of the imagination whether supraliminal or subliminal are quite equal to all that was written by the planchette, especially since the question of Martian inhabitants and canals is one of very common interest.

The next recorded "communications" did not refer to Martian matter, but consisted of apparent messages from the deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead in which there was an evident attempt to have some fun. The dates were October 14th and November 2nd (p. 190). Among the tricks played by the "communicator" was the draft of a figure which was said to represent the Devil. The figure was of a serpentine character with the features of a dragon, to some extent the conventional Devil of the theatrical stage. The messages were full of playful mischief. Two or three times during the Martian "communications" this sort of interruption occurred involving matter that had no planetary character or connections. But when the Martian messages were resumed after this humorous diversion it was interesting to remark the abruptness and completed development of them. It was five years later, however, before any further experiments were made or recorded, and it is this long interval that creates the interest in the resumption of Martian matter, as it appears to indicate a course of subliminal development or education, so to speak, in the subconscious operations of Mrs. Smead.

The last sitting before this interval was in December 1895: the next after it was in September 1900. The material communicated extends over the time from September 14th to December 16th of the last named year. It represents some

devotion to detail. On the first of these dates the "communications" related to Jupiter as the "babies' heaven" (p. 192). On September 15th the planchette began by drawing a figure which might very easily suggest a ship and wrote the two words "Seretrevir" and "Cristirrie". The former was explained to mean "sea vessel" and the latter to be its name. The Martians thus seem to follow terrestrial usage and to give names to their ships! But an interesting deviation from our habits was indicated by the statement that the ships were made of trees and that the inhabitants of Mars did not have sawmills as we do.

In the next experiment, September 20th, a curious figure was drawn, unrecognizable in itself, but which was explained to be a "dog house temple". In the corners of it were drawn two animals which were meant to represent dogs, according to the explanation of them given by the planchette, and which were said to give the name to the temple. The characters or symbols were then drawn which described the temple by name and these were then translated into English. They were "*Ti femo wahribivie timeviol*", meaning "the dog-house temple". At the same sitting the name of a lake that had been drawn on the map five years previously was given. It was "Emervia". Mr. Smead then asked for the Martian of "the boy runs", and received the answer that "people do not run on Mars, but only walk". Then the direct answer to his request was given, "*Ti inin amarivim*". The form of thought in this expression was explained to be "the boy walking" and not "the boy walks", a curious diversion from the most natural speech.

On September 24th amid much irrelevant matter five characters were written, one of them immediately erased, and the message interpreted to mean "A great man chief ruler". The name of this ruler was given as "Amirie en". On September 30th the same sentence was repeated and written more clearly.

On September 29th a rough sketch of a man was drawn and the word or words "Yo-urst" in connection with it. The word was interpreted as meaning "you". Also the words "cle" one, and "ke" two, and "Mare" for 'man',

and "Maren" for 'men'; "Kare" for 'woman' and "Karen" for 'women'. After the giving of these names in response to requests for the words for man and woman, singular and plural, the "communicator" was asked for the meaning of the picture drawn at the opening of the sitting representing a man. The reply was:

"The way they dress, (How?) The men wear dresses and pants. (Short dresses?) Yes. The women wear bag-like skirts and funny hats. Their hair is hanging down their shoulders. The men put theirs up and keep long hair under their hats. We went all around. The people are different in different places."

On September 30th a strange figure was drawn after repeating the picture of the Martian man of the evening before. The word "Wereven" was written in connection with this new figure and explained to mean "serpent". There then followed the ground plan of a house in the shape of a double cross, or two crosses with their arms touching and the outline of a mountain range in the background. The lower part of the double cross, however, was explained to represent the shadow of the house in the water, thus indicating inferentially that it was built on the shore of some body of water. Circular loops were drawn in the wing sections of the house to represent windows. The doors stood on the line separating the house from its shadow. In this sitting also were drawn the Martian symbols for the numbers 3 and 4.

On October 1st the Martian sentence and characters for the English "This man is a great man" were written. Numbers were written under the characters to indicate the order in which they stood in the Martian language, and this was, "This man a great man is". There was then written in the same manner, with numbers under the Martian characters again, the sentence "The great man addressing his subjects". The Martian order was, "The great man his subjects talking". Then followed the sentence, "A great man walking to the temple".

On October 3rd the planchette drew the picture of a flower and wrote the sentence "*Moken irin trinen minim aru ti maren inine tine*". Translated into English this was, "Flowers

bloom there: many of the great men plant them". Then a still longer sentence was written, "*Ti maren arivie warire ti maren-ensis aru ti Artes feu ti timeviol*", with the English translation, "The men went with the subjects of the chief ruler to the temple". In the course of the experiment the "communicator" stated a fact that has a suggestive interest for the psychologist. It was that, "The people on Mars choose their rulers so the children of great men do not count", with the emphasis apparently on "people"! Evidently the aristocrats in that planet do not possess the franchise! They may have power, but they cannot share the privilege of helping in their own selection.

On the next day, October 4th, one of the most remarkable and most interesting of the whole series of drawings was made, especially considering that it was drawn by the planchette. It was preceded by the written statement, "You should see some of their embroideries. The colors are beautiful". Then the planchette drew the representation of an embroidered dress with flowers scattered over it in symmetrical order. After the dress was drawn in outline the colored portions were described and these were variations of pink, white, green, yellow, brown, and lavender. The waist was pink and apparently draped with lavender lace. The upper portion of the skirt was white and contained embroidered flowers in it, the flowers having various colors. Next to this was a wide pink stripe which was wider behind than in front. The lower portion of the skirt was lavender in color and ornamented with flowers at the margin of the pink stripe and at the lower edges. It is apparently a portion of an overskirt. In connection with the drawing the dress was described in the following sentence: "*Mare arrivie ceassin oonei kei ahrue ruinin warire ti mare*". This was interpreted to mean in English. "Man chief ruler's wife's dress when she goes riding with the man chief ruler".

On the next day, October 5th, according to the record, there was drawn the figure of a wagon with some animal hitched to it. The vehicle was described as a "goat cart" and called in Martian "Yeoar". October 7th was distinguished by the drawing of a most remarkable and original

representation of a Martian clock. The whole was described in detail. The name for it was "Triveniul". It consisted of two circular wooden boxes resting side by side and connected by openings through which passed from one to the other the wire that formed the coil spring in each box. The spring begins in the center of one of the boxes and forms a coil which is wound round a circular wire to hold it in its place and runs through the opening between the boxes, and then winding about another circular wire finally ends in the same manner in the second box as the first begins in the center of the first box. The spring is of brass, and the spiral part of it is made and fastened so that, as it unwinds in one of the boxes it winds up the other in the second box. The clock is wound once a day and as the running down of one of the spiral coils winds up the other the latter serves to run the clock at night. Though it was described in this manner with much detail the mechanical working of it was not made clear, and hence it can be mentioned only because of the apparent ingenuity with which it was contrived.

It seems also that the Martians have overcome the difficulties of aerial navigation. They have an airship of very peculiar and ingenious proportions. It was drawn and described at the sittings of October 9th and 13th. The description of it was as follows:

"Made of wire cloth like stuff—made to go in air. It is an air ship. It is a coil. You see it will run a long mile (while) when they will have to stop and wind it, or it must be wound while it is in motion. This coil makes the wings go. Each one (wing) is connected with this coil and then when the power is turned on it makes them go like birds' wings. The power runs it all, only the propeller guides it. Let me tell you about the wings first.

"They are filled with air so that they are light. Then the wire-like cloth covers them. There are fifteen points or parts of the wings that are filled with air. These wings go up and down. The coils at the bottom are used to help the wings open. The power winds the coil. The power is electricity and the batteries are where the coils are. There are three big coils. One is for the wind sails, one is for the

wings, and one is for the propeller. The coil is used with the sails because it is sometimes needed when the winds are strong. The propeller goes like a wing. The wind makes the ship go some."

This is not a very intelligible description and it is not given as such, but only to illustrate what the attempt was. The draft of the airship drawn by the planchette is clearer than any description, though it is meager in conception, and shows a curious mechanism that resembles roughly the combination of a flattened balloon suspended upon a flat boat with sails. All the parts of it were named and described, including the means of entrance which were round window-like holes in the sides.

On the last of the two dates above mentioned as occupied with the airship, namely, October 13th, a friend was present who resolved to try a test experiment. He had tried telepathy on various occasions and found no traces of its occurrence. He therefore tried the following. He wrote the question 'Do flowers grow on Mars?' on a piece of paper out of the sight of Mrs. Smead and placed it on the table and covered it with several pieces of paper so that Mrs. Smead could not see it. A drawing was made by the planchette and the words "water flowers" written on the sheet. The figure is a fair representation of a pond surrounded with water lilies. The words "green, brown, yellow and white" were also written showing some reference to the colors of the flowers. This friend whom I know personally is a man of scientific attainments and has performed experiments in hypnosis and is well aware of the dangers of suggestion, so that the experiment in all probability was carefully performed. Assuming that it was so performed there is a suggestion of telepathy or clairvoyance in the result, unless the fact that Martian matters were uppermost in the mind of Mrs. Smead may have made the coincidence a chance one. This last view is a possible one without doubt.

On October 15th the planchette drew a mountain or elevation and placed on it the Martian symbols for two houses. The place was described as an observatory or "place where they look at you". There was also drawn across the moun-

tain what may be described as tunnels dug through it with a pipelike appearance at the ends. The Martian name for house, "warhibivie" was written near the symbols for house and explained to mean this. Then a complete Martian sentence was written describing the place, with numerals placed under the words to indicate the order of the Martian grammatical construction. In English it read, "The place in which man chief ruler looks on your earth". The Martian order indicated by the numerals was, "The man chief ruler's place in which he looks on your earth from Mars". The Martian hieroglyphs translated into English were. "Ti rure neu infew mare laries en fratur triuen carmie".

A curious coincidence between this drawing and one in Flournoy's case is to be noticed. Mlle. Helène Smith also drew a Martian observatory with a tunnel in it, and it appears that Mrs. Smead was unaware of the fact. Flournoy's book was in the house when this cycle began the second time, but had been withheld from Mrs. Smead's reading on purpose and moreover at the time of this drawing the volume had been put in the care of a friend to keep it away from Mrs. Smead's attention. Unless we are to believe that Mrs. Smead had read it in some abnormal condition before its removal from the house, as she testifies that she had not done so consciously, there is no reason to suppose that she had seen any of Mlle. Smith's drawings.

It was a month later before the subject was renewed, and on November 14th the planchette wrote a Martian sentence representing the statement that the people in that planet were eating a meal, with a reference to the house in which the feast occurred. According to the original automatic records this house was not drawn until ten days later, November 24th. But the sentence was: "Wahrhibivie arri p[a]rri kau friuiol taikin sirvuen". To the question, what the Martians were eating the answer was, in English, "bread, cake, something like water, fruit and chicken". The Martian for these articles was "fraiu, kreki, trikuil, caruitz, fluiniz". The drawing of the house represented merely the ground plan and with it the contents were drawn and described with the locality of each piece, including couches, hassocks, a cushion,

table, water flagon, clock and doors. On the next day a Martian chicken was drawn and this fowl was said to be not so large as the terrestrial chicken. There was apparently an association between this sitting and the one of November 14th.

On November 16th, with probably a similar associative connection, a house of palatial proportions was drawn and described as the palace of Artez, the chief ruler. The palace consisted of two divisions, one of white and the other of grey stone. That of grey stone was by far the larger and showed a different style of architecture. It was characterised by a series of square towers connected together in the first story. Two of the towers were larger than the others, of which there were four, six in all. There were four stairways arranged between the towers, except between the second and third and between the fourth and fifth. The doors were large and of rectangular shape, and some of the windows were round and some square. The roof was made so as to serve as a walk, somewhat like a roof garden, and the entrance to it was gained through the doors in the towers. The white stone house was smaller than the grey and built on the same general style, except that the towers, if so they may be called, terminated in pyramidal shape and the windows were all round. The foreground of the whole palace consisted of lawns, flower plots, and ponds or artificial lakes. The background was a series of lofty mountains with the blue sky to set them off. The conception was in all quite a magnificent one and worthy of a fine artist. Apparently the conception was that of a mild climate.

On November 21st the "communications" purported to come from the child Willis and related to Jupiter, as the "babies' heaven". The details are very interesting secondary personality, but are too lengthy to reproduce (p. 192).

On November 24th the "communications" recur to the Martian house of Artez and a ground plan of the three departments in it was drawn. The palace itself, as we have seen, was drawn on the 16th. In the ground plan there were references to the furniture of the rooms, and especially to a curtain which was drawn and represented as an important feature of the palace. It was apparently an embroidered curtain and was

described in all its details. The fringe at the bottom consisted of representations of Martian people and was of dark grey or brown color. Immediately above it, of a lighter color and mixed with yellow, was a sort of serpentine shaped decoration and above this a yellow stripe. On this yellow stripe was superposed a wide red stripe with four specimens of flowers, as if set in pots. The two middle flowers were single and the two outside sets were of three branches each. Over this belt was a narrow strip of grey color, apparently representing the walks and gardens of the palace: for in the center of the curtain above this belt were the white stone divisions of the palace drawn on the 16th and described previously, with green swards in the background rising into mountains and sky further back. On the sides of this picture, as a margin, were rectangles of red and yellow and at the top a heavy brown fringe like that at the bottom. The whole representation is both unique in its way and well conceived. On the same date a vase with flowers in it was drawn and the Martian words for "plant" and "vase" written. The Martian for "vase" was "Cari" and for "plant" it was "Tariat". (p. 206.)

On December 1st, after some apparent messages from friends (p. 207), the planchette drew the battery for the Martian airship and some conversation was held regarding it. Following this was what seems to have been a Martian tower on a wall.

On December 5th another specimen of a Martian curtain was drawn. It was somewhat different in style from the first specimen. The fringe and margins were not of the same type and were not described in detail. The central ornament was a representation of the Martian airship with a background of sky and cloud. Curiously enough the figure of the airship is quite identical with that drawn much earlier (p. 201), showing the same subliminal memory as is noticeable in the hieroglyphic symbols of speech and thought, when once the fabrications are made. The sails of the airship were white, the curtain generally of brown, but the embroidery of a light blue. The Martian word "fameries" was also written as that for "curtain" and the curtain drawn was said to belong to the white stone palace.

On December 6th the child Willis purported to be the communicator and the planchette began by drawing a veil, saying: "What I saw one lady wearing when I went with uncle Vester". Then a woman's bust was drawn with the veil fastened on the top of her head and trailing down the back. On December 10th the veil and lady were drawn again and with them the Martian sentence with the numerals underwritten to explain the Martian order.

"Mirwerel Wariema Marquein warhibivie mamanie"

4 2 1 3 5

The English order and literal translation of this was: "Marquein Wariema's house live together husband", but it was more liberally interpreted as meaning "House where the bride Marquein Wariema lives with her husband". It was also explained that Martian wives retain their maiden names after marriage not taking that of the husband, which in this case was said to be "Mirwerel".

On December 14th another house was drawn with two wings. It resembles a barrack and is plain in architecture. The windows again are round and are very numerous. On December 16th a long sentence was written whose meaning has an apparent reference to the house drawn on the 14th. First came the Martian symbols and then their English equivalents. The latter were: "Ti maren oreicein ein treviens veren quren mariquim". The translation was: "The men work in the fields before they marry". The reference on the 14th had been to the house or barracks as "the place where the men that get married work". Toward the close of the experiment it was explained that the Martians were reluctant to answer questions.

December 16th was the last of the Martian "communications". They were suddenly interrupted by the appearance at the next experiment, December 19th, of a new personality calling himself Harrison Clarke and who shut out all other would-be "communicators". He apparently had no interest in interplanetary matters and never even once alludes to them. The summary of his performances is re-

served for the next chapter. But he began his "communications" with inverted writing.

The psychologist and psychical researcher will recognise at once what these Martian phenomena mean. There is no evidence that they are what they purport to be. The only hypothesis that recommends itself under such conditions is that of secondary personality, or subliminal fabrication like that of Mlle. Hélène Smith. There are internal indications in the drawings of the planchette that suggest this theory, even if we had no other evidence of it. For instance, the mechanical impossibility of the airship, the evident confusion of a "propeller" with the helm, the appropriation of forces like electricity which is the object of present terrestrial excitement in invention and expected discovery, the general play of this unconscious process reproducing phenomena too much like the terrestrial to escape suspicion—all these are facts which take the Martian "communications" entirely out of the category of spiritistic revelations, unless better evidence is forthcoming to show a transcendental origin and meaning. But the most important and interesting feature of the case remains after we have thus explained it. This is the psychological value of such cases for the study of alleged spiritualism. We find in them evidence that we need not impeach normal consciousness for fraud while we discover automatic processes of mentation that may be equally acquitted of fraudulent intent, owing to the absence of normal self-consciousness, while we are also free from the obligation to accept the phenomena at their superficial value. The extraordinary characteristic of them is the extent to which they imitate the organising intelligence of a normal mind and the perfection of the impersonation of spirits, always betraying their limitations, however, just at the point where we have the right to expect veridical testimony to their claims. In this instance these claims are more plausible than in Flournoy's. His "spirits" could do nothing to prove their identity and assumed what I understand is the prevailing form of spiritualism in France, namely, the doctrine of reincarnation. But this feature, as in spiritualism in this country, is absent from the present case and is connected with person-

alities who might be expected to prove their identity, and we shall find in the sequel that one of them apparently does something to satisfy this criterion. It is the personality of Sylvester, the name of the deceased brother of Mr. Smead.

I shall incorporate here for the reader's convenience a summary of the Martian symbols, language and sentences, so that they may be studied together, and their relation to the theory of secondary personality better appreciated.

I shall first give the alphabet and numerals. As the reader will notice very few letters were given, and also only one-half of the digits. The interesting feature of this matter is that such letters of the alphabet as were given came in response to a definite request to spell certain words. In all other cases the subliminal of Mrs. S. evidently found it easier to produce the hieroglyphic symbols for words as a whole than to spell them out in an alphabet.

I give two lists of the Martian words. The first list contains the English word followed by its Martian equivalent and the Martian symbol, as written by the planchette, except that these symbols are here reconstructed in symmetrical form. The second list gives the words in groups with the date on which each group was given by the planchette. In this way they may be studied to a better purpose.

Following these I give the Martian sentences with their Martian symbols and English equivalents. Often the Martian sentence was rewritten, even a second time, in response to a request. I give each draft drawn by the planchette and also the dates on which they were drawn, so that the result may be studied from two points of view. There is first the subject's memory for each draft in reproducing the same sign and order. Then there is the same memory for the longer period between the various dates. In this way we can better examine the uniformity and variations in the symbols. It will be remarked, however, that the variations are very few. The regularity is undoubtedly surprising under the circumstances. I also indicate, as did the planchette, the difference of order between the Martian and English by placing the proper numbers under the words in the sentences where it was done in the process of communication.

The Martian Alphabet.

A R
 B
 C
 D
 E Z
 F
 G
 H
 I
 J
 K
 L
 M ⚡
 N ^
 O ▽
 P
 Q
 R
 S
 T
 U
 V
 W I
 X
 Y
 Z
 &

1 I—

2 Z—

3 X

4 

5 

6

7

8

9

List of Martian Words.

Aug., 1895.

Zenten—very cold.

Zentinen—cold, very cold.

Emerincenren—equator, very, very warm.

Dirnstze—the north temperate zone.

Dirnstze Rin—the south temperate zone.

Mintenirimte—one continent.

Sept. 15, 1900.

Irevitrevir—vessel (ship).

Seretrevir—ocean or sea vessel.

Cristririe—the name of the vessel.

Sept. 20, 1900.

Ti—the.

Emervia—lake.

Inin—boy

Amarivim—walking.

Femo—dog.

Warhibivie—house.

Timeviol—temple.

Sept. 24, 1900.

Amiricen—to be a great man—the name of a great man.

Sept. 29, 1900.

Yo-urst—you

Yo-urstin—your.

Sept. 30, 1900.

Cle—one.

Ke—two

Maren—men.

Karen—women.

Mare—man.

Kare—woman.

Six letters of the Martian Alphabet, besides signs for some words.

Oct. 1, 1900.

Wereven—serpent.

Tri—three.

Triu—four.

—"The Martian language has both an alphabet and signs for words—they use the signs most"—from "Maude."

Oct. 2, 1900.

Zu—five.

Oct. 3, 1900.

Moken—flowers.

Arin—bloom.

Trincn—there.

Minin—many.

Oru—of.

Inine—plant.

Tine—them.

Oct. 4, 1900.

Arevie—went.
Warire—with.
Marenenis—subjects.
Artez—Chief.
Feu—To.

Oct. 5, 1900.

Arive—wife.
Ceassin—dress.
Oonei—when.
Kei—she.
Ahrue—goes.
Ru-in-in—riding.
Yeoar—goat cart (one drawn).

Oct. 7, 1900.

Triveniul—clock.

Oct. 15, 1900.

Ruse (?)—Place.
Neu—in.
Infew—which.
Laries—looks.
En—on.
Fratiur—your earth.
Triuen—from.
Carmie—Mars.

Nov. 14, 1900.

Arri—where.
Ppri—we.
Kau—saw.
Friuiot—people.
Taikin—eating.
Sirvuen—supper.
Fraiu—bread.
Kreki—cake.
Trikuil—something like water to drink.
Caruits—fruit.
Fluiniz—chicken (not like ours).

Dec. 10, 1900.

Mirwerel—Bride.

Wariema—Wariema the woman's name.

Marquein—Marquein the rest of her name.

Mamanie—living together.

Dec. 1, 1900.

Cari—vase.

Dec. 16, 1900.

Orcicein—work.

Ein—in.

Treviens—fields.

Veren—before.







Quren—they.







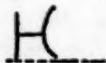








Mariqim—marry.










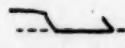

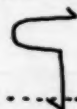
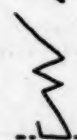
Dec. 5, 1900.

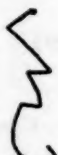


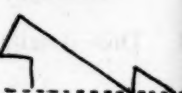








Famerics—Curtains.

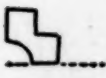
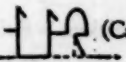


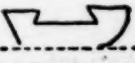


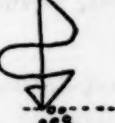




Signs in the Martian Language.












1. The—*Ti*—(sign) 
2. Boy—*inin*—(sign) 
3. Walking—*amarivim*—(sign) 
4. Dog—*femo*—(sign) 
5. House—*warhibivie*—(sign) 
6. Temple—*timeviol*—(sign) 

7. A—(sign) 
8. Great— (sign) 
9. Man—*mare*—(sign)  and 
 means "Man chief ruler."
10. Chief— (sign) 
11. Ruler— (sign) 
12. One—*cle*—(sign) 
13. Two—*ke*—(sign) 
14. Three—*tri*—(sign) 
15. Four—*triu*—(sign) 
16. E—(sign) 
17. M—(sign) 
18. N—(sign) 
19. O—(sign) 

20. W—(sign) 
21. Women—*Karen*—(sign) 
22. Men—*maren*—(sign) 
23. Woman—*kare*—(sign) 
24. This—(sign) 
25. Addressing—(sign) 
26. His— (sign) 
27. Subjects— (sign) 
28. To— (sign) 
29. Five—*Zu*—(sign) 
30. Flowers—*moken*—(sign) 
31. Bloom—*arin*—(sign) 
32. There—*trinen*—(sign) 

33. Many—*minin*—(sign) 
34. Of—*aru*—(sign) 
35. Plant—*inine*—(sign) 
36. Them—*tine*—(sign) 
37. Went—*arivie*—(sign) 
38. With—*warire*—(sign) 
39. Chief—*Artes*—(sign) 
40. Wife—*arive*—(sign) 
41. Dress—*ceassin*—(sign) 
42. When—*oonei*—(sign) 
43. She—*kei*—(sign) 
44. Goes—*ahrue*—(sign) 

45. Riding—*ruinin*—(sign) 
46. Goat Cart—*yeoar*—(sign)  (Cart-Goat)
47. Clock—*triveniul*—(sign) 
48. Where—*arri*—(sign) 
49. We—*p[a]rri*—(sign) 
50. Saw—*kau*—(sign) 
51. People—*friuiol*—(sign) 
52. Eating—*taikin*—(sign) 
53. Supper—*sirvuen*—(sign) 
54. Bread—*fraiu*—(sign) 
55. Cake—*kreki*—(sign) 
56. Fruit—*caruits*—(sign) 

57. Chicken—*fluinis*—(sign) 
58. Water—*trikuil*—(sign) 
59. Bride—*Mirwerel*—(sign) 
60. Wariema—(name) 
61. Marquein—(name) 
62. Living together—*Mamanie*—(sign) . 
63. Work—*oreicein*—(sign) 
64. In—*ein*—(sign) 
65. Fields—*Treviens*—(sign) 
66. Before—*veren*—(sign) 
67. They—*quren*—(sign) 

68. Marry—*marigim*—(sign)



69. Curtains—*fameries*—(sign)



CHAPTER IV.

THE HARRISON CLARKE PERSONALITY.

It was on December 19th, as already remarked, that Harrison Clarke made his first appearance. He came without any warning or suggestion and with his appearance all other "communicators" are completely excluded for a time. The plausibility of his claim to being a spirit, in contrast to the personality of Leopold in Flournoy's case of Mlle. Helène Smith, lay in the specific incidents narrated to prove his identity. But before he gave these he relied upon his adeptness at tricks of writing to prove his claims. He showed about equal facility in normal, inverted, and mirror writing, though Mrs. Smead has never practised anything but normal writing. What I have called inverted writing was written upside down and backward, so that it must be read by turning the sheet over from top to bottom. The mirror writing can be read only in a mirror. But when he was given to understand that these tricks of writing were not sufficient to prove his terrestrial identity and transcendental existence, he condescended to meet our demands for more appropriate data to prove his spiritistic claims, and the result was the following story which was given at different times and not in the chronological order in which I have here arranged the statements.

He was born in a small town which he said was now a part of Chicago, but did not name the suburb. At the age of two years he was taken to Albany, New York State, where he was brought up by an aunt. When he became old enough he went to New York City and worked there a short time, but removed to Baltimore, Maryland, where he obtained work in a small store. There he fell in love with a young lady whose name he gave and whom he called "his girl", and became engaged to her. Thinking that, if he was to get married, he should have a trade he returned to New York and was employed as a typesetter in the office of the *New York Herald*. In the meantime "his girl" in

Baltimore died and the effect on Harrison Clarke was a broken heart. He enlisted in the army and was "in the last regiment that left New York City for the war". He gave an account of his marching through the streets and said he was in the ninth line of troops. This he said was in 1862. The next event with which he said he was connected was the battle of Shiloh. He named the generals in command on that occasion, saying that Grant was chief in command and Sherman under him with Gen. Lew Wallace, saying also that he himself was in Wallace's division and that Wallace had taken Gen. C. F. Smith's place because of the latter's illness. Gen. Bragg was mentioned as the Confederate commander. One night Harrison Clarke and his comrade were out, for reasons not definitely explained, wandering about through swampy ground and appeared to be lost. Near the morning they were discovered by a rebel guard and shot. Clarke was shot through the lungs, but did not die immediately. In the meantime he was visited by the spirit of his lady love who told him that he was coming with her. He demurred at first, but finally consented on the promise that he should be permitted to return some time and tell that he had survived the ordeal of death.

This was an interesting and circumstantial story. Some of the incidents it was not possible to investigate for verification or disproof, as they were not accompanied by the details necessary to secure a clue. The incident of the employment in the *New York Herald* office had its possibilities, but after writing that no such man had been employed at that office in the memory of the men there at the time, the authorities refused to permit the examination of the records of the time when the alleged events occurred. The authorities in the War Department at Washington, D. C., were more kind and accommodating. In response to inquiries on the matter, they reported to me that *there were no New York regiments in the Battle of Shiloh*, and Johnston's history of the civil war shows that the only regiments in this battle were from Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois. The battle occurred in April, 1862. The statements about the generals in that battle, except that of General Bragg who was not the commanding general, were all correct and also was the statement that C. F. Smith was ill and that his command was taken by Gen. Lew

Wallace. Mrs. Smead does not remember ever reading any account of this battle, and Mr. Smead had to read a number of articles in an encyclopedia and Gen. Grant's Memoirs in order to ascertain whether any of the details about the commands and the battle ground were true or not. He found them all true. But of course they are such as might have been read at some time by Mrs. Smead in an article about the battle of Shiloh which was one of the most important in the civil war.

But in spite of the truth about the battle, as we have remarked, no New York regiments were in that engagement. There was, I found at Washington, a Harrison Clarke in the 125th New York, but he was still living at the time of the experiments and had never been in the battle named. There was also a Harrison Clarke in one of the Illinois regiments in the battle of Shiloh, but he was mustered out at the close of the war and did not die until 1895. There was a Harrison Clarke killed in the battle of Fair Oaks, not far from Shiloh, in May, 1862, and this locality was surrounded by swampy ground. But the incidents narrated do not fit this man. But the discoveries in Washington put an end to the spiritistic claims of Harrison Clarke. It is true that he did not spontaneously say that he was enlisted in a New York regiment, but seemed to assent to it when suggested. His spontaneous statement was that his regiment was the last to leave the city before that battle. But the fact that no trace of any Harrison Clarke having been killed in that battle can be found indicates quite clearly what disposal had to be made of his claims as stated.

As soon as I had ascertained that no New York regiments had been in the battle of Shiloh, I resolved to confront this personality with the facts. I sent them to Mr. Smead and at the first opportunity he presented them to Harrison Clarke for explanation. When this was done Harrison Clarke showed the natural embarrassment which the contradiction was bound to produce, but began a battle of intellectual sparring and defiance which has hardly its equal in any of the annals of secondary personality within my acquaintance. He admitted frankly the embarrassing character of the situation and did not blame Mr. Smead for not believing him, but at the suggestion of desertion he seized the chance to say that he had deserted the New York

regiment and had reënlisted under another name in a regiment that enabled him to be present in the battle of Shiloh. But he absolutely refused to give the name under which he reënlisted! He saw a way to escape being trapped again and stubbornly refused to supply any more data for determining his personal identity. As a consequence his presence was discouraged and he soon disappeared in a fit of anger and did not reappear again for some time, when he seemed somewhat chastened and subdued, though he would not do anything more to establish his identity.

There were some non-evidential phenomena presenting superficially spiritistic characteristics that should be mentioned in this summary. Mr. Smead was curious to know something of the *modus operandi* of "communication" and interrogated Harrison Clarke on the matter. His reply (p. 254) is interesting as exhibiting ignorance, in fact a denial, of secondary personality which accorded with the opinions of Mrs. Smead who did not believe in such a thing. A part of the reply, however, seems to coincide with the "possession" theory of spirit communication, with some naïve and false views about hypnotism which might be natural enough to Mrs. Smead. Dreams he explained as similar to hypnosis. The reader, however, should consult the detailed record for all this matter as it represents psychological completeness that can not be reproduced here in the summary.

There were a number of tricks of writing performed by this Harrison Clarke which should be mentioned. At one sitting Prof. Xenos asked him to write a word beginning with the last letter first. At once "gnilrats" was written which spelled backward is "starling" (p. 233). At another time he was asked to write something backward in mirror writing. He responded at once with the sentence "sey fi uoy wish", all of it in mirror writing and the first three words spelled backward. The sentence was "yes, if you wish" (p. 237). At another time when asked to write the name "Philadelphia" in mirror writing and with every other letter omitted this was done almost to perfection with a dash and promptness that would take one off his feet, so to speak, with surprise (p. 238). The surprise, however, is not because the fact is any evidence of the transcendental, but be-

cause the readiness with which all these things were done is not the natural result of any habits of the kind in Mrs. Smead's normal consciousness, she having never practised mirror writing. Where we are accustomed to interpret facts in the light of education and habit such performances as Harrison Clarke's seem to contradict the necessity of any such habits for explaining even our normal actions.

Again to test the question of the supernormal I once placed my arm in a hanging position, so that my body would completely conceal it from Mrs. Smead's field of vision, while she was in a deep trance and with her eyes closed. Besides about two-thirds of my arm was below the edge of a table and could not have been seen if the eyes had been open. Moving my hand back and forward on the wrist as a hinge and endeavoring not to cause any noise with the coat sleeve which might affect any supposed hyperæsthetic condition of Mrs. Smead, I asked this personality what I was doing and received the answer that I was moving my hand. On my recognition of the answer's correctness, Harrison Clarke asked me triumphantly whether I did not believe in him now. I flattered him on his success but pressed him with the necessity of proving his identity if he were to satisfy me. Similar feats were performed in one or two other instances, as in the case of the "water lilies" on Mars (p. 202). But the psychologist would desire more experiments of this kind and better, and when successful would think of something else than spirits as an explanation.

An illustration of the influence of secondary personality in the conduct of Harrison Clarke is found in the following experience of Mrs. Smead. After I had reported to Mr. Smead and he to Harrison Clarke, that is, to Mrs. Smead's subconscious life, the fact that the person by that name in the 125th New York regiment was still living, this personality had the audacity to cause a vision to appear to Mrs. Smead (p. 359) in which he himself was represented as an apparition showing her his regiment marching before her, and when the ninth line was reached in which he had said originally that he had marched, he pointed out a vacancy in the line to indicate where he had been and that he had really been killed. This, it is apparent, was the utilisation of my own information conveyed to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, as

reference to the 125th New York regiment was made in the vision.

Another incident which represents a remarkable instance of auto-suggestion is the following and occurred in one of Mr. Smead's experiments (p. 254). Mr. Smead had asked what became of Mrs. Smead's soul when he, Harrison Clarke was writing, and the reply was that she was asleep. On a further question to know if she was aware of what was going on, Harrison Clarke said: "Ask her what she saw", and when Mr. Smead asked his wife to tell him what she saw, she being still in the trance, Harrison Clarke replied, "Yes, when she wakes". After she awoke, which was almost immediately, she narrated a most interesting vision. She had seen a lady dressed in olden style and had thought it was Harrison Clarke's lady love. Accepting Harrison Clarke's own account his lady love had been dead at least forty years, or about that.

I have not space to give the reader any summary of the dialogue between Mr. Smead and this Harrison Clarke after I reported my discoveries about his story of himself. I must leave this matter to the reader as it is too complicated and lengthy to reproduce. But it is a most interesting piece of intellectual warfare and defiance against Mr. Smead's attempt to bring him to terms. He parried many a blow very successfully and made out a case that we cannot refute though we cannot believe it. The psychological play of defence in the dialogue illustrates with what we may have to deal betimes in the capacity of secondary personality to carry on the simulation of the reality. There was nothing in Mrs. Smead's education to suggest the intellectual feats here performed, though she is a woman of naturally clear insights but diffident in temperament. Its psychological interest, however, lies in the unusual freedom of the case from the oracular and mystifying answers to questions that so often characterize secondary personality. There are none of the irrelevant remarks so often indulged in similar cases, unless we so classify the sharp parrying thrusts of Harrison Clarke in self-defence. He excites our admiration for the quality which makes it as impossible to disprove as it is to prove his claims. Secondary personality is so frequently absurd that it refutes itself by the incredibility of its revelations, but there is nothing inconceivable in Harrison

Clarke's claims. They only lack the *evidence* for their exterior origin, mingled now and then with the subliminal contributions of Mrs. Smead's mind. But the fact that he is everything intellectually that Phinuit was *minus* the evidence that Phinuit gave of the supernormal places his personality on the borderline between the cases of Mlle. Hélène Smith and Mrs. Piper.

CHAPTER V.**MISCELLANEOUS INCIDENTS.**

As I have already intimated the interest of this case does not exhaust itself in the Martian and Harrison Clarke phenomena. There were scattered through the sittings representing Martian matter also "communications" and personalities which had a plausible spiritistic character, some of them as unverifiable as Harrison Clarke and some of them representing facts known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. The Martian incidents directly purported to come from the deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. Smead and the deceased brother of Mr. Smead, as I have already explained. All this interested me to ascertain, if possible, whether any further development of the case was feasible. I had obtained some of the Harrison Clarke incidents at sittings which I held at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Smead and hence the case interested me sufficiently to arrange a series of experiments in my own house in New York, as I was so situated that I could not leave the city at the time. I did not give a hint of what my plans were to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. These were to try an experiment which Dr. Hodgson has desired for years to try in the Piper case, if we could find another medium of promise to make the trial. This was to establish communications between Mrs. Piper and another medium at a distance so that we could exchange messages at sittings going on at the same time. I made arrangements with Dr. Hodgson to try this experiment simultaneously with his sittings near Boston. In pursuance of this plan I brought Mrs. Smead to New York, concealing from her, as I have said, all that might suggest either my object or information about persons from whom I might expect to hear on the assumption or possibility of supernormal powers showing themselves in the sittings. In fact no one about the house knew my object.

On the appointed day and hour Mrs. Smead went into the trance in New York and at the same time Dr. Hodgson had his

sitting at Arlington Heights, near Boston. This was March 12th, 1901. I found from the progress of the trance and the meagerness and confusion of the automatic writing that there was little or no hope of accomplishing my object. But what occurred in Boston and was put on record there will have an interest on any theory of both cases. Somewhere about 11:30 or 12 o'clock Dr. Hodgson told Rector, the "control" in the Piper case, in the usual way, by talking to the hand (Cf. *Proceedings of the S. P. R. Vols. XIII, pp. 291-295: XVI, pp. 13-15*) what I was doing in New York, and what I wanted of him, namely, that he should investigate my case and see if he could "communicate" through it. Rector went on to finish his messages through Mrs. Piper and after he had closed with his usual form of statement, as if recollecting an important matter the hand of Mrs. Piper wrote in good strong script, "Remember _____ Hyslop."

I omit between these two words the pass sentence that my father, acting as supposed communicator, had spontaneously given me on February 7th, 1900 at a sitting with Mrs. Piper and intended as a means of identification in future experiments with mediums other than Mrs. Piper. On the next day, March 13th, Rector took up a part of the sitting at which Dr. Hodgson was present with Mrs. Piper and in the "communications" discussed the case of Mrs. Smead. I report here the record as made at Arlington Heights, with the omission of references to other cases not affecting mine and of certain confusions in the "communications". Rector's statements were as follows:—

"Friend, in looking over the light with friend Hyslop there is little indeed to be said by us concerning it, or the antecedents therein, exercised by the so-called light. It is really not worth recording, *i. e.*, the genuineness of it. (R. H., You mean that there is little real light, but not much.) Yes, have we not so expressed it, in different words perhaps? (Is there enough for you to send any message there?) No, there is not. (Then is it worth our spending any more time about it here now?) [Mrs. Piper's hand listens, as it were, to the invisible.] (Have you any advice to give?) Yes, and hast thou an article of his, Hyslop's, friend? (No.)

We will for absolute surety send Prudens there at once and see

precisely what the conditions are while the meeting is going on. We ask him to be wary. The so-called light as seen by us is not a light given from our world at all, but the conditions are hypocritic [deceptive] and fanciful.

(Then do you see whether the deception is on the part of the supraliminal consciousness, or is it due to the subliminal or understratum?) Subliminal and not supraliminal. And therefore the subject is not consciously deceiving, but a few suggestions from the experimenter would soon determine in his mind the conditions as herein described. It would be infinitely wiser to suggest to the subject that the statements, visions, etc., were due to the hidden consciousness, and were being produced through the condition known as *thought transference*.

(She has, I understand from you, a capacity for receiving impressions to some extent telepathically from incarnate persons.)

Yes, and not discarnate. This explains absolutely the condition there represented. [Hand then thumps the table once, then points to invisible.]

Prudens. The statements by the spirit registering are correct. (You mean by Rector?) Yes, I do. Prudens.

We can point out numerous cases similar. (It is quite frequent do you find?) Yes, in our long search for other lights than the one through which we now operate we find this unfortunately to be the case. (Do you in such cases see a light?) Not in all, but with an exceptional few. (Do you mean a light that cannot be used by discarnate spirits?) No, but a light which if rightly developed and understood could be used at times by discarnate spirits."

Some further statements were made by the trance personality about other cases, comparing them with my own and they ended with the sentence:—"There is in the person with Hyslop a light but not a deceptive one."

My sittings with Mrs. Smead in New York on both of these dates, March 12th and 13th, were entire failures, and even secondary personality was not evident, except in the fact of automatic writing. On the second of these days I received the name of my wife, "Mary" in the automatic writing. She had died a few months previously and Mrs. Smead was told the fact after the sitting of the previous day, and the circumstances were

such that they do not encourage the belief that there was anything significant in the incident (Cf. pp. 317-319). It was possible, of course, that the name of my wife could have been accidentally dropped in the hearing of Mrs. Smead, though I think it improbable that this was a fact, and especially the second part of it which was never used in reference to her. My notes will explain this. But the real weakness of the incident lies in the doubts which must be directed to my reading of the automatic writing which was exceedingly confused. I shall not vouch for the accuracy of this reading on so important a point. But it is interesting to find that my own results coincided with the judgment of Rector and Prudens at the sittings of Mrs. Piper, though it is not necessary to share the jaunty and confident air of Rector about thought transference in the case, in so far at least as these two experiments were concerned. The Martian "communications" and the incidents of Harrison Clarke were so palpably complicated with secondary personality, or subliminal mental action on the part of Mrs. Smead, that the reader who recognizes this fact must be struck with the general correctness of Rector's diagnosis. Most striking was his reference to "visions", since the reader has been informed that subjective apparitions and visions are a very frequent phenomenon in the experience of Mrs. Smead (Cf. pp. 33-45).

At the next few sittings, however, some incidents developed that suggest the possible correctness of Rector's admission of supernormal capacity to the extent of thought transference as at least necessary to explain one circumstance. The sitting on the 14th showed nothing of importance. But on the 15th early in the experiment I got my father's name. But as this had probably been seen by Mrs. Smead in my article in *Harper's Magazine* and I had mentioned it to her while in the trance at one of my previous sittings (p. 314) I could attach no significance to it, and hence I asked that the pass sentence be given to which I have referred above. My request was followed by scrawls at first and then in a few minutes the first word of that sentence and possibly the second were given, the first quite clearly. This was in a language which Mrs. Smead does not know and never has known. The sentence was known to but two persons living, Dr. Hodgson and myself, and is secured under lock and key, in a

place known only to myself, against discovery. At this and the next sitting I apparently received several names pertinent to the spiritistic theory, but as the circumstances made it possible that Mrs. Smead might have accidentally heard them I can attach no importance to the fact, though the probabilities in my opinion are against her having obtained the necessary information in any way. The real objection to their significance is in the doubtful reading of the automatic writing. The last sitting was an entire failure, owing to an attack of influenza which seized Mrs. Smead. On the whole I was not impressed with the sittings in spite of the suggestive pertinence attaching to the delivery of a part of the past sentence of my father. The evidence of the supernormal of any kind was too small to boast of and I found nothing but more or less coincidence between my own conceptions of the case and the diagnosis made by the trance personalities in the Piper case.

There are incidents, however, that lend more support to the spiritistic theory and might confirm the possibility recognized by Rector of developing communications from the discarnate. They were sporadic occurrences during the whole period of these manifestations. The first important one occurred as far back as 1896. I shall summarize the incidents in the more important of these cases. I shall collect all those pertaining to any given person so as to have them together, indicating the dates on which they occurred. I shall omit the mention of those most palpably due to suggestion, unless they may have a psychological interest justifying their mention.

Maude L. Janes.

The first striking incident occurred while Mr. Smead had charge of a small pastorate in another town than the one from which he had to ascertain whether the facts were true or not. Two years previously Mr. and Mrs. Smead had a friend and parishioner by the name of Maude L. Janes in the town of H——, about 100 miles distant perhaps from the place of their residence at the time of the experience to be narrated, and whither they had moved, not having seen Miss Janes for the two years. In the meantime an occasional letter between Miss Janes and Mrs. Smead had passed for a year after the removal in 1894,

and then all correspondence ceased, according to the testimony of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. In August, 1896, fully a year after the cessation of the correspondence, at a sitting of which the record was made at the time (p. 272) the planchette wrote that this Maude L. Janes had died of pneumonia, that she had died on March 25th, 1896, and that her attending physician was a Dr. St. John. This purported to come direct from Maude Janes. Mr. Smead wrote to the mother of the lady to know if Maude was living or not, and learned in reply that she had died of pneumonia on April 25th, 1896, not March, and that her physician was a Dr. St. John. In response to the question at the sitting where she was buried Maude Janes had named the cemetery, but the statement proved on inquiry to be false, though there is some indication that this place named had been thought of.

The circumstances in the case and the measures taken by Mr. and Mrs. Smead to ascertain whether the "communications" were true or not seem to indicate that the knowledge thus gained through the instrumentality of the planchette was in some way supernormal. It is interesting to remark in this connection that this Maude Janes, in a conversation some years before, evidently on the subject of spirit return, had said to Mrs. Smead: "I'll come to you when I die". She did not purport to communicate again until February 1901, when a very pretty series of messages was delivered which should be summarized, though they mostly represent facts known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

On February 6th, 1901 there were two sittings at both of which Maude L. Janes was the "communicator". In response to questions she repeated most of the messages that were given in 1896, but getting the date right this time which of course was now known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. But she got the burial place wrong as at first, though Mrs. Smead knew well enough what it was. Then she spontaneously mentioned the fact that her mother had died and that several persons, naming them, in the home town of Miss Janes, were there with her. Then the following came:—

"Do you know that Professor H—— has given up the school and the girls are almost all married now. Minnie married 'mutton squash' and Ella his brother and Marian Alvord, Alfred, and

Lewis Reynolds are married. Prof. H—— did wrong to Willie Capel: took all his money and then Willie had to go away to work. (Where did he go to work?) I do not remember but think it was New Haven" (p. 281).

This was followed by some non-evidential conversation and Mr. Smead asked with reference to test information:—

"(Can you tell me when you were born?) No, it don't make any difference here. (It would be evidence to me.) R W S. Read it if you can. (I cannot.) You can. (I cannot.) Don't you remember a postal card that I wrote to Mrs. Smead when you lived in Th—— that was written backwards. (I don't.) Well she will and you can read what is there if you begin with Z and count the other way and see if I have not spelled Ida. You will remember that we used to write that way to each other, *yes*. (Please to write the old letters and what they mean.) R W Z. I D A..... We used to do it so that Emily could not know what we wrote" (p. 282).

The facts alluded to in these messages were these. A Prof. H. had been Maude Janes's teacher and Willie Capel was a school-mate whose money this Prof. H. took with the promise to educate the boy, but lost it all and the boy had to go to work. Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew this much of the facts but did not know what had become of the boy. Mr. Smead made inquiries and found that he had gone to New Haven as indicated in the "communications". The "Minnie" mentioned was Maude Janes' sister and the man she married was called "mutton squash" by Maude Janes because she disliked him. Ella was the name of the lady that married the brother of "mutton squash".

The prompt reply to Mr. Smead's indication that he wanted evidence is an interesting psychological incident. Maude Janes had written a postal card on some little matter using the letters of the alphabet backward and referred to Mrs. Smead's Christian name in this way. Emily was the name of the daughter of the postmistress who aided in the mail distribution, and it was to prevent her reading the postal that it was written in this way.

The second sitting of this date which occurred only about three quarters of an hour after the first one should be read as a

whole to obtain any conception of it and also in connection with that of February 7th. Both are mainly composed of a mass of names and incidents referring to certain deceased persons who were common acquaintances of Maude Janes and Mr. and Mrs. Smead. Some of the statements were true and some turned out on inquiry to be false. One in particular that was false is interesting. It represented that a Mr. Bartholemew was dead. Mr. Smead was quite confident at the time of the message that he was dead, but inquiries proved that he was still living. The reader will notice that substantially all the facts were known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. It appears, however, that the reference to Mr. and Mrs. Atwater's going to New Britain was of a fact not known to or not recalled by Mr. and Mrs. Smead and on inquiry turned out to be true. But the death of Mrs. Cotton it seems was certainly not known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. But the reader should study the records and the notes carefully, and the psychological interest in them is considerable on any theory whatever (pp. 284-288).

There were, however, one or two facts of some note. Toward the close of the sitting the following was written:—

"Do you remember that old lady that lived with Evline Barker? (I can't remember.) Yes, you do. She was very much interested in missions, so was she. (What was her name?) I'll try to find out some time. She is here. (I cannot remember.) Have not seen her lately. (Go on.) Yes, I was trying to recall her name. (Can you?) No, what would you think you would like to know that I have not told you? (Tell me when Minnie was married.) No, why do you always want numbers? (Because they prove something.) They are hard to remember after we come here. We do not have to remember them after we come here. (Where did Mrs. Russell go after she left H—?) She went to live with Emily. (Where?) I did know the place, but do not just remember. (Where is Mrs. Russell now?) I do not know. You see she left town. (Go on.) when I was at South Hadley, Mass. (When was that?) I went to school there 1893 to 1894. (What school?) My father can do that for you. I would rather not. I went with my cousin" (p. 284).

Mrs. Cotton was the name of the lady that lived with Evline

Barker, the latter of whom was much interested in missions and Maude Janes used to make fun of her. It is true also that Mrs. Russell went to live with her daughter. Emily Maude Janes also went to South Hadley with her cousin in 1894, but not to the school there. The fact was not known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, according to their testimony.

There was an interval of some time before Maude Janes was "communicator". Sylvester and others occupied the sittings until March 6th when Maude Janes reappeared. Mr. Smead at the opening of the experiment had expressed the desire for a Mr. Hoyt to communicate and was rather expecting this than any one else. But Maude Janes announced herself and after a little conversation of an unimportant character between her and Mr. Smead the following occurred:—

"(You may write what you please.) Minnie will write soon about what I told you. (Any facts you wish you may tell me. I want to prove that it is you. I have a good deal of proof now, but I want more, Maude. Try and give it to me.) Can you tell me who was my teacher at H— before you came there? (No, I never knew. Who was it?) Mary was. (Mary who?) Will [erased] Wilson."

Mr. Smead had written to Maude Janes' living sister Minnie to inquire about some incidents mentioned in the previous "communications" and the letter in reply arrived on March 7th, one day later than this sitting. Mr. and Mrs. Smead seem never to have known personally or otherwise any Mary Wilson as teacher of Maude Janes. Inquiry from persons living in that town brought out the fact that a lady by the name of Mary Wilson had been the teacher of Maude Janes before Mr. Smead went to the place as a pastor. The objection that can be made to the incident is that this name might have been incidentally mentioned to Mrs. Smead during her friendly acquaintance with Miss Janes and forgotten. But if it was ever so mentioned it is certainly now wholly forgotten.

The "communications" continued and the following incident has much interest as purporting to represent post-mortem ac-

quired knowledge which inquiry showed was unverifiable, though quite natural and possible.

"(Can't you think of another test?) Not now. (All right, you may let that go now. Be perfectly free with us, Maude, and make yourself at home.) Tell papa to look in mama's Bible for what I told you first. She did put it there when you sent it to her first. (Go on. Did your mother tell you?) She said so. She did tell me, yes" (p. 308).

When Mr. and Mrs. Smead received the original message purporting to come from Maude Janes in 1896 Mr. Smead first wrote to ascertain the facts and sent the sheet of paper on which the message was written to Maude Janes' mother, and it was never returned. Only a part of the original sheet was given to me as record and the remainder was Mrs. Smead's record made at the time. Thinking this a good test incident, if verifiable, I myself made a personal visit to the old home of Maude Janes and interrogated the father to ascertain whether the record could be found in the bible of Mrs. Janes. Mrs. Janes had died some time after her daughter and had been dead several years when this message was given. But neither the father nor the sister knew of any such paper, and as another family had lived in the house with the use of all the furniture and the books, it is probable that the paper referred to by the "communicator", if it was ever put in the bible mentioned, was lost, as it was allowed to lie about the house and table all this time according to the testimony of Mr. Janes (p. 312).

After some conversation between them regarding correspondence with the father about the incident just discussed the messages continued:—

"(All right, Maude. Go on, write what you please.) [In reply the pencil drew some scrawls about the same point, and then drew a clear triangle, after it quite a perfect square, then an imperfect circle with a clear triangle in it, and after this lines representing an angle outside the last figure, a right angle, and bisected it. *Mrs. S. became totally unconscious at this point.*]

(Who is this now?) Maude L. Janes. (What is that drawing?) Geome [letter 'e' erased]. Prof. H—— taught me. (You did not spell 'Geometry' right.) Geometry. (Draw me some geometrical problem please.)

[A square and a bisected angle were drawn. In the bisected angle a circular line was drawn, indicating the mode of bisecting it.]

(What is that?) I don't remember it, only remember how it looked. (Draw me another one.)

[A straight line and two angles were drawn above the line and the lines lettered as if for a demonstration. Then followed an attempt at the demonstration] " (pp. 308-309).

Mrs. Smead has never studied geometry and never, to her recollection or that of Mr. Smead, knew that Maude Janes studied it, which was ascertained by inquiry. Mrs. Smead knew that Maude had studied algebra, as she visited the school at the time. But the Smeads moved away from H—— the year before Maude studied geometry which was probably studied the year after the algebra. The demonstration was not clear, in fact would be treated as unintelligible and a failure. But this is no matter of importance. The interest lies in the probability that the Smeads did not know anything of the facts to which the messages point. All the incidents, however, are quite consistent with the view that Maude Janes was a real communicator, but the evidence of such a supposition is too weak to effect conviction.

Sylvester Smead.

Sylvester Smead was the brother of Mr. Smead and was accidentally killed by a railway engine which struck him as he was crossing the tracks. This had occurred some years previous to the date of his appearance as a "communicator". His death, therefore, and the manner of it was well known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

Sylvester's name appeared, so far as we have the record, for the first time on June 3rd, 1895 in connection with the names of Mrs. Smead's deceased child Willis and her brother John. He was also mentioned on August 15th, 1895. His name was then mentioned several times as instrumental in the Martian "com-

munications", as we have already seen. On October 26th, 1900, his presence is inferred from the way in which he addressed his brother, Mr. Smead, as Billy which Sylvester always called his brother. But the messages are not such as to encourage the belief in his actual presence (p. 276).

There was no further appearance of Sylvester until February 13th, 1901 when he came after the wrangle with Harrison Clarke and after the latter had been told rather plainly that he had to be treated as the secondary personality of Mrs. Smead. What took place on the date just mentioned has considerable interest though not evidential of the presence of this brother.

"(Who is here?) No answer. (Is Rose here?) No. [At once a very singular bird was drawn. Cf. p. 292.] Me, me. (Who is me?) I. (What do you mean by the bird drawn?) Me, my you. (What do you mean by 'me, my you'?) You. (Who is doing this?) I am. (Give me your name.) When I explain. (Please explain then.) Will you believe me? (I will as far as I can.) It might be yourself. Your friend told me that you had an impression that it was Ida's second self but he is not her. Your brother Sylvester. (What about that bird? I do not see.) I thought it might be called your second self. Does it suit you? (What suit me, the bird?) Yes. (Was it a Martian bird?) No, just fun. (All right, that is a good joke. Go on.) You have treated that fellow very mean, Billy. (Who?) Harrison Clarke. (Go on, tell what you wish.) He has proved what I told you. Don't you think so? Yes, you remember I told you that if you did not want her, that she was a good girl. Your friend has put Ida to sleep for me and you do not need your hand on hers. He is going to tell me how to write without it [the planchette]. I cannot yet. It will take some time."

The reader who has examined the dispute with Harrison Clarke will appreciate this dialogue between Mr. Smead and his brother as a fine piece of psychological play, no matter what theory is accepted. It represents Sylvester as having been under the direction and tutelage of Harrison Clarke in the matter of "communicating". Now the planchette had been used all along until the appearance of Harrison Clarke and he took to the pencil with great ease. It is an interesting Nemesis

to note that ever since his disappearance the planchette has to be used for the most successful work.

A most interesting fact also to note is that Sylvester just at the close of this sitting remarked, when Mr. Smead asked him if Mrs. Smead would come out as soon as usual, that "it will take longer". After this Mrs. Smead had much difficulty in coming out of the trance and it was an hour or more before she could stand up alone. She remarked that she suffered in some such way as Mr. Smead's brother must have suffered when he saw that he was going to be struck by the railway engine. It should be noted in this connection also that this occasion seems to have been the first one on which Sylvester apparently took the part of a "control".

Sylvester is not in evidence again until March 4th when some interesting by-play occurred in the spirit of what is quoted above and it was followed by some interesting messages in response to demand for proof of identity.

"This is me. (Who is me?) Me. (Who is me? Explain, please.) This is me. (Explain.) Lettie, yes. (Can you write your last name?) No. (Go on, write what you please.) [A pause of ten minutes.]

[Mrs. S. said: 'It is queer Sylvester has not been around since last night.' Understand why don't you? (Who is writing?) I did. (Who is I?) Me. (I wish you to write your name so that I may know who it is.) Why? (I am sure that I want to know if it is you.) She will not be afraid will she? (Write it. It will be all right.) I will. Sylvester. (Write your full name.) Was not that enough? (Are you really my brother Sylvester?) No. (Who is writing here tonight?) Me, Sylvester I. Smead. (How do you make that out? I cannot see. You say you are not my brother Sylvester, and then you say you are Sylvester I. Smead. How do you explain that?) I will. I am Ida's *self, second one* ['self' and 'second' underlined twice and 'one' thrice.] one.. no.. *one*. You see it then. (That joke is all tired out, Sylvester.) You are not tired of saying it. (Will you try to prove your identity?) How, yes. (By telling me things that will prove to me that you are really my brother Sylvester.) No, I will try. (Will you give me the name of your girl, Sylvester? I know Ida did not know what it was. It

would be a good test.) Evelyn. [Correct.] (Will you tell me the name of a young lady you and I used to know in Lawrence. Her father worked in the foundry and her mother was a very stout woman. The lady had another sister that was married. Will you tell me her name? This will be a good test.) Grace Cregg." (p. 304).

This last answer was correct and was the name that Mr. Smead had in mind. Mrs. Smead did not know the name. It should have been spelled 'Craig'.

The reader will appreciate the intellectual play about Mrs. Smead's secondary personality and I need not comment upon it. The name 'Evelyn', however, will have its interest explained later, as the message has additions near the close of the sitting.

Mr. Smead then asked the "communicator" if he could name the station agent at the railway crossing where he, the "communicator" had been killed, the answer was:—[Pause] "No [Pause] Mr. Hwtt . . . Hwtt . . . no . . . Hewitt." The correct name was Mr. Hoit and was not known to Mrs. Smead.

Mr. Smead then asked if he could tell where he and his brother used to hold meetings of a secret order, and the first reply was a reference again to Mrs. Smead's "second self", and then after reproof from Mr. Smead for his fooling, the "communicator" answered:—"We used to play tick tack. Do you rember remember that man that chased us. (Give the name of this man.) Mr. Rober . . . Roberts."

I had made arrangements for Mrs. Smead to come to New York for the experiments which I have already explained (p. 79). At this juncture in the "communications" Mr. Smead asked if he would go to New York with Mrs. Smead. The answer was: "No, for Ida. I don't know Mrs. Smead. (What! Did you say you don't know Mrs. Smead, Sylvester?) Yes, I know Ida, my sister, Billy. (Will you go with her?) I will. You won't be afraid now, Billy, with me."

The following incident indicates the interest in this reply. Mr. Smead's brother Sylvester used to go with Mrs. Smead before she was married to Mr. Smead and the latter had fears that the brother might alienate the affections of his ladylove and used

to exhibit considerable jealousy in the matter and the brother Sylvester delighted to tease him about it.

Mr. Smead then asked the second time for the name of his ladylove. The answer was: "Evy . . . Evelyn was the name of my girl. (What was her last name?) Sargent." (p. 305).

The facts are these. Mr. Smead had found in the pocket book of his brother Sylvester, after his death by accident, a poem dedicated to a lady by the name of "Evelyn" and suspected that this was the name of his ladylove, but did not know. When he asked the question, however, he was thinking of a lady by the name of "Minnie Sargent" whom Sylvester knew and who might possibly be the person concerned. Inquiry showed, however, that the name was Evelyn Hamel, and neither "Evelyn Sargent" nor "Minnie Sargent". (p. 306).

On April 5th there were some confused messages purporting to come from Sylvester, but they have no suggestive value. He did not appear again until May 30th, which was Decoration Day, the day for decorating the graves of the soldiers who were killed in the Civil War. Sylvester called attention in the "communications" to the fact that his mother was feeling badly that night and that they had put flowers on his grave that day. He also referred to his brother, calling him "Joie" exactly as he spoke of him in life when he wanted to tease him for his melancholy moods, and said: "You know Joie always would make her feel so. It was enough to kill a living person to hear him so. I heard him today." (p. 373).

It was the intention of the father and mother, as inquiry showed, to put flowers on Sylvester's grave that day, though he had not been a soldier. But as it had rained and was so wet they did not go to the cemetery and no flowers were placed there. As this act of reverence, however, was a customary one it cannot be treated as in any way evidential. But inquiry showed what was not known of the brother "Joie" that day, that he was in an exceptionally melancholy mood and had annoyed his mother with it. Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew of his disposition however, and this fact may weaken the evidential value of the coincidence.

Immediately Mr. Smead asked his brother if he had gone to New York with Mrs. Smead and the reply with the continued conversation between the "communicator" and Mr. Smead has

considerable non-evidential interest. I shall not quote it, but refer the reader to it in the appendix (p. 373).

There was no apparent evidence of the presence of Sylvester after this sitting until October 20th when, in a rather confused sitting, he mentioned a deceased Henry Stevens, not traceable, and a mutual friend, "Billy Russell", of himself and Mr. Smead, also deceased, the fact being known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead. Again there was an interval of his absence until December 10th when some advice was given to Mr. Smead about his duty to preach against sin. Nothing having the appearance of evidential matter was communicated. On December 29th, in a very confused sitting, he reproached his brother, Mr. Smead, for asking too hard questions of his deceased children, apparently a very pertinent rebuke when we consider their age which was that of very young persons. There was no further appearance of Sylvester until June 19th, 1902 when Sylvester said to his brother "You doubt me, Billy", apparently referring to Mr. Smead's desire to have the Imperator group control and of which there had been sporadic, but non-evidential indications that they were present. On August 18th, same year, he wrote his initials and in response to Mr. Smead's question if it was his brother Sylvester the reply was in the affirmative. The last mention of him was on October 28th when he gave his name "S. I. Smead" and it was said that "he comes here sometimes".

Burleigh Hoyt.

On February 9th, 1901, an old acquaintance and parishoner of Mr. Smead's purported to communicate. He first stated that he lived at Sandwich and in a moment gave the initials of his name as "B. B. H.", by which he was recognized, though Mr. Smead did not mention the name, but only said "I know now". The "communicator" then said, "Why do you not write to my wife and comfort her? She is a good woman". Mr. Smead remarked: "I am sorry about your son George", and the reply was: "Poor boy! It is hard for his mother and Lydia. She takes trouble well". The boy was in an asylum. Mr. Smead then obtained his consent to ask questions to prove his identity and the "communications" continued as follows:—

"(When did you die?) It was in July. [Correct.] (What day of the month?) It was a year ago last July. [Correct.] (What day of the month?) You was there and it was on Wed— at one thirty o'clock afternoon. (Can you give me the day of the month?) I don't just remember, but think it was the 17, yes, you know, you came over the next Sunday, yes. (Go on.) You remember what the people used to call me. (Yes, but will you write it for me to keep?) Captain Hoyt. [Correct.] (I thought it was Burleigh.) Yes. (Go on.) Then when you first came to our town you remember what I told you about finding water? (Yes, I do. Won't you write it out so I can have it as evidence?)

I, Burleigh Hoyt, told this brother when I was talking with him in the driveway at the back of his house near the pump that I could and did have the power or gift from God which enabled me to tell whether the place which was selected was a place in which the water supply was good and would be lasting, and I, Burleigh B. Hoyt, No. Well they called me Burleigh, and I, B. Burleigh Hoyt write this to prove to any one who may doubt my good pastor's word that it is and was B. B. Hoyt.

(Write your name as you used to do on earth.) I cannot do it with Sister Smead's hand. You know I was such an old Body and shook so: it has left me now." In a moment he remarked that the incident about the water finding was not known by Mrs. Smead. (p. 289).

The facts are these. Captain Hoyt, as he was called, died as indicated except that Mr. Smead is not certain about either the date or the hour of his death. He thought the date was the 19th of July. In other respects the incidents were correct. Mrs. Smead did not know the incident about the finding of water. Mr. Hoyt was a dowser. Lydia was the name of his son's wife, known to Smeads. The allusion to the shaking of his body is correct, as the man was palsied. The use of "Sister" and "Brother" as applied to Mr. and Mrs. Smead was characteristic as it was the habit of the denomination to which they belonged.

Mr. George Morse.

On March 2nd, 1901 the "communications" purported to

come from an old acquaintance of Mrs. Smead's of whose death she had not heard. The sitting is marked with sufficient interest in its incidents to quote it as a whole.

"Mr. G. Morse. (Write it again.) Mr. George Morse. (Is it Mr. George Morse?) Yes. (You may go on. Write what you wish.) Yes, take to my wife my love. Tell her she will be with me soon, that her mother and Lizzie will be with me waiting for her. (Give me the name of your wife.) Mary Morse. (That is your wife, Mary Morse?) Yes. (Tell me the street and number, so that I can find her.) I cannot tell you just where. You can find her by asking her pastor. (What church is it?) The Fourth Street. (Is it the Fourteenth Street?) No, Fourth Baptist Church. (What city?) South Boston, yes. (You may go on. Tell us what you wish. I will try to find your wife for you.) Miss Robertson knew me. [The maiden name of Mrs. Smead.] (What was Miss Robertson's name?) There were several girls, but we all liked this one best. You call her by a different name. (I call her by the name of Ida M. Smead. Do not forget that.) Not that. (What do I call her then?) Maude. [True. I often call her Maude instead of Ida.] (Is this the George Morse that Ida used to know when she was a girl?) It is his father. (When did you die?) In the year when God called me. It was some eight years ago, I think. (Can you tell me the month?) Mary can. You see she will remember better. (Will you tell me the disease?) Pneumonia, yes. (You have been dead eight years, have you?) It must be. (You may go on, Mr. Morse. You may give me any test I can have to find out that it is really you.) I would like you to ask my wife what my trade was. (What was it, that I may know if her answer is correct?) Master mason. (Do you mean brick or stone?) Stone, yes. (Go on.) Y—— I will tell yer yo Ida.

[I did not know what this answer meant and we asked for an explanation and the following was given.]

Your wife was wondering if Lottie was here. [Mrs. Smead said she was thinking that 'if this was really Mr. Morse I wonder where Lottie is'. The answer refers to her thoughts.]

(Go on. Give me another test that I can use.) You can ask Mary if her sister's husband is still living, but he is here. (Give the name of this man.) It is Lottie's father. Dudley. (Give me his

first name, can you?) No. (Good night, Mr. Morse. Come again.) I thank you. Some time when God is willing" (p. 299).

The full notes on this sitting should be consulted by the reader for all details. The most important facts are as follows. Mrs. Smead had known this George Morse when she was a young girl and had not seen him for seventeen years and had not seen any of the family for fifteen years. She knew nothing of his death. He died on October 9th, 1895, two years later than his own statement made it in the "communication". His wife's name was Mary and he had belonged to the Fourth Street Baptist Church. Mrs. Smead knew both facts. He died of paralysis, not pneumonia. He was a master stone mason the last two years of his life. Mrs. Smead knew only that he was employed in some sort of job work and never saw him dressed in a way to suggest his work. Mrs. Smead did not know that Mrs. Morse's mother was dead.

There is some confusion connected with the mention of the name Dudley. Mr. Dudley is the name of the husband of one of Mrs. Morse's sisters and is still living, while it appears that he is said in the "communications" to be deceased. But there was a Mr. Caldwell who was the husband of another sister and who was deceased. Mrs. Smead knew this fact, and did not know whether Mr. Dudley was living or not. She knew that Mrs. Dudley and her daughter Lottie were deceased. There is apparently some little dramatic play on the "other side" in this passage to cause the confusion about the two persons.

Mrs. Keliher.

On April 24th, 1902 occurred a sitting with a somewhat remarkable record, owing to the hints of true facts amidst great confusion and reminding us of this peculiarity in many of the phenomena connected with the experiments with Mrs. Piper. In order to make it clear I shall transcribe the most of it.

"(Who is writing?) [Scrawls with two or three letters clearly written. They were 'rer'. Scrawls again.] Rus— (Write it plainer.) Russell. Russell. (I asked a mental question, 'Was your name William Russell? If so write it.) My name was not

that. Sister's was. (Go on.) She is not here. (What was your name?) Stearns—Lowell. (Write your name. I cannot read it very well.) Mrs. Stearns. (Write the last word again.) Stearns. (The name is 'Stearns', is it?) Yes. (What was your first name?) * * [scrawl] * * [undec.] Lowell Rose. (Try to tell me your first name.) * * [undec., resembles 'Clelee'.] Lowell Rosa. * * [undec.] (Will you tell me who you are?) I did. (I know that you told me your name, but you did not tell me your first name. If I can get that I shall have a fact to work with.) Rob— * * [scrawl] will kn [know]. (I was impatient and said that all that was of no use.) Wait. (I will. I am sorry that I was in a hurry. I ask your pardon. Go on.) Robert * * [scrawl] Robert. (Robert? What Robert?) Robert will know. (What is the last word?) Know. (What Robert?) Russell will know. (Robert Russell of Sandwich?) I told you. Do you know him? [Question asked here forgotten.] Yes, you do. Robert, yes. (Whom do you want Robert Russell to know?) Mrs. Stearns Lowell, his wife's sister. (Did you write sister?) Yes. (Will you give your first name?) * * [undec., but looks like 'Celelee', as first written and then repeated less distinctly.] (Are you Robert Russell's wife's sister?) I am her sister. (What is your message?) She was good to me and she was good to father. You will remember him. She told me about your preaching, so I have heard youI thank her, tell her. (You want me to thank Mrs. Russell?) Yes, my father [?] does too" (p. 351).

I regard this sitting as the most interesting and the most important in the whole record, as I think the following facts will indicate. It will be noticed by the reader that Mr. Smead had William Russell in mind when the name "Russell" was first given. The correct name was given without suggestion from him.

Mr. and Mrs. Smead had known a Robert Russell some four or five years previously in connection with some religious work, but had not seen him since they moved from Sandwich, except two or three times. Mr. Smead had to make special inquiries regarding the pertinence of the messages at this sitting. He found the following facts. Mrs. Russell's sister was deceased, having died about a year before this "communication". But

her name was not Mrs. Stearns. It was Mrs. Keliher. Her husband had worked in Stearns' Manufacturing Company in Lawrence, Mass. Mrs. Russell had cared for her father in Lowell before he died. This fact probably explains the reference to the father and his wish to thank Mrs. Russell.

It may be of some interest to remark the fact that Mrs. Keliher died in a delirium in which she lost the sense of personal identity (p. 352).

John Pratt.

The incidents associated with this name in the "communications" were so confused as compared with the facts that I summarize it immediately following the Keliher case, because it has a somewhat similar interest.

On January 23rd, 1902 the writing began with drawing flowers as soon as Mr. and Mrs. Smead sat down to experiment. When the "communicator" was asked who he was he replied: "I have no name". Asked to explain the words "Hill, St. Hill, Hill, St Hill, Hill Street" were written after much difficulty and confusion. The dialogue then began more intelligently and with more ease in the writing.

"(What is it about Hill Street?) I lived on Hill St. [The planchette then drew a representation of the street named.] (That is good. I can see that. What city or town?) Near Medford. (Is that word Medford?) Yes. (Go on, tell me all you can.) * * [scrawl] J. Cooper. (Write that over again.) J. Cooper. (Is that your name?) No. (That name is 'J. Cooper', is it?) Yes. (What do you mean by 'J. Cooper'?) I knew him there. (Tell me your name, please.) I lived near him across the street. (Please tell me your name.) * * [scrawls possibly containing the letter 'P'.] J. P. [?] No [?] Pratt [clearly written] (Is that name 'Pratt'?) Yes, yes. (Will you take pains to tell me the rest of your name?) P [?] P [?] T T I am John. (Is your name John Pratt?) Why yes. (Where did you live?) I told you Medford, near it. Nearer the water station. (Do you mean the pumping station in West Medford?) [Question suggested by Mrs. Smead.] Near it. (I understand that you lived near the pumping station in West Medford?) Yes. (What message have you to give? What

is your wish?) My only wish is to be beside them all that were my earth friends, yes. (Tell me all you can.) I would like to have you tell them wife and I are here, that their friends and neighbors still think of them. We come home to them sometimes to know how they are thinking of us. (How can I find you out?) You might ask for the Austins. I cannot tell them all. The agent on * * [undec.] the hill road to tell you where I lived" (p. 469).

After this sitting which recalled an incident in her early life Mrs. Smead wrote out that she had once, when about 14 or 15 years of age passed through Medford on the way to visit this pumping station, knowing only the son of a man by the name of Bornes who worked there. She was on her way to Arlington Heights. She says that she never heard of Hill St. in West Medford, and does not know whether there is a Hill St. She states that she knew a Clara Pratt who lived in Medford Hillside and that she never knew either of her parents or the street on which they lived. This visit was, according to calculation, placed some 18 years before this sitting.

I myself paid a personal visit to Medford to investigate the matter and the results made a very full account of the incidents necessary to which I must refer the reader (p. 471). But they are briefly these.

Medford Hillside is between College Hill and West Medford, not very far from the pumping station to which reference is apparently made in the "communications". I ascertained on careful inquiries at the Police Station that that there was a Hillside Road, the name given recently to what was Hillside Street. I found also that a family by the name of Pratt lived on this street, but both man and wife were living and did not answer to the statement of the message. But I was told that another Pratt had lived somewhere in the neighborhood long before, but that they were not relatives. I made further inquiries of old inhabitants and found that a George Pratt, not John Pratt, had lived on Adams St., opposite a man by the name of Cooper whose name was William F. Cooper, not J. Cooper. Mr. Pratt had died in 1886, the wife in 1898. I also found a family by the name of Austen. The lady was a widow and she had lived a long time in the place and knew of the Pratt family, and referred

to the daughter and son as having lived on Adams St., but did not know them personally, only heard them talked about. Her husband was dead.

The reader will remark extraordinary closeness to the truth in the "communications". The errors are considerable and would make the case worthless even for secondary personality were it not for the coincidence of the surnames and the reference to the fact that Pratt had lived opposite one by the name of Cooper. There seems to be no evidence that Mrs. Smead knew any of the facts, and if she did it would seem that secondary personality ought not to have made such egregious mistakes. If she had ever learned any facts bearing upon the coincidences involved it would seem that they must have been learned in some casual and fragmentary way. But my inquiries made to decide this matter did not result in anything that would either confirm or suggest such an hypothesis.

Frank Miller.

It will be interesting to detail incidents that purported to come from a Mr. Frank Miller, the husband of an aunt of Mrs. Smead. Secondary personality ought to have an easy time of it in the case of a relative so near to Mrs. Smead. The first time that Mr. Frank Miller purported to "communicate" Mr. Smead was absent and only Mrs. Miller present with Mrs. Smead. This was February 9th, 1901. On February 8th Harrison Clarke began his own "communications" by saying that Sylvester was there and when told to go on he said: "He says he was to an uncle's house when he came here, and that you were very much shocked when he left when he left. He went very suddenly. (Ask what uncle?) Mr. Frank Miller. (Let him go on.) Yes he says that this uncle came here just a few days before Christmas, and that he left here so as to be at the home he was to leave so as to help him when he came here" (p. 253). On the next day, February 9th, Mr. Frank Miller having died on December 23rd previous, the name Frank was written spontaneously and repeated in response to Mrs. Miller's request. A remark was made that he had never done this kind of writing before, and in connection with it the name Jane was given, which was given as Janney the second time and finally as Jenn. The name Mary was also

written and the statement made: "met your mother and Joseph's boys and my mother and our little boy, father" (p. 291).

Mr. Miller had always called his wife Jennie, her name being Betsey Jane Miller. His living daughter's name was May Eva, not Mary. Mr. Miller's father and mother were dead and so was Mrs. Miller's mother. Joseph was the name of Mr. Smead's father, still living, two of his sons deceased. Mr. and Mrs. Miller had lost a little boy about two or three years old. There is, of course, nothing evidential in the incidents "communicated", but they have a psychological interest which is very great for understanding the imitative powers of secondary personality, if we are not to credit the messages to real spirits. The messages are quite probable if we suppose spirits and are yet not easily anticipated, as they are not of a stereotyped character but would be most natural, after what we have seen of similar incidents in the Piper case. This will be found true throughout the personality of this Mr. Frank Miller. Mr. and Mrs. Smead, of course, knew the facts.

On April 29th Misses Jennie and May Eva Miller were present beside the mother and Harrison Clarke the "control". Apparently the name Miller was gotten with some difficulty at first, and after a great deal of confusion and effort the name Betsey, but nothing more was obtained (p. 356).

On May 3rd Mrs. Miller and her daughter May Eva were present and some interesting dramatic play took place apparently representing the intervention of Harrison Clarke on the "other side" to get Mr. Miller, the would be "communicator" to take a certain position. This took up nearly one-half of the sitting, and then the "communications" began.

"I have much to say and wish that you could let me hear you so that I could know you did, that would help me. Tell me, why don't you Jane. Mary can you tell me so that I can talk to mother. (Do you want Mary to ask questions?) Yes. (Mrs. Miller: You want me to ask, do you Frank?) [Spoken in an ordinary tone of voice.] Speak loud Jenny. [Mrs. Miller put the same question in the same tone of voice.] Speak loud. (Mrs. Miller: Frank are you happy where you are now?) Why won't you say it so that he can hear better. (Mrs. Miller: Are you happy?) [Spoken louder.] I am very

happy and when you see the little boy you will think what a pretty boy he is. Do you understand me?" There was some further insistence on being told whether his messages were "heard" or not, and finally, in response to the query by Mrs. Miller, whether she was doing right, he said: "Yes, you did right to come here, yes, it was better to come here nearer to Wils Willis. Mrs. Miller had recently moved from the farm into the town, taking a tenement near to Mr. Smead's.] (Mrs. Miller: He knows.) And we can talk to you too Jenny we can be happy because we know Willie will look after you" (p. 361).

The only important matter of psychological interest in this is the reference to Mr. Smead as Willie. His name is Willis, and this is apparently attempted once, but the next time it is given "Willie", which, Mr. Smead says, was what he was always called by Frank Miller.

On May 16th Mrs. Miller and her daughter May Eva were present, and after the usual greetings Frank Miller announced his presence and remarked in a few moments, "strange to call it night because it is not night to us here". After a little further conversation he was asked by Mrs. Miller to tell her something that the others did not know. He replied: "Mary came after me". Mrs. Miller's sister Mary was dead but had died before Mr. Miller, and the fact was of course known to the parties present. But Mrs. Miller seems not to have understood the possible reference and said: "It is I that asked you, Frank, not Mary", meaning the daughter May present. Then an interesting dialogue began as follows:—

"Well, Jennie, I can. Mother was talking to me about her. *
* [undec.] (May Eva: Have you anything more to say, papa? You wanted to hear me talk. Cannot you say something?) [No answer.] (Mrs. Miller: Frank, have you not anything more to say to me tonight?)

[Slight change in the handwriting, and apparently Harrison Clarke writes.] He is gone now with that lady that came, Betsey you called her what her name was. The other one I could not hear. Do you know her? (I think we know her. Will you wait till I read what has been written?) I am. [Written in large clear letters.]

(A little of it is not clear to me.) with her. (I do not seem to understand, Mr. Clarke.) Read it, the [I did so very carefully.] (We think we know whom you meant. She is Mrs. Miller's mother, Mrs. Betsey Hall.) Mrs. Betsy Ball, did you say? (We said *Hall*, not *Ball*.) [Spoken loudly.] Yes, I hear you. (Has she got anything to say?) She has gone with Frank. (Mrs. Miller: Is there any other friend of mine that is here tonight?) I will try to get them for you next time. It takes time to get them so that they can use this. [An intermission of twenty minutes followed.]

[Sitting resumed.] (Is any one here?) Yes, her uncle is. (Will he give his name?) Yes, George. (We would like to have him write now.) He will try. He cannot now. It troubles him. (We wish he would, Mr. Clarke.) He will stay near until he learns. I think he will be able to by then, do not you Mrs. Smead? (Yes, I think so, Mr. Clarke.) George was too much surprised to write" (p. 367).

Mrs. Miller had an uncle George and both he and his name were entirely unknown to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. The name Betsey explains itself, as it was mentioned in a previous sitting (p. 358). I have explained the possible reference to Mary. But aside from these names the chief psychological interest is in the peculiar appearance of a "control" by Harrison Clarke and the representation of events on the "other side".

On May 22nd Mrs. Miller and her daughter were present, but no message purported to come from Mr. Miller. The sitting was a confused one and related apparently to other persons present, though not in any evidential manner (p. 370).

On July 6th they were present again and "communications" of a non-evidential sort appeared to come from Mr. Miller, but they have considerable psychological interest in spite of this character.

"(Who is here?) Frank W. Miller. (What have you to say to us?) Where have you been? [Question lost.] Why not Jennie? (Have you a message for us?) Yes, I want to tell you much. my mind is confused when I try to remember. When we are here we would like to talk just as we did when here with you, but we cannot. we just try to do the best we can. Mother is here and so * *

[scrawl] others. it is hard to write and listen both. We try and write the best we can. Mother is here and so are others and it is very hard to write when so many are talking. It tires us. Good night, Mary, Jennie, all " (p. 384).

The reader will remark striking resemblances between these statements and similar ones made by "communicators" in the Piper case.

On September 24th Mr. Miller purported to "communicate" again, but there is nothing of interest to quote. It consisted of general conversation between the "communicator" and his wife and daughter (p. 398). On the 28th of September, after some apparent messages from a stranger by the name of Rand, the "communicator" who turned out to be Sylvester, was asked if Frank Miller was present, Mrs. Miller and her daughter Jennie being present at the sitting. The answer was that he was not, and on the query if he was at home with Mary, the other daughter, he answered in the affirmative.

The only interest that attaches to this incident is that this daughter Mary, or rather May, was at home trying the Ouija board for messages and got one purporting to come from her father. Unfortunately the message was not preserved and I could not obtain it. The fact of her effort and alleged success was not known to the sitters until afterward.

There was nothing further purporting to come from this Mr. Miller. But on January 20th, 1902, apparently Sylvester referred to Mr. Miller in asking his brother Mr. Smead to break the news of Jennie Miller's death cautiously to his mother. It is interesting to remark, however, that Mr. Smead's mother had already known of the death for some time and Mrs. Smead, the medium, knew well enough that her husband's mother knew the fact.

Cecil Smead.

In August (the 25th) 1901 Mr. and Mrs. Smead suddenly lost a little boy by the name of Cecil. He had apparently been poisoned by eating some canned shrimps and died the day he took sick. Apparently Mrs. Smead had a premonitory indication of his death (p. 386). Some incidents took place as the boy was

dying which the reader should note (p. 387). Among them was an apparition of a man who was after him and presently of a group of persons after him with ropes. On September 2nd, the first sitting after his death, the child Maude, a still-born sister of Cecil's years before, was represented as "communicating" and made a reference to Cecil. On September 5th Mr. Smead's brother Sylvester and Mrs. Smead's brother J. Houston were represented as "communicating" and they referred to Cecil, and apparently Sylvester, speaking to Mrs. Smead said: "Your brother was with me when he came here and he did not know him, so was some afraid and we were careful not to hurt him." This statement coincides with the apparition and his fear when dying. On September 14th Cecil apparently "communicated" directly. Much that he wrote was in capitals which was characteristic of him in life. His father, Mr. Smead, asked him, in my opinion, an absurd question to ask a child of his age, about ten or eleven years, what his disease had been, and received the reply: "N O, N O. (Do you mean that you will not tell me?) it H u R t S. (Does it hurt you to think of it?) Y E S." This strange statement coincides with phenomena often noticeable in the manners of mediums who are represented as "possessed" when they simulate the psychological and physiological conditions of the "communicator's" memories of some past, or show the psychological disintegration of the "communicator's" experience near the point of death.

On September 15th nothing of psychological interest occurred until Cecil's surviving brother George asked him to "tell him a Bill story". The planchette immediately drew the picture of a cage with two wheels and an animal in it. Below was written the word "tiger". Mr. Smead was accustomed to tell what he called "Bill stories" to his children, and a few days before the child's death he had seen a circus.

On September 23rd Mr. Bowles was present for the first time. Maude appeared first and made some reference to Martian matters and when Mr. Smead asked her about Cecil there was an apparent change of personality and Cecil remarked that "this Mr. Bowles did not use to come when I lived here, did he?" This was true, but of course known by Mrs. Smead. Mr. Bowles at once said: "I would like you to write something for me,

Cecil". The answer was: "WHERE IS—— (Jack?) YES. (Go on.) I AINT AFRAID OF HIM Now." Mr. Bowles had a dog by the name of Jack of which Cecil was very fond when living, but was afraid of him. (p. 396.)

On October 2nd some very interesting intimations purported to come from Cecil. Mr. Smead asked if Cecil was present, and got the answer: "Yes papa dadie Cleve". He was called "Clevie" and he used to speak to his father as "Papa daddie". When asked to write something to prove that he was present the planchette drew the representation of six tubes, a railway engine with wheels, fender, cab, and projection on top, and after a great deal of trouble wrote the word "PUZZEL", having begun with "PuSSEI" and for several times getting nothing but "PUZ".

Cecil had a cardboard engine puzzle and had often put it together. Mr. Smead gave it to him the Saturday evening before he died and he failed to put it together. No known significance attaches to the tubelike lines.

After the reference to the puzzle Cecil mentioned a trunk and repeated the word. Mr. Smead then began with a question:

"(Do you mean a trunk you had?) Yes, little one. (What little one, Cecil?) george took it. (Was it Georgie's?) No. (Mama and I do not remember about George taking a little trunk. We cannot think that he did. We don't understand.) Yes, he did. look in my desk, Papa dadie * * [scrawl] yes. (Go on. Explain to us, Cecil.) You took me away. (Where, Cecil?) up stairs. (I see now what you mean.) George took it. (Took the little trunk?) yes, yes. (Mama thinks that I took it, not George. How is that Cecil?) No, George did do it. I asked him to. (Why did you ask George to take the little trunk, Cecil?) I was going with you. (Are you not mistaken?) No." [Maude closed the sitting by saying that she was helping Cecil] (p. 408).

Mr. Smead gave Cecil this trunk or box Saturday afternoon, the day before he died, but neither Mr. nor Mrs. Smead remember anything of George's giving him this trunk. But the next morning Mr. Smead questioned little George about the matter and learned that Cecil had asked him to give him the trunk and

that he had done so, and the little boy seems to have remarked that his mother was out in the kitchen at the time and Mr. Smead was not in the room. Mr. Smead remembers carrying the boy upstairs that day. This was on Sunday the day of the boy's death. The reader should consult the detailed notes (p. 409).

On October 4th Cecil drew a hand with a ring around the forefinger and when asked what finger he wore the ring on replied by drawing the hand a second time with the ring on the forefinger and then the planchette went back and indicated that it was on the second finger. Asked to explain, the answer was "both papa". He had worn his ring on both fingers. He was then asked if he remembered the little trunk and the reply was "yes". In response to the question to tell what was in it he said "cloth", and for further information he said "wole", repeating this word after a request to write it a second time. Apparently it was intended for "wool". Mr. and Mrs. Smead did not know what was in it, and Mr. Smead immediately got the trunk and found cloth, wool, and paper in it. He then accused Cecil of not knowing that the paper was there and the reply was that he had "only looked at it now". It had been put away after his death. (p. 411). Asked to tell something else he said that he did not know what to say, but as if suddenly recalling something after he was asked what he put in his pocket book, he said "cards and stamps and you did in yours". The incident is true.

On October 7th there was considerable printing of capitals, and when Mr. Smead asked Cecil whom he had seen when he was passing out of the body he gave with some confusion "uncle Vester, Frank, and uncle John" (p. 413). But the passage has interest enough to give it.

"(Whom did you see when you were passing out of the body?)
MEN UNCLE VESTER. [Then the planchette went back and erased the word 'uncle'.] FRANK, no, BABY. (Who else?) JOHN BABY. [Planchette then went back and wrote 'BABY' in front of 'JOHN'.] UNCLE. (What do you mean by 'Baby John'?) ['UNCLE' and 'JOHN' underscored many times indicating that the answer to this question was 'UNCLE JOHN'.] (Do you mean your uncle John?) YES. (Have you seen your uncle Frank tonight?) We see him. (Have you seen

your uncle Frank tonight?) NO. (Who were they?) I DON'T KNOW ALL THERE NAMES. MAUDE WAS AWAY."

The expressions 'Baby John' and 'uncle John' have some interest. Mrs. Smead's brother John had died when a child two and a half years old and was of Course Cecil's uncle. Mrs. Smead says she never called him 'uncle John' in Cecil's presence, but always as her brother in heaven. For a coincidence of the answer to Mr. Smead's question the reader may compare the incident with Cecil's dying experience. (p. 387.)

On October 30th after considerable confusion Cecil asked for "my books, watch" and when asked what book he wanted, replied "daily food". He had a little book which was called "Daily Food" and was very fond of it, as he was also of his watch (p. 428).

On November 2nd after some confused "communications" Cecil was asked:

"(Tell me something else, so I shall be sure it is you.) Express to ashland. Express to ashland. (Explain it, please.) When Mama was in new york, papa. (What did you do when mama was in New York, Cecil?) ashland. (What about Ashland?) Express, yes. (Did you and I go to Ashland?) Yes. (What did we go for?) Lecture. (Tell me anything else.) my night pants. (Tell me something else.) Mittens. (What about the mittens?) You no [know]. (I don't remember.) You bought them. (Did I buy them when mama was in New York?) Yes" (p. 430).

The facts are these. When Mrs. Smead came to New York for experiment with me Mr. Smead took Cecil to Ashland to hear a lecture. The boy needed night pants and these were bought for him before going. Mrs. Smead did not know that they were taken with him. She knew he had the mittens, but not that they were taken with them. There was no "express to Ashland", but while on the train Cecil was so pleased with the trip that he referred to his toy train at home and called the train they were on an "Express", and called it the "Express to Ashland". Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this fact, unless we suppose that

the boy had mentioned it to her after her return from New York and she had forgotten it. She has no memory of the incident.

On November 10th Cecil was apparently present again, but nothing occurred of importance for the summary, except that Sylvester claimed that he was teaching him how to write in this way. But on November 16th a more important incident took place. After some introductory matter in which the name George Smith was written twice, Mr. Smead said:

"(Tell me something about yourself, Cecil.) * * [undec.] yes, when we mistake [?] him for uncle vester. I am telling you about uncle Jogle. (What do you mean by what you wrote?) I thought uncle Jogle ['Jogle' erased] vester was uncle vester ['vester' erased] Jogle, when I first saw him. (Who is writing now?) Me, papa. (Are you here, Cecil?) Yes. (What was meant by George Smith?) Dewey" (p. 432).

The corrected statement about the mistake of the two persons named stands: "I thought uncle Vester was uncle Jogle when I first came here". The correction was spontaneous. Mr. Smead had a brother Joseph, living, and Cecil always called him "uncle Jogle". Sylvester, the reader will remember, was another deceased brother, and the representation is that the latter was mistaken for the former. Now Cecil had never known his uncle Sylvester, but knew his uncle Jogle well. It appears then that the "communication" representing his mistake of Sylvester for this uncle Jogle related to what purports to have taken place on the "other side" about the time of his death. The reader will recall the reference to a man after him as he was dying (p. 387). I asked Mr. Smead whether there was any resemblance between the two brothers, Joseph and Sylvester, and he replied that there was, but that he did not think there was enough to have one mistaken for the other. After writing this answer he went and examined Sylvester's picture with which Cecil was acquainted and thought that the resemblance between the two brothers was sufficient to cause the mistake indicated.

When dying Cecil had said, "Don't let uncle Jogle get me", referring to the "ropes". (Cf. p. 435.)

When Mrs. Smead came to New York for the experiments

mentioned above she was to be known as Mrs. Smith to conceal her identity from all she might happen to meet, and she had drilled the little boy George who came with her to the name of George Dewey Smith if he was asked his name, telling him that his real name was not to be known.

Another passage at this sitting has considerable interest, especially as Mr. and Mrs. Smead thought the boy had died of poisoning, though they thought that an incident referred to by Cecil was true:

" (What was the cause of your death?) mr. Bowles made me. he didn't know. (What disease did you have?) not any, but tired, papa. (How do you explain your high fever?) Don't know. (Dr. Bowles wanted to help you.) Yes, I told him to stop, yes I did papa. (I know you did, but he didn't want to hurt you, Cecil.) I will forgive him. (Do you think that you could have gotten well, if he had not done that?) I guess mr. Garland could have helped me most papa. I liked him best. I didn't know Mr. Boles was a Doctor, papa " (p. 433).

Dr. Garland was the regular family physician and so was usually called in when any one was sick. But as this Dr. Bowles, a son of the man who was present at a previous sitting, was visiting at the next door and as Mr. Smead at first thought there was nothing serious he called in Dr. Bowles. When Dr. Bowles found the boy's bowels in a bad condition he performed a rather severe operation on the boy, and the child cried out often for him to stop and shrank from him after it. It was thought the operation hastened the boy's death. It is true that the child did not know until the day of his death that Dr. Bowles was a doctor.

On November 28th nothing of importance was "communicated" by Cecil, but he asked if his mother saw him at the time, and on receiving a negative answer he said that she had seen him. Asked to say when, he replied: "she sees me lots of times". Now up to this time Mrs. Smead, though wishing often to see an apparition of the boy had not done so. (Cf. note p. 438 and also p. 437.) On December 9th, however, she saw an apparition of the child (p. 444).

On December 1st a sitting was held while the little brother

George was out in the evening at a Junior League. Cecil sent the message: "Tell little brother to be careful how he goes across the street, to look both ways. I have to watch him. (Haven't you got through watching him yet?) no, I am going to go home with George". Cecil had been accustomed when living to watch his brother George when crossing the street. The fact, of course, was well known by Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

On December 4th there was a sale at the church and Mrs. Smead had made some emeries for needles. Mr. and Mrs. Smead remained at home and had a sitting. At the first of it Cecil appeared and admonished his father to go to the church and look after the boys, and then referred to "selling the sand" and spoke of them as pretty. This is a curious way for the subliminal to speak of the emeries (p. 440).

On December 11th Mr. C. H. Bowles was present and a curious incident occurred for subliminal explanation. Cecil immediately announced himself and on being asked if he saw Mr. Bowles present replied in the affirmative and added: "And Jack too, papa. George is afraid of Jack like I used to be, papa." Jack is the dog Cecil knew. (Cf. p. 447.) Mr. Smead replied by saying that Jack was not present and the answer came: "but you don't see him like I do." Mr. Smead insisted and said that the dog was at the barn, and Cecil replied "Yes, his body". Mr. Smead denied it again and the answer was "he did come", and Mr. Smead provoked by the silliness of it repeated his denial and the reply was: "well you ask him but I know he *did*". "What nonsense, how can I ask him?", said Mr. Smead. "He can bark", was the answer.

Mr. Bowles then asked that something be said to him and the "communicator" asked, as if putting the query to the father, if "his boy played ball with George", the "communicator's" brother. After some further conversation Mr. Bowles asked if Cecil had any word to send to Dr. Bowles, the son of the sitter. The reply was: "I told him I would not play ball with him any more. I knew best. He said get well, but I don't have any more pains now". When Dr. Bowles was attending the boy on the day of his death, Cecil, because of the pain, said that he would not play ball with him again. (p. 447.)

" (Tell Mr. Bowles what you mean.) I can papa. you will be glad when you come here, because it is better here, Mr. Boles. (Mr. B.: I have a little boy over there where you are, and I would like to know if you have seen him.) Yes, that was why I asked you ' what George ', Mr. Boles. I have seen him. the little boys and girls here don't grow old here. tell Mrs. Boles. (Mr. S.: How is that, Cecil?) they grow bigger but not old. (Mr. B.: Who was with my little George, Cecil?) he was with some other boys and girls. They were bigger than me, papa. I didn't know them. (Mr. S.: How did you know that the little boy was Mr. Bowles' boy?) I knew it was him because he went to Mrs. Boles and called her mama. (Mr. B.: I would like you to find him, Cecil, and bring him with you some time.) yes, I will for you, Mr. Boles. I am going to tell him when I see him again, Mr. Boles. (Mr. S.: I suppose that you have met many of Mr. Bowles's people, Cecil. Can't you tell us about them?) I can see lots of them, but I have been with uncle Vester and Bena and Maude mostly all the time, papa " (p. 448).

Earlier in the sitting Mr. Bowles had asked Cecil if he had seen his little boy George and the reply was " What George? ". It was explained and the answer " O, yes ", given. There is nothing evidential in the messages pertaining to this little boy, but they contain most curious conceptions, apparently coinciding with much that is seen elsewhere in spiritistic literature. The remark about growing big but not old is an interesting one when we consider its coincidence with the messages that purport to come from children years after their death. The proper names mentioned at the close of the sitting are pertinent, as the reader will recall the uncle Sylvester and Maude, the boy's deceased sister. Bena refers to Robena Sparling, who died at 5 years of age. Cecil never knew her, but was fond of her picture.

On December 21st Cecil alluded to a Henry Russell as his best friend, which was a fact. The boy is still living. Then a number of " communications " regarding Christmas which was near were made that show a most decided appearance of pure secondary personality. There are no peculiar psychological features of them to require quotation. It was much the same on December 25th. But on December 26th there are some very interesting evidences of dramatic play on the " other side ", and the

reader should study the whole sitting for this. It is too long to quote in full. But I shall abbreviate its important features.

The "communicators" were Cecil and Maude. Apparently Maude asked that Cecil's box be gotten for him, referring to Cecil. Then his stamp book was asked for, and apparently it was Cecil who remarked that "the home are best", meaning the American stamps which he always did like best. Presently Cecil called for his watch, saying, "Maude wants to see, papa". Immediately that the watch was put on the table the message was written: "That is a pretty one, Cecil". Then, "Where is your book? Cecil's book papa". Asked if the stamp book was meant the reply was: "no, the little one". The "Daily Food" book was gotten when the message was written, "see that? yes, take it off." Mrs. Smead took off the covering. "Yes, it is pretty, Cecil. I like them too. Yes, we like to look at them. Get some more". Mrs. Smead took a small package whose contents she did not know and asked Cecil what was in it. The reply was "pencil". This was correct. She then took another package which she knew to contain a valentine and said so. The message came, "Show it to Maude." Then, as if to Maude, "had at our Junior League, Maude, last time". He had gotten the valentine at his last Junior League. The sitting then soon came to an end. (p. 455.)

On January 2nd 1902 Cecil made an interesting reference to the prospective birth of a child which the reader may see in the record, and wrote emphatically "do not forget the ring", having a few moments before said "when you get the baby put my ring on its finger, so that I can know it" (p. 461).

On January 16th some interesting incidents occurred. The sitting opened with writing the letters "C S" and the digits "10" followed by all the digits up to 10, and the dialogue began:

"(What does that mean?) In Cecil book, yes. (What do you mean?) numbers, mam Goose Multiply. (Go on, dear. You got that mixed. It should have been 'Marmaduke Multiply', Cecil.) multiply is all rite [right] papa. (All right, go ahead, Cecil. Why did you make those figures and that mistake? (I liked it cause it was funny. (Go on.) mother Goose is there too. [We did not notice this until he called our attention to it.] (You meant 'Marmaduke Multiply', didn't you, Cecil?) I guess I did.———(Go

on.) my dear papa, tell me a story about Bill. (Do you want me to tell you a Bill story, Cecil?) yes, papa. [I did so and in the course of it said: 'Bill didn't get a blessed fish Clevie'.] no, don't say it, blessed fish, cause it is only a story, papa" (p. 466).

Cecil had a book that he was very fond of. The title of it was "Marmaduke Multiply". In it were sets of rhymes involving numbers, so that he learned many of them by the use of this book. It was in his desk at his death and was there at the time of the sitting. Next to it was "Mother Goose Rhymes" which he also liked very much. When the writing was going on the books were behind Mrs. Smead and she had no thought of them. The confusion of the two in the expression "mama Goose multiply" is most interesting on any theory: natural on the spiritistic, if we take the Piper case as a standard, and instructive on that of secondary personality, as it would show this agency capable of mistakes similar to those claimed for spirits in confusion of mind. In regard to the "Bill story" incident, Mr. Smead says: "I had always taught him not to say words that were not fit to use. I specially taught him not to say what he called bad words and he had a deep sense of reverence for sacred things".

On January 24th Cecil "communicated", but there was nothing of interest occurred until the sitting was nearly through when in response to the suggestion that he go and "communicate through Mrs. Piper in the daytime, he said: "I come sometimes when its day too in the houses. I am not afraid of the dark like I used to be, mama". Mrs. Smead said: "There was never anything to be afraid of Cecil. Jesus would take care of you." The reply was: "Yes, but I would forget sometimes". The pertinence of this may be seen by reference to my note (p. 475). It shows what trouble they had with the child's fear of the dark.

On January 25th he "communicated" again, but nothing worth mention. On April 4th Cecil's grandfather and grandmother were present, but the sitting is too long to quote and contains little of interest. Nothing further came from him until October 16th and 28th when little more than his presence was indicated. The record closes on November 21st.

I have quoted this personality at length because, in spite of the fact that Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew most of the incidents indi-

cated the psychological phenomena are of great interest to the student of psychical research. They cannot be used as evidence for the spiritistic theory, as any one familiar with secondary personality will see at once, but they are quite consistent with the spiritistic theory and make the problem of investigation all the more interesting for this consistency minus the evidential quality so needful, if it is a question of convincing the reader.

Thomas A. Hanson.

I have chosen a pseudonym for this person because the sitter, his son, is a minister whose identity it is necessary here to conceal. This Mr. E. C. E. Hanson, the son, and sitter, was a friend of Mr. and Mrs. Smead's. Mrs. Smead apparently did not know that the father was dead, though this fact might have accidentally been mentioned in conversations during acquaintance. The name Hanson was given, April 11th, 1901, and when the Christian name was asked for, it was given as James E. D., which was wrong and then the words "Missions Canada" were written. The father had been a missionary to the Catholics in Canada. Mrs. Smead seems not to have known this fact, but Mr. Smead did. He was spoken of in the "communications" as an "Elder" which he was, and it seems that Mrs. Smead knew nothing of this fact. All that she knew was that the sitter's father was dead and that he had been connected with some French work in a town in the United States near the home of the Smeads.

"Unknown Friend."

On December 4th, 1901, after Cecil had delivered some messages, a new "communicator" suddenly appeared just after an interruption of some minutes and claimed to be a friend of Mrs. Smead, saying that he was a man, but refusing to give his name. He showed some of the adeptness of Harrison Clarke though employing no tricks of inverted and mirror script, but only readiness and clearness. He gave Mrs. Smead's maiden name and its address which were correct. After some playful banter between Mr. Smead and himself the sitting was closed with an appointment for two days later (p. 441).

On December 6th according to appointment this "communicator" appeared and carried on a discussion about Mrs. Smead's

subliminal in a delightful manner, rather discrediting the existence of such a thing, but evidently on the ground that it meant a denial of individuality. Toward the close of the sitting he remarked that there was a "little girl she looks like her mother". Asked for her name he replied "Maude", and then arranged to come again on the following Wednesday evening, this being Friday (p. 442).

There was a sitting on the 10th, the day before the appointment just mentioned, but the "unknown friend" did not appear. Sylvester "communicated." On the 11th, the date appointed, the "unknown friend" appeared and still refused to reveal his identity. He made the remark that Mrs. Smead's life was to be fought for in this work, but did not make clear what he meant by it. The sitting was suddenly interrupted and when it was resumed this "communicator" did not return (p. 446).

On December 18th he appeared again. Mr. Smead had resolved to ask various questions pertaining to life on the "other side" and the mode of "communication". The answers to the first questions are not interesting enough to quote in this summary, but some of the latter are. I quote:—

" (How do you manage to use the medium so as to let me know who you are?) I use her arm: some use the brain: some use both. (Do you take hold of her arm?) Yes, and sometimes it is necessary to use the brain. (Is life continuous?) With some they are like being unconscious. To you they are sleeping for awhile. They are not unconscious though. they need rest after a sad struggle with life in the body. (What do you understand life is?) Life is eternal, eternal God * * [undec.] (Where is the medium when she appears to be in a trance?) She is not in a trance. (I know that. Where is she when she is in a trance?) Between heaven and earth, that is, neither here or there. (Are the hypnotic state and the trance state identical?) Not that I know of. They do so many silly foolish things when they are Hyp— [word not finished] that no person ever did in a trance. (Do you as a spirit consciously desire to establish communication with this world?) I will when I have made her know me. (Does the world of spirits so desire?) Is that not doing so? (Yes, somewhat. Are you all striving to accomplish this end?)

not all. some try and cannot." The sitting came to an end with an appointment for December 28th (p. 451).

On the date appointed the "unknown friend" appeared according to arrangement, and although several sittings had been held in the meantime without his appearance, he complained of the difficulty of "communication" and the confusion led to a postponement until the following Wednesday, January 1st. I refer the reader to the sitting (p. 457).

On January 1st, according to appointment, though Sylvester had communicated on December 29th, the "unknown friend" appeared. But an interesting episode occurred. The time appointed was 7:30 p. m. Mr. and Mrs. Smead sat down at 7 p. m. for the experiment and the following took place before the "unknown friend" appeared:—

"(Whoever is here may write.) M— Sm * * [undec.] Mis * * [undec.] Clemns here * * [undec.] ster Smead. Stella Cleamens. (Is that word 'Stella'?) Yes sir, Stella, no. Yes, Cleamens, yes. [planchette then erased letter 'a' in 'Cleamens'.] (Clemens?) Yes, don't you know me? (Where did you live?) near Hartford. (Please tell me more about yourself.) Yes, you came to see me. (Where?) At Brother Frank's house. (What was 'Brother Frank's' name?) Filley. (Who was Frank Filley? Did I know him?) Yes, you used to come to get your money. (I remember getting money at Mr. Filley's place, but what did Frank Filley have to do with it?) You used to get it from Frank sometimes. (I remember that Frank used to bring it to me sometimes.) yes, so did Arthur Clemens. (I cannot remember this. What disease did you die of?) Cancer. [Correct.] (I cannot remember what your name was, but I do not think it was Stella.) [The reader must now notice the change of personality.]

No, Miss Clemens has to wait. She has made a mistake, so will try to get it right. (Who wrote that?) unknown. [It was 7:30 p. m., the time agreed upon for him to come.] (Was her name Stella?) no. (I suppose that you do not know.) Yes. (Do you know what her mistake was?) She said that she had made one. (Will she come back tonight?) she is here. (Will you let her

write a little while?) If you wish it. (Ask her to correct the mistake.)

My M' [?] Clemens. Mis * * [undec.] Clara, Clara Miss M. Clamens ley. Mary Clemens Filley. (Who is here now?) Sister to Mary. (What relation to A. N. Filley?) his wife. (Is Mary C. Filley his wife?) yes. (What is your name?) * * [undec.] Harriet M. Clemens. Harriet. (What message have you?) My Boys are to be told, if you will tell them, I came here. (Who are your boys?) Frank, Arther [Arthur]. (Anything special?) No. (Will my unknown friend resume the writing?) He has gone. (Can you tell him I am ready for him?) no, do not know where he went " (p. 458).

A second sitting was held after the above on the same date. In the meantime Mr. Smead had looked up the name of the person trying to communicate and found that it was "Martha Clements".

"(I find that your name was 'Martha Clements'.) Guess you do not know me. (Who is it then?) Your Friend. (Is this Mrs. Smead's friend?) No, Hastings. (Is that word 'Hastings'?) Yes. (What is the first name?) Chas. (Tell me your full name.) Hastings, you know me. (I want to know your first name very much.) Why? (I do.) * * [undec.] Charlie Stanley is here. (Will you tell me something so I can know it is the one I think it is?) Yes, mountain, Bolton. You came to see me and it rained very hard when I came here, Hastings. (Will you give me your name in full?) * * [undec.] William Hastin—Hastings. (Is that word William?) Yes. (Go on then.) * * [undec.] (Write it again.) moris Hastings. [Morris Hastings is correct.] (Go on.) T * * [undec.] mores, yes. all then * * [undec.] were so * * [undec.] (Will you write something to prove to me that you are a real spirit?) how? (What did you ask me to do for you before you died?) Yes, wanted you to tell the young men I was sorry I did not give my heart to the Lord, and that I wanted them not to wait. [Correct.] (What else? Did I say anything to you?) You asked me if it hurt me much. [Correct.] (What was your father's name?) William H * * [undec.] Har * * [undec.] (What is your father's first name?) Harvey " (p. 459).

The reason for summarising the messages from these two "communicators" is because of their peculiar dramatic relation to the "communications" of the "unknown friend". The reader will notice that the latter was interrupted to have the mistakes corrected. The mixture of truth and error in the messages is a very interesting phenomenon. Mr. Smead says that it is difficult to say how much of the facts were known and how much not known by Mrs. Smead. The interest is the same in any case.

On January 20th this Martha Clements appeared again in the interest of her former communications and made the same mistake in regard to her sister. Her first message implied that her sister was dead and the name was spelled "Clémens", though it was known that her sister was still living and that the name ought to be spelled "Clements". She also spoke of John Taylor as on the "other side", that is, as deceased, and intimated the same of a man by the name of Frank Rockwell whom inquiry found still living, but dangerously ill. John Taylor is not known to Mr. Smead. He knew a Charles Taylor who is still living (p. 467).

Mr. Smead knew a Martha Clements, but not a Stella Clemens. Martha Clements died in 1895 and was buried by Mr. Smead, Mrs. Smead knowing the name and the fact very well. Frank Filley was not her brother, but her brother-in-law's son. Mr. Smead used to get his money from this Frank Filley and thinks it probable that he did also from Arthur. Martha Clements died of cancer. Harriet M. Filley was the wife of Mr. A. N. Filley, her maiden name being Harriet Mary Clements. She was living at the time of the sittings. Frank and Arthur are the names of her sons. "Clara" is possibly a mistake for Martha. This Martha Clements was the sister of Harriet M. Filley.

The real or apparent confusion in these messages is the most interesting and important part of the phenomena. Note that Frank was once indicated as a brother and then as a son, apparently of the "communicator", if "my boys" must be so interpreted. This interpretation would make the "communicator" Harriet M. Filley, (néé Clements), but she was living at the time. The allusion indicating the "communicator's" identity as "sister to Mary" and stating that her relation to A. N. Filley was

that of his wife shows how false the message is, but that it is nearly enough correct to wonder why secondary personality did not do it better, as Mrs. Smead knew the facts! If we ignore Mr. Smead's questions and interpret the messages independently we shall see their pertinence. What appears then is that Martha Clements was trying to give her own name as sister to Harriet M. Filley who she said was the wife of A. N. Filley.

There was similar confusion in connection with the names of Morris Hastings. When asked for his first name he gave "Chas." which was wrong, but which was the first name of the Charlie Stanley mentioned a few moments later and who is thus represented as with him. Morris Hastings's father was Harvey W. Hastings. Mr. Smead does not know whether his middle name was William or not. The reader will notice that the "communicator" gave this William as his own first name. The incidents about his death bed are correct to the letter, except that Mr. Smead does not remember whether it rained on that occasion. The reference to the raining, however, may be to what occurred as he was dying.

On January 2nd the "unknown friend" appeared again, after some messages from Cecil, and made an allusion to the "subliminal". Then the dialogue began:—

"(Will you explain?) no use. (I cannot understand that nonsense.) that is what you people call us. (I have not taken that view of it.) Then what do you ask for whenever we come about whether we are spirits or not? (Cannot you or my brother write something so that I can know that he is a real spirit? Will you try to do so now? I may know all about it that you are spirits, but others do not, and I am trying to get some facts to prove it.) Your brother does not try. He seems utterly tired out with so much nonsense. (I did not know that spirits ever got tired.) no, when we try to write, and it is so hard, it does tire us as it does you, but some of the old feelings come back. (That is a pretty good answer, Sylvester.) I am not your brother. (Please who are you?) Your unknown. (The one here before?) Yes. (Ida's friend?) Yes. (Go on then.) now do you believe me? (Yes, go on.) Yes, all right. he believes us now. (What do you mean by 'he'? me?) of course.

(I am glad that you are here. Try and give me some facts that I can find out are true and that I can use to make others know you are a spirit.) I have to wait for a long time. (When will you come again?) cannot just tell. (Cannot you see how important it is for you to give me some facts that I can have to look up?) I will try when I come again.

(If you are what you say you are why do you try and dodge every time? Why not now give me the facts?) llst, llst, * * [undec.] (I see that you will not tell me anything. Why do you do so?) when she goes to Boston. (That is all bluff. You might as well have told her when she went to New York. Tell us now.) Fred Childs. (Go on. That is what I am after.) Herbert M— [‘M’ erased]. (What about him?) Ellers brother worked for Merrill. (Go on. That is what I want.) Yes, Ella Potter, Potter. (Ella Potter?) Yes. [Mrs. Smead said that she did not know them.] Yes, she did know them. Merrill is here. (What Merrill was it?) Geo. (Mrs. S.: Is it Merrill the milkman?) Yes, yes. (That is just what I want. Tell some more.) John left * * [undec.] (How can we find out about all this?) Candlin. (Candlin?) Yes, he would remember G. Merrill. Get him to tell you, Candlin. (What Candlin?) He will remember. you know. (You mean the minister?) Yes” (p. 462).

There is no certain internal evidence that this “unknown friend” finally yielded enough to intermeditate for the names mentioned. But spirits must be fools if they suppose we are to be convinced by such performances as those of Harrison Clarke and this “unknown friend”. Mr. Smead was entirely within his rights when he insisted that this man reveal his identity, as he is not to be taken for a spirit until he can prove this. He was clear in his messages and in facility of “communication” resembled Harrison Clarke, but showed none of his tricks of writing. But whether he was conquered or not it is impossible to tell, as we may suppose that this personality simply disappears and another takes its place. In any case the change is to the kind of subject matter which is needed to sustain the claims of spirits, at least in their superficial character. The answer, “when she goes to Boston”, would seem to indicate that the pertinent

messages were made by the intermediation of this "unknown friend" in concession to Mr. Smead's demands.

Fred Childs was a boy of 15 or 16 years of age when Mrs. Smead knew him and went to school with him. Ella Potter had only a speaking acquaintance with Mrs. Smead when the latter was young. She was older than Mrs. Smead. Herbert Ellers is not known. There was a Herbert Potter, of whom Ella Potter was a sister. It is not known whether he worked for Merrill the milkman whom Mrs. Smead had known and who is dead. John is possibly a reference to a man by the name of John Taylor, mentioned above (p. 463) and not known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. At least it was pertinent to name him. It was also pertinent to mention the name Candlin and recognise that it was the minister that was intended, as the Rev. Candlin would be in knowledge of the facts.

Mary E. Pollard and Rose Candlin.

These two personalities were linked together in a manner in the "communications" that make it necessary to deal with them in the summary together. The sequel showed that the Miss Pollard evidently meant was not deceased but still living, but she was so related to the Rose Candlin who also appeared to be a communicator that the psychological interest of the sittings associates the two persons.

On March 3rd in the afternoon the "communications" showed great confusion until finally Mary E. Pollard was written. This person claimed to have lived in Somersworth, Connecticut. Mr. Smead expressed his doubts about such a place, but it was insisted on. Finally she said: "I taught school at one time". After the sitting he looked up his geography, as the "communicator" advised him to do, and found that there was no such place, just as he had thought. There was a Somers or Somersville, both places being practically the same. At the opening of the evening sitting of the same date Mr. Smead stated his find to the would be "communicator" thinking that Miss Pollard would be present. But he was confronted with the message: "She is not here, Willis, but your dear girl is." Mr. Smead asked who it was and remarked that it must be Rose. The reply was, "you have guessed it". This was followed by a

statement that she knew Miss Pollard and a description of her and a dress she wore. Finally she remarked that her mother was on that side and expressed her regret at a misunderstanding between herself and the Smeads, which Mr. and Mrs. Smead did not recognise until it was more definitely indicated, when Mr. Smead said he recalled it, and she then said that she had behaved in such an unladylike way. Mr. Smead replied that he forgave her when she confessed that she knew better, indicating her sorrow for it (p. 480).

There is no definite proof of the supernormal in the incidents thus told, but they have considerable psychological interest since they are so remotely connected. The reader will have to refer to my lengthy note to understand the reference to Miss Pollard (p. 482). Inquiry showed that there was no Mary E. Pollard that would fit the case, but there was a Miss Mary Alice Pollard who had taught school in Somersville, Conn., and inquiry showed that she had married Albert Candlin, son of the Rev. Joseph Candlin, whom Mr. Smead happened to know.

The expression "your dear girl" in Rose Candlin's messages has an interest. Mr. Smead often called on Rose Candlin and his present wife together. Miss Candlin when expecting him would often remark to Miss Robertson, maiden name of Mrs. Smead, "Better hurry up and get your dress changed. Willis will be coming, and he'll want to see his dear girls looking nice", until Miss Robertson became tired of it. On a visit to Mr. and Mrs. Smead in Bolton, Conn., she had frequent attacks of hysterics which they thought at the time to be quite preventable.

Briefer Incidents.

The detailed record in the Appendices will show many pertinent names that were mentioned early in the history of the case, few if any of them having any evidential value for the supernormal. An aunt Fanny Burch had purported to "communicate" among the first (p. 269). A Mary Ellen Webster was mentioned among several other names on December 1st, 1900, and Mr. Smead told to ask his mother about her. She was said in the "communications" to be a "great aunt". All that Mr. Smead's mother knew was that her grandmother Wat-

kins' mother's name was Webster. A Mary Jane Watkins had been mentioned in the sitting of August 15th previous to this and she was said to be Mrs. Smead's mother's mother (Cf. p. 270).

On the same date as the mention of the name of Mary Ellen Webster Prof. Xenos was present, and the name of his deceased little boy was given as James Eugene Xenos. Prof. Xenos had but recently moved from the far west and nothing of his private history was known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. Prof. Xenos says there was no possibility of Mrs. Smead's knowing the fact, as the boy had died very young, a baby in fact, and several years before. One or two other names apparently came on the same occasion that were pertinent to this Prof. Xenos and that it was not possible for Mrs. Smead to know (p. 278). But as there was no record of the questions asked at this sitting we do not have as suggestive a set of incidents as are desirable for evidential purposes.

On May 20th, 1901 there appeared to "communicate" an old school mate of Mrs. Smead, by name, Helen Hersey. In the course of the sitting several old school mates of Mrs. Smead were mentioned, some of them reported as dead. The persons named were Daisy Simonds, Eva White, Lella White and Jennie Field. It was stated also, after much difficulty and confusion, that the "communicator", apparently Helen Hersey, had died in Worcester (p. 369). Inquiry showed, however, that Helen Hersey was still living and that there was nothing to suggest any sister or brother trying to "communicate". Her father and a brother, however, are deceased. But inquiry showed that Daisy Simonds and Eva White were dead, but no information has yet been obtainable regarding Jennie Field. Leah, not Lella, White is still living. Mrs. Smead did not know anything about the deaths of Daisy Simonds and Eva White. Miss Willett is still living. This was apparently implied by a message of the communicator.

An interesting incident was rather closely connected with the name of George Lowrey. The name Lowrey had been mentioned in the earlier "communications", but that was all. On September 27th, 1901 the sitting was very brief and apparently somewhat difficult and confused. But the name of George

Lowrey was given and also, rather under suggestion, the name George Smead. But the former name came spontaneously. George Lowrey was the name of Mrs. Smead's uncle deceased, a fact which she knew. But on the night of the same date Mrs. Smead had an apparition of a lady whom she did not know, describing her as having snowy white hair. On September 30th Mr. and Mrs. Smead received a letter telling of the death on September 26th of an aunt, living in Baltimore and whom Mrs. Smead had never known. The George Lowrey mentioned above was a nephew of this aunt. As soon as I learned of this apparition I sent Mr. S. a letter which Mrs. Smead never saw to secure a photograph of this aunt and place it among others without Mrs. Smead's knowledge to see if she would spontaneously recognise it, having never known the aunt. He did so and placed it among about fifty photos and asked her to examine them, talking to her all the while about the various pictures of her old schoolmates, and intending to mislead her as to his object. He succeeded, but when she came to this picture of the deceased aunt she recognised it at once as the lady she had seen in the apparition (p. 404).

On March 5th, 1902 a person by the name of Gillett was represented as "communicating". Whether it was "Gertie" or "Jessie" is not certain. But in connection with it the names Mabel and Johnnie were given as brother and sister of the "communicator". But whoever it was that was "communicating" stated that Mr. Smead knew him or her once, that they, the family, lived on a hill when he called, that the father was "poor in your worldly goods and some people liked to tell us of it. I was proud and did not like it". The further statement was made: "Mama was sick most of the time, so was baby. you came when he was sick once". and gave the baby's name as Johnnie (p. 486).

Mr. Smead remembers the incident of calling on the Gillett family and helped them from the poor fund. The father was a drinking man. Mr. Smead does not remember the names of the children and knows no way of finding out about them. Apparently Mrs. Smead knew none of the facts, except the possible fact that Mr. Smead had helped the family. He states his reasons for his belief that she knew nothing of the main

incidents in the "communication" (p. 486). But forgotten knowledge of the incidents is too possible to use them for any evidential purposes.

Unverified Cases.

There were a number of alleged communicators whose identity could not be established. Sometimes it was not possible even to make the investigation for the lack of sufficient clues to make it. In others the investigation, though made, either gave no information or information that appeared to make the "communications" false.

Early in the history of the record a Rev. Henry Smith purported to communicate and gave quite as specific an account of himself as did Harrison Clarke, sufficient to suggest the probability of finding that such a person had lived, if the facts were true. But a careful inquiry showed that no such person could be found in the place mentioned by the "communicator". A person by the name of Smith was found there, but the facts did not fit him (p. 274).

On October 25th, 1900 the name "Genie Brown" was written and indications from a message that the boy had died in Manchester, England; that his parents, whose names were given as Joseph and Martha Brown, were dead; that the boy had died of diphtheria, and that his parents had lived in Montreal, Canada. This case did not offer any feasible plan of search (p. 275).

On February 23rd, 1901 an Ida Nicolls indicated that she had been killed in a railway accident on the Boston and Providence Railway at Roslindale. Mr. Smead went to Boston to make inquiries and found in the records that an accident of the kind had occurred some years before as indicated and that a number of persons were killed and injured. But the name of Ida Nicolls was not found among them. On the same date as this message about Ida Nicolls two other unknown persons tried to "communicate", one could only give the name Lettie, and the other gave Miss Rosa Hern, Boston (p. 298).

On April 4th of the same year a Miss Thompson of Revere Beach purported to communicate. The case could not be verified (p. 340).

On April 13th of the same year a Caroline A. Seymore

"communicated" and stated that she had died near East Hartford, Connecticut, and that Mr. Smead had come to see her and "read the Book", and helped her to die. She gave the name of the young man who came with him as Frank. Mr. Smead recalled making such visits frequently at the place mentioned, and with a friend by the name of Frank, but he does not recall any one by the name of Seymore. Inquiry failed to discover any one by that name as having died at the place mentioned in the messages (p. 349).

On October 25th of the same year a Guy M. Pease purported to communicate, saying that he had not been dead many moons and that his home had been in Boston somewhere. There has as yet been no opportunity to investigate this incident (p. 423).

On November 21st there were some confused messages purporting to come from some one killed in the mines at Memphis, Tennessee. No origin for this message could be ascertained (p. 436). On March 6th following apparently a Rebecca Stimes "communicated", but this was an unknown personality and it is even doubtful whether the name was gotten correctly as there was so much confusion.

There were some confused and erroneous "communications" from a Mrs. Brown and a Mrs. Bishop both of whom Mr. Smead knew. I shall not summarise them, but refer the reader to them as interesting psychologically (pp. 293-294). The case of Helen Hersey somewhat resembles them. In both the facts were greatly confused. The personalities were verifiable, but some of the statements were proved to be false, at least as interpreted in the record and as they must apparently be interpreted.

Personal Incidents.

At this stage of the matter I resolved on some experiments for a better assurance of what was going on. I brought Mrs. Smead to New York for some experiments. I could not leave my college work for the purpose, and besides I wanted to test her by cross reference with the work Dr. Hodgson was doing in Boston. At the first sitting I had her tested for anæsthesia successfully. No special importance attached to this, except that it proved the existence of a genuine trance. I made a more detailed record of the facts in the experiments than Mr. Smead had

been accustomed to making and this enabled me to form a better conception of what occurred, and so to form a better judgment of the case as a whole.

I obtained the names of my father and my wife in full and possibly the names of her father and mother, the father still living. It is probable that Mrs. Smead did not know the middle name of my wife. She certainly had every opportunity from publications and conversation with Mr. Smead to know the name of my father, and did not know the names of my wife's father and mother. The latter, however, had so much confusion attending them in the writing that it may be a question whether my reading of it was free from illusion. Later I obtained the statements that my wife had studied German, that she had been in Leipsic, and that she had taught music, all of which was true. Mrs. Smead knew from a casual remark of my housekeeper that my wife knew German, and might have learned in the same way that she had taught music, but possibly did not know of her connection with Leipsic, tho I cannot absolutely exclude the possibility of this knowledge. But the one undoubted piece of evidence for supernormal knowledge was a part of my father's pass sentence. Mrs. Smead did not and could not have known this normally. I had received it through Mrs. Piper and it had never been published, nor had it been known to any but Dr. Hodgson that such a pass sentence was in existence. It was in a language which neither Mrs. Piper nor Mrs. Smead knew. I obtained the first word of it without any possibility of dispute through Mrs. Smead in these sittings, possibly the second word and a few letters of the third word, but not enough to be sure that the word was intended. As the word obtained was not only clear but was not an English word at all there can be no question from the combination of letters that it was not due to chance coincidence or guessing. I had given no hint even that it was in another language.

The most important result, however, was the overwhelming evidence that, if we are to suppose Mrs. Smead's subconscious to have been the source of any of the phenomena, whether evidential or not, it was a ridiculously weak affair. If the subconscious cannot do better things than it did in these sittings, there is not a particle of excuse for the claims so generally made

about its powers. Thomson Jay Hudson's claims vanish into thin air in the face of such results. The sittings were as confused and fragmentary as anything that ever happened. Mrs. Smead could scarcely write at all, and she certainly knew a great many things which could easily have been reproduced if the subconscious had any disposition to repeat its acquisitions. But the six sittings were simply a mass of confusions and repetitions, material which was about as absurd for evidence of the subconscious as the usual scientific reader would adjudge the evidence for the supernormal. In fact the claimant for large powers in the subliminal would be thrown out of court, if he undertook to sustain that view on the evidence here.

Apparitions.

I shall not summarise Mrs. Smead's apparitional experiences during the period of these experiments, but only refer the reader to the detailed record (pp. 33-45). I discuss some of them in the last chapter of this summary. Only one of them has any external marks of being veridical and I have indicated that above (p. 126). The remainder are wanting in the evidence that would suggest anything but secondary personality.

Control.

The reader will not remark, save in the instance of Harrison Clarke, any definite evidence of a "control" in the Smead case, like that of Phinuit or the Emperor group in the case of Mrs. Piper. Harrison Clarke represented such a control for a considerable period, as we have seen, even dispossessing all other "communicators" until chastened by our refusal to recognise his claims to be a spirit unless he either proved his own identity or aided in the proof of that of others. He finally consented to aid others and before disappearing did so, as appears quite noticeable in a sitting at which Mrs. Frank Miller was present (p. 103). Here he resembled Phinuit somewhat. There is no assured evidence that Sylvester at other times was a regular "control". There are occasional indications of it, but they are not very clear. In fact the most noticeable thing about the case is the general lack of evidence of the regulation "control". "Communicators" simply come along *ad libitum*, as if wander-

ing through space and find an opportunity to send a message, except that in most cases they are personal acquaintances or relative of the Smeads. Where they are unknown "communications" are very meager and confused, and usually false or unverifiable. In the case of friends the messages are usually in the memories of Mr. and Mrs. Smead, a fact that suggests secondary personality too strongly to urge the spiritistic interpretation of the phenomena, even though they are explicable by that hypothesis.

One fact of interest in this connection is the change of manner in the "communications" corresponding to the demands made of "communicators" to supply evidence of personal identity. It is possible that Mrs. Smead's subliminal action in this has been influenced by her growing understanding of the problem in her normal consciousness. Conversation with me and with her husband often supplied her with very elaborate conceptions of the whole problem and they represented very different ideas from those which she accepted in the early stages of her work. She has grown to understand its needs and the type of "communications" has changed to correspond with this education on her own part.

In line with these remarks also the reader may notice a change in the sittings during the later period of the record. They became more difficult and confused than ever. Mr., not Mrs. Smead, had read my Report on the Piper case (*Proceedings* S. P. R., Vol. XVI) and began to wish that Imperator would intervene. It happened that last April some time (1902) Imperator had signified rather spontaneously that he had intended to investigate my case. I carefully concealed this from the Smeads. Without any knowledge of the facts mentioned, on June 25th the name of Luther was printed in capitals and on June 29th Mrs. Smead had an interesting experience in which she thought there was to be a new control and connected it with Imperator. At the same time she saw the faces of many people that had tried to "communicate" through her leaving as if disappointed at their exclusion. She also felt as if her soul was being taken from her body (p. 502). This is the representation which Imperator makes in the Piper case of his procedure, and the Smeads knew nothing of the fact. The name of Martin

Luther was associated with the Emperor group in 1896 or 1897. The fact was not known to the Smeads and was discovered by myself when reading the original Piper records after making my record. On receipt of the record I informed the Smeads of what Emperor had promised. Mrs. Smead's experiences and the sittings are very interesting from that time, though they contain nothing evidential of Emperor's presence. On July 7th at a sitting which was a failure in so far as the writing was concerned, Mrs. Smead saw an apparition of the cross which figures so prominently in the Piper record (p. 506). The sittings for some time were failures in intelligible writing. An apparition or vision occurred on July 25th with some letters and figures associated with it. On the 26th Mr. and Mrs. Smead received from me a letter in which I had sent them, with the consent of Dr. Hodgson, some advice which Emperor had given through Mrs. Piper in 1896 or 1897 in regard to the development of mediumship (p. 509). The writing seemed to improve after this date, and on August 4th the cross was seen again. This time it was blue (p. 513). On August 8th her left hand made the sign of the cross in the air, as in the Piper case, not in response to suggestion by Mr. Smead (p. 514). On August 13th the name Luther H. was written, but there was no suggestion that it referred to the same Luther mentioned above (p. 516). On August 18th the cross was seen again, Sylvester having apparently tried to "communicate" but failed. On September 22nd the cross was seen again as Mrs. Smead came out of the trance and some physical sensation accompanied the departure of the trance (p. 522). On September 26th Mrs. Smead stated after recovery from the trance that she had come nearer dying than at any time in her experience and felt sick as she came out.

On November 24th in the morning about 4 a. m. Mrs. Smead awoke in a sort of dream in which she thought she saw Emperor with a letter in his hand. Next day her head pained her and she lay down. Mr. Smead came in with a letter, and Mrs. Smead at once remarked to him, before he had told her anything of its contents, that they did not want them to go to Mrs. Piper's. This was in fact the news of the letter. This, of course, might very well be a natural guess suggested by various

conscious and unconscious indications, though Mrs. S. says that she had the impression before she saw Mr. S. (p. 529). On January 26th the name "L U T H E R" was distinctly written in close connection with an apparent attempt, as the next sitting after this showed, to give the name of St. Augustine. On the 27th, January, the name "Luther" was again given and immediately after it that of "St. Augustine". It seems that once this name was mentioned in the Piper case also, but has not been published. But as I myself had once mentioned St. Augustine as possibly the personality of Imperator on certain conditions it is probable that this is a subliminal memory of that fact. On January 28th the name of Chesterfield was given and this personality soon took the form of control. February 9th he apparently tried to give something to prove his identity, and the word "Episcopal", written "Episcople", was given and at later sittings appears to have been meant for Stainton Moses, who was associated with the Imperator group both during life and in messages through Mrs. Piper after his death. On February 17th the name of Augustine was again given and with it that of "Aurelius". On February 19th the name "Gustavus" was given, and on the 24th while washing the dishes, in her normal state, the name "Adolphus" was suddenly precipitated into consciousness without any association that was traceable, and while wondering what it could mean, she suddenly thought of "Gustavus Adolphus", but had no recollection of what it meant and could not recall it when told.

On February 28th references were made to Stainton Moses as "Episcopalian" and as "rector", but it was spelled "Stanton", as Mrs. S. had probably heard it pronounced. On March 2nd there was a prayer very decidedly simulating those of Imperator in the Piper case (p. 577). On April 30th Chesterfield controlled and Luther was mentioned with a reference to Stainton Moses under the word "Episcopalian", and during the sitting Mrs. S. saw the cross several times. On May 1st, at the suggestion of his identity, Chesterfield accepted the idea that he was "Prudens" in the Piper case. There was also indication of the same policy of caring for the "light", the medium, as in the Piper case. On May 14th the sign of the cross was made in connection with the letters first "I. s. R.", then "I. s." the let-

ters "I. S. D." being used in the Piper case for "Imperator". On May 21st another prayer was written in the same general character as the Imperator prayers in the Piper sittings.

On May 28th I was myself present at the sittings, two having been held on that date. At the evening session the sign of the cross was written at the beginning, and on the next day, the 29th, during the sitting in the midst of some confusion caused by our fixing the table cloth, the phrase "when + comes" was written, and I asked "Who comes", and the sign of the cross was written a second time. This interposition and the sign of the cross in this way is very common in the Piper case. This was soon followed by a prayer resembling those of Imperator, as before the sign of the cross beginning and ending it. The most striking incident, however, was the writing of the symbol "U. D." This is used in the Piper case for the word "understand". It was spontaneously adopted there. The word "understand" has been frequently used in this, the Smead case, in like situations, but the symbol "U. D." never until this occasion, as if to say that I would understand the use of it having been a Piper sitter, and others would not. Mrs. S. was probably aware of the use of the symbol in my Piper Report from conversation with her husband. On June 5th the sign of the cross was made again in writing and arrangements made for a rest of the "light" in terms quite the same as in the Piper sittings, allusion being made to "Sabbath" as there, and other simulation of Piper language. June 18th another prayer was written in the Piper style, except that Mrs. S. was alluded to as "hand-maiden", a term which has never been used in reference to Mrs. Piper, so far as Dr. Hodgson can recall, but which is used by Mr. Smead in his prayers before sittings.

The apparent presence of the Imperator group had become so striking by this time that I resolved to put the matter to a decisive test, and arranged for three sittings, the third of which was to be contemporaneous with a sitting by Dr. Hodgson with Mrs. Piper at Arlington Heights. The dates of my sittings were June 22nd, 23rd, and 24th. Dr. Hodgson's was the 24th. The hours were to be the same as the Piper sittings. Neither Mr. nor Mrs. S. was informed of my purpose or arrangements.

a fact of some importance is studying the psychological interest of the results.

After the sitting began and after Mrs. S. had gone into the trance and the "communications" were clear I told the control, Chesterfield, that I wished to send a message to the other light on the third day. He responded with the statement that "Martin Luther would carry it for thee". In a few moments the hand began to test the planchette, as it were, in a new way, as if uncertain whether it could work with it. It was moved hastily backward and forward, and then to the right and left lightly on the planchette, and then raised in the air and held there for a few moments. It then returned to the planchette and wrote the word "amen", as if its elevated posture had been in the attitude of prayer. The testing of the planchette resembled some phenomena in the Piper case with the same apparent purpose. Immediately after the word "amen" the symbol "U. D." for "understand" was written. On the next day, the 23rd, the messages were so confused that the sitting was soon stopped. My father's name was given, and as Mrs. S. was going into the trance she saw the word "MYERS" in a vision as if written out. On the next day, the 24th, as soon as Chesterfield indicated his presence I told him to let me know when he was ready for my message. Some few moments were spent in bringing "Martin Luther" who announced himself by greeting me. I gave him the message "Hyslop pertinent Luther" to be taken and delivered through Mrs. Piper, not giving her name, however, but referring to her as "the other light". A few moments were taken up by him in getting my message clear. Then he left. In a few minutes the name "Hodgson" was given me with the words "Butter cheese", and then this completed by writing "Hodgson wants thee to get * * cheese". Presently the name "Myers" was written and I sent him off with the message to "Dr. Hodgson" "Help me God: love me man". Before anything more could be done Mrs. S. came out of the trance and could not return into it. Soon after the recovery of consciousness she felt sleepy and lay down. She had a dream that Mr. Myers was present trying to communicate. The next day Myers apparently tried to "communicate", but failed and as the sitting showed so much confusion it was stopped.

Two things are to be noted. The first is that Mr. Smead had that morning bought some butter and cheese and Mrs. S. knew the fact. As soon as I could see Dr. Hodgson and inquire about his end of the line I learned that he had neither received from me nor sent to me any message whatever. Besides, the Emperor group seemed to be absolutely ignorant of what I was doing. The experiment thus to communicate with Dr. Hodgson, as it was before (p. 495), was an entire failure and the whole result a fine proof of secondary personality. Mrs. S. knew nothing of what I intended or was doing until it was over.

CHAPTER VI.

THEORIES AND CONCLUSIONS.

The theoretical considerations that are suggested by this record are not easy to classify. It is of course apparent from its character, at least superficially considered, that we have some spiritistic hypothesis to notice simply because this is the apparent purport of the facts. The meaning of such a theory does not require elaborate explanation, as I may assume that it is sufficiently understood by most persons who will read this story. But I may say that the theory does not involve more than the supposition of communication with departed spirits. Whether such a theory is true or not, either in application to this record or to any other, is not concerned in the definition of its import. It is simply the claim of the record itself that defines for us the conception that we have to examine, and whose acceptability is to be adopted or rejected.

An alternative hypothesis to spiritism is secondary personality. If it were not for the existence of some facts in this case that suggest the supernormal acquisition of knowledge secondary personality would be the only alternative explanation. But if we accept the evidence for such supernormal knowledge we shall have to combine secondary personality with some such process as telepathy, or thought transference, as an escape from the spiritistic theory. If there is not sufficient evidence for the supernormal of any kind the spiritistic view must, of course, lose its suit by default, and secondary personality would have no rival. It is simply the superficial character of the facts that suggests spiritism and makes it necessary to consider it. But it can have no real credentials in its favor except such as actually support the suspicion of supernormal knowledge.

Secondary personality should perhaps be defined before

going further, as its meaning may not be so clear to the general reader as to the student of psychiatry. It is a name for unconscious processes that exhibit the appearance of a real person distinct from the normal operation of the mind, but are nevertheless nothing more than mental actions that go on below the consciousness which the subject knows. We may call the normal consciousness of any one his primary personality. This represents what he is consciously aware of and can remember in his normal condition. But secondary personality is a condition in which the normal consciousness seems to have no share and in which there is the *appearance* either of another person in the same organism or of mental activities that are wholly disconnected with the normal self. By it I consider that the phenomena which purport to have a source extraneous to the subject have really an intra-subjective origin. It is thus a convenient term to indicate that the center of reference for certain phenomena is the person's own mind, though the normal consciousness may be quite as unaware of them as if they originated in another organism. The terms subconscious and subliminal are virtually synonymous with it, and are used in this volume to denote the same conception, namely, some sort of process in the mind or brain, at least imitative of intelligence and never reaching the stage of our ordinary consciousness and memory. This activity is displayed and illustrated by such phenomena as somnambulism and hypnosis, automatic writing and similar psychopathic conditions. Though we do not know very much about the nature of such action, whether it should be regarded as purely cerebral or psychical, it seems to be certain that it denotes a subjective as distinct from an objective origin for such facts as it is invoked to explain. These facts may be variously the reproduction of a person's own experience without the recognition of it as such; or it may be the spontaneous play and fabrication of apparent realities by the subconscious imagination, if such a capacity be supposable, of the person involved without the consent, co-operation, or stimulus of the normal consciousness, and thus appearing to represent a foreign source according to the usual standard for determining objective realities. I use the term secondary

personality, therefore, to denote merely that certain phenomena, no matter what they purport to be on their surface and in spite of the appearance of an external source, have their real origin in the person whose organism is the subject of their manifestation. This conception suffices to indicate at least the evidential limitations under which the spiritistic theory must labor in its effort to establish its claims.

It will also be necessary to give some explanation of what is meant by the term telepathy. This time, however, it is the scientific man and not the general public that makes the definition necessary. The public seems to have accepted this process without any adequate evidence, as it shows no familiarity with the experiments of the Society for Psychical Research, and also seems to think that it will explain about everything from wireless telegraphy to the "harmony of the spheres." But the scientific man is extremely wary about admitting its existence to any extent whatever. Hence it is necessary to avoid misunderstanding regarding the use of the term and to explain carefully the limitations under which it is usable.

By telepathy I shall mean nothing more than some unknown process by which a mental state in one person is obtained by another without depending upon the ordinary channels of sense or recognised sensory impressions. It is thus but a term for a coincidence that requires a causal explanation and does not pretend to indicate the process by which the communication of thought, if such it be, is effected. Nor do I intend by thus defining it to admit that it is a proved fact. It will have to run the gauntlet of all theories of the supernormal, and can be used here only to explain possibilities that it may be necessary to suppose in order to escape the spiritistic theory. It is convenient for raising the standard of evidence in regard to hypotheses on which suspense of judgment is still more obligatory. Consequently I shall use it in much the same way in which the term secondary personality is used, namely, to indicate that the origin of a causal coincidence is to be found in some activity of the living human subject rather than in the influence of a transcendental world of spirits. The latter theory might even be the correct

one, but it is necessary to exercise caution in the admission of it, and the only way to do this is to insist upon the evidential difficulties of it until the facts enable us to form some intelligible conception of its phenomena and their causes. Besides we may find in the combination of telepathy and secondary personality an explanation of much that might pass for something more transcendental, and thus a limitation to hasty speculation, especially when the phenomena seem to indicate a cause that excludes the supposition of spirits, as some of them do in this and other records of coincidences.

In the attempt to apply one or more of these theories we have to consider more or less separately three cases of facts. There are first the Martian communications which have less spiritistic plausibility than any of the others. The second class is represented by the Harrison Clarke personality. The third consists of various sittings and personalities that exhibit the most plausible claims which the spiritistic theory can present in this particular case. I take them up in their order.

It will be apparent to all who are familiar with Flournoy's remarkable case as described in his interesting work entitled "*From India to the Planet Mars*", that the present record resembles his in at least one important respect, and this is its alleged planetary communications. There are, however, two important differences. The first is that the present case, independently of the Martian episode, is far more plausibly spiritistic in that such data as bear upon such a conception at all have at least the external characteristics which that hypothesis requires. I shall discuss these later. The second is that the present case is less rich in its details regarding Martian affairs, and much less in quantity than the results of M. Flournoy. This is perhaps due to the fact that the Martian episode in the present case does not extend over as much time as that of M. Flournoy. But in spite of these differences I have material for a similar theory regarding them, with the possible reservation of the data which were not known to Mrs. Smead and which are qualified to suggest the identity of the alleged communicators.

It is hardly worth remarking to the psychical researcher and the psychopathologist that the whole Martian romance

is satisfactorily explicable by secondary personality. For him I could leave that incident without analysis. But it will be necessary for a more general reader to show this in detail, especially as this class of students may not be sufficiently familiar with the resources of subconscious mentation in incidents of this kind. In order to understand and appreciate concretely what secondary personality is and can do we need to examine the facts that show its working beyond dispute and that show the right to extend its operations over the facts representing less evidential security for the hypothesis.

I must remark, however, that it is not the evident falsity of the Martian communications that suggests or supports the theory of secondary personality. So far as these are concerned we have no demonstrative proof one way or the other. For all that we definitely know to the contrary there might be *some* elements of truth in the facts, even after allowing for the influence of secondary personality and for the improbability that the facts are as represented. But in the absence of both direct and indirect confirmation of such allegations this sort of argument would be a very poor apology for an extraneous source of the spiritistic kind. On this account, whether we can prove it or not, secondary personality, representing known causes, must be the first hypothesis, and the only possible assumption until better credentials are forthcoming for the more romantic conception of the case. The only circumstance that would suggest the spiritistic theory is that the whole production is not, or does not purport to be, a conscious creation of Mrs. Smead's normal personality, but the result of something that she does not know or will. It is natural to look for a foreign cause where we are not consciously the agents in such phenomena. On the old Cartesian conception of psychology, which made the normal consciousness the only function of mind and criterion of self-origination, this inference to an extraneous source for automatisms and apparently intelligent statements was rational enough. But through the facts of somnambulism, hypnosis, secondary personality, and certain types of insanity we have come to consider the Cartesian conception that is so familiar to common sense as entirely mistaken. The limits of the self

as a subject of activity are not defined by the normal consciousness. They extend, so far as we know, indefinitely beyond this boundary. The same subject may be the center of reference of all sorts of subliminal activities, which are not extraneously instigated, at least in respect of their contents, provided the supposition does not contradict the known laws of physiology and psychology. It is this fact that permits such an extensive application of subliminal processes, the play of functions that imitate the reality of a being other than that which is associated with the normal stream of consciousness, but which has no other material for representing its personality than the experience and memories of the primary self appropriated without recognition to the dramatization of an apparently real person, not a visible or tangible person, but an apparent stream of consciousness independent of the subject manifesting the facts and suggesting invisible and intangible intelligence.

The evidence for secondary personality, as the most important factor in the explanation of the present record, if not as an explanation of the whole of it, divides itself into two kinds. First, there is that which gives inductive probabilities or suggests secondary personality as the best interpretation of the facts. The second type is that which *proves* it and permits no other interpretation as possible or plausible. I shall emphasise the latter in my study of the case, as the former has largely to be left to the expert for detection. Besides it would require more time and space than the evidence is worth to develop fully the more indefinite incidents suggesting secondary personality. To the psychiatrist perhaps the Martian incidents will appear as easily interpretable without analysis, as he is familiar enough with subliminal productions not to be puzzled with the record in this respect. But it will be profitable for the general reader to study the individual facts that serve as a precaution against hasty spiritistic speculation. I shall therefore refer to the most important facts that show the working of Mrs. Smead's own mind subliminally in the result.

In the first place the Martian episode begins incidentally in the midst of communications that suggest nothing else but

secondary personality. They were such matters as might have been the passing thoughts and occasional day dreaming on the part of Mrs. Smead regarding the nature and place of heaven. The whole conversation of the children purporting to communicate is too much like the conceptions of much Sunday school teaching to be treated as more than subliminal production. That the planets should be imagined as the abode of departed spirits is very natural and seems to be actually believed by some people. That they are inhabited much as described in this record seems almost to be an *a priori* astronomical belief in some cases and an object of intense curiosity and interest among the laity of mankind. It should not be surprising, therefore, to see the subliminal mind occasionally producing so general a tendency. The reference to Christ and his relation to children (p. 185), and the mention of Jupiter as the "babies' heaven" in connection with the superior purity of children, contains so much that is natural to the orthodox religious belief that their origin in the normal convictions of Mrs. Smead becomes quite apparent. The most interesting feature of this early development is the range of adaptability of Mrs. Smead's subliminal action to the requirements of communications from these infant children. The dramatic representation is suited to their supposed age. The childlike thought to some extent adjusts itself to the difference of age as known to Mrs. Smead. In the Martian communications the consistency of this is not always maintained, as Maude often transcends the natural understanding of a child in what is transmitted (pp. 184-186), the concepts and fluency of speech being more natural to the mature experience of Mrs. Smead. But in spite of this suspicious circumstance, which is at least partly explained by the Sylvester personality associated with the Martian message, the elastic capacities of the subliminal show considerable acuteness of intelligence in the imitation of spiritistic requirements.

The Martian incidents might create more curiosity in regard to their origin were it not for the popular interest displayed the last few decades in the question of its habitation. This fact alone is sufficient to afford a clue to the subliminal upon which to work, and I think the general incidents taken

together are very suggestive of the influence of normal knowledge upon the results, with sufficient variation to suspect that the subconscious is aware of the importance of not exactly duplicating the character of our own civilisation. I cannot prove this point satisfactorily, though the facts as a whole suggest it so cogently that we may well consider it the best interpretation. The source of Mrs. Smead's knowledge in her normal state for such an episode was undoubtedly slight. It may have been some newspaper article or a few lines of such reading that excited her curiosity at some time in her life. Or it may have been some words overheard in conversation and forgotten. This was the reason that I had to lay so much stress upon the relation between the date of the "*Golden Rule*" which coincided so closely with the development of the Martian incidents at their best. But I do not believe that there is sufficient evidence to suppose that Mrs. Smead saw the articles by Percival Lowell in the *Atlantic Monthly* to which I referred earlier (p. 49), as these articles once read ought to have acted as a discouragement against the supposition of Martian habitation, though possibly hasty reading might prevent this influence from operating. But it may not be necessary to suppose that either the *Golden Rule* or the *Atlantic Monthly* had been seen. It is evident that subconscious mentation, from what we know of it elsewhere, might be adequate to its purpose and could draw upon the resources of imagination and the material of normal experience for its fabrications. Besides it is possible that some article, allusion or conversation in childhood may have been stored up and thus resurrected and recast. Many of the incidents will suggest this interpretation without detailed analysis. For instance, the map of the Martian zones and the reference to the inhabitants as like our Indians and as having made canals to "get from ocean to ocean" and to connect "great bodies of water" (p. 49) might very well have been suggested by one's ordinary knowledge of geography and history, though they have a suspicious resemblance to incidents in the *Golden Rule* article. There is in this allusion to the geography of Mars almost the precise language of popular astronomic articles on the Martian "oceans", "lakes" and

"canals". But a more striking suspicion is suggested by the Martian ship. Its general resemblance to our own sailing vessels, especially the yacht form, indicates the probable origin of the idea. Nor can any defence for a different interpretation depend on the supposition that the very conditions of navigation would lead to such a resemblance, as the ancient type of ship, and even those of our own Chinese, are different enough to make it probable that the Martians would hardly duplicate our type so closely. But whatever excuse is possible for the resemblance between our own ships and the alleged Martian sailing vessel there is no such reason to defend the placing of the name of the ship "Cristirrie" on the bow. That the Martians should have both the form of ship and the mode of naming it the same as ours is extremely improbable. It is far more probable, not to put the argument more strongly, that the result of the automatic writing is due to subliminal appropriation of normal experience.

A still more striking incident in favor of the same conclusion is the function assigned to the "propeller" in the air-ship after drawing it to represent a *helm*. The subliminal has taken the etymological import of the word "propeller" and combined it with the visual conception of the stern of a ship to produce the result. Of course also the remarkable precocity of the language and apparent knowledge of mechanics and terrestrial things displayed by children that were still-born in describing what they had seen in Mars is perfectly incredible on any theory except secondary personality. Nothing like it occurs in the Piper case when children are the "communicators".

Certain characteristics of the language also suggest secondary personality very strongly. On the whole, it seems more original and plausibly spiritistic than that of Flournoy's case. It is hieroglyphic, except in a few words, and shows less structural resemblance to English than Flournoy's case shows to French. It is possible that there is not a sufficient amount of the Martian language in my case to study its relation to English very conclusively either way. If there had been as much of the hieroglyphic language as there is of

Flournoy's Martian the resemblances to English might have betrayed themselves more distinctly. But as the matter stands there is considerable originality and some deviation from English structural form though this is not uniformly sustained. There is, however, one circumstance that is almost overwhelming in favoring secondary personality. It is the use of the articles "the" and "a". A language that is so economic as to be hieroglyphic ought not to waste energies on these articles. It could and should dispense with them on its own law of economy, just as Latin did so, though it was a literal language. The general use of the verb suggests the same conclusion, though there were a few interesting deviations regarding its position in the sentence, explicitly explained as indicating a different habit in Mars.

The air-ship or "flying machine" is another evidence of secondary personality. It possesses no mechanical probabilities in its structure or its alleged operation. Its motive force is too humorously suggestive of our own civilisation to appear plausible. A mechanical engineer would find nothing in its arrangement to suggest its functions or to render its success probable or possible. How bags of air are going to help a machine float is hard to see. The machine is of course original and curious, and shows some elements of ingenuity and consistency, but they are less intelligent than interesting. Those who understand the conditions for aerial navigation could not suggest a single characteristic that would render its operation feasible, while its evident disregard for mechanics easily suggests subliminal attempts to reproduce the images that might be aroused by the mere idea of a "flying machine" in one unfamiliar with the conditions of the problem.

The bride's veil is also a reproduction of terrestrial experience, and suggests its origin too clearly to tempt one with any other explanation than that of secondary personality. The embroidery and curtains create suspicions in the same direction, and while there are differences between features of Martian civilisation and our own there are so many that are nearly enough like ours to make us slow to admit any other source for the idea than subliminal creation. The very design

of the tapestry curtain is such as we find in similar productions with ourselves.

If astronomers were perfectly assured and agreed on the physical conditions of the planet Mars we could adduce definite facts to *prove* beyond question whether such data as are reported here were due wholly to secondary personality or were *possibly* something more even when containing products of the subject's own mind. Professor Holden feels confident that the conditions on Mars prohibit the possibility of any such people and habits as are here described in this record. Mr. Percival Lowell, though he admits that the conditions of life there, if there be any life at all on that planet, are different from our own and do not permit the duplication of our civilisation, states the case favorably to the possibility of some sort of inhabitants. If, however, the conditions are such as Professor Holden states them the existence of any such beings as we are familiar with in man is extremely dubious, and certainly we should not expect to find so many features of our civilisation duplicated as in the "communications" here discussed. I am not familiar enough with astronomy to pronounce judgment on that side of the question, but from what I have seen in mental phenomena generally I can measure the probabilities of secondary personality without relying upon any certainty in regard to astronomic doctrine.

But if the evidence is wanting to *prove* subliminal action in the Martian matter the character and performances of Harrison Clarke will supply that want. The episodes in connection with this personality are so entertaining that it is a pity to disturb the mental equilibrium of the spiritist by dissolving the incidents into subliminal fabrication. His plausible story of his life and death with all its details, and his facile writing, indifferently normal, inverted, and mirror in form, were displays of acute intelligence and unexpected skill. But in spite of this the pretensions of Harrison Clarke's reality speedily broke down. In spite of the correct reference to the generals and certain incidents in the battle of Shiloh his story was shattered by the absence of all New York Regiments in that battle. Some description of the battle may

have been read years ago and forgotten, so that there is nothing to absolutely prove Mrs. Smead's ignorance of the true incidents. But on the crucial points of his own identity and allegations Harrison Clarke was extremely evasive. Instance his failure to give his captain's name; though he offered a very plausible excuse for this refusal. More striking still was the story about his desertion from the New York Regiment and reenlistment in another regiment under another name which enabled him to be present in the battle of Shiloh, and his flat refusal to reveal this assumed or real name! The evidence of suggestion in this incident is also apparent in this episode, as the manner in which Mr. Smead conducted the exposure of his claims offered Harrison Clarke a way out of his embarrassment. There are other situations in which suggestion is apparent where the question intimates the answer, but the reader will observe these cases for himself. But in the attempt to defend himself when the charge of lying was made it is apparent that he fought like a dying gladiator and that he could not win without going beyond his resources which steadily failed to yield him anything in favor of the supernormal. His reappearance after an interval was marked by more humility, circumspection and accommodativeness. But as most decisive evidence of secondary personality in his case I may refer to Mrs. Smead's half waking dream on the evening of May 2nd (p. 359). If the reader will refer to the sitting of January 24th (p. 250) he will find that on that date the number of the line in which Harrison Clarke marched was given. Then in my letter to Mr. Smead (p. 260) I had mentioned a Harrison Clarke that had been in the 125th New York Regiment and was still living. Mrs. Smead was aware of what I had written, and it is curious to find the number of the regiment turning up in this way without any reference to the fact that the man indicated is still living. Here we have an indubitably supraliminal content intromitted into the action of the subliminal, and why it should so easily betray its limitations is a wonder. But it does, and secondary personality offers its own evidence against spiritistic claims.

A most interesting incident in the same direction is the fact that Harrison Clarke's handwriting is practically iden-

tical with that of Mrs. Smead. The capital letters are almost *fac similes* of hers, all the details of their formation suggesting her own. The same could be said of the small letters except that it would require more careful inspection to suspect it as certain features of the automatic script tend to produce variations, though their insignificance would be detected at a glance by the expert. But a student of handwriting, especially when he examined the capital letters, would find unquestionable evidence for secondary personality in that of Harrison Clarke. There are also sufficient resemblances in the handwriting of other "communicators" to that of Mrs. Smead to suggest the same source, though they are not so distinct as in the case of Harrison Clarke. There are most interesting deviations, as if on purpose to imitate the existence of other persons, as in cases where certain letters are definitely marked, such as crossing the t's and dotting the i's where this is usually omitted, and changing the form of certain letters to suit the assumed emergency involving a change of personality. But interesting as these are they are not proof against the main contention and evidence for secondary personality.

In the miscellaneous incidents the positive evidence for secondary personality is not so frequent. A very large portion of them is explicable by the supposition, because they represent what Mrs. Smead herself knew, but they are not the kind of proof which I am taking pains to quote. They are in content incidents calculated to prove personal identity and so have the marks of spiritistic phenomena at the same time that they are explicable by secondary personality. The evidence necessary to prove the latter hypothesis against the former must be incidents whose spiritistic nature cannot in any way be defended. They must be facts which show indubitably a connection between the normal and the subliminal action of Mrs. Smead's mind. I do not mean by this way of treating the incidents known to Mrs. Smead that I shall be understood as apologizing for the spiritistic interpretation of the phenomena, but I mean to indicate that they do not provide the kind of proof I am seeking. There is no more excuse for maintaining that certain incidents are proof

of secondary personality when they are not proof than there is for exaggerating the evidence for spirits. What is a common phenomenon to both hypotheses should be set aside and not misinterpreted. But there are at least a few incidents among the more plausibly spiritistic cases of this record that absolutely prove the influence of secondary personality, and it is to them that I wish to direct special attention.

The first of these is the case of Charles Weis or Weir (p. 345), in which there is undoubted evidence that normal knowledge had influenced the action of the subliminal. There are even traces of the influence in it of impressions that may have fallen only on the indirect field of vision, and this might suggest that originally the name itself may have been acquired in that way. Still better is the reference to Plato (p. 344). Though it does not even attempt to impose upon us as a spiritistic phenomenon the reference indicates clearly enough the influence of supraliminally acquired knowledge upon the subliminal action of Mrs. Smead's mind when in the trance or other condition connected with alleged communications from a transcendental world. Disowning Plato as her control, precisely as she did when I told her my experience, is sufficient evidence of a tendency in her mind to obtain its inspiration from normal experience, at least in some of its conditions.

A very striking confirmation of this is the following. I have a photograph representing some thirty or forty persons in a group and taken in the mountains. My two children and myself were sitting together on the lower step of a porch, and next to me a lady, who was not a relative of any kind. My wife stood on the porch some distance above us and wholly at one side of the picture. The cutting of the picture for pasting on the card cut away the upper part of the face, and besides the face was so enveloped in shadow that even if the whole of it were visible, it would hardly be recognizable to those who knew her intimately. No stranger would suspect who she was. The picture stood on a mantelpiece of the room in which Mrs. Smead spent part of the days with my house-keeper. I had not mentioned the picture to her, and neither had anyone else, and I had no reason for specially cherishing

it. My face and those of my children were easily recognizable. Mrs. Smead knew that my wife was not living and that I was interested in anything purporting to represent spiritistic messages, as the experiments themselves indicated. She had seen this picture and recognized my face and those of the children, but was not told and did not ask anything about the identity of any person in the picture. One day during the period of my experiments in my home she saw the apparition of a lady and recognized it as representing the lady who sat near me in that picture. She had evidently suspected, when looking at that picture, that this lady was my wife.

Another circumstance of some interest in this connection is the spelling of the word "Professor" with two "f's", and "equal" in the form "equeal". I asked Mrs. Smead in her normal state how she spelled "Professor", and she spelled it with two "ff"s. I asked the same of "equal" and she spelled it as "equeal". I must remark of this last instance, however, that I discovered some reason to believe that she was at least partly unconscious when I asked her the question and when she spelled it. She was trying the crystal at the time for hallucinations, and remarked just after she spelled the word that she felt dazed when she did so and that she was almost in a trance. Her look and manner when asked to spell the word confirmed her statement. But this fact may not make any difference in the interpretation of the connection between the normal consciousness and the subliminal. Perhaps it might even be claimed that it was evidence of the nexus to find this spelling occurring in the threshold of the unconscious. But this seems doubtful when it is known that there are many cases of misspelling in the trance which Mrs. Smead does not make at all in her normal state, and it is possible that the case of "equeal" is one of them.

I am not able to show as much influence as might be desired in the case on the part of Mrs. Smead's convictions in affecting the results. This is apparent, as already indicated, in the Martian matter. But in the personality of Harrison Clarke and other "communicators" it is not so noticeable.

What Harrison Clarke says about hypnotism is evidently against his claims, as it shows complete ignorance of what we actually know concerning such phenomena, and possibly even contradicts it. It may represent subliminal fabrication, tinged with vague conceptions entertained by Mrs. Smead in her normal state regarding the nature of hypnosis. There are some interesting statements made that it is impossible to refute, but their acceptance requires the admission of a philosophy for which we have no evidence but the statements themselves. Besides it is not quieting to our doubts to be told in one sentence that there is but one soul, namely, the conscious self, and then in the next to have a discourse which depends for its meaning upon the assumption that there are two souls.

Additional evidence of the influence of secondary personality is found in my last group of four sittings (pp. 613-622). It is specially important in that it exhibits that influence in a most delicate form, and proves how cautious we have to be in doubting its operation in instances where it cannot be definitely traced. The incidents which show this are the allusion to my housekeeper, and the statements about my wife's study and employments which happened to constitute the most characteristic features of her life. This evidence is particularly forceful when we consider that the communications broke down every time on the crucial incidents and names.

When it comes to the discussion of the other two theories, telepathy and spiritism, we have first to remark that it will be convenient to group this evidence, real or alleged, under the general head of the supernormal, and divide it afterward into its appropriate classes. Briefly the evidence, real or alleged, for the supernormal must consist of those facts *not known to either Mr. or Mrs. Smead*, except when the writing was done with a pencil and by Mrs. Smead alone. The reason for this is a very interesting and important fact which I only learned late in the investigations. All my experiments were made without any contact of my own hands with either pencil or planchette. A casual remark made by Mr. Smead to me suggested the inquiry on this point and he told me that he

always held his hand on the planchette, his left hand, while he kept track of the questions with his right. The circumstance that makes this important is the fact that Mr. Smead has some subconscious power of his own and can write automatically. He told me the following incident. He took the planchette up-stairs with him one day and tried it for himself. He soon found that it would write. It wrote out some personal advice to himself which cannot be published and then two Martian words which were afterward repeated when Mrs. Smead had her hand on the planchette with his own. This circumstance makes it imperative to accredit to secondary personality, either of himself or of Mrs. Smead, all incidents that come within the knowledge of one or the other. To obtain evidence of the supernatural we require to have facts transcending the knowledge of both, at least as long as the writing is done with the hands of both of them on the planchette.

But the most decisive proof of secondary personality is the appearance of the Emperor group as controls (pp. 501-510). This is perhaps not the proper way to describe the change of personality which manifested itself in the summer of 1902, because it is only Emperor of the Piper group that is apparent, a fact that is distinctly in favor of secondary personality. The apparent claim of Chesterfield that he is Prudens is the result of suggestion by Mr. Smead, and it is only certain internal indications that suggest the presence of the Emperor personality. The first of these was the making of the sign of the cross which is the symbol of his personality in the Piper case. After some time the type of prayer used by Emperor in the Piper case was very well simulated, and finally the directions for holding sittings and various forms of expression more or less identical with those in the Piper record. The most striking illustration of this is the word "understand" and the adoption of the symbol "U D" for that word as in the Piper case. The development of this personality was very gradual. In this respect it was quite in contrast with the sudden interruption of the Martian "communications" and the abrupt appearance of Harrison Clarke as a fully developed personality. The psychological

reproduction of the Emperor personality was gradual and apparently involved much effort and difficulty. In even this respect it simulated the Piper case, and was probably the result of my discussion of the difficulties in developing the power of communication. But the most interesting evidence of secondary personality in this development of the case is found in the experiments attempting to communicate with Dr. Hodgson while he was experimenting with Mrs. Piper. The internal evidence of the Emperor interposition was so suggestive that I found it necessary to prove its reality or the entire subliminal reproduction of it. The sending of messages to Dr. Hodgson which he never received, the receipt of messages from him which he never sent, and the silence of the Emperor group in the Piper case at the simultaneous sitting by Dr. Hodgson with mine, and all in the personalities of Luther, Robert Hyslop, my father, and Mr. Myers, a communicator in the Piper case and interested in life in this kind of experiment, are absolute proofs of secondary personality, and proofs of it in that interesting form which shows its large capacities. This is all the more striking when it is remarked that Mrs. Smead's information was so slight, having never read my Report on the Piper case, but having only heard it talked about and heard the Emperor prayers read to her. The use of very meager knowledge was very systematic and accurate, especially in the psychological play. The association of the name of Chesterfield with that of Emperor was not very apt, but it was in entire keeping with Mrs. Smead's normal or supraliminal ignorance of who the real Chesterfield was. The names of Luther, Gustavus Adolphus, and St. Augustine were far more pertinently connected with the case. That of St. Augustine has a special interest as showing how readily the subconscious will appropriate casually acquired information. I had some two years previously mentioned the possibility that Emperor might be that worthy in so far as the evidence was concerned in the cases of Stainton Moses and Mrs. Piper. But the overwhelming proof of secondary personality is in the failure to identify the controls in the Smead case with those of Mrs. Piper, and in the fabrication of the return message which was

never sent by Dr. Hodgson, and which in its contents represented what Mrs. Smead knew had been done by her husband that morning, namely, the purchase of butter and cheese, the want of which was said to have been expressed by Dr. Hodgson and in the name of my deceased father purporting to have brought it from Boston, and this too without any suggestion from me that such was expected or desired. (pp. 617-619.)

It will be apparent from what has just been said that many of the incidents not known to Mrs. Smead, but known to Mr. Smead lose the value that they seemed to have as reported. For instance the names of Grace Craig and Evelyn Sargent, and the incident of the two brothers playing tick tack and being chased by a Mr. Roberts (p. 304) though appearing as evidence of the supernormal in the record, are amenable to secondary personality, and Sylvester's joking about secondary personality turns out to be really the possible view of the case. Many other incidents stand on precisely the same footing, so that if we are to have evidence of the supernormal at all it must be in facts not known to either Mr. or Mrs. S. Had it not been for the fact that Mr. Smead had his hand on the planchette at the time, the getting of the name Evelyn Sargent would be a very pretty piece of evidence for telepathy, and so also the name Grace Craig. But they represent incidents to be classed with the sitting of February 19th (p. 294) as affected by Mr. Smead's own state of mind. The answers to mental questions which he records are also good illustrations of the influence of his own secondary personality. They are not definite enough to prove the supernormal even if they were not amenable to his unconscious action. But they beautifully illustrate the possible response of his subliminal to his own conscious state.

The problem of the supernormal divides itself into two theories, namely, telepathy and spirits. Clairvoyance has no evident place in the discussion, as the incidents that might apparently claim this consideration, namely, telling the motion of my hand (p. 248) and ascertaining the nature of Prof. X.'s question about flowers (p. 202, are amenable to telepathy, if that theory has any claims at all. I have already indicated (p. 54) how the incident of the flowers has its evidential character weakened by

the connection in which it occurred. But if we are to reckon this case in the catalogue I may summarise the evidence suggesting telepathy in these incidents alone. Other facts at least apparently supernormal are equally explicable by the spiritistic hypothesis and cannot be treated as evidence of telepathy. Consequently it will be best to summarise the evidence for the supernormal and afterward estimate the claims of the two theories in regard to it.

The facts that at least seem to evidence supernormal acquisition of knowledge are the following. (1) The pass word in my sitting of March 15th (p. 322); (2) The death of Maude Janes, the name of her disease, namely, pneumonia, and approximately the date of her death (p. 272); (3) Maude Janes's visit at South Hadley (p. 284); (4) Florence Hubbell's residence in T—— (p. 287); (5) The name of Mary Wilson as the teacher of Maude Janes before Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew her (p. 308); (6) Willie Capel's working in New Haven (p. 281); (7) The death of Mrs. Cotton (p. 288); (8) The geometrical figures and demonstrations (p. 308); (9) The Morse incidents, including the death of Mr. Morse, the survival of his wife Mary, and his vocation, namely master mason (p. 300); (10) The deaths of Eva White and Daisy Simonds (p. 369); (11) The Hanson incidents (p. 348); (12) The names of James Eugene Xenos, and John Rogers (p. 278); (13) The incident of the toy trunk or box in connection with the deceased son Cecil (p. 409); (14) With a qualification, the reference to the express train by this son Cecil (p. 430); (15) Possibly the apparition coincident with the death of an aunt (p. 401); (16) Possibly the names Pratt and Cooper (p. 469); and many others later.

Were it not for the fact that one of the Millers had her hand on the planchette I might add to this list the name of Mrs. Miller's uncle George. For a similar reason I have to exclude Burleigh Hoyt's narrative about the dowsing and the name of the station master mentioned by Mr. S.'s brother Sylvester. I am not certain that I could include in the list the allusions to the sadness of Mr. Smead's mother on May 30th regarding her son Sylvester and the reason for it in the disappointment about the decoration of his grave. Had it not been the custom to decorate his grave

on that occasion which was known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead, the case might be different.

There are a large number of messages which have a psychological interest, though they are not evidential of anything supernatural. They represent incidents which would unquestionably attest the supernormal and also indicate just what we ought to expect on the spiritistic theory, were it not that they were known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. This last fact prevents the appeal to any explanation other than secondary personality, though it is still psychologically interesting to note that the incidents are chosen with reference to their pertinence for a spiritistic theory. That is, they are psychologically what we should expect on that view and often given in a way that suggests a mental action independent of the communicating medium. This may not be beyond the power of secondary personality, and I do not mention the fact to imply that it might be, but only to have remarked the circumstance that the play of mental action is well calculated to suggest the influence of outside agencies.

When it comes to the explanation of these facts the choice has to be made between telepathy and spiritism, if we are to admit that they are supernormally acquired and not due to secondary personality. It is extremely difficult to apply the last hypothesis to them because of their complex character and the probability that they represent what was unknown to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. We might say that they were possibly once known to them and forgotten, but it is one thing to say this and another to give evidence that such a supposition is the most probable one. I think that a dispassionate study of the facts themselves and the circumstances under which they were obtained make it more probable that they were supernormally acquired than that they were forgotten. Excluding secondary personality, for the present at least we consider the comparative claims of telepathy and spiritism.

The writing of the pass word in the pass sentence which had been agreed upon by the communicator in the Piper case claiming to be my father is amenable to telepathy, especially as I was actively thinking of it at the time, having definitely asked for it. I attach some, perhaps much weight to this incident because, unlike most of the proper names obtained in the same series of

sittings, the word was quite clearly written and what is more important was in a language which Mrs. Smead did not and does not know. It is certainly representative of a very striking coincidence. But even though it be explicable by telepathy, assuming that to be a legitimate hypothesis, it is also equally amenable to the spiritistic theory assuming that this doctrine is a satisfactory working hypothesis in the Piper case. It is specially amenable to this for several reasons that I may enumerate. (1) The general indications of the existence of telepathy in the Smead case are entirely wanting, as we have already seen. (2) In not a single other case, having evidential value, was there any approximation to what I was thinking about or to what was in my memory. (3) Prof. X. also remarked to me that he had tried over and over again to impress the mind of Mrs. Smead and had to confess entire failure. He said there was not a single correlation between his present active thought and the statement written by Mrs. Smead, except the case of the flowers on Mars, which I have explained might be due to mere chance under the circumstances. My own experience was the same throughout, and I must confess that I have no reason to believe that telepathy figured in the case. (4) Assuming the spiritistic theory in the Piper case it would be quite natural for me to get this pass word or the whole sentence at that particular time. The experiment of Dr. Hodgson with Rector and Prudens, (pp. 335-336) trance personalities in the Imperator group of alleged discarnate spirits, would show that some attempt was made to "communicate", and it would naturally be expected that my father would attempt to "communicate", if the analogies and promises of the Piper case be trusted. Hence it is just as possible to suppose that this "message" had its origin in a transcendental source as in telepathy, and as long as that is the case I cannot treat the acquisition of the pass word as evidence of telepathy.

All the other incidents bear no traces of telepathy in their acquisition. They do not represent the present thoughts of any one present, assuming that they are supernatural. They represent incidents scattered about a large number of persons of whose deaths Mr. and Mrs. Smead apparently knew nothing and of whom they had known nothing for years, some of them as much as twenty years. Telepathy that would ascertain these facts

under such conditions of selection ought to have easily obtained much from Prof. X. and myself, if it can be supposed to be an intelligible process at all. For my part I do not believe that telepathy had anything to do with obtaining the information represented by these various facts. I should have far higher respect for the claims of secondary personality. Indeed I think with regard to all the incidents except the pass word that the choice has to be made between secondary personality and spiritism. Telepathy to me in these cases is absurd and can only be the subterfuge of the man who either does not understand what he is talking about or is simply afraid to admit that spiritistic considerations have any claims at all. We know too little about telepathy at present to urge it very confidently. Indeed there are three facts that should make us quite as cautious in advancing telepathy as spirits. (1) The scientific world does not generally admit telepathy of any kind as yet. (2) The only evidence that science can consider at all in favor of telepathy limits it to the present active states of consciousness of the persons experimenting or between whom the messages pass spontaneously. (3) The very definition of telepathy by those who coined the word to suit the purpose represents nothing but coincidences that require a causal explanation. Telepathy is not the name for any known cause whatever. It does not explain anything. It is but a name for facts, not a name for an explanation. It is true that it assumes a connection between incarnate minds that does not make the assumption of spirits necessary. But nevertheless its *modus operandi* is not sufficiently known, to say nothing of the circumstance that the fact of it is not sufficiently admitted by scientific men, to justify any *ad libitum* appeal to it in coincidences, especially when they so uniformly represent exactly what we should expect from discarnate minds, if they exist and can occasionally communicate in a fragmentary way under favorable circumstances. All this being true I prefer to consider that the proper alternatives in this interesting case are secondary personality and spirits. I cannot accept the judgment of the trance personalities in the Piper case when they say (p. 336) that "thought transference" accounts for the present case. The evidence for this does not seem to me sufficient and we must have evidence. But it is interesting to remark that, if their

judgment were accepted in the incidents which I have classified; there would be practically nothing left in the Piper phenomena in favor of spiritism except the *ipse dixit* of those trance personalities, and I should be very slow to accept that kind of proof. If telepathy can select from so wide a field as is represented in the deaths and various incidents of this record and not known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, then the same is possible in the Piper case and we should be left without evidence of any verifiable sort for spirits. The mere asseverations of Emperor and Rector, the trance personalities of the Piper case, cannot go very far with the scientific man. The only apology for them would be that their examination of Mrs. Smead in that experiment (p. 335) was either not made under favorable conditions or that they were guessing at the possibility of "thought transference." We might excuse the Emperor group for their statement by supposing that the disparaging verdict was due to the subliminal prejudices of Mrs. Piper against mediumship in any one but herself. This would introduce secondary personality or subconscious modifications by her mind into her work; and I have no doubt that this is true. At any rate, there is something of a dilemma for them in their estimate of the present case in that particular.

Besides the group of incidents mentioned as evidence of the supernormal there is one sitting to which I have not alluded at all and which I regard as the strongest piece of evidence in the whole record for the spiritistic theory. This is the confused sitting of April 24th (p. 351). Here we have such a mixture of truth and confusion and ignorance on the part of Mr. and Mrs. Smead that the incidents represent very accurately many of the mistakes in the Piper case which I have treated in my Report on it as the strongest part of the evidence for the theory there advocated. The clue to the meaning of the facts, of course, is the knowledge which Mr. and Mrs. Smead had of Robert Russell and the care which Mrs. Russell had given to her father. Mrs. Keliher they did not know, nor did they know that her husband had worked in the Stearns manufactory. There is apparently an attempt to get the name of Keliher in what I read as "Clelee" or "Celia". The importance of this conjecture lies largely in the fact that I so read the automatic writing before I knew any-

thing of the facts or the name of Mrs. Keliher. The confusion and mistakes are not such as secondary personality ought to be guilty of, if it knew the facts, while they are precisely such as we might *a priori* expect in spiritistic communications under difficulties. The incidents, with the definite allusion to the communicator as Mrs. Russell's sister, possess a most interesting unity and suggestiveness on this theory which they can obtain on no other.

There are some confirmatory facts in favor of the spiritistic theory which cannot have independent evidential weight. I may mention first the peculiar inability of the "communicators" to measure time. They never know how long a time has elapsed since death. In two cases guesses at this were made, but failed. Generally, however, when asked for information on this point ignorance is frankly admitted. This is a very striking feature of the Piper phenomena. It is something which it is hard to believe that secondary personality would fabricate. The most natural course would be to duplicate time as the subject knows it, just as supraliminal knowledge is the source of all other information. Of course it may be a characteristic of all subliminal mental processes that they should not be able to reckon time, but this has to be shown in matter not spiritistic before we should assume it too hastily. The second fact is the frequent mistakes and confusion in the spelling of proper names, and the apparent difficulty in getting them, even though the memory and sub-consciousness of Mr. or Mrs. Smead are assumed to know perfectly what the names and spelling are. This confusion of proper names is a peculiar feature of the Piper case even when Mrs. Piper has not the slightest knowledge of the names delivered. There are also many incidents in the Maude Janes record which are just what we should expect to be given in order to prove her identity, but unfortunately these in too many instances, with similar incidents in the Miller, Hoyt, and Morse records, were too well known by Mr. or Mrs. Smead beforehand to demand any explication other than secondary personality. Hence the evidence having any suggestive character at all in favor of spiritism is exhausted practically in the facts above mentioned. I cannot make any use of the dramatic play of personality, if such it be, as it is either too doubtfully possessed of

this characteristic to be treated seriously, or it is too meager in quantity to possess any value. It is not even apparent until some of the later sittings in which Sylvester appears as a control. But even these instances are not what I call dramatic play in the Piper case. The only other instances of it are the remark "he is here" in the Morse sitting (p. 300) and the incidents in one of the Miller sittings in which Harrison Clarke appears to direct the placing of a chair for a "communicator" while he also directs the "communicator" where to sit and what to do. All this seems to be action and conversation on the "other side" slipping through on account of the automatic nature of the communicating process (p. 455). The former is not clearly what it might be, and the latter may be the result of my own suggestion, as I had told Harrison Clarke directly that he must aid others to prove their identity if he would not prove his own, and I had also told Mrs. Smead in her normal state that we should have to induce Harrison Clarke to do this or insist on his leaving. Instead, therefore, of being spontaneous dramatic play imitative of spiritistic conditions it may in this Miller sitting be nothing more than the reproduction of my own suggestion. Hence I cannot appeal to any dramatic play that is assured of the character to suggest spiritistic influence.

The objections to the spiritistic theory are as follows. (1) There is the large amount of matter attributable to secondary personality. This consists of two kinds:—(a) the facts that are demonstrably due to secondary personality, and (b) those that are explicable by it on the ground of Mr. and Mrs. Smead's previous knowledge of the facts. The proportion of matter thus referrible to secondary personality is so large that one must naturally ask whether, if more were known about the other incidents, they would not be similarly explicable. (2) The doubt which the wary sceptic may entertain as to the certitude of Mr. and Mrs. Smead's ignorance of certain deaths and incidents which are recorded as such. It may be claimed that, in spite of their confidence in the matter, they may at one time have known the facts. I do not myself attach much weight to this objection as it is not probable that memories so good in so many other instances would fail in the list of incidents classified as evidence for the supernormal, especially as they concern persons in whom

Mr. and Mrs. Smead were too deeply interested to make any such hypothesis probable. We may well suppose this applicable to such instances as Rosa Hern (p. 298), Miss Thompson (p. 340), "Lettie" (p. 297), Ida Nicolls (p. 297), as we may well suppose these, all of them unknown personally to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, to have been casually noticed in some newspaper account and forgotten like the thousands of incidents in daily life. And if there had been but one or two cases, such as that of Daisy Simonds (p. 369) we might more easily suppose an error of memory. But the names are too well known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead and represent too intimate a relation to them and are too numerous to make this last objection very weighty, though we cannot refute the sceptic that chooses to be obstinate on this point. I do not mean to express entire confidence in the spiritistic theory by this reply to objections, because I appreciate quite fully the reasons for an obstinate scepticism and feel its temptations myself. I can only acknowledge that the evidence as it stands is in favor of the spiritistic hypothesis while I suspend my judgment as to its correctness. But all this does not blind me to the weakness of the objection just considered. There is nothing scientific in accepting unsupported objections because one does not like the conclusion which they are supposed to refute. There is no specific evidence for the objections that I have considered, and this should be produced before attaching any more weight to doubt than we do to belief. To my mind the safest and soundest position to be taken against the spiritistic interpretation of this case is a verdict of not proven, and this I think can be well sustained, even though one incline to maintain that the possibilities or probabilities point the other way. The evidence is certainly not of the sort that seems so convincing in the Piper case.

Instead, however, of trying to decide between two sharply defined alternatives it may be permissible to treat the present case as a borderland phenomenon. This means that it may be one of those cases in which secondary personality is the stepping stone to the conditions in which supernormal information of a spiritistic character may occasionally be intromitted; that is, it may be a mixture of secondary personality and mediumistic phenomena. It will be useful to study the case from this point

of view, simply promising hypothetically its occasionally spiritistic character.

There are two types of secondary personality which have an interest for the discussion of this problem. I shall call them the *active* and *passive* forms. The passive form is illustrated by ordinary hypnosis in which the subject responds only to suggestion. The condition without this suggestion from without is mainly, if not wholly lethargic, a condition much like ordinary sleep in which the subject must be prodded in order to evince evidence of any mental activity, and this seems usually not to go beyond the execution of a suggestion. The organizing intelligence, if such we can call it at all, does not extend beyond the mentation necessary to appreciate or interpret the suggestion and to carry it out. Active secondary personality is quite different. It exhibits spontaneous mentation and may show all the organizing intelligence of a person in his normal state, and will be discoverable only by the mnemonic cleavage between it and the normal or by the variation of contents that indicate an unnatural condition. But it is mainly characterized by its freedom from foreign suggestion for the cue to its activity. This is the type that most easily simulates spiritistic phenomena. The passive condition is characterized by exclusive rapport, say with the hypnotizer, or such person as he may designate. In the active state rapport with an operator is not a necessary adjunct of the subject's mentation. The latter is, therefore, a condition which, if suggestible and whether auto-suggestible or hetero-suggestible, might be more easily accessible to influences connected with an elastic rapport. Containing the capacity for spontaneous motor functioning independent of the normal consciousness and elasticity of adjustment there might be moods when it lapsed into passive secondary personality and rapport with the discarnate. In that case we might expect suggestion from the transcendental world with the exercise of motor functions involving communications therefrom. As long as it is the ordinary active secondary personality it feeds on the contents of the subject's own memory. The passive is thus necessary to obtain a suggestible condition, but nothing spiritistic can be received in this condition unless it is possible to get rapport with a discarnate as well as

with an incarnate world. This is, of course, a very rare condition to be obtained.

This is at least one possible way to look at the matter, if we are entitled to hypotheses, as I think we are supposing them based upon the analogies and laws of normal psychology. There are no doubt other possibilities which I may notice presently. But incidentally I wish to call attention to two types of the active secondary personality as indicated by the present case under discussion. There is first the type in which the conscious thought of the subject is unconsciously written down. On this supposition I explained the incidents connected with Mr. Smead and not known to Mrs. Smead but thought of at the time when the automatic writing occurred. Without this view we should have to suppose the phenomena supernormal. Compare the names of Evelyn Sargent and Grace Craig (p. 304), and some of the incidents connected with the personality of Sylvester (p. 305). Then there is the type in which the present mental state is not written down, but something either wholly foreign to the subject writing or belonging to the subliminal until read after the writing. Mr. Smead seems to represent the former and Mrs. Smead the latter type. Mr. Smead or even both of them may represent both types at times, as I see nothing in either of them to prevent transition from one state to the other. I am not interested in the settlement of this question, but only in the fact that the facts in many cases are not explicable without the distinction which might prove an interesting and important one in the study of such phenomena. For instance, why did not the planchette write down the name Minnie Sargent of which Mr. Smead was thinking, instead of Evelyn which was the Christian name of the lady whom Sylvester had loved. Have we here a mixture of what was in consciousness and of the name mentioned in the lines of poetry which Sylvester had written to some one by that name? Or have we an interruption of a real communication by Sylvester by the conscious thought of Mr. Smead? There is in our present knowledge no answer to these questions, unless we are satisfied with the supposition involved in the first one. On any theory, however, it is a complicated phenomenon and possesses some psychological interest. If there are any spiritistic phenomena in the case the complications in this particular in-

stance have a double interest as indicating, on that supposition, the various disturbing influences that may exist to confuse communications. It would illustrate very clearly the necessity of a passive mental condition on the part of any one using a pencil or planchette, if anything but secondary personality is to be obtained.

That this passive condition of secondary personality is necessary for anything like spiritistic phenomena is evidenced, I think, by the decided traces of active secondary personality in the case of Mrs. Smead. It is clear from the record that Mrs. Smead is liable to suggested hallucinations. This is quite apparent in the apparition of Harrison Clarke (p. 359), the vision of Harrison Clarke indicating the vacancy in his company (p. 359), the vision that was taken to represent Imperator, the "control" in the Piper case (p. 306), the apparition that was supposed to be that of my wife after seeing a picture in which a certain lady was probably supposed to be my wife and possibly the whole collection represented in Chapter II. Here we have the thoughts of Mrs. Smead turning up all unconsciously as apparent realities. The thoughts seem to operate as secondary stimuli which are now recognized to be the instigating cause of hallucinations. Now Mrs. Smead is profoundly interested in the spiritistic character of the phenomena of which she is the subject and has been disposed to accept as such much that the psychologist would easily explain by secondary personality. Her predisposition to this conviction was so strong that I have had to manage the case with the utmost tact and sympathy both in order to experiment at all and in order to obtain results of any kind. That her opinions, anxieties, fears and suspicions have much to do with the success of the sittings is evident in the results of both my series of sittings. While in New York I discovered, and Mrs. Smead afterward confessed that she suffered greatly from embarrassment and various suspicions that she might not be treated rightly in the experiments. This was especially true after finding that I had tested her for anæsthesia and introduced one or two persons to the experiment without informing her of my intention and without her knowledge of it until the sitting was over. All these various influences show a delicate piece of machinery psychologically, and when it is connected with sug-

gested hallucinations we have definite evidence of an active personality that is quite distinct from the passive condition of Mrs. Piper, and it is a condition that we would most naturally suppose should exclude rapport with a transcendental world, or if it would not exclude rapport it would prevent rapport from admitting a communication in any evidential form, as any influence from such a world might operate as a secondary stimulus and produce an hallucination.

It would have been important to have ascertained whether the apparently spiritistic and successful sittings followed a state of mental indifference on the part of Mrs. Smead. It occurred to me to determine this, but circumstances made it impossible. In my own experiments, of course, there was a strong desire to be successful and, in spite of better acquaintance as we proceeded, possibly some fear conscious or unconscious that she would not succeed. If I could generalize from these I could answer the question which I have raised. But I was not present at the other sittings and hence could not express a judgment on the matter, and possibly I would not be able to form a rational opinion if I were present, as it is not easy for an outside observer to decide when the mind of another is in a passive condition, and in this case I could neither interrogate the subject nor accept her testimony if given, for the reason that her acquaintance with psychology is not sufficient to enable the scientific man to satisfy himself with her opinion. At any rate, how slight the foreign intrusion may be that interferes with success of any kind, even in secondary personality, is evinced by the result of the sitting on June 3rd (p. 379) when the resentment against the interference of Prof. X. absolutely prevented the automatic writing. Accepting the delicacy of the machinery as evinced by these facts we may well understand how wide the gamut between normal consciousness and the passive secondary personality necessary to communications with a transcendental world, and also how rarely we might obtain the proper combination of conditions necessary for both rapport and communication with such a world. All this of course is based upon the variations and elasticity which we observe in the types of secondary personality as known. They are such as usually have to be studied individually, and exhibit idiosyncracies that make it difficult to gen-

eralize beyond the cases of observation. This very fact shows what the possibilities are with which we have to reckon. The limitations of the phenomena have not been so determined as to preclude the possible attainment of rapport with conditions that are beyond the reach of normal processes.

In attempting to measure the possibilities of the spiritistic hypothesis there is a supposition which often suggests a presumption in favor of the spiritistic view which may have more weight superficially than examination will permit it to possess. I refer to the apparently diabolic character of the secondary personality assumed to evade spiritism. For instance, if all this purported or apparently attempted communication is not what it appears to be, how can we reconcile its deceptive character with the amount of intelligence involved in the construction of the data? If it is all secondary personality is not the intelligence indicated in it so great as to suggest that it is deliberately deceiving the observer? How can we suppose such intelligence entirely ignorant both of the sources of its statements and of their falsity? Take the story of Harrison Clarke and some of the Sylvester "communications". Do they not show such acute intelligence as to suggest conscious deception as opposed to the automatic intelligence of hypnotic suggestion? In other words, how can we suppose that secondary personality as exhibited in this and similar cases is self-deceived instead of consciously practising deception on us? Must we not suppose it diabolic in nature when we suppose it to be merely secondary personality? And must we not as a natural consequence feel tempted with the spiritistic theory as a more easy explanation of such cases, especially where we know that the normal consciousness is honest and have at the same time to assume that the subliminal must rely wholly upon the experience and limitations of the normal self for information and capacity? Is not the spiritistic theory more simple and consistent with the naïveté and contents of the "communications" than the assumption of a diabolic secondary personality?

The answer to these questions is simply that there are illusions of personal identity that may produce on the mind the same effect as an ordinary sensory hallucination. We all know how the abnormal mind interprets a sensory experience which as-

sumes the appearance of reality. Even the normal mind is prone to do the same until introspection or memory and judgment can come to its aid to correct what it discovers is in fact abnormal. It is but natural that an apparition should be taken for a reality when it seems to have the exact marks of the sensory experiences on which we rely so confidently in ordinary life. The abnormal mind differs in its treatment of such experiences only in the persistence of its interpretation of them as realities. Now it is quite possible, nay, is a fact that there are intellectual hallucinations affecting the judgment exactly as do sensory hallucinations. They may affect the whole range of conscious activity. They are illustrated in a remarkable form in the cases of lost personal identity and of secondary personality in which the subject treats the normal stream of consciousness as another and distinct person, e. g. Pierre Janet's case of Leonie 2 criticising Leonie 1 as if she were another person (*Automatisme Psychologique*) and that of Dr. Morton Prince (*Proceedings of the S. P. R.*, Vol. XIV, pp. 79-98) in which one of the personalities plays tricks on the other and takes delight in it, as if there were two different persons concerned. In fact the phenomenon is producible by hypnosis almost at pleasure. In these cases secondary personality is the subject of an hallucination in spite of the general intelligence displayed in the direction of the stream of consciousness peculiar to itself. It seems incapable of introspection and self-consciousness. In fact it is the opinion of Dr. Boris Sidis (*Psychology of Suggestion*) that the fundamental characteristic of all secondary personality is the absence of *self-consciousness or introspective power*. Accepting this view of the case, which seems to me the most probable we do not require to suppose that secondary personality is diabolical in its character. This quality demands introspection and self-consciousness for its display. But if secondary personality is without this capacity it is itself the subject of deception precisely as the insane man may be in the one definite subject of his aberration while in all others he may be perfectly intelligent and normal. Thus we find any amount of intelligence compatible with a fundamental illusion which normal self-consciousness would discover and expose, and we do not require to measure the claims of spiritism against the apparent diabolical char-

acter of secondary personality. There is another alternative and that is the deception of the subject itself in spite of the acute intelligence shown in all other directions. This view of course reduces the indications of spirit communications to facts that are supernormally acquired and which do not seem to be reducible to any acknowledged laws of normal psychology, and thus the temptation to be overcharitable to spiritism is removed in so far as we are concerned with the assumption of a relation between acute intelligence and its diabolic character. There is nothing in the present case to demonstrate beyond a doubt that the trance state involves any self-consciousness in the communications. I shall not say that there is no evidence whatever, nor shall I say that there is some of it. It is a most difficult matter to determine in any objective instance. But it is clear to the scientific reader that there is no demonstrated self-consciousness. In the Piper case there is decided evidence of this introspection in the personalities of the communicators, a fact which is against the supposition that the dramatic play in that case is due to the secondary personality of Mrs. Piper, if the doctrine that secondary personality is never self-conscious be true. The present case, however cannot be more than borderland as it is too meager in the material that might suggest introspection during the "communications" to treat it as militating against secondary personality either as diabolical in its character or as evincing independent intelligence.

Accepting the Piper case as a criterion there are at least three objections to treating the present instance as spiritistic. (1) The mechanical freedom of the automatic writing. (2) The comparative absence of changes in the personalities or "communicators" during a sitting. (3) The limitation of verifiable "communicators" to friends of Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

There are some exceptions and qualifications to the first of these objections. First, my own sittings showed no mechanical freedom whatever in the automatic writing. On the contrary, it was extremely difficult and illegible. Secondly, often at the beginning of a sitting the writing was apparently difficult even when the sentences and subject matter after being deciphered seem uninterrupted and clear. But in spite of these qualifications one who has witnessed the automatic writing in the case

of Mrs. Piper observing that there is no resemblance between it and her own normal handwriting, and compared it with the automatic writing of Mrs. Smead which is in many cases, in fact in nearly all cases, the *fac simile* of Mrs. Smead's normal writing, and that a very clear style, must feel suspicious about any other source of it than secondary personality. Of course, the position here taken in regard to the relation between secondary personality and spiritistic communications does not exclude the admission that the automatic writing is wholly an affair of the medium or organism through which it must be transmitted. Secondary personality of some sort is a necessary element in the result. But when you observe that the mechanical features of the automatic writing duplicate so fully those of the subject's style you most naturally suspect all intimations of even of the supernormal until the evidence for this is more overwhelming than it seems to be in this case. Only indubitable evidence of supernormal knowledge of a character to be explained by a transcendental source can remove the suspicion that I have mentioned, and if it is removed the peculiarities of the automatic writing will simply stand as so much evidence in favor of secondary personality as a necessary stage in the development of mediumistic phenomena. How far the present case satisfies the requirements of such a view each reader must determine for himself.

The qualifications of the second objection are perhaps less conspicuous. In the case of non-verifiable "communicators" the changes are noticeable in several instances and in so far the case resembles the Piper phenomena. But the traces of these changes in the instances of verifiable "communicators" are very few. Usually the same personality remains throughout the sitting, and when these verifiable "communicators" are personal acquaintances of Mr. and Mrs. Smead the natural inference might be that both the positive and negative evidence is in favor of secondary personality. That is to say, the failure to obtain spiritistic matter when the "communicator" is not known and the success in obtaining apparent evidence of spirits when the "communicator" and many of the incidents are so known seems to prove the limitations of the case to secondary personality. Of course if the evidence for supernormal know-

ledge is sufficient secondary personality will not cover any more of the case than that part which is explicable by it, and even this resort might be weakened if we could ascertain the truth about the cases at present non-verifiable. That is to say, the case is not proved against the spiritistic interpretation by the non-verifiable character of certain incidents and personalities. It is possible also that the borderland nature of the whole phenomenon is more or less supported by the very difference between the verifiable and the non-verifiable "communicators": for it is noticeable in most non-verifiable cases that there is more difficulty in the automatic writing and more confusion in the results, and to make this instance a borderland phenomenon is to admit the occasionally spiritistic character of it. The objection is thus not conclusive though the justice of raising it must be admitted, and perhaps some cogency must be ascribed to it, though, as said, it depends entirely upon the assumption that the Piper case is a standard for determining the issue and this may not be the case.

The third objection is more forcible. It relates wholly to the evidential aspects of the problem. It is the acquaintance of Mr. and Mrs. Smead with the "communicators" and the most of the incidents given, together with the negative results in the case of non-verifiable "communicators" that goes to support so strongly the explanation of the case by secondary personality. In this respect it is immeasurably inferior to the Piper case. There are three characteristics that give the Piper phenomena great evidential weight. (a) Mrs. Piper's ignorance of the sitter in all cases to which scientific value can attach. (b) Mrs. Piper's absolute ignorance of the persons and lives of the "communicators". (c) The specific and definite nature of the incidents delivered and which bear directly upon the evidence for personal identity. In the present case the incidents are often well calculated to prove personal identity, but it is defective in the two conditions which are so necessary to prove its spiritistic character beyond a doubt or to remove the suspense of judgment which a rational scepticism must maintain. The most that can be made out of it is to regard it as borderland and in this way we may leave it either to strengthen or weaken the Piper case. If it contains occasionally intromitted messages from a discarnate world it supports that case and indicates the place

which secondary personality may have in the origin of mediumistic powers. If it is not spiritistic it so illustrates the resources of secondary personality in the mimicry of independent intelligence as to throw the case for spiritism in the Piper phenomena, as I have said in my Report upon it, upon the question of supernormally acquired knowledge. All other arguments must be mere adjuncts of this as representing material and manner psychologically to be expected on the spiritistic theory but not suggesting it.

There are very important facts which tend to weaken the argument in the Piper case for the spiritistic theory. It will be remembered by readers of my Report on that case that the selective unity of the incidents given in those experiments, that is, the synthetic unity of the incidents, the dramatic play of personality, and the mistakes and confusions were employed to confirm the spiritistic theory, as being quite natural on that view and not to be so readily expected on that of secondary personality. In the present case all three of these characteristics are noticeable. The selectiveness of the incidents with reference to the illustration and proof of personal identity is perfect, so perfect that we must wonder that secondary personality should be so fragmentary in the selection when it might as well have been more systematic and perhaps would have been expected to be more systematic, instead of imitating the naturally fragmentary character of the "messages" which we should expect from discarnate spirits. The success in imitating these is the interesting feature of the case.

The dramatic play of personality is not frequent. By this I mean the apparent conversation between persons or spirits on the "other side". There is much of this in the Piper case and when it is understood it is a most impressive fact. There is not much of it in the present case, but there is still enough of it, resembling the same play in our dreams where the imaginary personalities converse with each other and maintain their independence of the dreamer, to weaken any argument for spirits based upon the naturalness of this play. The apparent conversation between Cecil and Maude (p. 455), deceased son and daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Smead, the occasional interruptions of Sylvester, the deceased brother of Mr. Smead (p. 583), and

occasional incidents in the Chesterfield control, show what secondary personality may do in the way of imitating what we should most naturally expect in the real phenomenon, and hence weaken the argument from the dramatic play of personality for a spiritistic theory.

No less interesting is the fact of confusion and mistake in the giving of proper names, and unfamiliar words. The imitation of the Piper case in this respect is very marked. Why there should be so much difficulty in this particular can hardly be explained except on the supposition that the communication between different personalities in the same subject is as difficult as between two worlds, a view apparently at variance with the ready access of the subliminal to what the supraliminal acquires. But it is certainly a remarkable fact that the mistakes and confusions in proper names are precisely like those in the Piper case in many of their characteristics and inevitably weaken the argument for the spiritistic theory of the expected nature of such facts. Selective unity, dramatic play of personality and mistake and confusion would naturally be expected on the spiritistic theory, and if they were not naturally producible or expected in secondary personality, would be an argument for the spiritistic hypothesis. But their equal occurrence as a purely subliminal phenomenon must diminish their influence in favor of anything supernormal.

In conclusion, then, we find so little evidence for supernormal incidents and so much that is explicable by secondary personality, that any theory extending beyond the subliminal action of Mrs. Smead must have almost insuperable obstacles with which to contend. If any of the results, suggesting the supernormal, had been obtained under such conditions as the credentials for such phenomena in the Piper case, namely, entire ignorance of the sitter, the spiritistic theory might be stronger. But too much is dependent on the accuracy of Mr. and Mrs. Smead's memories to make such a theory the most probable one, especially when the capacity for secondary personality is demonstrably so great as it is in this instance. If the supernormal be tolerable at all it must be with the reservation that it represents an occasional datum intromitted into the main current of secondary consciousness.

We may add, however, that later developments of the Smead case tend to make it more provably spiritistic than these final remarks might indicate. We have published one Report showing this. [Cf. *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vol. I, pp. 525-722.] The verdict expressed here, however, is based only on the present record and will stand for that, tho later facts tend to nullify it.

1317-612

APPENDIX.

CHAPTER I.

THE MARTIAN COMMUNICATIONS.

It will be necessary in detailing the Martian matter to give the communications that led up to it. The alleged communications from that planet did not appear alone or all at once. They were preceded by messages from Mr. and Mrs. Smead's deceased children and Mr. Smead's brother. The names of the children were Maude, Willis and Esther. Maude and Willis were both still-born, and Esther's death was a miscarriage near the time of birth. There is no written record of the communications that began the experiments, which were recorded only when some incidents appeared to interest Mr. Smead, as indicated in the introductory chapter (p. 4). The account at this point, therefore, will necessarily be fragmentary or incomplete, though containing all that it is possible to recover. I shall give the record exactly as it stands, and whatever comments are advisable will follow. It might be in better style, speaking from the literary point of view, to give a running account of the results, but this would be to sacrifice some important scientific characteristics. Hence I think the record should stand exactly as it was written, and it was written in full. The planchette was the method employed for the communications. This, it must be remembered, was the vehicle for all of the work down until about January, 1901.

In making the detailed record I have followed the usage employed in the previous reports of the trance phenomena of Mrs. Piper. The *round* brackets inclose the questions or statements of the sitter at the time of the experiment and so record the material which the psychological student wishes to know in studying suggestion and inference. The sitter, unless otherwise indicated, is always Mr. Smead. The statements inclosed in *square* brackets represent explanatory notes in reference to the text or messages in the record, and made subsequently to the time of the sitting, unless, as is occa-

sionally the case, they embody some remark at the time of the sitting not connected with the regular questions of the sitter. *Asterisks* mean that a message or part of a message is undecipherable. *Dashes* in connection with proper names mean that I have omitted certain parts of the words in order to aid in concealing Mr. and Mrs. Smead's identity. In a message a dash means that some part of a word has been omitted by the automatic writer.

In making notes on the incidents of the record those in square brackets within the transcript of the sittings, unless indicated by my initials, are substantially the statements of Mr. Smead. In any notes independent of those in the transcript and explanatory of the record in detail I have quoted Mr. Smead where he is responsible for the form of statement, and have made myself responsible for all other statements, even where he has been the informant. Where I found it necessary to distinguish between Mr. Smead's relation to the facts and my own I have added my initials to the notes made.

The first record is of an experiment on June 3rd, 1895, which was written out by Mrs. Smead herself afterward in a running style and sent to Mr. Smead's father for perusal. The account is dated June 4th of the same year and is as follows:

"In the sitting room, Willis (Mr. Smead) was reading and I sewing, when he wanted to know if I would put my hand on the planchette. I did not care to, but said I would if he wished it. So he got it and we sat down at the sewing machine table with our hands on. I asked the question mentally if there were any spirits present and if they would write? (supposing it would write yes). It started just as soon as our hands touched it and wrote Maude, the name of our baby that was born and died in B——. Willis (Mr. Smead) then asked if there were any other spirits here. It wrote *Willis*, the name of our little boy that was still-born in H——. It then wrote Sylvester—John, the names of Willis's and my own brother. Also Rose and Annie, two young ladies that were friends of ours when living. Willis then asked several questions of Miss Rose which I will not mention here as they were of no great importance. It then drew a picture of her, and when Willis asked the baby to excuse him for leaving her, it wrote: 'Yes, yes, yes.' Then he asked: 'Who was here writing?' It answered 'We.' Then he asked who was *we*, and it wrote 'Us'. Then he asked who was *us*. It wrote then Maude and baby brother. He then asked if she knew where her body was buried, and it wrote 'B——'. Then where little Willis was buried, and it answered, 'H——'. He then asked her if she

liked the place where her body was, *and it would not write*. He then asked if she would like it moved anywhere else, and it wrote *yes*. We of course asked where, and it wrote, '*beside baby brother's*'. He asked why she wanted this done. She answered, '*because you can fix them up pretty*'. He then said he could not very well do it right away, when it wrote, '*soon papa*'. He said, I will, Maude, some time, but cannot just now. Will not this do? It wrote again, '*soon papa please*'.

He then asked if there was anything left to the little body, as we did not think there was much. It answered, '*Ida is there*'. Then he told her he would do it as soon as he could. It wrote, '*soon papa*'. He then wanted to know why she wanted it done soon. She said, '*because you might forget it, papa*'.

We were then talking over what could be done and he (Mr. Smead) spoke to me (Mrs. Smead) and said he did not know whether Mr. Steele, the man who took care of the grounds, was living or not, when it wrote, '*Mrs. Steele is here*'. He told her he knew that she was there, but asked where Mr. Steele was living at the present time, also his daughter Jennie. It answered, '*there*'. Willis asked 'where?' Answer, '*B——*'. He then told her he would write and find out about it and have it moved, when it again wrote, '*soon papa*'.

A few other questions were asked when little Cecil awoke and I had to go to him. After it wrote that baby sister was here. We asked her name, and she said she did not have any. Willis asked what they called her and how old she was. She answered, '*just baby sister, about two*'. He then asked why they had not named her. She said that he must. He had several names in his mind and asked her if she could tell him what they were. She said, '*you know*'. He asked if she did. She said, '*no*'. Then he asked me what we should name her, and we were agreed on '*Esther May*', and just as we had named her she began to draw a picture of her. A short time after this we said good night, when she asked us to come again."

In reply to the question whether he and Mrs. S. had ever talked about the removal of this child's body, Mr. S. says: "No, most positively. Such information as we received was a surprise and was not pleasant for us to receive, and moved Mrs. S. greatly. At the time the message was given we supposed that there was nothing left to move. The body was that of a little child with but 9 months of prenatal life. I never thought that anything of the little body could have been in existence at that time."

Inquiry also shows that Mr. and Mrs. S. knew of the death of this Mrs. Steele some months before this sitting.

The next record is dated July 6th of the same year and bears upon the same general subject matter as the previous account. This time, however, it has been kept in the dialogue form in which it occurred, with adequate explanatory notes regarding certain mistakes and difficulties in the writing. I shall write the questions in round brackets, and explanatory remarks and notes in square brackets. The answers written by the planchette will stand without any marks. The planchette wrote:

"Yes, we are here, papa. (Who?) Maude. (What message have you?) Papa, Maude remembers (?) Remembers. [The word 'remembers' was spelt wrong, so neither of us knew the word, neither of us could guess it. It was asked to write out the word beginning with, 'R'. Wrote, 'It minded again'. So we could not tell. It was asked to write it out slowly and plainly. Wrote] Rembers. (What do you remember?) Moving. [The word 'moving' was written so that neither of us could tell it or guess what it was. Asked to write it slowly and plainly. Wrote] Moving. (Moving what?) My—body—. (Is anything of the body there besides some hair and bones?) Yes. (What is there besides hair and bones?) Eyes. (Anything else besides eyes, hair, and bones?) Yes. (What else?) No more. (Is that spirit 'Maude' gone?) Yes. (What spirit is here now?) Me papa. [Written twice. The first time neither of us could tell what was written.] (Who is 'me'?) Willis. (Who is Willis?) Me. (Are you my son? If you are an evil spirit, I command you in the name of Christ to leave.) No sir. [The 'sir' spelled 'ser', when I said, 'S-E-R!'. It was at once corrected to 'sir'.] (Are you my son?) Yes papa. (Can you make me believe that you as my son are writing such words as 'No sir' to me?) Yes papa. (Don't you think 'No sir' is a pretty old phrase to use to your father?) No. (Explain why you wrote 'No sir'.) I was a good spirit. (Is that all your answer?) No. (What is the rest of your answer?) Was Willis 'papa?' ['Papa' written two or three times before we knew what it was meant for.] (What is your message or request?) Name Ester. (Why?) She is a good baby. (Why should I name Ester *again*? That is no answer.) No papa. (What do you mean by 'No papa'? I certainly did name Ester.) No papa. (What do you mean by 'No papa'? I certainly named Ester.) No paper. [We supposed the word was 'papa', but it was 'paper'.] (What do you mean by 'No paper'?) Like me. (How do you mean by 'like'?) Ester wants it on some paper. (Do you mean Ester wants me to write it on some paper?) Yes.

(I will write it right here.) [I wrote it.] (Will that be all right?) No. [Nothing more was written.] "

No comments are necessary on this record, as it will be apparent to the reader that there is nothing here which cannot be accounted for by the most ordinary secondary personality. The mechanical difficulties and mistakes will remind those who are familiar with the Piper case of similar phenomena there. But the next record is for July 27th, 1895. It introduces the feature of drawing into the results, and involves a new person as the communicator. It was Mrs. Smead's aunt, the name having been given in full. She had been dead some years.

The planchette began by drawing a picture of a woman, as was evident from the face. The picture represented her as having bangs and curled hair, and covered two pages of paper. The chair in which she sat was drawn: also her two feet and shoes. The woman herself was drawn in a sitting position and holding a book. The writing, however, was not plain. The dialogue then began and was as follows:

"(What is that?) The Bible. [Not plain. Written again.] The Bible. (Is it the Bible she is reading?) Yes. ['Yes' written two or three times.] (Do you want to use these sheets of paper again?) Use these. [Then was written] Fannie. (Fannie?) Yes. (Fannie who?) Fannie Burtis. (Is it surely Fannie Burtis?) Yes. (Sure?) Yes. [Then it wrote 'aunt'.] (Aunt of whom?) Ida. [Mrs. Smead.] [Mrs. S. then said it was her aunt Fanny Burch.] (What was your maiden name?) [Would not write it.] (Don't you want to write it?) No. [Then it drew some circular scrawls. Mrs. S. said "It doesn't seem as if Aunt Fanny would be so silly". Mr. S. asked] (Are these scrawls for hoop skirts?) Yes. [Mrs. S. said that she used to wear them.] (Have you a message for us?) Yes. (Can we have a clean sheet of paper for it?) Yes. (Do you want us to keep this picture of you?) Yes. (Will you wait a little while till I write something down?) Yes. (Will you write your message plainly?) Ida is going to have a baby girl. (Have you any more to write?) Can it be called Fannie after me? (Go on.) [Mrs. S. was unwilling.] Please. [Mrs. S. hesitated and began shedding tears. Mrs. S. said, 'I do not know as I can control my thoughts'.] I will help you. (Go on.) [Mrs. S. still in tears.] So you need not worry, Ida. (Express your mind Mrs. Burch.) Will you do it Ida? (Go on.) Elsie to— Will you do it, Ida please? [Word 'please' underscored four or five times.] (What has the 'Elsie'

to do with it? Her name was not Elsie. No Elsie in our family.) No, No, No. (Do you want us to name the baby Elsie?) No, Fanny. (Mrs. S. said, 'I will wait and see whether I have a baby or not before I make any promises.') Will she believe me? (Are you sure?) Yes. (Have you anything more to say about it?) Will she do it? (Why should Ida grant your request as a spirit. It is more than she would do if you were living.) She promised it. [Underlined 'it'.] (Mrs. S. said, 'Perhaps the baby will not live if I don't do it. What do you say to this, Mrs. Burch?') Do—it—[Written again on request.] (Will granting your request make any difference in the living of that child in the foetal life?) Yes. (I cannot understand that at all. I cannot believe it. Will you explain?) I should watch over it. (How would or could your watching over it keep it alive?) We always do this with little babies. (How then did the others die? Little Willis, for instance. Was he watched over?) Yes. God was not willing. (Was it so with Esther?) No. (Was it so with Ida Maude?) Yes. God was not willing. (Was not God willing because of my sins?) Yes. (Will this one live?) Yes, if you do right. [The word 'right' underlined.] (Will you help me to do right?) Yes. [Written in big letters.] (Ought we then to do as you request?) Yes, I think so. Do not you both? (We are both willing. We promise. Help us if you can, and help our unborn little one. Have you anything else to write?) I thank you both. (It is getting late and we have no more paper. Will you consent to us bidding you good night?) Yes. (Good night.) Good night, Ida and Willis. (Will you, Mrs. Burch, write our your full name as you now have it as certifying to the genuineness of this account and oblige?) Yes. Emily Frances Burch."

The prospective child here alluded to was a boy and is still living.

The next record is dated August 7th, 1895. It is marked by a change of character that suggests the rise of the Martian development, though nothing is said directly on this matter. The reader will only notice allusions to such a transcendental life and its place as indicates how easily the suggestion might be made in regard to the planets.

"Maude is here. (Mrs. S., 'I thought Maude was not coming any more!') Maude is sorry. (Maude go on.) Is papa sorry? [Written twice before it was read.] (I thought I did and said what was right.) No, you did not papa. (I said I must wait until I get a chance.) Well, Maude will wait, but she does not like to be there, papa, so please have it done soon. (Have you anything to say, Maude, besides this?) It is very pretty here, and Maude is waiting

for mamma and you to come here. (Where are you, Maude?) Everywhere. (You mean by that you can go everywhere?) Yes. (Where is it you live?) Here with you. (Have you ever known heaven?) You will like it when you come here. (Is there such a place as heaven?) Yes. (What is it like, Maude?) No, you must wait. Maude has not been there. (Where did you go when you died?) With you. (Were you in the room with us then?) Yes, wanted to come to mamma. (Weren't you dead when you were born?) No. [Written five times.] (When did you die?) When they would not give me to my mamma. (Where are all the spirits of the dead?) Everywhere. Some others are on the earth, some others are on other worlds. (Are those that have died, some of them, living on other planets?) They can. (Are they?) No, they can when they want to. (Do you mean they can go to them and stay there as spirits? Even as spirits they can come here.) Yes, but we like to go on journeys and come back. (Where do you come back to?) You and mamma and baby. (Is our home your real spirit home?) No, until you and mamma come. We want to be with you, and so Jesus lets us. [The words 'lets us' underlined four or five times, and written three times before any sense could be made out of it.] (Where is your real spirit home?) With Jesus. (What is the name of the place?) Paradise. (Near what planet is it?) Not very near any. (Where is it. Tell me something definite that I may know.) Near heaven and that is near the center of all. (Of all what?) Space. (Where is the devil?) In the bad place. (He lives there, does he?) Yes. (Is that bad place the place called hell in the Bible?) Yes. (Is it a literal hell, with brimstone and fire and millions of devils?) Maude does not know. (Are you sure there is a hell in which the devil lives?) Yes. (How do you know this?) Jesus told us so that we must be careful and not let him get us. (Could the devil get a spirit into hell?) Yes. (Explain, please.) When we do not mind God and are not good to those on earth. Jesus told me I must tell papa. I was sorry. (Well, Maude, it is all right. I will do what you want as soon as I can. It is late now, so good night, my little girl. Mamma and papa send lots of love and kisses to you. Good night. Come again.) Good night."

Comment on certain features of this sitting may be reserved until I come to discuss the whole result. But one can hardly fail, if he have a sense of humor, to remark the precocity of a child that could not be more than four years and four months old on "the other side". The description of heaven as "paradise" is curiously suggestive of knowledge that is gained on this side. No less so is the reference to what is orthodox sentiment regarding the relation

of Jesus Christ to little children. In this the traces of secondary personality will appear evident to almost every one.

The next two records are dated, one of them simply August and the other August 21st, of the same year. It is impossible to decide which of them should come first, except as the contents suggest the most probable order. In both a reference to the planet Mars is made, and as it is the record of August 28th which is the most important in any question evidentially for the theory of secondary personality, it will make no material difference which of the two comes first here. I decide to place the one simply dated August after August 21st because there is more material referring to Mars and planetary visits than in the latter. It is apparently more nearly related to the subject matter of August 28th than to that of August 21st. Hence I place next and first the experiment of August 21st, 1895.

" [The first thing done by the planchette was the drawing of a cow, which was called a 'cow boss'. Mr. S. remarked: You must be a brilliant spirit to draw such a cow as that.] I can do better, papa. (Who is here?) Willis. (Any message?) Maude is away. (Where?) Mars. (Do you mean she has gone to the planet Mars?) Yes, with uncle Vester. (Are you the only one here tonight, Willis?) No. (Who is here besides you?) Ester, aunt Fanny. (Who else?) Lots. (Have you any message? If not let some one else.) Me papa. Ester. (Has Esther any message?) Ester wants to go with Maude, but uncle Vester didn't want Willis and me. (Anything more?) Willis feels bad and so do I. (Well, Esther, don't worry. When Maude comes back she will love and kiss little sister and brother, won't she?) Yes, but we wanted to go so bad. (Anything else?) Home is best with papa and mamma. (Well, Esther, good night. Papa sends kisses to Esther and Willis and Maude.) Maude is gone. (I send Maude kisses. Kiss her for me, Esther. Will you?) Yes, good night papa. (Write your name, Esther.) I don't want to tonight. Good night papa."

Here we see the beginning of the communications regarding Mars. In the explanation of them we must remember that Mr. S., on August 7th previous, had asked if some spirits lived on other planets. This might have given a suggestion to the subliminal in this general direction. But even if we do not attach any special importance to this possible influence there are other resources for this suspicion which will be noticed in their proper place. But with the subject's interest in astronomy, admitted by both Mr. and Mrs.

Smead, though she has never read any book on the subject, and the known public interest in the question regarding the possible habitation of Mars, we may well imagine how easy the suggestion might be that would lead to communications purporting to come from that planet. These are more definite and marked in the record that comes next, and that is only dated August, 1895. In the record originally made it precedes that of August 28th and is the first made in the order of place. This would be conclusive regarding its place here were this the uniform policy of Mr. S. in making his record, but he has not always observed this rule. However, as remarked above, it does not affect the main question to be raised after giving the record of August 28th, which will here follow that of August without a specific date.

"We are here. (Who is here?) Maude and Vester, Willis and Ester. (Who is to write tonight?) Maude. (Will you not let Vester write tonight? You wrote last time, Maude.) [This remark indicates either some forgetfulness on the part of Mr. S. or the fact that there was an unrecorded experiment between August 21st and the present one, or if this preceded August 21st, then between August 15th and the present one. For in the previous record it was Esther that wrote and who said that Maude had gone to visit the planet Mars, as if preparing to make the communications of this and the next record of August 28th. The answer, however, is interesting.] No. (Is Vester here?) No. (Where is he?) Home. (At my father's?) Yes. (Have you any special message?) I will try to write. (Have you any special message?) I will tell you about *Mars* some night. (Write that word after 'about' again.) *Mars*. (What do you mean by Mars?) The Planet. [Written with a capital 'T' and big letters.] (What do you know about the planet Mars?) I am a going to it. (Have you ever been there?) No. (How does it happen you are going to it?) With uncle Vester. (Explain how it is you are going with uncle Vester.) I want to and he said I could. He likes me. (Do you know anything about the planet Mars?) No. (Does uncle Vester?) No. (Can you explain how it is Vester is going to Mars?) He wanted to see it and learn about it. (Have you ever been to any of the planets besides the Earth?) Yes. (Which one?) Jupiter. (Tell me about Jupiter, please.) [The answer to this was a crude map drawn by the planchette. The map has not been preserved, unfortunately.] (What is this?) A part of Jupiter. (Don't draw any more maps. Tell me something about it.) It is very pretty. (Go on about the people.) They are different than you. They know lots of things. (Tell me some things they know that we don't.) I will some other

time. (Why couldn't you now?) I want to go. (Why?) Jesus wants me. (What does he want you for now?) To talk with me. (Are you going there?) Yes. Good night papa and mamma and baby." Cf. p. 192.

The next record, as already indicated, is that of August 28th, 1895, though I shall mention difficulties in this assignment of the date in my comments after giving the subject matter.

The first thing done with the planchette was the drawing of a map of a continent on the planet Mars, and the giving of six words describing certain features of this continent or incidents connected with them. The map is reproduced here with the words written in it just as the planchette constructed it. The interpretation of the map and the terms describing its features was also written out by the planchette, but the original of this is so confused by superposition of the writing that it cannot now be reproduced. The account must be made from the general notes of Mr. S. at the time. The words were as follows, with their interpretation.

Zenten—Very cold.

Zentinen—Cold, very cold.

Dirnstze—North Temperate Zone.

Dirnstzerin—South Temperate Zone.

Emerincenren—The Equator.

Mimtenirimte—One Continent.

[Fig. I.]

After the drawing of the map and the giving of these words the communications seem to have begun abruptly, the "control" all the while being Maude, the deceased daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S.

"At it we had a fine time. We could go all around there easy. The people are bigger and there are not so many as on this Earth. [During the writing of the first sentence Mrs. S. was absolutely unconscious of it. We did not know what it was until it was written a second time.] The people there could talk with the people here if they knew their language, but they do not. (Do the people in Mars have flesh and blood as we do?) Yes. (Do they look like us?) Some. (Are there big cities there?) No. The inhabitants are most like the Indians. (No, American Indians?) Yes. (Do they live out doors?) Yes. (In a savage state?) Some. (Are they highly civilised?) Yes, some are in some things. (What things?) In fixing the water. (How? In what way?) Making it so that it is easy to get around it. (How do they do that?) They cut great

canals from ocean to ocean and great bodies of water." At this point the communications were terminated.

The interesting part of the contents of this experiment speaks for itself. It contains more definite allegations of fact than the previous allusions to Mars. But the statements lose a part of their interest by reason of their juxtaposition to several facts that suggest their normal origin too strongly even to feel surprise at the element of secondary personality evident in them. There is first the general public interest in recent years regarding the planet Mars. This, of course, without definite incidents associated with it would hardly suffice to prove a suspicion. But there is much more to indicate the possible connection of the statements with suggestion by something read in the papers at the time. Accounts of Mars may have been read and forgotten and afterward resurrected in an unconscious way. There is no positive proof that this was not the case, and perhaps there is also none that it was the case. But there are two facts which have much interest in their bearing upon such an hypothesis. First Mr. Percival Lowell had published in the *Atlantic Monthly* for that year four different articles on Mars, and all of them before the date of this sitting. Mr. S., however, says emphatically that this periodical was never in his house and that there was no library in the places in which he lived from which the publication could have been obtained. The only resource to sustain the origin of the messages in these articles would be to conjecture that they or one of them may have been seen in some casual way wholly forgotten, and there is nothing to prove or disprove this supposition. But there is a second fact of some importance in this connection which would make normal suggestion more probable. Mr. S. discovered, according to his statement, about two weeks after the experiment, an article in *The Golden Rule*, a publication of the Christian Endeavor Society, which, if read by Mrs. S., might suggest all that is given in this particular experiment. I give the article in a footnote.* Mr. S.

* "All who are interested in astronomy should read Percival Lowell's interesting series of articles on Mars that have appeared in *The Atlantic Monthly* this summer. He showed first that the broad physical conditions of the planet are not antagonistic to some form of life; then that Mars has a dearth of water on its surface, requiring intelligent beings, if they live there. to

cut it out and pasted it on the opposite page of the record for August 28th. But he unfortunately did not write down either the date of the paper in which the article appeared or the date of the insertion in his record. I have been able, however, to ascertain from the publishers of the paper that the date of issue for the copy containing this article was August 29th, 1895, one day after the date of the record here given. It is of course much later than the original allusions to Mars, but near enough August 28th to suppose that, if the paper were issued a few days before its nominal date, the article may have been read by Mrs. S. before the messages of this date. There is also the suspicious circumstance that Mr. S. wrote on the margin of the original map and on one of the original sheets of the automatic writing that the date of the drawing was August 31st. This might enable the paper to have been accessible to Mrs. S., even if it were not issued before its nominal date, August 29th. But in some instances of recent experiment Mr. S. has dated the original writing correctly and then dated the transcription of the incidents on the day of making it, so that we may have here a similar fact, the

make use of irrigation for the support of life; in the third place that Mars has a network of markings precisely such as could be best explained by supposing such a system of irrigation, and that where those possible irrigation ditches cross there are always round dots that behave just as ordinary oases should behave. As to the possible appearance of the beings who constructed these enormous canals, the writer indulges in some speculations: 'If he were on earth, he would weigh twenty-seven times as much as the human being, but on the surface of Mars, since gravity there is only about one-third of what it is here, he would weigh but nine times as much. The cross section of his muscles would be nine times as great. Therefore the ratio of his supporting power to [the] weight he must support would be the same as ours. Consequently, he would be able to stand with no more fatigue than we experience. Now consider the work he might be able to do. His muscles, having length, breadth, and thickness, would all be twenty-seven times as effective as ours. He would prove twenty-seven times as strong as we, and could accomplish twenty-seven times as much. But he would further work upon what required, owing to decreased gravity, but one-third the effort to overcome. His effective force, therefore, would be eighty-one times as great as man's, whether in digging canals or in other bodily occupation. As gravity on the surface of Mars is really a little more than one-third that at the surface of the earth, the true ratio is not eighty-one, but about fifty; that is, a Martian would be, physically, fifty-fold more efficient than a man.'

date, August 31st, being that of filing the record. Respecting this point Mr. S. further writes me that the date August 31st written on the margin of the original sheet containing the Martian map was not the date of the experiment, but that of filing it, and though we must admit the possibility of a mistake of memory in this matter the habit of thus marking papers later on where there is no doubt of the fact is in favor of his statement. We can hardly explain the date August 28th for the record of the messages in any other way. In regard to the difficulty here proposed Mr. and Mrs. S. write as follows:

"At that time we were subscribers to that paper, and that is how we had the copy. We are certain that we did not receive that issue before the date of its publication." Mrs. S. says: 'I know that we did not receive that paper until the first week in September and that I read it the second week in September. I did not read it until afterwards. I did not usually read the papers as they came. I was too busy and we had so many of them. The morning I read that article I was getting Cecil to sleep. I was in the sitting room. I glanced over the paper while he was going to sleep and I saw this article. I came right out into the kitchen where Mr. S. was and called his attention to it and read it to him, and asked him if he did not think it was queer that it should have happened that way, that this should have been printed after our map of Mars and the short description of the people was given to us. I said: Don't you want to save it? and he replied: What is the use of that? It is of no great importance. Then I said: We may need it some time in connection with what we have, to prove that our writing was given first, and because of this Mr. S. saved it and pasted it in that large book.'" Mr. S. then writes:

"I remember well these facts stated above. I cannot recall the exact words, but I do remember Mrs. S. coming out into the kitchen and telling me of this article and persuading me to save it. I know that it was received after the Martian map was drawn. Besides, my letter to my father which is among the documents and is in the large book will prove that at that time I made no mention of having read that article before the map was drawn and before the words were given. If Mrs. S. or I had read that article, and after that the map had been drawn, I certainly should not have been surprised at the drawing of the map and the words. But the fact is that that paper was not read before then, and also that it was not received by us until afterwards. We lived at the time in B—, and it would have

taken a day or two for the paper to have reached us, and the probability is that it would have taken two or three days, and this would have brought the reception of it by us into September as the matter lies in Mrs. S.'s memory."

The letter here referred to by Mr. S. as having been sent to his father is dated June 7th and evidently concerns the record of June 3rd, and does not bear upon either the record of August 28th or the issue at stake in the present instance. There may have been some other letter, but it is not filed in the book mentioned.

It is apparent, however, even on the supposition that the article was seen beforehand, that the subject matter of it is not in any sense a reproduction of memory, as there are too many details, and especially in the words purporting to be Martian, all of them not materially suggested in the article, to evade the hypothesis that the subliminal had constructive power independent of memory, so that the most that could be supposed on the theory of having seen the article previously is its merely suggestive character in perhaps all but the size of the inhabitants and the use of canals. The evidence that it was not seen has some probabilities in the case. But for the purpose of secondary personality it would not make any practical difference under the circumstances in this special case, considering the differences in the subject matter, whether the article was seen or not beforehand. The only advantage in recording the facts carefully lies in the circumstance that they rather than the opinion of the writer should be known.

There seem to have been no further experiments or records until the date of October 14th, 1895, when a very singular set of messages came. The whole character of the communications changed and represent a tendency to make sport of Mr. S. and to play a trick upon him.

"(A long pause. Several remarks by me in a bravado spirit—scrawls, etc. I asked, will you write your name?) No. (Why not?) You do not know me. (Were you a man or a woman in the earth life?) Myself. (Will you not answer me which?) No. (Why not tell me something about yourself? Let us get acquainted.) It is not any of your business. (Why then are you here writing to me?) To satisfy your curiosity. (About what am I curious?) The other world. (What have you to write in relation to the other world?) Nothing, only that I am here. (Who are

you? A spirit of good or evil omen?) Good night. [Several other questions]. [No answers.] Ester. (What does Esther want to say to papa tonight?) She loves your baby. (What else has Esther to say?) Loves papa and mamma. Good night. (Was the last spirit a bad spirit?) Yes. [Nothing more written after this.] "

On November 2nd, 1895, the communications somewhat resembled the last, and there was drawn a picture of the devil at the beginning. [Fig. II.]

" (I made the remark: 'You can draw anything, even the devil if you wish. I am willing.) [Then there was a head drawn with big jaw teeth, pug nose, staring eye, horns and all.] (Who is this?) The devil. (Who drew this?) Your friend. (Who is my friend?) The devil. (Is the devil my friend?) Yes. (Go on.) We are here; Willis, Ester, Maude. (Who is writing now?) Maude. (Who drew that picture of the head?) A bad spirit. (What was the name of the spirit?) I don't know. [The word 'know' was spelled 'no', then afterwards upon suggestion corrected.] (How did a bad spirit get here?) They are always trying to fool some one."

I give the representation of the "devil" in this case for reasons that can be stated in the sequel and in order to let the reader make the comparison of certain lines in it with the automatic writing of a later date (Cf. p. 250). The next record is November 7th, 1895.

"You are all right about the church. (In what way?) You can do as you please. (About the discipline?) Yes. (Do you mean I have discretion in enforcing the discipline?) Yes. (Who is writing?) Vester. (Why, Vet, don't you write more?) He is writing through me. [Three draughts all alike. At first we could not read it, but we compared them and found all three the same.] (Who is me?) Maude. (Why cannot Vet write alone to us without writing through you?) [The reply to this was the drawing of a map of North and South America. It was a very good map.] (Why do you draw the map?) So you could see it. (Who drew that map?) Me. Maude. Good night."

On November 15th, 1895, two human hands were drawn and a message of love sent by Maude to her father and mother, and the following written out by the same communicator, but recorded without the dialogue.

"Georgie looks like Ester. Willis looks like Maude. Maude said she had been away a long time and had been to the planet Mars, and that when she had gotten back we had gone away to the other place. Not Sa——, but the farm. Maude said why did you leave Willis and Ester alone papa? (I said I did not understand.) She wrote: 'You did not tell them so that they could go with you.' (Up to the farm and at Sa——?) Yes."

In December a short colloquy took place with the drawing of a cat's head. Nothing occurred that needs to be mentioned. Only two or three short sentences were written. The experiments stopped here, as indicated in the Introduction (p. 50), and were not resumed for five years, when the communications from Mars were begun again among some of the usual kind. It is interesting to observe how the Martian matter was abruptly abandoned and messages of a trivial and tricky sort substituted in their place, as if the Martian messages were merely episodes in the field of suggestion of some kind.

In resuming the record I shall include in this chapter only the matter pertaining to Mars, and shall not give the record chronologically, except as bearing upon the Martian communications. The other matter will be reserved for a place by itself.

It will be most important to remark, however, that the record of the experiments pertaining to Mars and begun in 1900 is not so complete as the earlier. The dialogue that evidently accompanied the picture drawing has not been preserved in all instances and hence the questions of the sitters do not always appear in the account. It is an unfortunate defect in the case, as we are thus unable to determine with any precision how far suggestion may or may not have influenced the results. Nevertheless the record is sufficiently complete to make the phenomena interesting enough to science and to dispel, partly at least, the suspicion of undue influence from suggestion. The most striking feature of the experiments is the sudden resumption of Martian communications without any reproduction of the tricky messages five years previous, as if there had been some unconscious development of the ability to produce this sort of phenomena in the details necessary to give them plausibility. They seem to have begun on September 14th and, extending to December 16th, 1900, were interrupted after that date by the appearance of another personality who called himself "Harrison Clarke", and who

must be considered separately. In these new Martian communications the communicators were the deceased members of the family, and usually purported to be Maude, the child that was still-born in 1891.

In reply to inquiries regarding the questions asked during these Martian experiments and not recorded, Mr. S. says:

"In nearly every case, as far as I can remember, the drawings were given absolutely without any suggestion on my part, or on the part of any one else who might have been present. I do not remember asking any suggestive questions. I did ask many questions, but they were not of a leading or suggestive sort. Such were not needed and those asked were for information as to what this or that was, and what the drawing or sign meant.

"About the ship. It was drawn and I said: 'What is that for?' The answer was, I think, 'a sea vessel', or something like it. I could tell if I had the manuscript. No, I am certain that the drawings were not due to my questions. If this was implied in the treatment of the matter the whole force of these things would be lost in my judgment. Often we would sit down and no questions whatever were asked, when one of these drawings or Martian sentences would be given. By this you can see how it was. It is true that I asked many questions, but they were questions of fact and not such as would suggest their own answer. Often the word would not be clear and I would ask that it be written again. This was done two or three times in several cases before I knew what the word was. When I knew I found that the same had been written each time."

[I can add that the character of the original sheets and the matter involved seem to bear out this statement. J. H. H.]

September 14th, 1900. "(Who are here?) We have been to little baby sister. (Who do you mean?) Little baby sister. (Explain.) She is not on this planet yet. (Where is she?) On Jupiter. (What is her name?) Rubie Ruth. (Rubie Ruth Smead.) (Go on, tell us about Jupiter.)

We all went there at first because we were so small and there were angels that took care of us there: and after a while we were big enough to come alone. They let us. But at our leaving the earth they came and took us to Jupiter.

(Tell us why little babies go to Jupiter.) Only little ones go. (Why do they go there?) It is a very beautiful place and little babies have not sinned, and so the angels teach them all about God

and you and mamma. You cannot live there. Baby spirits can, because they are nearest like the angels. Tomorrow night—(Had we better stop?) Yes."

Rubie was the name of a child of Mr. and Mrs. S. that had died by miscarriage in 1900. It was probably three or four months old. The name originated in this way. "I had naturally talked with the little boys as to how they would like a little sister and so forth. They had made up the name, helped I suppose by our suggestions, which was to be Rubie Ruth. This was to be the name of the little sister if it was born. But there was a miscarriage and so we called the little one that had been born so prematurely by the name Rubie Ruth Smead."

On September 15th, 1900, when the experiment began they, Mr. and Mrs. S., had to wait some time for the writing to begin. When it began the planchette drew a figure which might suggest a ship very easily and wrote two words, namely, "*Seretrevir*" and "*Cristririe*", and repeated the word "*Seretrevir*", which had not been clearly written the first time. After this second writing the word "Yes" appears in the original, evidently meaning to recognise the correct understanding of the word in response to some question not recorded. This was followed by a second and much better draft of a ship, after repeating the word "*seretrevir*" and securing its understanding. With the second draft of the ship the word "*Cristririe*" was written on the bow and the word "*Seretrevir*" again written twice under what was evidently intended for the water in which the ship was floating. It was indicated that "*Cristririe*" was the name of the ship, and that "*Seretrevir*" meant ocean or sea-vessel. On another sheet the word "*Irevitrevir*" was written, followed by the word "yes", which was erased by the planchette, and the word "vessel" written twice after it, the second time evidently for the purpose of making the meaning of the first attempt clearer. Then the name of the ship was written a second time, probably in response to a request, as this time it was perfectly clear and it is interesting to note that the "t" was crossed and the "i's" dotted as was not usual. "*Irevitrevir*" was said to mean vessel. At the close of the experiment the following dialogue took place:

"(What are the boats made of?) Trees. (You mean wood?)

Yes, they do not have sawmills like the people here. (I must stop because little brother is sick.) We will stay with brother, good night."

In the experiment of September 20th, 1900, the data are quite fully recorded. The first thing done by the planchette was the drawing of an irregular figures, unrecognizable in itself for anything, but said afterward to be a "dog house temple". In each of two corners there was drawn an animal form which has some resemblance to a dog. The dialogue then began.

(What is that?) Where they worship. (Who?) The people of Mars. [The planchette then drew a picture of a boat with some scrawls for a lake and Mr. S. asked for the name of the lake.] (Give me the name of the lake.) Emervia. When uncle Vester comes I will ask him to tell you the name. (Do you mean on chart one about the place where they worship?) Yes. (Will Vester come tonight?) No. (Want me to drop that now?) Yes. (Go on.) They have such funny names, papa. (Go on. For instance, write, "The boy runs" in the Mars language.) They don't run—walk. (Write, "The boy walks.")

This question was followed by the planchette's writing three different characters and after them on the same line the words: "the boy walking no more". The last two words are apparently for the purpose of indicating that no more characters were necessary to express the statement. Then evidently in response to some questions the word "Yes" was written twice, and afterward the characters repeated and the meaning of each indicated. The order is the same as in English, but it was carefully explained that "walking" not "walks" was the form of expression in Mars. The dialogue then continued.

(What is the Martian word in English letters for "the" in the sentence, "the boy walking"?) *ti*. [Means "the", pronounced "te".] (What is the word for "boy"?) *inin*. [Pronounced "enen".] (What is the word for walking?) *amarivim*. ["i" has the "e" sound, pronounced "amarevem".] [Then the sentence was rewritten in the Martian characters again.] (What else?) [Following this question four more characters were written giving the name of the figure drawn at the opening of the experiment, and interpreted, as in the case of the above sentence, to mean, "The dog-house temple." The Martian words for this were given in the same

way. They were: "*ti femo warhibivie timeviol*".] The experiment then came to a close with Mrs. S. saying: "Good night, Maude. You have done well. Many thanks, little girl."

In connection with the scrawls for the lake the planchette wrote: "Pretty soon. It is hard tonight papa. Mamma hand with her cloth on cloth." It is apparent that the record of all that was said by Mr. S. here was not made and the full meaning of this is not clear.

On September 24th, 1900, amid a lot of automatic writing by the planchette that is not worth mentioning in this account, as it is mere conversation with questions omitted from the record and not bearing upon the subject of present interest, there was written another Martian sentence. Five characters were written, and one of them erased, and they were interpreted immediately to mean: "A great man chief ruler." It was written in an inverted order, that is, backward. The word "better" apparently was written immediately after the sentence, perhaps as an automatism in response to a request to write the Martian characters more clearly. Then came, possibly in answer to some question: "Because Maude came." On September 30th this sentence was written again and interpreted as before. The characters this time were more distinct. On the first occasion, September 14th, the Martian words for the name of the "ruler" were given and were: "*Amirie En*."

On September 29th, 1900, the planchette first drew a rough sketch of a man and wrote the word "*yo urst*" in connection with it. The record in this case is quite complete and is as follows:

"[Picture drawn. Written.] '*yo urst*'—Mars—you. (Shall I write at the top of the figure?) '*Cle*'. (What does that mean?) One. (Can you give its sign?) Wait. [Then given and as is apparent is identical with our letter 'T'.] T One, pronounced *chi*. (What is the significance of the word '*yo urst*'?) You are a man. You. (I am not on Mars.) That man is.

[Then another picture was drawn representing a woman, as explained, and the word '*ke*' written in connection with it, and explained to mean *two*.] (Can you give the Martian sign that means *two*?) [This was given and as is apparent is identical with our letter 'Z'.] Z (What is the Martian word for men?) Maren. [Pronounced '*marin*'; word means '*men*'.] (Give me the word for '*women*'.) karen. [Pronounced '*karin*'.] [It must be observed that the original for '*men*' represents only three signs while there are five in it as pronounced, and in that for '*women*' there are

as many Martian signs as in English.] (What is the word for 'man'?) Wait. (What is the word for 'man' in the Martian language, giving me the word in English letters?) Mare. [Pronounced 'mari', 'mare' means man.] (What is the word for 'woman' in the Martian language? [Written in Martian characters.] (What is the word in English?) Kare. [Pronounced 'kari'.] (What is peculiar about that picture of the man you drew?) The way they dress. (How?) The men wear dresses and pants. (Short dresses?) Yes. (Go on.) The women wear bag-like skirts and funny hats. Their hair is hanging down on their shoulders. The men put theirs up and keep long hair under their hats. We went all around. The people are different in different places."

On September 30th, 1900, the first thing done by the planchette was to repeat the picture of the Martian man drawn the evening previous. It reproduced the features of the first attempt though in a better form and represented the dress as described. This was followed by a strange figure and the word "*Wereven*", which was explained to mean "serpent". This word was written several times, evidently in response to a request to make it clear. If I understand the figure rightly it represents some kind of a serpent coiled up as if to strike. This is not very definitely indicated, but is apparent. This was followed by a rough draft of what was described as a house. The figure was drawn a second time in response to the request to make it clear. It appears as a sort of double cross with the outline of a mountain in the background. The lower part of the double cross, however, was explained to be the shadow of the house in the water, indicating that the house was built on the shore of some body of water. The planchette indicated that the figure was a house by drawing the linguistic symbol for a house which was the same as in the sentences where the word required to be used. The round or circular loops in the wing sections of the house were intended for windows and the opening on the line representing the shore was said to be the door. In response to a question the planchette wrote: "They live out doors most of the time." Also the word "*triu*" and the Martian sign for the figure 4 and likewise the word "*tri*" and its sign for the figure 3 were written.

A most interesting feature of this experiment, following the drawing of the ground plan of the house, was the drawing of the signs for the words "man", "woman", "men", "women", and

for the sentence written on September 20th. The originals are reproduced below. In explanation of them the planchette wrote: "The Martian language has both an alphabet and signs for words. They use the signs most." I give in the reproduction of the signs their equivalents in Martian and English.

Mare—Man. Man chief ruler.

Maren—men.

Kare—woman.

Karen—women.

Triu—four.

A great man chief ruler.

Mr. S. drew the signs in better form and the correctness of them was certified by the planchette. I give the reproduction.

There was also produced by the planchette the sign for the words "man chief ruler", which is the same also for "man", in the sentence "a great man chief ruler", and different from the word "man" in distinction from "woman".

On October 1st the planchette first drew the characters for a Martian sentence which reads in English: "This man is a great man." Under the characters were written numbers to indicate the order in which they stood in the Martian language and which represented the sentence in the following form: "This man a great man is." It is noticeable that the symbol for the word man is not the same in both instances in the sentence. But it is quite as noticeable that the second symbol for "man" is the same as that for "man" as distinguished by sex and given on September 30th. Also the symbol for "great" was the same as before on September 30th and 24th. There followed this the writing of the symbols for "man", "great man", and "great man chief ruler", which are here reproduced. That for "man" it is noticeable is the same as the first instance in the sentence just given, and "great man" is the same as the second instance in the sentence and the same as "man" in distinction from "woman" as given on September 30th.

There followed this another sentence representing: "The great man addressing his subjects." This was written in the same manner as the previous sentence. The numbers indicating the Martian order of expression were written under the appropriate character. The signs for "great man" are the same exactly as in the previous

sentence. It is interesting to remark also that the sign for "his" is simply the obverse of that for "great". For the word "addressing" as given by Mr. S. the planchette wrote "talking", so that in reality the sentence was: "The great man talking his subjects." The Martian order was: "The great man his subjects talking."

The next sentence with the Martian symbols represented: "A great man walking to temple." Inasmuch as the sign for "great man" in the original sentence is the same as that for "man", we may as well interpret it as being "A man walking to temple." Unless the fourth symbol can be interpreted as meaning "to temple", the necessary sign for "temple" is wanting. The word and symbol for the figure 5 were given, and this fact seems to have been meant for the number of signs in the sentence. The word was "Zu", and the symbol somewhat resembles our figure 5 lying on its side and angular in form. The word, or rather symbol, for "walking" is the same, it should be noticed, as that given on September 20th in the sentence: "The boy walking."

On October 3rd, 1900, the planchette wrote a continuous series of seven characters and asked Mr. S. to interpret them. After he expressed his inability to do this the planchette proceeded to write the interpretation in English and also gave the Martian words for the same. The Martian symbols were written three times, twice without connecting them, so that each sign would appear separately. It also drew a picture of a flower or flower bud. The sentence in English was: "Flowers bloom there. Many of the great men plant them." The sentence in Martian was: "*Moken irin trinen min aru ti maren inine tine.*" I reproduce the originals of all three drafts of the sentence in the Martian characters for the sake of illustrating an interesting feat of preserving uniformity and exhibiting subliminal memory (p. 228).

Mr. S. also records a still longer sentence as having been written on the same date, but he has not preserved the original planchette writing, except in the Martian characters and words. How the interpretation was effected is not explained. But the sentence was: "The men went with the subjects of the chief ruler to the temple." The Martian for this was: "*Ti maren arivie warire ti marenenis aru ti Artes feu ti timeviol.*"

In the course of the experiment the communicator wrote: "The people on Mars choose their rulers, so the children of great men do

not count," and at the close of the experiment Mr. S. asked who was writing and the answer was: "Maude. Babies love to watch me write. Maude writes: Sylvester tells."

On October 4th, 1900, one of the most interesting and remarkable of the whole series of drawings was made by the planchette. That it was done with the planchette must be remembered in order to appreciate the difficulty of so delicate a piece of work. The communications began with the message: "You should see some of their embroideries. The colors are beautiful." Then the figure of a piece of embroidery was drawn, representing, as afterward indicated, a dress of an inhabitant of Mars. The figure represents, as seen by the cut, a beautiful production of embroidered flowers. After the outline was drawn the planchette wrote out the colors of the flowers and of the various parts of the dress. Variations of pink, white, green, yellow, brown, and lavender were described as belonging to it. I reproduce for the reader the representation of the dress as reconstructed according to the description and directions of the planchette. In the description of the dress the words "pink" and "brown" were written in the inverted form, that is, backwards. In farther explanation of the embroidery the planchette wrote out the following sentence in Martian signs and words: "Man chief ruler's wife's dress when she goes riding with the man chief ruler." The Martian for this is: "*Mare arrivie ceassin oonei kei ahrue ruinin warire ti mare.*" The symbols for the words used before, it is noticeable, are the same as in previous communications. There was added to this sentence the statement: "They do not have horses: they glide, but they think it is riding." It is noticeable in the original writing that the "i's" are dotted and the "t's" crossed quite frequently, especially when it was necessary to make the spelling of the Martian word clear. [Fig. III.]

I must add here by way of explanation that there is some confusion in regard to the date of writing the sentence just mentioned. The record is not clear on this point. Apparently the completion of its explanation occurred on October 5th. It matters very little, however, whether it was so or not, as the connection is clear. It simply happened that some of the original sheets belonging to the explanation of this sentence were contained in the number representing the writing of October 5th.

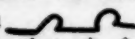
On October 5th, 1900, nominally at least, according to the record,

there was drawn a small figure of something like a wagon and an animal hitched to it. The symbols, Martian name, and the English equivalent for it were all given. It was called a "goat cart", the Martian name being "*yeoar*"

A more remarkably original and ingenious piece of work was the Martian clock which was drawn and described on October 7th. The dialogue in this instance is fully recorded. There were two drafts of the clock but only one is given. After the first one was drawn the dialogue proceeded. It began with the statement by the planchette describing what the figure purported to be. The Martian name given for it was "*triveniul*". [Fig. IV.]

"What they tell time with. (How do they tell time?) When one winds the other unwinds. (How do they tell time? Do they have days of twelve hours each as we do?) Longer days and nights. (Tell me how they tell time. Explain it to me so I will know.) The round part is wood and the other part is made of something like brass and it winds up at day and unwinds at night. (How do they tell time? I cannot see yet. Explain.) Those are made [referring to the scroll points or projections] so they can turn thirteen times in the day. (Go on, explain.) Unwind at night eleven, and the other part from the center unwinds some. The spirals go off one at a time. (From day to night are the spirals turned around by that spring?) Yes. One goes over to the night. Triveniul means 'clock'. [Here the sign or Martian symbol for clock was drawn. I reproduce it below.] Every hour and one minute and one sixth in your time. They have them in their houses on a kind of table. It [the spiral] catches on so that they do not come off. Their parts are not all even. (They are all even in the original.) Yes. (All else correct?) Yes. [Evidently further questions were asked without record, but the responses were:] The coil spring A is about one-fourth of an inch wide. The spring that is set in is one-fourth of an inch wide. The spring and the spirals are all one. The spring is flat, about an inch wide, and at its outer end is drawn or changed into a wire shape. The wire forms the loops and spirals. They have a handle like to take hold of to turn it. Never have to wind spring B. Spring A must be wound one in twenty-four hours."

The matter was not yet clear to Mr. S., and hence on November 24th he brought up the question again and asked: "What is there to regulate the action of the mechanism?" The answer was the drawing of a spiral and the statement: "I did make enough of these—yes [apparently moving the pencil point with the planchette to the

figure and then writing] the spiral has places to catch when one is to pass off. It holds the next one * * [undecipherable.] The spring has a kind of place at the center that lets off and—no—lets it off that way * * [undec.] yes [ratchets drawn ] like that * * [undec.] yes under [circle drawn] like that * * [undec.] yes. [Apparently some further question was asked, as a series of somewhat eccentric circles was drawn with thirteen ratchets in it and the sentence written.] Then where I told you the wires come out and hold them in place. The spirals go across from day to night the loops unwind—yes—['yes' erased] at a time one does."

In other words, so far as the matter is intelligible at all, we have a sort of double circular box with coils and springs in it. One of them is wound up. As it runs down to measure the time of day it winds the spring in the other compartment for keeping the hours during the night. The reproduction of it according to the best understanding that Mr. S. could obtain of it will indicate as nearly as possible what it was.

On October 9th and 13th, 1900, another remarkable and ingenious mechanism was drawn and named an air ship. There were two drafts of it, the second much clearer in outline and shape than the first. The questions are not preserved in the record, but the statements of the planchette are complete, describing the apparatus, and were collated at the time. This description is as follows:

"Made of wire-cloth-like stuff—made to go in the air. It is an air ship. It is a coil. You see it will run a long mile [the word 'mile' was evidently a mistake for 'while'] when they have to stop and wind it, or it must be wound while it is in motion. This coil makes the wings go. Each one [wing] is connected with this coil and then when the power is turned on it makes them go like bird's wings. The power runs it all, only the propeller guides it. Let me tell you about the wings first.

"They are filled with air so that they are light, then the wire-like cloth covers them. There are fifteen points or parts of wings that are filled with air. These wings go up and down. The coils at the bottom are used to help the wings open. The power winds the coil. The power is electricity and the batteries are where the coils are. There are three big coils. One is for the wind sails, one is for the wings, and one is for the propeller. The coil is used with the sails because it is sometimes needed when the winds are strong. This propeller goes like a wing. The wind makes the ship go some."

The interesting use of the word "propeller" should be remarked. The cut shows that it is really the *helm*, and is not a "propeller" at all. This mistake of the subliminal might easily be laid to the account of the subject's actual ignorance of the parts of a ship. The openings for admission to the air ship, indicated by the planchette, are curious makeshifts for doors. That electricity should be the motive power is also curiously suggestive of the natural source of such a conception. But I am not at present interested in explaining the origin of the idea in the subliminal, but in the fertility of its resources for illustrating what is partly ingenious and partly unintelligible. It appears that, on December 1st, there was a return to the subject among other things, and a draft of the department in which the electric battery and coils were placed. This is hardly worth production, as it is not a complicated mechanism. [Fig. V.]

After completing the description of the air ship on October 13th Prof. X. decided to try an experiment. He had several times tried to impress the mind of Mrs. S. telepathically by thinking intently of what he wanted the planchette to write, but he absolutely failed in all his attempts, so that he became convinced that, whatever the explanation of the phenomena, there was no telepathy in them, and his own preference was for secondary personality. On this occasion, however, he resolved to try the following experiment which is suggestive of clairvoyance as well as telepathy in its method. I give his own words describing it.

"After having observed the Martian character-writing purporting to be written by the little girl 'Maude' I attempted to test the telepathic theory by requesting the little girl to read from my mind or from writing placed upon the table out of the reach of the psychic. She replied that she did not know that it would be possible for her to do so without the assistance of her 'uncle Sylvester' (Mr. S.'s deceased brother), but she finally agreed to make the trial. The sentence, 'Do flowers grow on Mars?' was written by me and placed upon the table covered by several sheets of paper, over which my hand was placed. The planchette then began to draw apparently unintelligible scrawls. (My hand was not on the planchette, only the hands of Mr. and Mrs. S., neither of whom had any opportunity to know what was written on the paper.) When the planchette had finished the drawing, these words were written across the drawing: 'Water lilies bloom there', or 'water flowers bloom there', I cannot remember positively which. Upon a more careful examination

the drawing proved to be a pond surrounded by water lilies. The drawing was such as would be recognised by any one as being what it pretended to be. I am informed by Mr. S. that you have the originals in your possession."

The figure drawn is rightly described, but the only words written across the picture are "water flowers". There was also an evident intention to describe their colors, for the page is written over with the words "green", "brown", "yellow" and "white". This answer to the question of Prof. X. may be a chance coincidence, as the mind was already turned toward the subject of Mars. Were the experiment isolated from this general subject of Martian life the coincidence would be more suggestive.

On October 15th, 1900, there was drawn a kind of mountain or elevation on which were placed the symbols of two houses and the place was described in the automatic writing of the planchette as the place "where they look at you". There were drawn across the mountain what may be described as representations of tunnels dug through it and a sort of pipe-like appearance at one end. The name of it in Martian was given as "*warhibivie*" or "house". This word was written near the symbols for house. Then a complete sentence describing the drawing was written in both Martian symbols and words. The symbols were written in the order of English, but numbers placed under them to indicate the Martian order. The sentence read: "The place in which man chief ruler looks on your earth from Mars." The Martian order indicated by the numbers was: "The man chief ruler's place in which looks on your earth from Mars." The Martian of this is: "*Ti rure (?) neu infew mare laries en fratuir triuen carmie*."

In the hieroglyphic signs it is noticeable that the symbol for "the" ('*ti*') is not the same as before. It is here identical with our capital 'T'. Mr. S. also called my attention to a coincidence with an incident in Flournoy's case (See *From India to the Planet Mars*, p. 217). Mlle. Helène Smith in Flournoy's experiments had a "vision of a house, constructed by digging into a Martian mountain, and traversed by a sort of air shafts, and which represented Astane's observatory." The same sort of tunnel or air shaft may be intended by the lines described as such above. There was nothing said in my case to assure us of the meaning or identity, and it was

not suspected until afterward, no questions having been asked. Mr. S. had not yet read Flournoy's book, and he had not permitted Mrs. S. to have it. Besides at the time of her drawing, the book was at the house of Prof. X., having been sent there to keep it away from Mrs. S.

November 14th, 1900, was devoted to the writing of another Martian sentence representative of people eating a meal. The house to which the statement referred seems, according to the original record, not to have been drawn until November 24th. The sentence was written three different times. The first time one symbol was omitted. It was: "House where we saw people eating supper." In the second instance of the drawing the English equivalents were given and in the third case the Martian words. The Martian was: "*Warhibivie arri p[a]rri kau friuiol taikin sirvuen.*" Interrogated to know what the Martians were eating the answer was again written twice, the English equivalent given the first time and the Martian words in the second instance. The English interpretation was: "Bread, cake, something like water, fruit, chicken." The Martian was: "*Fraiu, kreki, trikuil, caruits, fluiniz.*" Of the last word the singular was said to be "*fluin.*" The drawing of the house in which this feast seems to have taken place, as said, seems to have been at a later date, and represents only the ground plan. It is reproduced here with all the furniture to which the planchette made reference, involving couches, hassocks, a cushion, table, water vessel, clock, and doors. On the 15th of November the picture of a chicken was drawn, and it was said that "they are smaller than our hens." At the end of the sitting on the 14th the planchette, Maude being the "control", wrote: "You see I have been studying since mamma has been away." [Mrs. S. had been absent for a month, as indicated by a note of Mr. S. at the time.]

On November 16th, 1900, the planchette drew the house or palace of Artez, the Martian chief ruler, to whose meal the sentence of November 14th referred. The full description of it, including the symbols for "house" and "man chief ruler" were written out by the planchette, in response to requests to explain the figures drawn. In some cases the planchette wrote the name of the part drawn, such as garden, water pond, etc. The cuts will show what was drawn. I reproduce the original, with the draft of Mr. S. and his representation in water colors, made after the directions of the

planchette which, as in the case of the curtain, explained the details of the drawing. Numbers one and two were said to have been built of white stone and number three of grey stone. The planchette also explained: "The spaces like doors are not doors, but places to go through. They place curtains there of beautiful colorings and texture." The cut shows the places where these curtains hung. Also the flower gardens, or plots, walks and a lake of water, with lofty mountains behind the palace and in the background.

November 21st, 1900, represents a curious deviation from the previous experiments. The communicator this time is not Maude, but Willis, a younger child of Mr. and Mrs. S. He also was a still-born child in 1892. The subject of his communications does not bear upon Mars at all and only suggests astronomy in the references to Jupiter as "the babies' heaven", a subject which had been mentioned for the first time in five years on September 14th and here renewed in an interesting way. But the main part of the discourse has no references to planetary matters at all, being baby talk in its character. Were it not for the curious nature of the diversion it would not need transcription. But it shows an interesting elasticity in Mrs. S.'s mind in assuming different personalities, so that it may throw light upon the problem involved in communications more plausible than they are. I therefore quote the whole of the written messages from Willis.

The planchette seems to have first drawn the representation of a woman and then written the name Willis, as if indicating that it was he and not Maude that did it. He then wrote that the picture represented his aunt Helen. The dialogue then seems to have begun as follows, though the questions asked by Mr. S. were few and far between:

"Willis and Ester here, that is all. Maude has gone to Jupiter with the angels to see Rubie and the new baby. (Whose baby?) You know. (Will you write it?) Uncle Joseph's. [Baby still-born a week ago.] Maude loves to go to help take care of the little babies.

I go with her sometimes. The little babies are so surprised when they open their eyes to find it so light and alone that they need some one to take care of them and play with and Maude does it so nicely that the angels love to have her, so she goes lots of times and we go to [word 'to' evidently intended for 'too'.] (How could the spirit baby open his eyes and see light on Jupiter?) When they leave their earth bodies they cannot tell at first where they are and if

you was a little baby taken from your mamma so quick you could not see as babies can that stay as long as G God wanted them too ['too' apparently intended for 'to'] and that is the reason. Cannot you see that the little baby is so very little that the spirit is so dazed that it cannot open the eyes papa. When I went there I was like that. The angels carried me in their arms in their arms to Jupiter and took care of me and when I was going I was or did not have time to wakes [the 's' erased]. They took me so quickly. Then when we reached there the angel spoke to me and I opened my eyes, spirit eyes. Then I was so * * * then I was so surprised because I had been in the dark and when it was so light I could not help it."

This was followed by a change in the writing which consisted of the words "yes" and "no" written several times and the words "name" and "what". The handwriting seems like that of Maude. Then this again was followed by large handwriting, apparently Maude's, with the statement and message as below, apparently suggested by questions from Mr. S. which are not recorded.

"Seven. Yes. No, did not you like to have my brother Willis write? [Evidently some statement followed that was not recorded, as the next message will indicate.] Thank you papa, but brother worked worked hard to answer and you did not thank him. Yes * * [two words undecipherable] is Ester. Maude Smead. On the margin of the sheet is the sentence in another handwriting much like that of Willis, 'Yes, if she wants to. You are very go. . to give us this time good to give us this time, so brother will say good night papa and mama G Ester. [Then in Maude's handwriting] Good night papa and mama."

On November 24th, 1900, the communications recur to the Martian house of the chief ruler Artez, and the ground plan of the three departments in it was drawn with the representation of a fine curtain used in it. The palace itself was drawn as indicated on November 16th. The cut will explain this ground plan without further description, containing the references of the planchette to the various furniture of the rooms. The curtain was drawn and the colors of its various parts named so that Mr. S. could draw a water color representation of it. I do not reproduce the original of the planchette, but the sketch and the water color representation by Mr. S. The fringe at the bottom of the curtain consisted of representations of people, and there was a similar fringe at the top. Above the bottom fringe

was an ornamental decoration and above this some flowers. Above these, as the cut shows, there were the palace and a landscape with mountains in the background. [Fig. VI.]

There was also drawn a vase with flowers in it. On the vase were written the Martian characters for the word "plant." The Martian word for "vase" was "*Cari*". Apparently another word, "*Tariat*", was written, but the record does not show what was meant by it until January 4th, when it was explained to mean "Plant". I reproduce the vase.

December 1st, 1900. Apparently after some messages from various friends, as given in Chapter IV, (p. 277) the battery for the Martian air ship was drawn and some conversation held regarding it. It is neither clear nor important enough to reproduce. Following this seems to have been a Martian tower on a wall. It is impossible, owing to superposition of the words, to decipher the original record of it, and as it was not copied at the time I can only give this brief account of it.

On December 5th, 1900, there was another specimen of Martian curtain drawn. There were two drafts of it, the second, as usual, to make the first one clearer. On each of them was represented what appears to be a sketch of the Martian air ship. The word "*fameries*" was given as the Martian for "curtains" and the symbol for the same drawn. The curtain was said to be brown and the embroidery in it of light blue. The sails of the air ship were white. The background above the ship was sky and clouds. The curtain was said to belong to the white stone house. [Fig. VII.]

There followed this further communications of a conversational sort, but they, with the questions asked, were not transcribed at the time and cannot be made intelligible now. Near the close, however, Maude said that she had told about all that she could remember, and finally said: "Tell me something that you would like to know, so that when we go there again we can look and see if it is there." There is no record of any response to this request of Maude's, nor of any answer to it by her.

On this occasion, Mr. S. records the following that may have some interest. He took a blank sheet of paper and said: "That is a blank sheet of paper and you see that paper. I want you to draw a picture. There is nothing on it. Draw the picture. The planchette

wrote, 'There is'. I asked what? It wrote 'letters'. I found the words 'Congressional Mills' in water marks on the paper."

On December 6th, 1900, it appears from the original record that Willis was the writer. He began by drawing a veil, saying: "What I saw one lady wear when I went with Uncle Vester. Yes, me, Willis. Maude is away with Uncle Vester. Yes. No. Yes." He then drew a woman's bust with the veil fastened on the top of the head just as a bridal veil is with us and wrote: "That comes over. Yes. I g I guess you called it over. Yes. (What does she wear it for?) She was just married (?) (Is that a sign that she was just married?) Yes." The veil was said to consist of ribbons and lace. It is interesting to remark that the handwriting resembles that which represented the personality of Willis before.

On December 10th, 1900, there was some undecipherable writing at first and then a picture of a lady with a long trail to her dress and wearing a veil very like the one drawn on the previous occasion, Dec. 6th. There followed this a sentence written in Martian symbols and interpreted first in terms of Martian words and then their English equivalents. As before the Martian words were numbered for the Martian order. They were:

"Mirwerel Wariema Marquein warhibivie mamanie."

4 2 1 3 5

It was explained by the planchette that the bride keeps her name and adds that of her husband, and "*Marquein*" was designated as the husband's name. Mr. S. then asked, after writing them in the Martian order, if that was correct, and received the answer "Yes", with the written statement, "I would have to join the words." The sentence was then interpreted in English to mean: "The house where the bride *Marquein Wariema* lives with her husband." The word "*mamanie*" meant "to live together".

After this the experiment seems to have come to a close with the messages: "Yes. Yes. We Maude uncle Vester if we can. There are to ['to' evidently for 'too'] many that that want to write * * " [word undecipherable.]

On December 14th, 1900, another house was drawn. As usual the second draft of it had to be made for clearness. It was much larger than the first. The dialogue, which is given complete this

time, gives the description of the house. It is as follows, Maude being the writer:

"(What is this?) The place where the men that get married work. (What are those round things?) There are lots of round windows in their [houses]. (Is the middle house the same size as the others?) About two times as large. (How many windows shall I put between the doors?) 6 [on each side]. (How many shall go above?) 15 [two rows of them]. (Is it the same for the other houses besides the middle one?) Yes. (How about the middle house?) About twice as large as the others: about twice as many windows." [Fig. VIII.]

On December 16th, 1900, another long sentence was written in the usual manner. Three attempts were made before it was completed and the interpretation effected. First came the Martian symbols, then the Martian words which were in their order: "*ti maren oreicein ein treviens veren quren mariqim.*" The meaning of this was written out evidently only after much interrogation, and was: "The men work in the fields before they marry." There was some explanation of the sign for "men" which appears as the same for "man". The explanation was that the sign was larger for "men" than for "man", and also that there was a difference amid the resemblances between the sign for "man" and that for "man chief ruler". A curved stroke marks this difference. Much of the dialogue in this experiment was not transcribed and cannot here be reproduced. Toward the close a part of it evidently explained that the Martians were reluctant to answer questions.

December 16th was the last of the Martian "communications". On the 19th a new personality appeared without previous warning and took complete possession of the work for several months. The personalities of Maude, Sylvester and Willis, relatives of the Smeads, as well as all others of the casual sort, were dispossessed and the "communications" took on a new character, especially in respect to the mechanical features of the writing.

Summary of Hieroglyphs.

September 20th.

Martian—*Ti inin amarivim.*

English—the boy walking. [1] [2]

For 1st draft see cut 1, p. 223.

For 2nd draft see cut 2, p. 223.

The second draft of this sentence represents a vertical order, and was drawn in that way to explain one word at a time.

Martian—*Ti femo warhibivie timeviol.*

English—The dog house temple. [19]

September 24th.

Martian—*Amiriceen.*

English—Name of a great man. [5] [6]

For 1st draft see cut 5, p. 223.

For 2nd draft see cut 6, p. 223.

It should be observed that in the first draft of this name, made on September 24th, the order is inverted. This is one of the earliest instances of the inverted order of writing.

September 30th.

On this date both the Martian words with their alphabetic symbols and the Martian hieroglyphic form for the words as a whole were given for "Man", "Woman", "Men", and "Women".

Martian—(alphabetic form.) *Mare* (English)—"Man". [7]

..... *Maren* (English)—"Men". [8]

..... *Kare* (English)—"Woman". [9]

..... *Karen* (English)—"Women". [10]

..... (hieroglyphic form.) *Mare* (English)—"Man". [3]

..... *Maren* (English)—"Men". [4]

..... *Kare* (English)—"Woman". [11]

..... *Karen* (English)—"Women". [12]

Martian—(Not given.)

English—A great man chief ruler. (See 2nd draft of Sept. 24th.)

October 1st.

Martian—(Not given.)

English—This man is a great man. [21]

Then in order to distinguish between the various uses of symbols for "man", "great man", and "great man chief ruler", as

there was apparently some contradiction in the signs used, there followed the explanation given below.

"Man." [13]

"Great man." [14]

"Great man chief ruler." [15]

Martian—(Not given.)

English—The great man talking his subjects. [22]

Martian—(Not given.)

English—The great man walking to temple. [20] Symbol for "temple" not given. There was perhaps some confusion. The meaning of the sentence was explained.

October 3rd.

Martian—*Moken arin trinen mininaru ti maren inine tine.*

For 1st, 2nd and 3rd drafts see cuts in their order, p. 228.

English—Flowers bloom there, many of the great men plant them. [26]

Martian—*Ti maren arivie warire ti marenenis aru ti Artes feu ti timiveol.*

English—The men went with the subjects of the chief ruler to the temple. [23]

October 4th.

Martian—*Ti mare arive ceassin oonei kei ahrue ruinin warire ti mare.*

English—The man chief ruler's wife's dress when she goes riding with the man chief ruler. [24]

Martian—*Yeoar.*

English—Goat cart. [16]

October 15th.

Martian—*Ti rure (?) neu infew mare laries en fratur triuen Carmie.*

English—The place in which man chief ruler looks on (your) earth from Mars. [27]

November 14th.

Martian—*Warhibivie arri p[a]rri kau friniol taikin sirvuen.*

English—House where we saw people eating supper. [31] [28] [32]

For 1st, 2nd, and 3rd drafts see cuts 31, 32, and 33, p. 230.

November 24th.

Martian—(Not given.)

English—Man chief ruler's house. [18]

Martian—*Fraiu. Krecki. Trikuil. Caruits. Fuinis.*

English—Bread. Cake. Water.(?) Fruit. Chicken. [25] [29]

December 5th.

Martian—*Fameries.*

English—The curtains. [17]

December 10th.

Martian—*Mirwerel wariema Marquein warhibivie mamanie.*

English—The bride Wariema Marquein house living together.

or

The house where the bride Marquein Wariema lives with her husband. [33]

We should note in this case the curious combination of the signs for the words "the" and "bride" in the original Martian.

December 16th.

Martian—*Ti maren oreicein ein to treviens veren quren mariqim.*

English—The men work in the fields before they marry. [30]

I shall not enter into any elaborate discussion of the interesting features of this Martian language and its symbols. But there are a few characteristics to which I should call the attention of the reader. They relate to the general consistency of the symbols and some real or apparent exceptions to this. The reader will perhaps at once remark the close resemblance between the symbols for the words "walking" and "temple", as used on different occasions. But the consistency of this resemblance on all occasions, extending over two weeks' time, shows a good memory by the subliminal. Both symbols were used on September 20th and that for "temple" again on October 1st and 3rd. Also the letter "n" in the words for "man" and "woman" given on September 30th is much like, if not identical with that for "man" given in the first sentence on October 1st, though the repetition of the symbol for "man" on this latter date shows a decided deviation. It is interesting to remark, however, the explanation on October 1st of three different symbols for the con-

cept "man". They show distinctions that are reasonable to suppose, but which might be chargeable with an attempt on the part of the subject's subliminal to escape suspicion for inconsistency. It may be of doubtful propriety to raise this suspicion as there is little evidence to sustain it. So shrewd a subliminal could just as well sincerely employ the distinctions involved and the deception supposed in the accusation made would be merely that of self-illusion as to the real sources of the information.

The symbol for "men" on September 30th is also quite different from that used for "men" on December 16th. Perhaps the defence for this variation would be that on the latter occasion we are to understand that it was the intention to make the statement regarding the "men chief rulers", or the princes and would be chief rulers before they marry. This latter interpretation is natural enough when taken in connection with the context, which relates for several days almost wholly to matters pertaining to such dignitaries. The deviation, however, should be noted.

The sign for the word "the" is quite uniform throughout, with one apparent and one real exception. On October 1st, in the sentence, "The great man walking to temple", it appears to vary from all other cases, but examination will show that it is there in its proper form and only some lines possibly due to some confusion suggest the variation. On October 15th it was different from all other occasions. It is most interesting to observe, however, in this case the absence of the symbol for "walking" and "temple". There may be traces here of the influence upon the subliminal of the act of making the symbol for "walking" and thus supposing that the symbol for "temple" had already been given.

The sign for "man chief ruler" is used with sufficient consistency throughout. So also the sign for the word "men" as a plural. But other words than those mentioned were not used more than once, except in rewriting them. But the absence of duplication in the various sentences given and the consequent adoption of different signs for different ideas, which is the obverse side of the consistency involved in the proper repetition of the same signs for the same ideas, is an interesting aspect of the whole work. The hieroglyphic character of the whole affair, with one exception, that of the words "man" and "woman" with their plurals, is also a strikingly consistent procedure. But in spite of this there is not enough of subject

matter and complexity in these few sentences to judge of the accuracy that might be wanting if a large amount of similar messages had been delivered. The comparisons are too few to form any theory of large subliminal powers. In its details, however, I may leave the study of the phenomena to the reader and student, who is as capable of remarking all interesting difficulties and points of resemblance as I may be supposed to be. I have noted the most important which might have a bearing upon the question of secondary personality. Other features in the case will be noticed when I come to discuss that view of it.

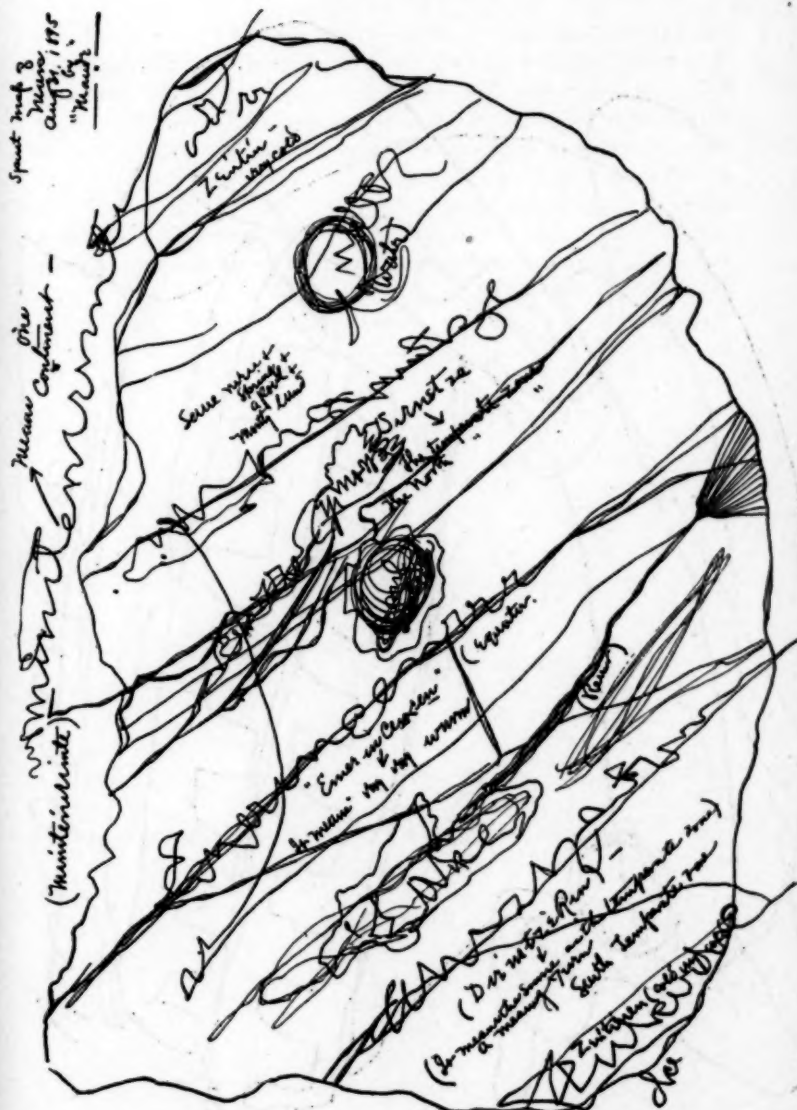
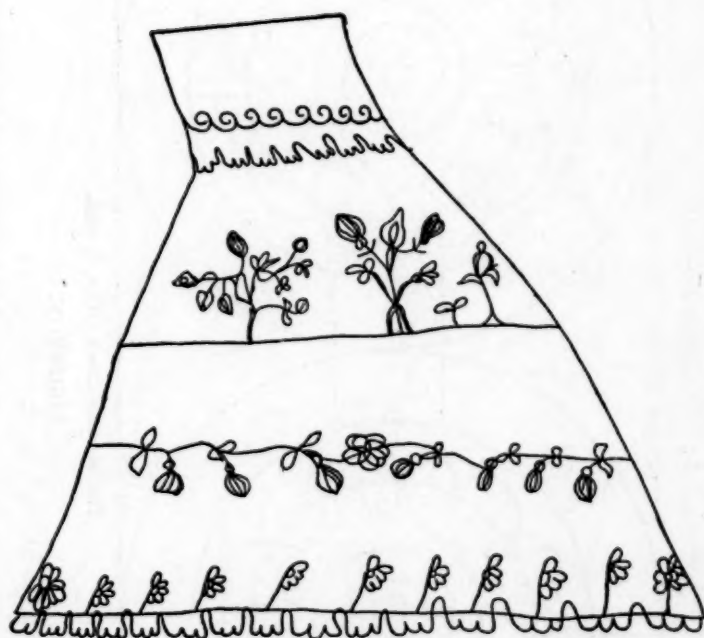


FIGURE 1.

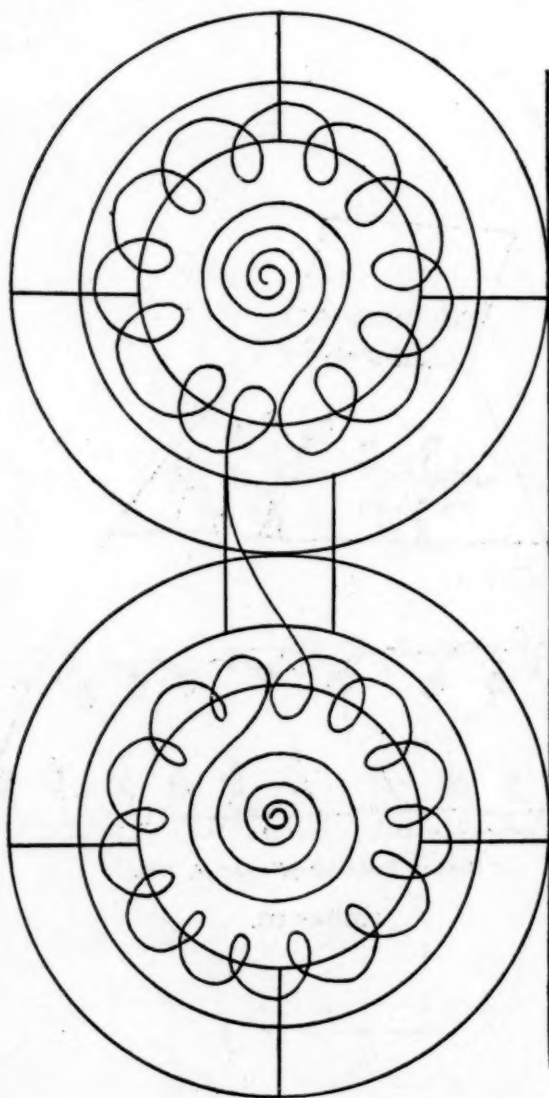


FIGURE II.



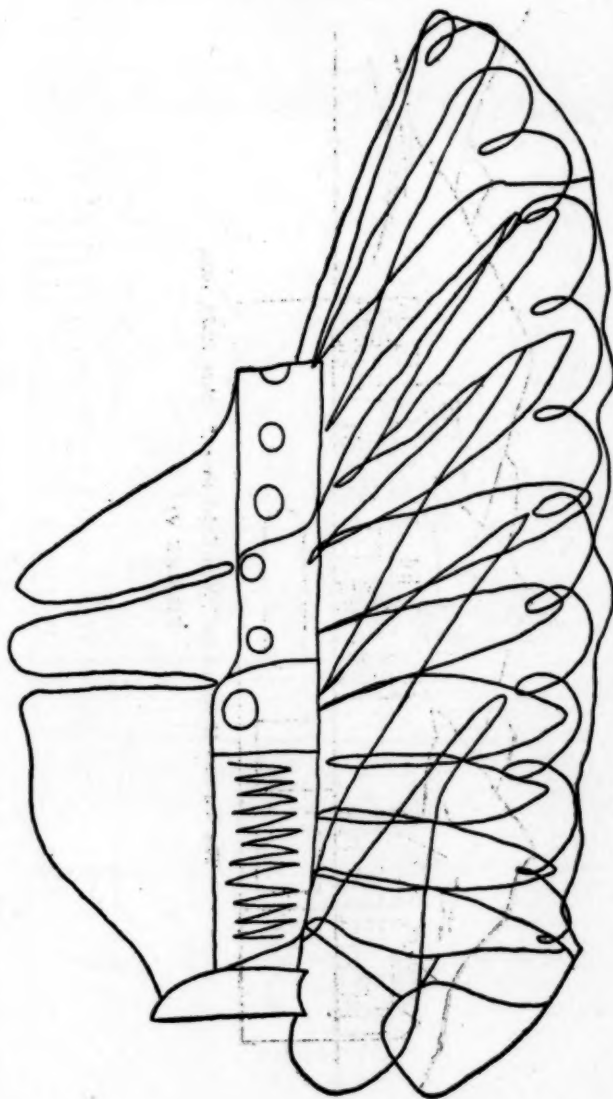
"Martian Embroidery." Oct. 4, 1900.

FIGURE III.



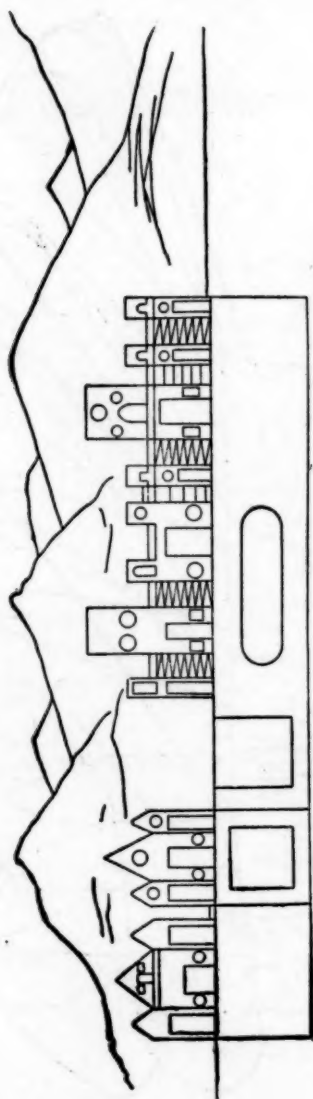
The Martian Clock. Oct. 7, 1900.

FIGURE IV.



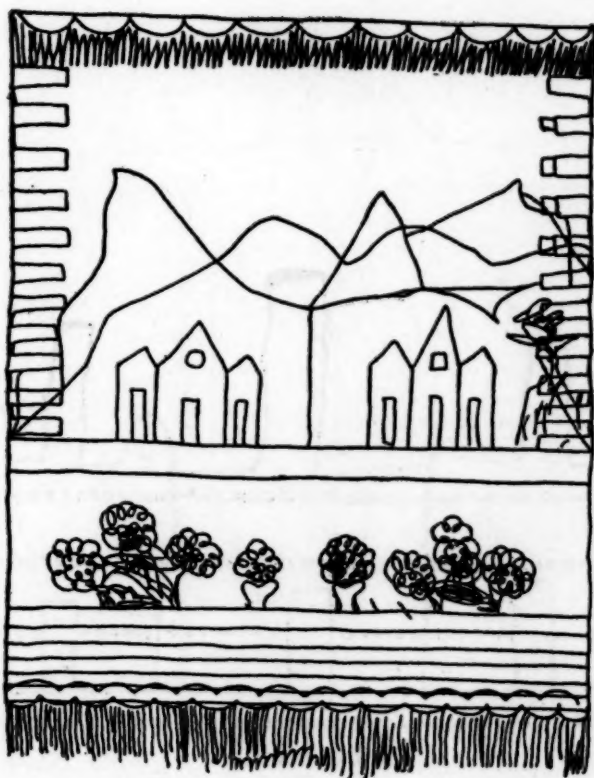
A Martian Air Ship. Oct. 9, 1900.

FIGURE V.



The Martian Home of the "Man Chief Ruler." Nov. 22-23, 1900.

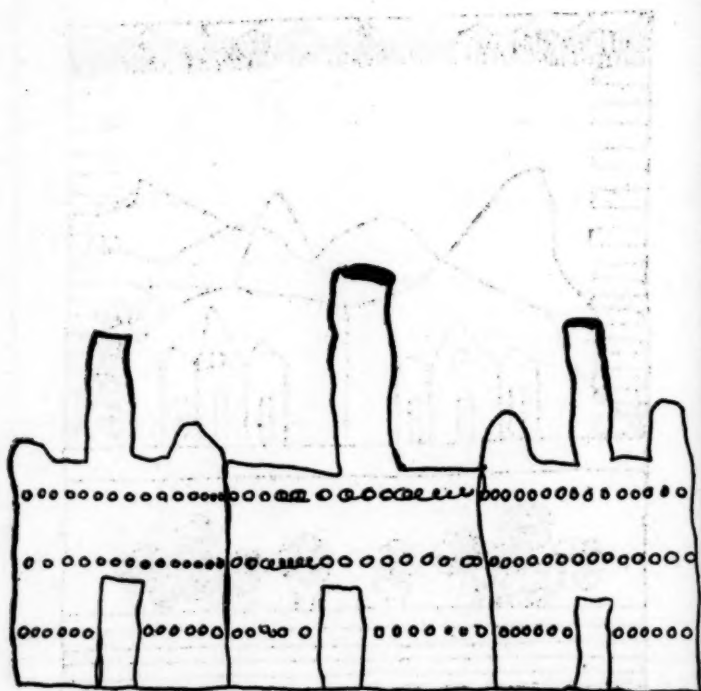
FIGURE VI.



The Embroidered Curtain Used in the Home of the Martian

"Artez" "ZPM" Nov. 24, 1900.

FIGURE VII.



"The place where the men that get married work." Dec. 14, 1900.

FIGURE VIII.

1

PPR

2

P

3

n

4

n

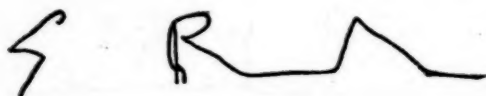
5

M. ~~W~~ PPR

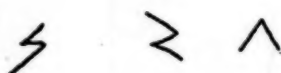
6

R P P H

7



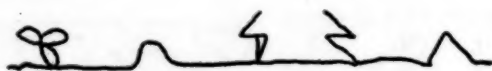
8



9



10



11



12



13



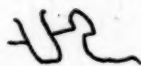
14



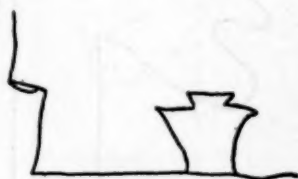
15



16

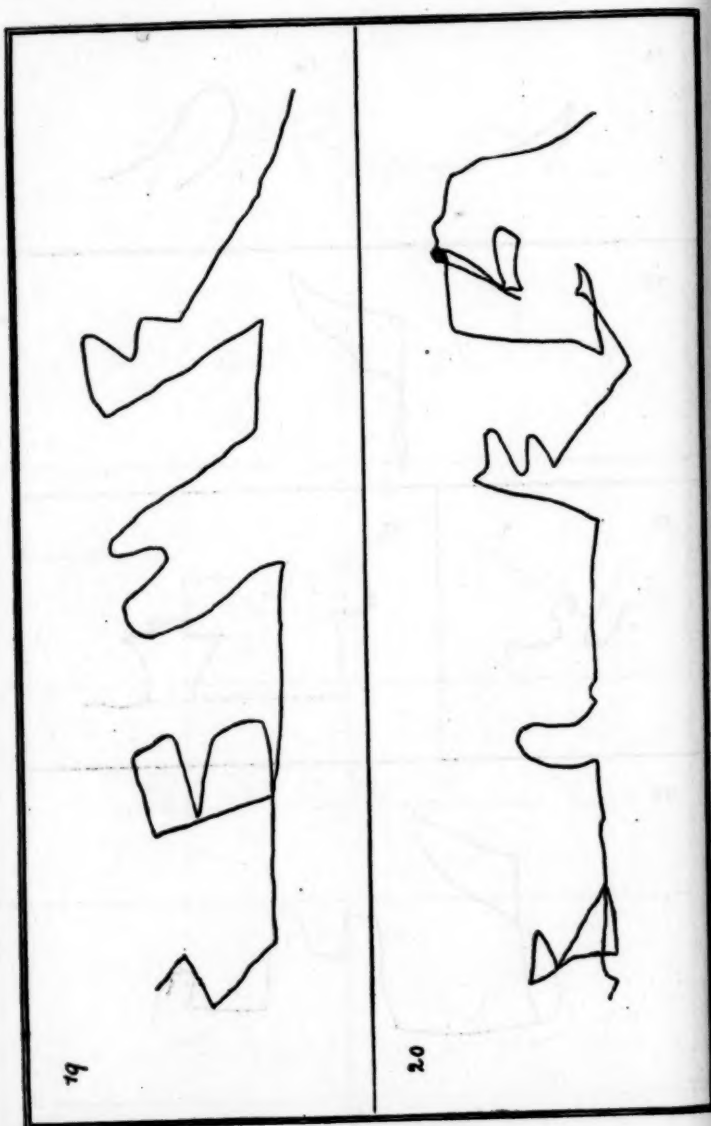


17



18





24



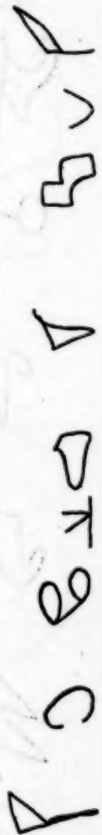
22

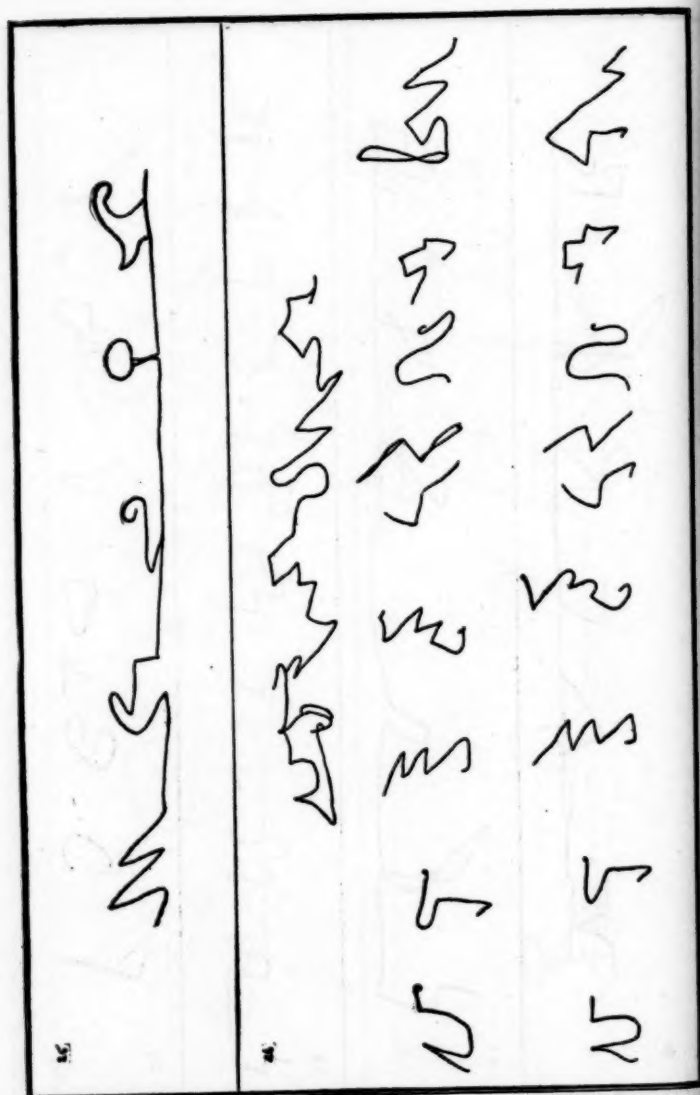


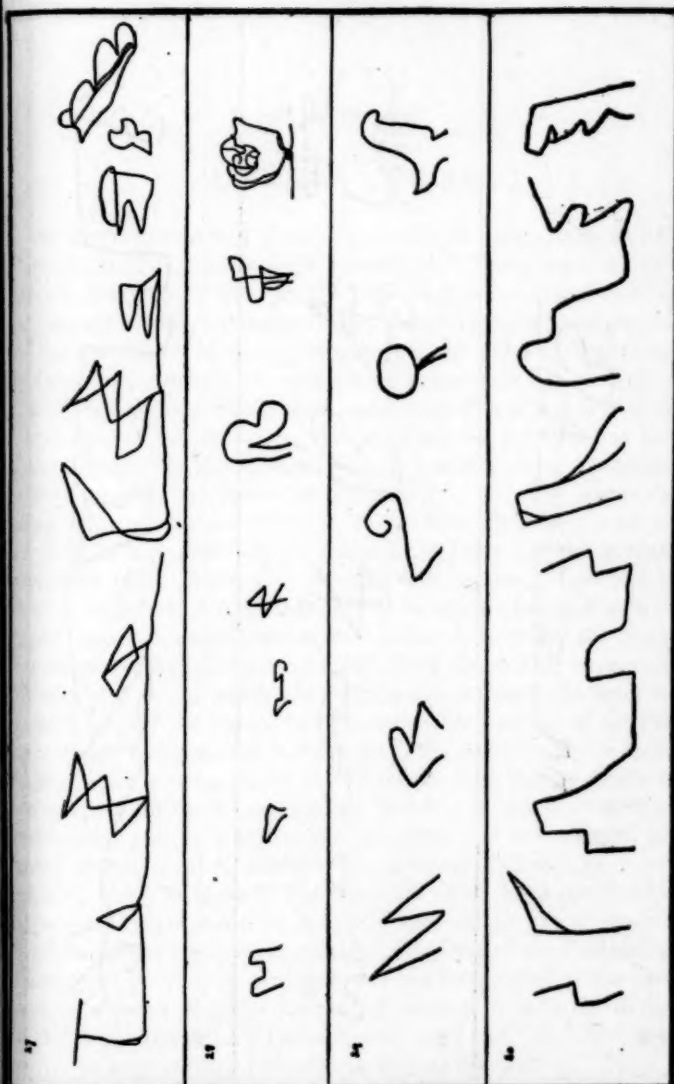
23

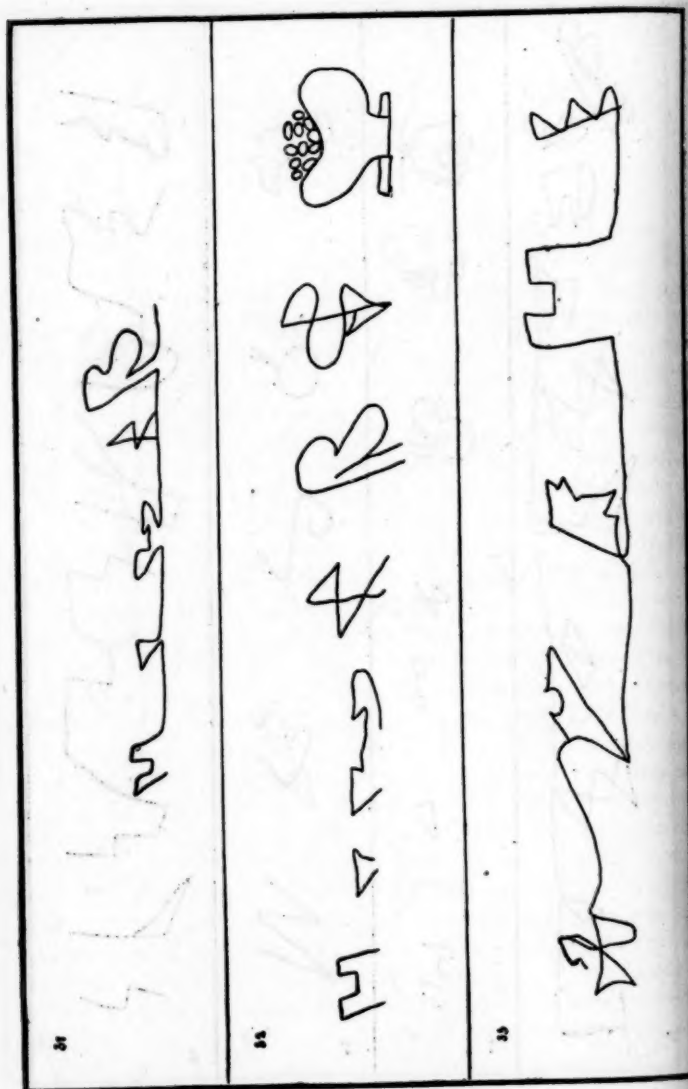


24









Ma
bee
the
for
nos
Mr.
con
exp
by
call
and
take
tere
alle
is a
vert
to n
pap
the
app
rese
stur
pers
and
dire
is n
The
repe
ver
eric

CHAPTER II.

HARRISON CLARKE.

As already remarked it was on December 16th, 1900, that the Martian communications were terminated. There seem to have been no premonitory hints of this issue, unless we are to interpret the allusion to the exhaustion of the writer's memory and material for communication as such a prognostication. This of course is a possible view, although the subliminal, if we regard it as such, of Mrs. S. had already shown itself capable of almost any feat in the construction of the plausible. But whether we can give any such explanation of the phenomenon or not, it was abruptly terminated by the intrusion on December 19th, 1900, of a new personality calling himself Harrison Clarke. The children and friends of Mr. and Mrs. S. disappear without a note of warning and this stranger takes their place, apparently unsought and against the general interest of both parties in the inexplicable incidents connected with the alleged communications from Mars. It is noticeable that the change is accompanied by two striking facts. First the writing appears inverted. That is, the words are written upside down and from left to right, so that the reader has to change his position or turn the paper upside down to read it. Secondly, the handwriting, or rather the planchette writing, for it is still this method that is employed, appears quite different from that of Maude and Willis. There are resemblances still in it to the previous style, but the cramped and stunted character of it exhibits the apparent difficulty of a new person in trying to work a machine with which he is not familiar and which repeats some of his difficulties in the act of obeying directions. Only the original planchette writing of the first sittings is now accessible, as the dialogue was not transcribed at the time. There is evidence of much questioning, perhaps to have the writing repeated and interpreted. The answers "yes" and "no", occurring very frequently, perhaps indicate guessing at the reading. But it is evident from the small amount of writing accomplished by Harrison

Clarke that there was nothing important in the experiment. He did little but make attempts to give his name, which here appears finally as Harrison Clarke, having been written once or twice as H. Clarke. There are a few undecipherable words and scrawls. But in response, evidently, to some question he explained that his "purpose was to keep others away" from the planchette and "because you want to know too much". In one of the scrawls there was an interesting set of loops resembling those occasionally made by the planchette previous to his appearance, and which also later appear in his own communications to represent symbols of marching. The significance of this may be reserved for comment in the conclusion.

It is interesting and important as bearing upon the exceptional character of the phenomena to note the special observations made by Mr. S. on this first occasion of the regularly inverted writing. He observes: "There were two parties with their hands on the instrument, Prof. X. and Mrs. S. Mr. S. read the writing, which was absolutely unknown to those who operated the planchette. All the writing was inverted and had to be read upside down." I think all will agree with Mr. S. that it is extremely difficult even for one person to operate any means for writing so as to execute it upside down, and still more difficult for two persons to act in collusion under such conditions.

On December 21st, 1900, Harrison Clarke was again the communicator. All the writing was inverted as before. Only Mr. and Mrs. S. were present on this occasion. This time the record of both questions and answers is complete.

"(Mr. Clarke, why do you write in this way?) So that you may read it. (You may write what you please, Mr. Clarke.) I do not understand what you people like to use this machine for. Why do you not believe and be satisfied?"

(I wish to prove that there is a future life for man, to give my proof to the world as a part of my life work. Now I am partly convinced. Evidentially I wish to prove to myself the identity of any spirit intelligence that has lived on earth. This is my object, Mr. Clarke.) The only proof is in seeing and all cannot see. So how are you to do this? (Mr. Clarke, I can present all my positive evidence and experiences and what I present have printed in book form that may lead many to believe what I know now and what I hope to know. I wish I could have clear evidence of personal identity. Mr. Clarke, can you give it to me, and will you?)

It would not help you in the least, for where I lived on earth is changed and the folks there would and do not know anything about me.

(I am much obliged to you for your answer. I am sorry that you cannot do so. Cannot you give me some facts about your earth life? I should be interested to know when and where you lived on earth, even if it was not conclusive as to your identity. It would help me some to believe that it was really you, and yet I admit that such evidence could not settle the matter.)

When I lived here — because if you should ever meet anyone that knew me you may ask them if they will tell you how I wrote when on earth. (Will you give me some clue by which I may find out about you and the way you wrote, Mr. Clarke?) If when you are talking with anyone by the name of Clarke, you can ask them if they knew me. (Mr. Clarke, does Dr. Clark, of the — School, know you? Are you a relative of his?) No. I will let you find out yourself. Then you will know by my writing that it is me.

(Will you come tomorrow night?) I will come, but your friends cannot talk with you while I am there. So if you want me, all right. (Good night, Mr. Clarke.) ”

The sitting lasted nearly an hour, closing twenty minutes of 10. All the messages were written in the inverted order. The planchette would first draw a line across the paper and then write the messages on this line in the inverted order. They could not be read until the sheet was turned upside down, when they could be easily read. None of it had to be written a second time.

On December 22nd, 1900, five persons were present at the sitting, which was held in the private office of Prof. X. Prof. and Mrs. X., Mr. and Mrs. S. and Miss B. were the five present. The communications open with a direct attempt, apparently, to supply Mr. S. with the desired kind of information regarding personal identity.

“ Harrison Clarke—was a printer in the *New York Herald* office. I worked as a type setter. [Then addressing Prof. X. the communicator asked: ‘What may I call you?’ Prof. X.’s name was given, and referring to the others the communicator asked: ‘What are these?’ All who were present were introduced to Mr. Clarke, and while this was being done the writing changed from the mirror to the inverted style and the communicator wrote.] Let me see you write like this.”

Prof. X. then proposed a test. It was to write a word and to take the last letter first. The word “gnilrats” was written. It was begun

with the letter "g" and written backwards, so that it stood "starling", reading this as it should be read.

In the next sitting on the same date the mirror writing was very conspicuous. It was often combined with the inverted writing in the same sentence so as to produce intolerable confusion for the reader, unless he could adjust himself to the situation promptly. The messages began with a question.

"(What luck are they having up there?) I cannot tell. [The words 'I cannot' were written in mirror, the word 'tell' in inverted writing.]. (Do you know a foreign language?) I used to at one time. [Words 'I used to at' written in mirror and the word 'one' in inverted writing.]. (What language?) German. [Inverted.]. (Any other language?) I also knew French. [Here occurred a peculiar phenomenon. The words 'I also knew' were in mirror writing, but the word 'French' was both inverted and spelled backward, beginning with 'h' and ending with 'f'.]. (Will you write some German?) No. I did not like it very well. [All this in mirror writing.]. (Will you write through Mrs. S. alone without my hand on hers? Can you?) Yes. I can if she wishes. [Mirror writing.]"

The sitting of December 23rd, 1900, shows that by this time I (J. H. Hyslop) was in communication with Mr. S. The dialogue is as follows:

"(I shall send your communications to Mr. Hyslop and I shall be pleased to see what he may think about you. I shall look you up and you cannot help yourself, Mr. Clarke. Now I have got you.) I can stop it if I wish. I can take it from the mails. [This was all mirror writing except the last two words, which were simply inverted.]"

(I shall register the letter and I defy you to do it. I shall send it and we shall see if you can do it.) I did not say I would. [This was begun in the inverted style and the last two words written in mirror writing.]"

(What are your ideas on religion, Mr. Clarke?) You will find out when you get here. [All inverted writing.]. (Will you write some French?) Do your own french. [Inverted.]. (I shall look you up in the *New York Herald* office.) They will not know me. [Inverted.]"

The dialogue of the sitting for January 1st, 1901, was not recorded, and I have only the original planchette writing, with a short

statement at the close written with a pencil, the planchette having been abandoned for the first time for trial. The first part of the writing is not certainly decipherable and appears to have been written and spelled backwards. This is followed by the word "those" in inverted style and the words "papers hid (or did) not you" in normal writing, and the word "yes" inverted. Then came: "nt (?) cit (?) Your new friend cannot find me in New York city. Why do you pepol [erased] people like this. Yes." [The word 'why' was spelled backward thus 'yhw', but written in normal direct style.]

The sitting of January 2nd, 1901, began abruptly with a message of which the record makes no mention that it was preceded by a question.

"I would like to say that until your people are convinced I shall remain to guard the machine, and so your friends must await my pleasure. What would I use it for if I did not understand it. (Asked to explain, he said:) I referred to the english language. (Is it Mr. Clarke?) Of course it is. You said that I understood the English language. (Let Mrs. S. rest a few minutes.) Certainly.

(Will you write German or French?) I shall not do it. I do not like it. I was an American. (Do you understand a linotype machine? Or can you use a typewriter?) We did not have typewriters when I was there."

January 3rd, 1901. "I am glad that your friend is trying to find me out. (If Maude comes will you let her write?) She is not here. She will not come. She is away. I told her all about it—my staying. I think Mr. Smead that you can readily see that I am not your daughter, or any one that you ever knew before I came.

(Will you kindly tell me something more definite about yourself, Mr. Clarke?) You must wait until later. (You may write whatever you please, Mr. Clarke.) Thank you. I want our friend to see if he can find me out and then I will tell you more about myself, so you can understand now why I did not tell you more at first.

(You may go on, Mr. Clarke.) I never visited this part of the country when here, but now we can go where we please. If you have any difficult questions that you would like me to help you about. I will try to do it.

(Tell me about the conscious and subconscious self. Help me solve that problem.)

When on earth it was very hard for me to believe anything, but I always felt that it must be that I had something more than a body and when I came to this world I found out that man did have a soul

that had complete control of his body, and there was no dividing it up either. I thought that if I ever had an opportunity to let any know the truth I thought was really seeking it, I would try and help such an one, and that is why I would insist on writing to suit myself and you thought me very impolite and did not like it. But I thought if you and your friends were seeking the truth that I could best let you see that I was to control this for awhile. I will not leave until I help you and your friends to know the truth.

(Good night, Mr. Clarke.) Good night, Mr. Smead."

January 4th. Mr. Clarke was asked to explain the subconscious self and hypnotism. "There is only one soul and that is the conscious self which is the soul. When a person is hypnotised it is not the one that is hypnotised that talks and acts, but another in him which acts for him or her, whichever the case may be. It is like the trance state: for you can see these persons know nothing whatever of what has taken place. Their souls are held in a trance until the operator is through, when it is returned. This is never done except at the expense of the one hypnotised. It does injure their souls to be so sent from the body. Other souls, or as you term them, spirits [come in]. The operator tells them to do as he wishes and the other soul that has taken its place does as he wishes.

(How is the person helped through being hypnotised to break off habits like cigarette smoking, etc.?)

You see the spirit that takes the soul's place tries to help it [the original soul] with the one (operator) that is doing the work: and the other (the original soul) watches sometimes, especially if it is for its good. But when it is for the pleasure of others, it does not, but just rests as it would if asleep.

(Which is the one that rests?) The one that belongs in the body. (Which one watches?) The one which is then in the body. (Do you mean the soul that belongs in the body?) How do you mean? (Does the soul that watches the spirit that has taken the soul's place, because of the work of the hypnotiser, belong in the body?) Yes. (What is the soul watching?) This spirit that is there when this person that is working over the other one and talking to it is trying to leave an impression in the body, also impresses the soul.

(Good night, Mr. Clarke. I thank you for your pains and patience.) You are welcome. Good night, Sir."

January 5th, 1901. There was some inverted and one instance of interesting mirror writing in this séance.

"This for truth. [Apparently this was unsatisfactory and possibly a question was asked to have it repeated, for it was written as

follows.] No, it is for truth. (All we care for is for scientific purposes.) You said you only wanted to know for scientific purposes and I said—no, it is for truth. You do not believe what I said, but you will when you come over here. (What do you mean by 'over here'?) Out of the physical into the spiritual. You may not believe me, but I could talk without this if Mrs. Smead did not object. ['I could talk without this' in mirror writing.] (Tell us how you could use Mrs. Smead.) If she would let me use her mind while she is sitting here. (Would she have to be in the trance state?) No, she could just shut her eyes and throw every thought out of her mind. [Several words repeated here. 'Thought' once spelled 'thout'.] and then I could use her. (Mr. Clarke, would or will you write a sentence that is in my mind if I just put my hand on Mrs. Smead's head?) You will be doing it yourself and not me. (Will you please tell us more about yourself?) No, not yet. (Has Dr. Hyslop all the information he needs to identify you?) All he will get at present. (When are we to know more about you?) You know all you are to know just now."

Mr. Clarke was then asked to do some mirror writing backward and he responded at once with the sentence: 'Yes, if you wish'. The words, 'yes, if you' were written backward in mirror writing and the word 'wish' in mirror writing, but not spelled backward. The sentence stood: 'sey, fi uoy wish', except that it could be read only in a mirror.

There followed this episode some statements connected evidently with questions not recorded. I simply quote the original. "It does not make any— Yes, if she would only do it willingly. Your * * is not in a good possion (position). Not since I first came. Yes, she knows that you want to know the truth. What shall be—".

" (Have you met any of our friends?) No. They are not here, only the little girl called Maude. [Then in reply to some question not recorded.] What I would like to say is that you cannot help believing. You will be more and more convinced as you get better acquainted with me. (Then in response to some question not recorded.) I have told you, no. (Evidently another question not recorded.) Yes, if you would like to have me.

[To Prof. X., who was present.] You must tell me what your oppion (opinions) are about the ummind the uncious mind [unconscious mind]. The body rests, the soul never does. I have already given you the truth concerning these things. (Would you have us understand that the mind slept?) No, it does—Yes. No, not with the soul. (How can you reconcile your former communication re-

specting this statement?) I mean sir, that the soul is not in the body, but remains near it.

[After the persons present had gone and only Mr. and Mrs. S. were present.] She does not like me to. (Write Greek, Mr. Clarke.) I do not know it. (Good night, Mr. Clarke.) I have enjoyed this evening very much."

January 6th. "I hope your friends will believe me, for you see I can tell you. I am where I can know these things better than you. (Come on.) [I meant to hurry up and write as it was late after evening service in the church.] Come where? (Write what you wish.) There is not much to write until you hear from your friend, Mr. Hyslop. (Explain for me the phenomena of dreams.) It is like hypnotism. (You cannot fool me that way. If a man has a stomach filled with food and he dreams, it is because of the pressure of the food, etc., and there is no hypnotism nonsense about it. You cannot fool me, so explain if you can.) How is that he will dream if he does not have any food there? (I do not know. Go on, tell me more about dreams.) They are sometimes given to people to let them know what is to happen and sometimes to let people know how things are to be changed in their homes.

When you are half asleep the soul is only partly in the body and that is why you can remember what you have dreamed, and during sound sleep you do not dream. You see the soul has completely left it, and sometimes they can be seen by others."

On this occasion Mr. S. asked Mr. Clarke to write the word "Philadelphia" in mirror writing and with every other letter omitted. This was done almost correctly and in a flowing hand, as the following letters show: "piaelha". To make it clear for the reader I write it with the omitted letters in round brackets, "p(h)i(l)a(d)el(p)h(i)a". This had to be read with the aid of a mirror.

January 11th, 1901. "(Were you ever married, Mr. Clarke?) No. My girl loved me though, but she came here first. (Give me the name of your loved one, please.) You do not need it, do you? [Answer 'yes' was probably given.] I would rather not. (I would like her name, Mr. Clarke, as a means of identification, etc.) I do not wish it used, Mr. Smead. (I will give you my masonic word that I will not use her name, or write it, or show it to others. Will you tell me as a matter of interest to me?) Not until I ask her first, Mr. Smead."

The remainder of the communications on this matter are omitted out of deference to the above mentioned pledge.

January 16th, 1901. The sitting on this occasion was a short one. I have not the original automatic writing, but only a copy by Mr. S. It evidently began with a question directed to Harrison Clarke.

"I will say that I worked there before the Civil War. [Evidently another question was asked.] I will tell you again that he will not find any records of me. I do not think it was there [meaning the records at the *Herald* office.] (Write the names of the proprietors of the *New York Herald*.) J. B. and Son. [He would not tell what 'J. B.' stood for. He said that I knew. I wrote 'James Bennett' and asked him if that was right, and he said 'Yes'. I asked him if the middle name was Gordon, and he said: 'I do not know'.] (When did you die? Will you tell me?) Yes. 1862. I or my body died in the war. I asked several other questions and he would not answer, but finally wrote: "I think you have enough for this [time], but if you do not find me, do not think I did not tell you anything but the truth. I am not positive whether Mr. B.'s son was in the firm or company when I was there. Good night."

Inquiry shows that the firm's name was never at any time "James Bennett and Son." It was first "James Gordon Bennett", and after the death of the elder Bennett it was "James Gordon Bennett, Jr."

January 18th, 1900. This experiment represents the biographical account which Harrison Clarke gave of himself. It is almost entirely uninterrupted narrative, though there were evidently a few questions which have not been recorded. The narrative itself will indicate with some probability about what the questions were, as the context will suggest.

"I want you to wait. I am doing what I can to bring back, or perhaps I had better say I am revisiting all these places and I find them so changed that it is hard to recall all the things that occurred, and that is why I did not think you would care for my life history when I came here.

When I was a very small child I lived in the west, Ill., and so when my parents both died I came to New York state with my mother's sister, Miss Mary Clarke, who gave me my name of Clarke. My own name was not Clarke. That was what my aunt called me,

and when I was a few years older I came to New York City. I first worked in a small store and did not like it; so worked until I had saved money enough, then I went to Baltimore. I remained there for three weeks without getting employment and in the meantime I did my best to get acquainted and in this way I got acquainted with my girl and her father liked me and got me a place to work in a store, and I worked for several years, but thought if I was to get married I would need a trade of some kind and so I went back to N. Y. and hired myself to Mr. J. B., and worked for him, and while I was doing this my girl was sick and died and then I did not care what happened to me. That was why I did not believe that there could be any God. I thought that if there was, he would not have taken the light out of my life just as I had begun to live. I was very much discouraged and could have done almost anything, but I was not willing to give up my girl—anything but that. I was sure that it was wrong, but I know better now. I said that if God was so mean to me that I could not love him, but after I had been shot I did not die at once but did in a short time.

After I was hurt, for a few minutes I did not know what had happened to me, and as I came to consciousness I saw my girl there and then you cannot imagine how dreadful I felt to think I had said so many things I knew were not true, and I prayed if I could be forgiven I would try to do better, when (then?) my girl told me that I was to come with her soon and I told her that if it was so I would if God would let me tell those that were left of the earth about it sometime.

I was not with my company when I was hurt. Another comrade and myself went off alone and the Rebels found us and you know what happened next. [I was shot] in the left lung near the heart. You may doubt what I shall write next, but it was true nevertheless. When I went into battle this comrade and I planned that if our side should lose and we were not killed we should drop down and pretend we were wounded and then make our escape and this is what did happen. So we did and after all our comrades were taken buy [by] Bragg. It was in 1862. We got up at night and we went as far as we could, but in the morning we were found by a rebel guard and shot.

You can look it up. It was Shiol, if I remember how to spell it right. Shilo [Then after hesitation the letter 'h' was added, most probably in response to the correction of Mr. S.] I told you I would make you believe me, for I wanted you to know the truth. Good night, Mr. Smead."

January 19th, 1901. On this occasion the writing began with a most extraordinary movement of the pencil in zigzag lines and continued to draw them all over the page until asked what these draw-

ings meant. It is most interesting to remark that the writing which followed immediately took an angular form for a few words, and then a few pages later, it became what I have called in the Introduction the "square" writing. The letters were written in straight instead of curved lines, though this was varied from the normal to the square at the pleasure of the writer. There was also a great deal of mirror writing in this sitting, the communicator changing from the normal to this form in all sorts of capricious ways. Unfortunately the questions asked were not all recorded, though their import may be conjectured from the context. The Captain's name according to a note was asked for.

"(What is meant by these drawings?) Right, Left. Yes, yes. War ['war' in mirror writing.] (Are you trying to indicate marching?) Yes. (What did you give me those drawings for, and the 'right', 'left', etc.?) That you could see how to mark time—to, yes, yes. Wallace was the one I was with. [It was possibly here that Prof. X. asked for his captain's name.] Not now. I am not ready to. Not yet. No, not yet. I do not want to tell you yet. The one I was with? [Last five words in mirror writing.] Not unless you wish it * * * * [several words undecipherable.] You will not find it on the books, but I will tell you latter [later]. Yes, Harrison Clarke. [Last five words in square letters and the name Harrison Clarke written in mirror writing.] Yes. No, not yet. We did not get far from the line. It was not very light. We would not answer [the countersign]. Yes, and we were about to run and then we were shot. If you'd [you would] like to you can. I will tell you my real name sometime. I am not ready. [Last four words in mirror writing.] I was in the ninth [ninth] line beginning with the last and counting front. Yes, line. Yes. When we started—Yes, you may find him on the records. They always called me Harry. (What was your regiment?) New York Regiment. When I started it was from New York City. (Were you in the same regiment when you entered the battle?) Yes. I was not when I left it. We were mixed up so we did not know where we did belong. [From words 'left it' to end of sentence in mirror writing.] (Were you in any other battles besides Shiloh?) No sir. He may not [last three words in mirror writing] wish to have his name in this—Yes. No, I cannot now. Yes, now. You will before I am through. ['I am' in mirror writing.] Not without his permission. [Letter 'o' in mirror writing and the letter 'n' in the normal.] Here? Yes, when I see him sometime, I will talk to him about [it] [pencil ran over the edge of the paper before the sentence was finished] and then let you know. others to come here. [This last phrase was

written on the next sheet and is unintelligible in the absence of a record of what actually was said or asked on the occasion.]

No, I did learn to read when I was here, but I have not tried reading [syllable 'ing' on next sheet] for so long that I he [word 'he' erased] if I read it will not let you kno(w) any more about me, and this I will do sometime. It will not be very long. [The word 'No' at the beginning of this paragraph was in normal and all the rest in mirror writing.] It will not help you If do yes. I lived in a small town that is now a part of Chea [erased] Chicaugo, Ill. That was where I was born. They are not to write while I am here. Yes, it is easier for me to write when no one else uses Mrs. Smead's hand." [All after the word 'yes' in mirror writing.]

January 21st, 1901. The questions were not recorded in this experiment. It is also noticeable that the writing is altogether normal. No mirror writing occurs. The subject is still the same as the last.

The opening sentence of the communications shows that probably some question was asked bearing upon Harrison Clarke's identity and the means of proving it. The record begins abruptly with that subject.

"That there is not much to it, Mr. Smead, In whaat [what] way? Yes I was, and if you should not find me what would it prove to you and your on [word 'on' erased]. Earth, Yes. Well if you ever went to Shiloh you would find that the place is changed some. But at that time it was what we called a quagmire. It was very hard to get through and if you ever tried at night when it was damp you would see what [word 'what' apparently written as 'whatt' and then erased] the comrades had to go through. You would not be surprised at their being sick, and when my comrad and I went through some of it at night we were very very tired and so it was hard to get out of the way when we were called to halt. We could see the Rebel and did not wish to halt, and we wanted to get where we could join another regiment: so run instead of shooting at him, because we thought he [evidently at close of writing on page a question was asked about the sentence, as the communicator wrote: 'All but the word 'he', explaining that this should be omitted] if we did shoot that it would bring others to his aid, and we would not get a chance at them, and that is what we wanted, ad [and] if we had stayed with those that were taken prisoners we would not have had a chance. Yes, you see, Mr. Smead, that if you trav.. travel in a forest or bushes you do not get very far, and if it is very dark it is almost impossible to get along without being heard. No. Yes. I died there a [Letter 'a' erased]. It was so near to the field that we were found and buried with the others that was killed were in the

Battle Battlefield. [The word 'were' was written in correction of 'was'.] Wallace, he took C. F. Smith's place. Yes, yes. No, he was sick. Wallace was Brig Gen. Yes, y.. Grant and Sherman were Division Com..... I do not think [word 'think' erased] remember whether Grant had come there and [word 'and' erased] in time f this batt.. for this battle. Yes Grant had charge of all the troops. Yes, yes they were given the sme [same] kind of a charge only at first * * and after [sheet changed] Grant had charge of all. Yes. I expect to. Yes, yes Wallace and Gen. Hull * * Gen. Hur * * Hurlbert were there with Sherman."

The next four sittings were held when I was present. I had made a special trip to the home of Mr. and Mrs. S. for the purpose of investigating the case. I have been extremely careful to report the questions as put at the time. I made complete notes at the time of the sitting of all that happened and made the copies constituting the present record immediately on my return home. The record is as perfect as any stenographer could make it.

First Sitting. January 22nd, 1901. Present: J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S.

Mrs. S. began without going into a trance and by simply holding a pencil in her hand placed so as to write. In order to start the writing Mr. S. asked if any intelligence was present and asked it to use Mrs. S.'s hand. Mr. S. then placed his hand on the hand of Mrs. S., and asked if Mr. Clarke was present. He then introduced me to Mr. Clarke, naming me as from Columbia University. Following this he said: "Mr. Clarke, if present please to control Mrs. S.'s hand as soon as you can conveniently do so. You told us last night you would be here today. If here, go on. Can you write, Mr. Clarke?"

[The hand started to move across the paper and Mr. S. remarked: "That is better. You will get control." The hand wrote:] "Yes, tonight, yes, yes." [This was inverted and from left to right. J. H.] (Mr. S.: Mr. Clarke, will you tell me more about Shiloh? Who was your captain?) Not until I see him. Yes, yes, yes, only cannot in your world. (J. H.: If you send this message to this world it will be good for us.) That is what I told these friends. [Evidently continuing the answer to the question about the captain.] (J. H.: Have you any persons helping you?) No, No. I do not need them. (J.

H.: Would you be willing to bring some friends of mine here?) I do not know them. (J. H.: I can tell you the name of one if you will let him talk to you. Could you find my father Robert Hyslop?) Not yet. (J. H.: When could you do it?) I do not know. (J. H.: If he came, could he speak to you and then you to me?) I would let him try. (J. H.: Very well, that is good.) [A considerable interval here followed in which the pencil stopped writing, and then began first to move downward. In a moment the motion took a zigzag form much like that of a rail fence, and then wrote in answer to my question.] I do not find him. (J. H.: Did you get the name clearly?) Yes. (J. H.: Do you think you could find him after you leave this light?) I[t] does not make any difference about the light. (J. H.: Very well.) If I could see him I would tell him. (J. H.: He has come to me through another light, and it would be of great service if you could call him up.) I will try. (J. H.: Very good.) so will not get back until later. (J. H.: Do you mean to go?) Yes, and see for you. (J. H.: Very good. I will see you again. Thank you very much.)

Mrs. S. was now in a sound sleep or trance. She had gone into this state soon after the writing began. As she emerged from it she remarked that she seemed as if she had been away off somewhere.

Second Sitting. January 22nd, 1901. Present: Prof. X., Dr. M., and J. H. Hyslop.

Prof. X. held the pencil for a few moments, as if to aid the coming of the automatic condition. In a short time there were signs of writing in the motion of the hand and pencil. Prof. X. then asked: "Mr. Clarke, are you going to write for us tonight? Are you here, Mr. Clarke? Are you ready to write, Mr. Clarke?" When the pencil began to write it began at the bottom of the page and wrote in the inverted form as viewed from my position, but so as to be read by Prof. X. in the natural way. To me it was both inverted and from right to left. The colloquy was then as follows:

Yes, I could not get him for you Dr. [Apparently alluding to his inability to get my father.] (J. H.: Will you write in your normal way now?) Will not this do? (J. H.: Well, it may do if it is easier for you.) Yes. (J. H.: What was the difficulty that you could not get him?) He was bu busy when I found him. Yes. [The words "He was bu busy, etc." were in mirror writing and had to be read with a mirror. The hand wrote them without any

hesitation or apparent feeling of interruption. The word "yes" began the normal writing.] (J. H.: What did he say?) He did not know me so I did not tell him only that you wanted him. (J. H.: Did you give him my name?) Yes, and told him where you were. (J. H.: Very good, that is right. Can you see him again?) I cannot tell you at this time. (J. H.: All right, when you do see him tell him to be sure and come whether he wants to or not.) He will not if he does not wish. We are not made to do tany [the "t" was crossed out and the word read] anything here onl[y] what is right and if y [letter "y" crossed out] we want to do that as much as we can, for it is best, and so I will tell him for you if I see him. (J. H.: Very well, that's good.) and he will have to do what he thinks is right about it. (J. H.: Very good. Try and persuade him.) I must be here so cannot stay away very long. (J. H.: Yes I understand.) There will be so many others come. (Prof. X.: Now, Mr. Clarke, if we promise not to call up any one in your absence will that make matters right?) I cannot go now but will later if you wish. (J. H.: That's right.) [At this point as in response to Prof. X.'s question the writing was accommodately inverted, so that Prof. could read it as he sat on the opposite side of the table. To him of course the writing appeared in its proper form. It began at the bottom of the page and, proceeding from right to left as seen by me, placed the lines one above the other, the reverse of ordinary writing.]

I think if you wan [before the letter "n" was finished the pencil ran over the edge of the paper and the hand, on intimation of it which was given by taking hold of it and placing it, went on to finish the word] nt my captain's na [word finished precisely as was the word "want"] me you can find it by the order we left New York in. It was the last reg. as we left there. He does not wa [pencil moved over edge of paper] want me to tell his name and if I do th [pencil again started over the edge of the paper] this he [the word "he" was erased by drawing, as is the wont of the hand on occasion, the pencil several times through the word] I do not tell. (Prof. X.: Tell him we will not reveal it.) it and then you can see. (Prof. X.: I do not understand what you mean by the last regiment that left there.) New York. (Prof. X.: Now, Mr. Clarke, you understand that whatever you tell us—) for the battle. (J. H. started to say we will keep sacred the trust.) Yes, yes, but I would not be doing right to tell. (Prof. X.: That's true, Mr. Clarke. Will you do it if the captain gives you permission on our promise?) the no ["No" was evidently intended to be for "name", but the writing was interrupted by the question and the pencil stopped abruptly and then drew a straight line across a part of the page and then wrote.] I think you can find him. (Prof. X.: Have I any books in my library that it would be well to consult?) I do not know. I have not been there to see them. (Prof. X.: Do you know where any details can be found?) No. (Prof. X.: I take it that you cannot determine about

the literature.) Yes, can you kn [finished on the next line] ow all [t]hat is printed. I was not here to [scrawl, evidently an attempt at the word beginning the next line] read it. (Prof. X.: The point I want to make is this. Can you find out what is in our books?) No. (Prof. X.: I take it that you cannot read present day literature.) Yes, but ["but" first written in corner of paper when we moved the hand] we have other books here to read. We could, but it is not so well [apparently the word "wish" was begun, but immediately erased] for * * *. (Prof. X.: Mr. Clarke, would you object to telling us tonight the company you were in?) You can ask what the la ["la" erased and the word rewritten in the next line] last Reg. was. (Prof. X.: What was the number of the last regiment? What regiment was it?) No. (Prof. X.: Tell us what it is.) Nineth, no. (Prof. X.: What do you mean by the ninth line.) when I left [scrawl which was immediately erased] New Y * * [undecipherable, but it might be an attempt to write "ninth"] line, no, from the last, yes, (Prof. X.: Can you think of some clue. That was as you were marching in force. How were you marching?) No. [This answer was followed by heavy lines drawn forward and backward on the paper, apparently to represent marching, and then the word "eight" was written over them.] Eight * * [undecipherable, but looks like "ab ls", the "s" erased and followed by "ast"] yes. (Prof. X.: Mr. Clarke, you can doubtless tell us something to identify you. What man in New York? What paper? Tell us what you may volunteer.) Yes, I do not think I do now. I tell you can find out how many left (?) N. York for that place of battle, yes left New York. (We then talked to each other regarding the way to run the man down and the answer was written) Yes, yes of course. (Prof. X.: Did you enlist under the name of Harrison Clarke?) Not yet. [Pause.] (Prof. X.: Do you understand my question?) Yes. (Prof. X.: How do you expect us to identify you? We are here in the interest of truth.) I have (Prof. X.: Why refuse to give us your name? Have you good reasons for withholding your name? If offered we will treat it as confidential. Nothing will be used without your permission.) I have told you that they called me Harry. [There was a considerable pause here, the pencil moving slightly about a point.] (Prof. X. then said: "Now give us the last name. Of course you enlisted under some name, Harry Clarke or something else. Do you know how your name appeared on the record?") [No answer came and there was a long pause, when the pencil fell over on one side. Mrs. S. was evidently in a deep sleep or "trance" and was awakened from it with some difficulty. Prof. X. used suggestion and passes to aid her. When she recovered normal consciousness she remarked that her arm was asleep. Her head had been resting on it.]

It is possible that there was some misunderstanding about the

question of his correct name, as Prof. X. afterward told me that he was trying to get him to tell what he had promised at a sitting some time before, when he had given his autobiography. In this he had said that his real name was not originally Harrison Clarke, but that this was given him by his aunt who had brought him up as a child (Cf. p. 239). Prof. X. should not have confused him in this way. Apart from the confusing influence of his questions the story is consistent with what was said before regarding his army experience.

Third Sitting. January 23rd, 1901. Present: J. H. Hyslop and Mr. and Mrs. S.

We waited some minutes for the writing. It began in the inverted form with the word "yes", which seems to be the word with which Mr. Clarke introduces himself generally, probably from the custom of answering the question whether he is present to control the hand or not. As soon as "yes" was written I said: "You are here then." The reply was written in the normal form, the first word being uncertain, but probably was an attempt at "your", with the word father omitted.

"Cannot get him. (J. H.: What is the reason?) [The answer began with a mixture of the usual and what shall be called square writing, the letters being made in square form, and then became wholly square.] I told him that you wanted him. (J. H.: What did he say?) and you were t[?] ring experiments. (J. H.: Can't read it. Write in ordinary.) [The handwriting now assumed the usual form.] I knew it. Experiments and wanted him, but how can you know any better if he comes. I do not. (J. H.: My father has come through another light and is anxious to communicate and I think he would come if managed rightly.) Now I have asked, but he does not seem inclined. (J. H.: Did you see any other friends of mine there with him?) I tell you you do not like to believe. You pep. (J. H.: Word after believe.) You people think we do not exist, but you wait [There was difficulty in deciphering the word 'exist' owing to the imperfection of the letter 'x', which was not crossed and looked like an 'r', but nothing was said. The hand then wrote] this exist [and underscored it] but you wait and you will wish you did believe. (J. H.: How long will we have to wait?) Until you come here. (J. H.: Yes, I have had communications without coming there.) Yes, but you doubt. (J. H.: What do I doubt?) That it is him. [The word 'that' was written in the square letters, and the words 'it is him' in the inverted form.] [Apparently the word

'further' was written. I read it so aloud and said 'write it again'. The hand then wrote, 'No fir' and then drew lines across the letter 'r' to erase it and then wrote, the first word in capitals 'F I X her'. Mr. S. and myself then arranged Mrs. S.'s head in a more comfortable position, as we thought, and the hand wrote] No, no. (Mr. S. said: 'Tell me what to do. [The hand then wrote, the first word in square letters and the remainder of the sentence in the usual form] Put her arm down. [We put down her arm, and placed another pillow under her head, and Mr. S. said: 'All right now'. The hand wrote in a scrawly manner the word 'Yes', then a dim capital 'I', followed by 'yes', which was repeated on the next page, and the usual writing in clear form was resumed.] I would have thanked you sir, haved [the letter 'd' was erased and the writing continued] thanked you sir. (J. H.: Very good, Mr. Clarke.) You do not understand me. (J. H.: Why not, Mr. Clarke?) I said I would have said thank you sir had you told me to do that, yes. (J. H.: Now may I ask some questions about you and your work?) If you like. [All the letters in this sentence, except the letter 'I' in 'if' were square, though not so distinctly as in the next answer.] (J. H.: What do you call this machine?) Harrison CLARKE. [The letter 'E' in Clarke was written on the next page, as the pencil ran off the paper before finishing the name.] (J. H.: How did you find the way to write for us?) [First three words in square letters.] I saw that little girl using that [Here a very clear picture of a planchette was drawn.] (J. H.: Do you know the name of what you drew?) Yes, but [a letter started and then erased] knew you did too. (J. H.: What did the machine look like when you began to write?) like the Old Planchette. Please put an exclamation point after the old * * *. (J. H.: How do you people over there discover that you can communicate with us?) We do not discover, we know. (J. H.: How do you know?) Because we can see. [The pencil ran over the edge of the paper before finishing the word 'can' and it was completed on the next line.] (J. H.: What do you see?) You and what you do. (J. H.: Can you see what I am doing now?) [I here put my arm down by my side with my body between it and Mrs. S.'s face and moved the hand on the wrist back and forward, so as not to move my arm, and observed the while that Mrs. S.'s eyes were closed tight, she being in a 'trance' or sleep. It was not possible to see what I was doing. What might have been inferred from hyperæsthesia in hearing I do not know. But the answer was interesting.] Yes, you make your hand go. (J. H.: That's very good, Mr. Clarke.) Do you believe me now. (J. H.: Oh yes, I believe; only you could do much more and I hope you will be willing to do it.) I will think it over. I know what you refer to. (J. H.: Very well, what do I refer to?) My Captain's name. (J. H.: That's one thing.) and my own, yes, you want to know where y [pencil ran over the edge of the paper and the word was rewritten on the next

page] you can get [the word 'get' was erased and then followed] find me. (J. H.: I explained here at some length why I wanted to have the captain's name, saying that it was necessary in my previous experience in the same line to know the fact in order to consult the record. I avoided saying that this record was in Washington.) [The answer was.] If my Captain will let me tell. he does not want me to. That is why I told you as I (J. H.: Yes, I understand.) did last night. Inquire of some one that went to thE wAR. [The words 'that went to thE wAR' were written in square letters.] (J. H.: Finish that word, Mr. Clarke.) I did. (J. H.: New York is a big place, and I do not know who went to New York.) You should have said from New YoRK. (J. H.: That was a long time ago and I don't know who went from New York. I was not there then.) I know it. (J. H.: How can I find out unless I am told?) You can ask some one. That light will waken her if you don't put it out."

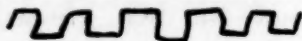
[A lighted lamp was on the other side of the room and had shone in Mrs. S.'s face during the whole of the sitting and there was not brightness enough in it to suppose that it had been at any time noticeable. Mrs. S.'s eyes were closed and she was in a deep sleep or "trance". We waited for the writing to be resumed, but evidently Clarke had gone. In a minute or two Mrs. S. showed some apparent signs of pain in her face, and said "Oh, Oh." Asked if she saw or heard anything, she said "No". Asked if she felt anything, she said "Yes", and complained of pain in her neck and that she could not move it. I rubbed her neck a few moments and she soon awakened, remembering nothing of what had happened.]

Fourth Sitting. January 24th, 1901. Present: J. H. Hyslop and Mrs. S.

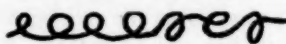
On this occasion Mrs. S.'s head was arranged on pillows so that her eyes were turned away from the writing, and so that it would rest easier and not hurt her neck as before. It was not long until she showed signs of the "trance". I asked if Mr. Clarke was present, and the hand began to make lines of loops. I repeated my question and the hand simply continued to draw the loops. I asked again if Mr. Clarke was doing this and the pencil simply moved up and down in the same place for a few moments. I repeated my question to know if Mr. Clarke drew these figures and the hand began again to draw the loops. I asked: "What does this mean?"

and then: "Are you drawing these loops, Mr. Clarke?" and the loops changed to what seemed to be straight lines across the loops. Mr. S. then came into the room and read the word "enemy", when the hand at once wrote quite clearly: "No, men". In looking back at the previous word read as "enemy" it was clearly meant for "men".

(J. H.: This is you, is it, Mr. Clarke?) [The only answer that I received was in the hand drawing the loops again in large form this time, and somewhat like a figure 8 lying on its side.] (J. H.: Why do you draw that figure?) [The answer given appears to be a very doubtful figure 8 in the right position, followed by a figure which is that quite clearly.] (J. H.: What do the figures mean?) [In answer the hand simply began to draw the pencil back and forth across the paper in straight lines. I asked: "Who is drawing these lines?" There was no answer except some scrawls of a large type in a somewhat looped form. I said: "Write away, Mr. Clarke". The response was an inverted "You"] (J. H.: Can you write in the normal way?) Yes. (J. H.: Is there any difficulty?) Yes. (J. H.: All right, what is it?) * * [undecipherable but looks like "Can't".] you you must see if I was (J. H.: Write in the normal way if possible) in the [apparently the figure 8] I do not quite remember sir. [Then lines back and forth on the page were drawn, as if representing the lines of a regiment and a clear figure 8 was drawn, followed by more lines like those just mentioned. The words "you must" were in mirror writing.] (J. H.: Are you trying to give the number of your company?) Yes, yes. [Then some small horizontal scrawls were drawn and followed by similar vertical scrawls.] (J. H.: Very well, thank you.) Yes. [There followed this immediately some zigzag lines drawn at right angles, thus



then curved lines in loops, thus



Yes. (J. H.: Is that the line of battle?) Yes. Yes. (J. H.: Very well, I understand you. Have you seen my father again?) [This question was followed by drawing of straight lines back and forth.] (J. H.: Are you still thinking about the lines of battle?) [Only a scrawl and a very slight one was the reply.] (J. H.: What is the difficulty tonight that it is so hard to write?) [I noticed that the pencil was toppling over and that the hand held it in a somewhat cramped manner. Hence I put it into a better position for writing

and the following was written out spontaneously, but in both an uneasy manner and lighter handwriting.] Thank you, but it will not stay. (J. H.: Do you think we had better stop tonight?) No. [Followed by a scrawl.] (J. H.: Is there anything you wish to say?) [I fixed the pencil again as it was falling over to one side and was not firmly held.] This [in mirror writing] yes, this is better. I cannot tell you some [scrawl] ngs. some [I read aloud: "I cannot tell you some".] You wish [scrawl] know to know yes I would could [illegible at the time.] (J. H.: Can't read it. Don't superpose. Please to write it over.) I would could I (?) I don't (?) If I ever can sir, I will. (J. H.: Very good, thank you.) Yes, do you believe it or me? [Word "believe" was spelled "beleive", as here given.] (J. H.: Yes, that's good.) [scrawl.] (J. H.: You can go on and say what you wish.) [I again fixed the pencil.] Yes, the press is going like [followed by rapidly drawing the pencil in lines across the paper back and forth. I could not decipher the word "press" as it was fused with "is going", and asked if the word was "pressing". The answer was] Printing. [I read this aloud and it was followed by "Yes", with more scrawls intended to represent the motion of the press.] It is working [scrawl like the letter "p", but was erased] very fast. [Followed by scrawls again in straight lines.] (J. H.: Yes, I understand.) [The hand kept shaking and I held mine on it a few moments to calm it. As soon as it became calm it wrote.] You cannot hear it can you. (J. H.: No.) It hurts my head. (J. H.: All right, we will stop now.) No, no, no, no. [Written in large and clear letters.] [Mr. S. came in and asked Mrs. S. if her head hurt her. No answer came from her, as she was asleep. I said: "His own head". The reply was] Yes, it is gone. (J. H.: Good.) now. [Scrawl.] I guess that was a hard one there. I an [scrawl] shot. (J. H.: Is that word "shot"?) Yes. (J. H.: You refer to the battle.) Yes. [Scrawl.] Shot hard, yes, Oh it hurts. ["Oh, it hurts" written in mirror writing.] Oh, it t is h it hurts, yes, that pain. (J. H.: We had better stop, Mr. Clarke, and try again some other time.) No, no, no. (J. H.: We had better stop.) No, I will be all right in a little. (J. H.: Good night, better stop.) No, no, just wait for awhile, it will go away. (J. H.: Very good.)

In a few moments Mrs. S. began to show signs of recovering normal consciousness, and there was a pained expression in her face as she began to come out of the sleep. It will be noticed that there is far more confusion in this sitting than in any of the others. It must be remarked, however, that Mrs. S. was somewhat worried on account of the attack of "La Grippe" which had seized Mr. S. that day. Mr. S. himself was somewhat concerned about it. Mr. Clarke is also notably more accommodating than hitherto. In this connec-

tion it must be noted that I had taken great care to discuss his character and failings in the presence of Mrs. S. during her normal state, indicating that he did not accept direct issues and that he must either conform to our terms or be expelled.

The next sitting took place on February 7th, 1901, under the supervision of Mr. Smead himself. I had shown him how I kept the record and the facts that I wanted recorded. In the following records, therefore, the reader will find them as complete as is desirable. The only thing that is wanting, an unavoidable difficulty, is the conversation between Mr. and Mrs. Smead about such phenomena between sittings in their daily domestic life. In my experiments I had carefully refrained from telling Mrs. Smead anything about the contents of the experiments I made, and requested Mr. Smead to do the same in his future sittings. This precaution has been observed in the following records and they may be studied with an additional interest and security against the difficulties suggested by the fact that the medium is familiar with the contents of her writing in any instance. Also as in my sittings the planchette no longer seems necessary and the writing is done with a pencil in the natural manner. When Harrison Clarke left, however, the planchette had to be resumed (p. 265).

February 7th, 1901. (Is this Mr. Clarke?) Yes. (Go on.) Yes, has that young spirit satisfied you? (She has done very well. Go on.) She can prove her identi— ['identi' erased, and next word written] identity. I cannot. (Do not be so easily discouraged. I think you can.) It has been so many years and we cannot easily recall all people want us to, and you will learn this. (I presume that is true.) It is too true for our earth friends. (Do you want to prove your identity?) I cannot. (Will you try?) I have all I can. (Your autobiography was good. Will you not add to it?) No, I cannot give the name, my captain's name. He does not wish it and I will not do it.

(I did not ask you for that. Will you tell me the name of the town near Chicago where you were born?) No, it was south of it. (South of what?) What is now Chi— (Chicago) Yes. (What was its name when you were a boy?) I did not know. I was only 2 years old when they took me from there. (Where did you go then?) Albany New York. Yes. (Tell me your real name. What was it?) No, no, no. (Why won't you tell?) Those that knew my aunt would not like it known.

(What was your army name?) Harry Clarke. (When did you

enlist?) Yes, I do not remember the day. 'You can find it. (Tell me as near as you can.) No, I cannot tell it right, so would rather not try. (You did well with those generals.) I could. It was my last experience on earth, and that is why together with my— [At this point I lifted up the hand of the psychic and said to the spirit, 'I control this. I am to be obeyed when I ask you to wait. You do not govern this hand against my will. I wish you to understand this, Mr. Clarke.] No, you do not. We will not write if you are not kind. (I never allow any one to govern me.) No, but you cannot govern us. Then do not try. (Go on, Mr. Clarke. I am not cross.) When I am writing I wish to finish before I stop. Yes, you cannot understand how hard it is to write this way; so when I am writing I wish to finish: then I will be willing to wait for you. (I am willing to let you finish.) Yes.

(Will you give me that comrade's name?) No, I will leave it for him to do. (Why not?) I am taking care of my part. He can his. (Don't you see how important it is for me to know?) Yes, but he or [started to write 'ar', but corrected it to 'or' by writing the 'o' immediately after the 'a'] his friends may not care to have it known that he ran away. I did not care and so was willing to tell, but you can see how it would make his friends feel.

(Is Mrs. Smead a light?) I will answer some other time. (Why not now?) I never called her so. (Is she?) I do not know what you c [started to write over the edge of the sheet] call her.

(Has a spirit a body?) Not here. we h— [This part of answer was erased.] Not your kind. It is one that leaves the earth body. (Explain more.) Yes, when we leave the earth there is a covering that that covers the soul, so that it is called a body, and it resembles the one just left, and that is how we can remember our earth friends. For if we were just round or square lights how do you suppose we could ever know each other?

(I must wake Mrs. S. now. She has been in this state long enough. If I have offended you this evening, I am sorry.) Yes, it is all right. Just remember what I said. (Yes, and you remember what I said about waiting.) Yes, good night."

February 8th, 1901. (Go on, Mr. Clarke.) Yes, yes. There is another here. (Who is it?) He is tall. (What is his name?) Sylvester Smead. (Has he not an initial to his name?) Yes, he did not say it. [My brother always used this initial whenever he appeared before. It is singular that at this time he should have given his name to Mr. Clarke as 'Sylvester Smead'.] (Go on.) He says he was to an uncle's house when he came here, and that you were very much shocked when he left. He went very suddenly. (Ask what uncle?) Mr. Frank Miller. (Let him go on.) Yes, he says that this uncle came here just a few days before Christmas and that he [Sylvester]

left here so as to be at the home he was to leave to help him when he came here. (Let him go on.) Yes. He wants to know how you have made this change. Yes, he says you were much interested in another planet. (The reason was that Mr. Clarke controlled the medium and no others could or did write but him and—) They did not ask. (That is true, Mr. Clarke, and you have been very good about this lately, and I thank you.) He does. (Does my brother Sylvester wish to write any more?) No. He says he will take the little ones away and some other time he will come—good bye. (Now, Mr. Clarke, you may write.) The little Baby s ies ['ies' written in correction of the spelling] say good bye to you and their mother. [They always said 'mama' before this.] (Will you answer some questions, Mr. Clarke?) I will think about it.

(In what place in New York state did your aunt live who brought you up?) I told you. (Do you mean Albany?) Yes. About how long did you and your aunt live in Albany?) No y (Can you tell me?) If I so ['so' erased] cared to. Yes, cared. No, no. (Why will you not tell?) My aunt's friends are some of them living and they do not believe we are living here, and it would not please them to have us tell: so that we can be found to have lived and that I have come in this way. They would be much grieved to hear it, yes, so I do not care to tell. (Will you not?) I do not want too ['too' for 'to']. (How easily you could prove your identity if you would tell.) Yes, I do not want to hurt any one. No, no.

(What becomes of Mrs. Smead's soul when Harrison Clarke is writing?) She is asleep. (Where is her soul?) It is in her body. (Does she know what is going on?) No, yes. Not what I am doing. (Is her soul asleep?) No, no. (It seems to me that it is, as she does not know anything that is going on. What is her soul doing if it is not asleep?) No. Ask her what she just saw. (Ida, write what you saw a moment ago.) Yes, yes: When she wakes.

(Good night, Mr. Clarke. I think that Mrs. Smead has been in this state long enough. I shall now ask you to release her and she will wake.) Yes.

[Then the pencil dropped and Mrs. S. did not wake as I expected, but the hand made signs as if it wanted to write something else, and I placed the pencil in her hand and what follows was written.]

When her soul is there she can see us. (Good bye, Mr. Clarke. I shall now stop with your permission.) Yes. "[The pencil dropped and soon Mrs. S. awakened as usual, feeling not in the least weary, but she rested and slept that night very well.]"

After Mrs. S. came out of the trance she narrated the following incidents, which were taken down by Mr. S. verbatim:

"I saw several blue lights that seemed to be moving around, and I saw a form of a woman; she seemed to be dressed in the style that they had in the olden days; large full fashioned skirt, with a plain waist, and large sleeves, dark hair, not very old. I could not see her

very plainly and did not see her but for a little time; she was alone when I saw her. The impression I had was that she might be his 'girl' referred to. I did not see him. Nothing was on her head, no cap or other covering. She seemed to be dressed very plainly, in the olden style. The lights seemed to change shapes. They would be small and then they would grow larger, then they would almost go away, and then they would come back again. I think that I saw these lights but for a very brief space of time, not over half a minute, as far as I could estimate it. But I saw the woman longer than I did the lights, possibly between one and two minutes. During this time I was unconscious of what was going on around me, but I was self-conscious, as I saw these lights and the form of this woman."

Mr. S. adds in a note that he used the word self-conscious in reporting the statements of Mrs. S. to describe her mental state when she saw the woman and the lights.

It is hardly necessary for me to remark to the reader the interest which this spontaneous incident possesses. I do not require at present to enter into any explanations of it, but only to remark its consistency with the main character of the phenomena in their assumed form. It constitutes, like the story of the apparition on the battlefield after he was shot about his fiancée by Harrison Clarke, a circumstance calculated to give considerable plausibility to the theory which is at least the superficial characteristic of the whole case, and our attention must be drawn to it for that very fact.

The sitting of February 9th reveals a new communicator who had not appeared before. His name he gave as B. Burleigh Hoyt, and Harrison Clarke did not exhibit himself. The handwriting was somewhat different from Clarke's and was more slow and deliberate. As the record does not concern Harrison Clarke in any respect it is transferred to the chapter of miscellaneous incidents.

February 13th, 1901. There were two sittings on this occasion. Harrison Clarke was the communicator. The handwriting again changes back from the style of Mr. Hoyt to the usual one of Clarke.

1st interview. [A few scrawls.] "(Whoever is here may write.) H. C. H. C. [both times in mirror writing.] H. C. [normal.] Yes. (You may write what you please, Mr. Clarke.) Yes, we do not understand why you doubt us. We tell the truth and you do not believe. (I propose to investigate this matter as fully as I

can. That is my object.) That need not hurt your faith and trust in God. (It does not affect it a particle.) You said, if I could prove my identity that you could believe. Why not if I don't. Others can, and you can surely believe them. (Will you not try to prove your identity?) No. I cannot. (Won't you try to give me more information about the battle of Shiloh?) I did not come here for that purpose. I came to tell you that I lived as I had promised and not for the purpose of telling you about every one that you could ask about. I am sure if you were here in my place you could understand why I do not wish to tell all, but I know it is not best. Then besides, you *have* not kept *your* promise [words 'have not' and 'your' underscored].

(How have I failed?) You told me that you would not let any one else know, and you have. (You refer to your girl, I suppose?) Yes, do you think it was right? [I explained the matter of the girl's name.] You told me that it was just for you, and so I gave it. It was to have nothing to do with my own accounts anywhere. You—(I did not intend to do wrong.) Yes, you did. I do not think so, (I did not intend to do wrong.) No. (I must ask your forgiveness.) Yes, I can forgive you, but I do not think it best or right for me to say more. (You must be your own judge, Mr. Clarke.) Yes, it was because I trusted you that I gave it. I did ['do' written first, and then 'i' written over 'o' and 'd' next] not think you could be so easily influenced by another to give up your promise to one that is already in a position to govern this whole matter. (I don't believe that Dr. Hyslop is going to print that name. I shall not consent to it.) You should have kept it sacred as you said. (I am sorry I ever gave up the envelope.) Why did you not ask permission? (I ought to probably. Why are you so afraid to prove your identity?) I have told you reasons enough. (If you want to be stubborn you can.) I am not. I do not want to hurt any one. No. (You hurt my feelings any way.) I did not intend to.

(Won't you continue about the battle of Shiloh?) You and your friends will not believe, and what is the use of any one here trying to help you? (It will help us.) You will say or ['or' erased] your friends will say tat ['tat' erased] that youu ['youu' evidently intended for 'your'] wife or you read it, and so I do not see how it will help. (If you will tell me things I could not read about it will help—the more you tell the better.) I have tried in many ways to show you that it was not your wife that was writing, and the more I try the more there seems [first written 'seeme' and then 's' written over the 'e'] ho (to) be needed to help your friends to believe. I will leave you now. Good night. (Will you come again?) I will not promise.

(I want you to come again. I shall rest Mrs. Smead and fix the fire, and in about fifteen minutes she will go into the sleep state and then I want you to come and write, and we will spend a friendly

hour together. I am sorry for my mistake. I did not intend to do that which was a betrayal of my trust. I thought that if I did not reveal the name to Dr. Hyslop [In fact it was not revealed to me. J. H. Hyslop] or have it appear in the book that it would be all right. All I wanted to do was to see if there ever was such a one as your 'girl', and if I have offended you I am sorry. Now I want you to come again and we will visit. Will you come?)

If you will not ask me to tell everything I ever knew on earth. You said you were cold. (I will fix the fire.) I will come tomorrow night. (I shall not be able to sit tomorrow night. I want you to come back and write for me in about fifteen minutes. Will you come when I am ready?) Yes, yes."

2nd interview, Feb. 13th, 1901. Fifteen minutes after the first interview. "When you and your wife come here, I and my good girl will be glad to talk it all over and we can then show you many things that will interest you, and we will help you on in many ways that you cannot now y [letter 'y' erased] understand. It is not best for those of the Earth to know all we can here. They must wait: for if they knew, they would all be ready at once without repentance to come. But they must repent or they cannot know for a long while what this world means to those that trust and believe on the Savior, yes, and it is the only way to do. I made that mistake until it was almost too late, and I promised as I told you I would tell those on earth and that is why I came.

(Is there really such a place as Heaven?) Yes. (Is there really such a place as Hell?) Yes. No. Yes. Yes. I am very thankful I have not had to visit it, but I am afraid if I had not repented I would have known— (Was Jesus Christ God and Man Divine?) He was all he said he was. Yes, he said I and my Father are one, but they were of one mind. They are not one Person. (Are they three persons and one mind?) Yes, they do not do anything to cross each other. [I never heard Mrs. S. use such a form of expression.] Everything is in harmony.

(Are those that die conscious while they are dying?) Yes, but sometimes the spirit is taken from the body so that they are away from it before it ceases moving. (What do you mean by 'moving'?) To move, yes. (What moves, the spirit?) No, the Body. (How is it about people that are stunned, etc.?) Yes, yes, only the Body is affected and while they are in that condition the spirit is out of it and it take(s) up its work where it left when it returns, yes. (How is it in cases of unconsciousness by ether or chloroform?) The spirit sometimes can know and watch what is being don(e) to the body sometimes. (If your girl is present she may write.) Yes, yes, n she does not want to write. She will sometime."

February 14th, 1901. This sitting was held in the private parlor

of Prof. X. There were present Mr. and Mrs. S., Prof. and Mrs. X., and Mr. F., Superintendent of Public Schools. In this instance the questions were asked by two of the persons present, and I shall have to indicate the questioner by letters. The letter S. shall stand for Mr. Smead, and X. for Prof. X.

"(S.: Who is present?) Yes, yes, Harrison Clarke. [Second 'yes' and the name Harrison Clarke written in inverted style.] (S.: Have you any communications? This man is Mr. F. He is interested in psychic phenomena.) Yes, I am glad to meet him. (S.: Go on as you please.) You are or not informed as to what I said last night. [This answer in inverted style.] (X.: I do not understand.) or no [both words erased] or are not, yes, no. (S.: Are you asking the question as to what I said last night?) I wish to say that it was not your friend that I ment meant [sentence to this point inverted style] but that I controlled this. (X.: I do not understand.) I said that I contro—ed [pencil ran over edge of paper before the word was finished and only the syllable 'ed' was written to complete the word] not your friend Dr. H., Yes. (X.: Are you asking the question as to what I said last night? I do not know what you mean. Will you explain?) You said that I said your friend controlled this whole matter. [I suppose that Harrison Clarke meant some chance remark that either Prof. X. or I made to Mr. F. talking about this matter. I am not clear as to what he meant.]

(X.: Be confidential with us, Harrison Clarke.) Yes, I will not tell only what I wish. [All but word 'yes' in inverted style.] (X.: Chat with us.) I do. (X.: Answer our questions.) I will try. (X.: Tell us anything of interest.) I am doing this. [First three words inverted style.] (X.: Will you try to read my mind, or read what I shall write and not let you see it?) No, no. Yes, I have done that last night. [When he read for me a question that I did not read out loud, but wrote and then called his attention to it and asked him to read it and to answer it without my reading it aloud and this was done.] [There is no record of this experiment in the sitting of February 13th. J. H. Hyslop.]

(X.: Will you try to read what I shall write inverted?) No. No it is much harder. You do not understand that do you? (X.: What will you do?) No, no. I will say that were you here in my place and trying to write with another's hand that you would have all you could do to listen and write at the same time. (X.: Can you listen better than you can see?) Yes, yes, when I like. (X.: Have you not something to write?) Do you believe that it is H. C.? (X.: Have you something to write? Will you give us some logical evidence?) No. If I tell you all you you will not need to do as you are told too (to). Yes, you are told to believe that we live here. (X.: Why will you not tell us what we want to know? Will you not try to

further prove your identity? Do you understand?) Yes, I have given all I shall and if you can find me with that all right. Yes, but it would not do. (X.: Did you not say that you would satisfy me as to your identity?) I did not say that. I said that I would tell you more. (X.: You said that you would tell me what your real name was.) No, you do not need it. (X.: What do you refer to?) My own name. I did say I would give it to you, but I find it would not please friends on Earth. They do not believe I live. (X.: Why do they not believe it?) No, they are very set. (X.: You could tell us and they would have to believe that you were living.) But would that be right? (X.: Wouldn't it help your friends for you to tell your name?) They would not believe. No, same as you said Mrs. Smead read or might have read or might have read what I have told you already. (X.: Won't you try to satisfy me as to your identity?) No, I cannot tell you more."

["I moved Mrs. Smead's head to rest it and it awakened her in a little time. The room was very hot and she had the sensation of fainting in some degree when she became conscious." Mr. S.]

February 15th. There were two sittings on this occasion, one in the late afternoon and the other in the evening at 7:30 p. m. As some important incidents in this experiment will not be clearly understood without it, I must narrate the results of my inquiries regarding the identity of Harrison Clarke.

Immediately after receiving the letter from Mr. S. at the last of December I made inquiries at the *Herald* office and ascertained that for the last sixteen years no such name stood on the roll of employees in that office. Further inquiry to make search of the rolls about 1860 led only to the refusal of the *Herald* authorities to permit the search. As soon as the story of the battle of Shiloh was told I made inquiry at the War Department in Washington, D. C., in regard to the details. The first reply obtained was that there were no New York Regiments in the battle of Shiloh. As Harrison Clarke had said he was in a New York Regiment this discovery settled the character of his assertion. But I made further inquiries to know whether any trace of a Harrison Clarke could be found on the rolls of the regiments in the battle of Shiloh, or in any New York Regiment. The reply was that a Harrison Clark was enrolled as a private in Company H of the 50th Illinois Infantry in 1861 and mustered out with detachment in 1864. He was in the battle of

Shiloh. Also that there was a Harrison Clark who enlisted in Company E of the 125th New York in 1862 and was discharged on a surgeon's certificate of disability in 1865. He was not in the battle of Shiloh and is still living. I also searched in the New York Directories for 1859, 1860, 1861, and 1862 for the name Harrison or Harry Clarke and found no such name mentioned there.

I reported these discoveries to Mr. S. in confirmation of my theory of secondary personality, though the reader will notice, as I did it from memory, that I reversed the spelling of the names for the respective regiments and companies. This makes no essential difference as the untruthfulness of Harrison Clarke's statements is the same in both cases, but it illustrates the liability of memory to error. I introduce the record with Mr. S.'s note of what he did before the experiment, stating the facts to Mrs. S.

"I had received a letter from Dr. Hyslop, stating three things about Harrison Clarke. 1st, that there were no New York Regiments in the battle of Shiloh. 2nd, that there was a Harrison Clark (not Clarke) in an Illinois Regiment in that battle, but he was not killed. He was mustered out at the close of the war in 1865. 3rd, that in the N. Y. 125th Reg., Company H, there was a Harrison Clarke, but he was not in the battle of Shiloh and was not killed, but was also mustered out at the close of the war. One of these Clarkes is still living and it is not known whether the other is or not." [Since writing this to Mr. S. I have ascertained that the Clark in the Illinois Regiment is dead. He died October 19th, 1895. J. H. Hyslop.]

"In view of these facts I (Mr. S.) made several statements to Mrs. S. that Harrison Clarke was a liar and a fraud and that I should tell him so if he showed up again, but I did not think that he ever would. I said that I was glad of a chance to pitch into him as he did into me about the matter of his girl's name, etc., etc. I was very severe in the language I used about him in Mrs. S.'s presence, and I told her that I did not wish her to be alarmed or shocked while she might be in the unconscious state, if I should roundly denounce Harrison Clarke, as I intended to do. Now this was the state of affairs when at 4 o'clock Mrs. S. entered the sleep state and what resulted follows":

February 15th, 1901. 1st interview. 4 p. m. " (Whoever is here

may control Mrs. S.) H. C. ['H. C.' written in very large letters.] (What have you to say?) So you think I lied do you Sir? (I do.) Yes, u ['u' erased] you had better not ask more then for I might do so again, or I had better [first wrote 'ber', then wrote over the syllable 'er' the letters 'tt'] say you will evidently think so. (I cannot help thinking you are a liar.) I told you I could not make myself known and I positively and honestly told you you would not find me. (Why did you tell me those lies?) I did not. No Sir. (Explain then.) I was in that battle. (You told me you belonged to a New York Regiment.) Your friends said N. Y. and I said, Yes. (Wasn't that a lie?) You may call it so. (What do you call it?) Ask him your friend, yes. (Do you mean Dr. Hyslop?) No. (Who do you mean?) Mr. X. (Go on. Explain if you can.) You thought I was afraid to come. (Go on. If you can clear this up I shall be glad.) You also thought I was Mrs. Smead's—what you call p ['p' written first and then changed to 'h'] her—Zary [figure 2 erased] second—ary personality, but I am—not. (You told me your name was Harry Clarke.) Yes. (You told me your battle name was Harry Clarke.) Yes, not exactly. (What did you say then?) I said I left N. Y. with the regiment by that name. (You said you left New York with a New York Regiment?) No, yes. (And you are certain you were in that battle of Shiloh?) Yes. (Explain: there were no New York Regiments in the battle of Shiloh.) How would you suppose? (I cannot tell. Answer it.) I will wait until you ask your friend. (You mean Dr. X.?) y Mr. X. (Were you in a New York Regiment when the battle of Shiloh was fought?) I was with Wallace. (That is what you said before.) I know that and say it again. (Go on.) I do not say I used the name of Harrison Clarke in that Battle. (Is it not true that there were no New York Regiments in that battle of Shiloh?) Where did Wallace come from? [Interrogation point was inserted this time by Mrs. S. and made to perfection.] (I do not know. Tell me.) You had better find out. (Go on.) You will think me lying. (What?) Lying if I tell You anything more, so what is the use. (Go on.) I would like to know: you can believe two different things about me. (I think your statements about those generals were remarkable.) How could I know unless I was there? Yes. (I cannot see. Explain how you were in that battle.) Did you know about Shiloh? (No, not in the way you told me, I must admit.) Yes, before (?) (No, I did not. I am to understand that you were really in that battle? It looks that way and I must believe that you were.) So I was and I told you I was numbered with the unknown (The unknown living?) dead, yes. [Word 'dead' written in larger letters.] (Tell me what regiment you were in at the battle of Shiloh.) I cannot. No, no, no. (You left New York in a New York Regiment?) Yes. (Did you remain in that regiment?) No. It did not you do you any harm. (I cannot believe your stories. I think you have not

proved that you have told the truth. I cannot believe you.) I do not care. (You cannot prove that you have told the truth. I am forced to believe you have lied.) You cannot prove it either. Yes, no. (If you would only prove your identity it would settle all this.) I cannot prove it. No, I cannot prove that. You will not think me Dishonest. (If you would only do this it would make it certain.) No, it will not. You can ask some of your friends when they come if I am not here. (I think that is all bosh. I cannot see as it amounts to anything.) Yes it does. You do not need to tell this to any one but the next one—spirit that writes. Ask them out (?) If I am not what I said I was. No, yes, yes. y No, no. You * * (I am not satisfied. I cannot accept all you have said.) Sometime you will find out differently. I am sorry, but I cannot help you."

February 15th, 1901. 2nd interview. 7:30 p. m. " (Who is here now?) When I leave she shall not write or be allowed to have any one else write without the Machine. (Do you mean that she cannot write without the planchette?) Yes, they cannot write through her without it. (I rather guess we shall survive, Mr. Clarke. I don't think you boss us yet. If you think you will bulldoze this concern you are mistaken. Perhaps you don't know what 'bulldoze' means?) You understand what I said. (Yes.) Then you may try it. (Before you go I want to ask you two or three questions. It seems to me that you are convicted of lying by your own statements.) How?

(If you were in that battle and left New York in a New York Regiment and fought in that battle when no New York Regiments were in it, you must either have been transferred to another regiment, or must have deserted and re-enlisted in some regiment that was in that battle. I cannot believe that you were transferred. It is not to be supposed for a minute. So you must have deserted and re-enlisted, or you have lied, and if you deserted, you must have lied by giving a false name when you re-enlisted.)

I did not say so, yes, I did not say I was tra—[writing began to be superposed and was stopped.] I did not say I was transferred, did I? (Then that being so, you must have deserted the New York Regiment.) What if I did? I told you you would not find me. I think anything is or was fair in war, don't you? (It was a contemptible procedure for you to desert.) No. (Why wasn't it?) We were anxious that our side should win, yes. (You must have deserted that New York Regiment.) I ran away from it, yes. I did not desert our cause. (Then your idea is that you did not desert the cause, but ran away from the regiment?) Yes. (When you enlisted in the New York Regiment you enlisted under the name of Harry Clarke?) Yes, I think I did. That was what I said, and thought it right, but I might be mistaken. (Don't you know it?) I was in that battle. (You must have joined some other regiment?) Yes. (Can you remember what regiment that was?) Yes. (Tell

me.) No. (Can you remember the state?) It makes no difference. (It does to me.) Not here. (Tell me the regiment. Then we can find out something.) I told you enough. (You enlisted in the other regiment under a false name, didn't you?) No, I enlisted with my own name. (Let me see if I get this puzzle straight. You enlisted in New York by the name of Harry Clarke, and you ran away and re-enlisted in another state, using your own name. Is this correct?) I think so. What else [first wrote 'es' and then 'lse' over it] do you think I did? (That would not make you a liar.) Yes, yes, no(t) [in] my way of thinking. [This was written in larger letters, more exultingly and in a somewhat scrawly style.] (Then in the battle of Shiloh your name was not Clarke?) Yes, no. (Then you will not tell me the name?) No.

(Then those last statements of Hyslop do not prove that you are a lying spirit?) Not as I can see. (I agree with you. I cannot see as they do. If you will tell me one thing more I will admit you may reasonably be supposed to have told the truth: that is, why did you run away from the New York Regiment?) I ran away because I wanted to. (That is no reason to me.) No, I know it is not, but when we were excited over the war we sometimes did not use as good judgment [judgment] as we would at other times. (Why did you run away?) I was anxious to *fight*. ['fight' underscored.] (Where was your New York Regiment when you ran away from it?) I will not tell you that nor when. (You can suit yourself.) I do. (I think you do pretty well.) [No reply to this.] (Have you anything to add to what has been written?) No. (I have given you every possible chance I could.) Yes, I only ask that you will not believe I am not a spirit. (I am wavering between thinking you are Mrs. S.'s secondary personality, and that you are a spirit who cannot prove his identity.) I have told you that, yes. (I must leave it this way.) Y not the first, but what you said last, yes. (Admitting that, I know you could if you would.) I told you that. (I ask your forgiveness for any rash statement I may have made.) You are forgiven. (I was 'riled' considerably.) I don't blame you. (There is no use of your keeping others away is there?) No, I do not wish to.

(Go on.) Now I did at first [Sheet turned.] I did at first because I wanted to do what I have told you. Perhaps some other time I may be able to help you more. Yes, if I can abter an [intended evidently for 'after aw', and pencil ran over edge of sheet] after awhile tell you what you want to know without injuring any one else, I will. (You and I will part friends for a while.) Yes, yes. (You will let others write without interference?) Only they cannot write without your Machine. (Burleigh Hoyt wrote.) Yes, I let him and that other young spirit. (Why won't you allow others?) No, I do not want to. When I go my control goes to [too]. (We will have to put up with it I suppose?) Yes, yes. (I cannot

see any other way, can you?) No, you do not want me here and you and your friends do not believe me, so I do not care to stay. (I will give you the benefit of the doubt and believe you all right and I shall not ask you to leave.) Thank you. (If you will give the other spirits a chance to write and prove their identity and control I shall be pleased to have you remain.) Yes, I will let you know at another time. (Tell me why you will not answer me tonight.) I do not know as I care to be here all the time, but—(Your explanations have satisfied me more than I expected.) I knew you would be. (I shall be glad of your help if you will. I wish to help you if I can. (You can if you will manage it as I have asked.) W I *will*, yes" ['will' underscored.]

The record does not explain the following on the original sheets. Evidently some further questions were asked and not recorded, as the statements here indicate. "Yes, good—No, she will not. Good night, yes."

February 16th, 1901. I must call the reader's attention to the interesting phenomenon that occurred at the close of this sitting, since it illustrates the possible place which suggestion has in the case. I reserve all comments for the present.

"(Who is here?) Mr. Clarke. (All right sir. Go on.) You had better let me go for awhile and try some one else that may come. Don't you think? [The apostrophe was put in the word *don't*, an act that was never done before in all our experience. Also the interrogation point was put after the word *think*.] (I will do whatever you say.) Whe ['whe' erased.] Well I think you will be better satisfied to have another. (All right, I don't like to use the planchette again.) Well, sometimes I will come and that night I will control, so then you will not need it. (Will I have to use it outside of you?) Yes. (Will you go away?) Yes, if you think best. You can tell we now when to return. No, no. (If you are here cannot anybody else write?) Yes. (Is there any one else here besides you?) b-no-they do not come to stay when they see another spirit, yes. (I will ask you to release the psychic and return a week from tonight. Will you?) a yes. (Will you come back as I ask?) Yes yes. Do you think that will be long enough? (Yes, for the first time.) Then it shall be as you like, good night, Mr. Smead. [The pencil then dropped and Mrs. S. soon awoke.] "

"After this sitting another brief one was held in about ten minutes afterwards at 9:15 p. m. I made several remarks about not being governed by Harrison Clarke. When he said that we must

use the planchette I told Mrs. S. that she could write as well now as before, etc. But Mrs. S. could not go into the unconscious state. As she held the pencil as usual there was a marked prickling in her fingers, but she was *unable to write anything*, and the attempt was given up after fifteen or twenty minutes' trial. We took the planchette, used it fifteen minutes and nothing whatever was written. This closed the evening's experiments."

It is apparent that the request not to appear for a week had acted somewhat as a post-hypnotic suggestion, though the next sitting shows that Harrison Clarke could not wait for the lapse of the week.

February 17th, 1901. Mr. S. prefixes the note: "Mrs. S. began without the planchette, in the same way as when she passed into the sleep state, but could not become in the least unconscious for some considerable time. The pencil began to sway, but no writing whatever. *I tried every possible suggestion* I could think of to induce her to write, saying: "I thought Harrison Clarke was here", and several brief remarks in this line. But I could not cause one word to be written for a long time. Finally it seemed to begin. I thought that now there would be something written, but the pencil dropped out of her hand, and Mrs. S. was asleep, or as I thought at first in her usual trance state. I said: "Who is it? Mrs. S. is all right now. She is going into the complete trance state." I put the pencil into her hand and she held it. Suddenly the pencil moved off the sheet of paper. As yet no writing. We spent fifteen or twenty minutes in this attempt.

I said: "Is Harrison Clarke here?" No answer. I asked: "Who is here?" No reply. I gave it up and woke Mrs. S. She had been naturally asleep and not in the trance state. Then after a brief rest I took the planchette and the following resulted:

"Harrison Clarke nos (knows) what for. Yes, that was true that (that) I told you. (What are you here for?) To see if you wanted my help, let Mrs. Smead * * [undec.] could * * [undec.] what I told you. (I am not over-pleased with your presence. I am disgusted with the way you have managed. I do not understand it. You told me you would not return till Saturday and here you are. I don't fancy it.) No, I know it, but you think I am to let you think I am Mrs. Smead's secondary personality [first written 'peson' and then 'pers' written over it] do you? (I don't know what you are. I wonder about you.) Then you cannot think me what you say, or I would please you. (I am disgusted with the

whole outfit, with its vagueness, indefiniteness, etc.) 'Yes, can you bu ['bu' erased] help it, yes? (I think it is about time you said something of substance.) It is not needed, you, yes, are we friends now ['are we friends' written in very large letters] and do you believe me? (I am sorry I am so ungentlemanly as to be cross. I am irritable tonight and I am sorry, Mr. Clarke.) Yes, do you believe I am H. C.? [Interrogation point inserted by Mrs. S.] (The Lord knows who you are, I don't. You have told me you have two names, and how many more you have I don't know.) Let [scrawls] me say that I am H. C. because if I gave the other name I would be the same, yes, yes, me.

(Have you any definite facts?) I could not be believed, no. (Yes you would if you gave them.) You have not answered answered me, yes. (I could be sure if you would tell me things about that battle of Shiloh that I do not know.) You can read it. (I cannot see why you are here. I thought you said you would go away until next Saturday.) I wanted to see if any one came and if they could control Mrs. S. (If you would only take pains to prove your identity I should be greatly pleased.) I thought we had settled that. [This answer not read at first was rewritten, and the word 'settled' repeated a second time.] (I did not wish you to bother me. You said you would stay away.) I did not. I was not here to trouble you. Good night. I will keep ay away, yes. How can I help y—.

This was the last appearance of Harrison Clarke until April 25th, 1901 (p. 353). I may therefore refer to certain facts connected with his personality that have not been hitherto considered. I have narrated those incidents which discredited his identity and led to his disappearance. They need not be repeated. But there are some others that suggested a plausible case for him until the crucial incident discredited him. They are his statements regarding the officers in the battle of Shiloh. In these he was correct except Bragg who was not commander in that battle. Grant was in chief command of the Federal forces. This is hesitatingly or doubtfully affirmed at first, but corrected in a few minutes to what was the fact. General Hurlbut was among the Federal generals. General C. F. Smith was also a Federal general of the forces in that battle. He was sick at the time, and it is interesting to note that Gen. Lew Wallace took his place on that account, precisely as indicated by Harrison Clarke. The ground in general on the field of Shiloh was not swampy or full of quagmires. This was the statement of the first report in answer to my inquiries at Washington. Later the following was sent me:

"The field of Shiloh was 'rolling and wooded, cleft and cut up by ravines'. According to the topographical maps examined there was a swampy area about five miles from Pittsburg Landing which had to be crossed by General Lew Wallace when he moved his command to take part in the second day's battle. As there were many ravines and small creeks it is possible that the ground in their vicinity was soft and miry, as the account given of the battle says that heavier rains occurred on the night of the 6th of April, 1862, but these did not materially embarrass the armies in their operations."

The information first obtained confirming these facts had to be collated by Mr. Smead from the American edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, which he had in his possession, and from General Grant's *Memoirs*, which he did not have in his possession. The facts could not be found in any one article of those records, but had to be ascertained by consulting several. Though the *encyclopædia* was in the house Mrs. Smead affirms that she never read it, and that she never read any history of the Civil War. Of course some account of this battle of Shiloh may have been read either in a newspaper or fugitive article now wholly forgotten, and one is at liberty to suppose that she might have read the articles in the *encyclopædia* in some hypnotic state or trance when her normal consciousness would have no recollection of the fact. There is nothing to dispute this supposition, however improbable it may be, and I think it is improbable. It is more natural to suppose that she may have read some account of it as a child in some paper and wholly forgotten the incident, and there is nothing to discredit this possibility. Had Harrison Clarke done something really to prove his identity and to disprove the assumption of secondary personality in his case we might listen with more respect to the claim that the incidents are supernormal. But this is impossible in the light of his prevarication.

No trace of "his girl" could be found. It must be admitted, however, that the data for making the search were not such as permitted any conclusion in regard to the matter. No record of deaths in Baltimore has been kept previous to 1875. The directories of the same city for the period concerned indicated no name corresponding to the lady mentioned. But nothing can be concluded from this for the reason that directories so generally omit the names of ladies not widows or freeholders, or in business.

On the matters of his place of birth and later life with his aunt previous to his going to Baltimore there are not sufficient data in his statements to make a search possible.

The story of his desertion from the New York Regiment and enlistment in a regiment that enabled him to be in the battle of Shiloh is improbable *a priori*, though I suppose not impossible. But his refusal to give the name under which he re-enlisted only shows that no credit can be given to his most ingenious account which cannot be refuted nor believed.

There was a Harrison Clarke enrolled in Company A, 64th New York Volunteers, on September 16th, 1861, and mustered in on September 20th, 1861, who was killed at the battle of Fair Oaks, Virginia, on June 1st, 1862. But the story of the Harrison Clarke in this record does not fit into this case.

CHAPTER III.

MISCELLANEOUS INCIDENTS.

I group here a number of communications that are not connected in their subject matter with the Martian incidents. They were sometimes delivered on the same dates as Martian messages, but their consideration in that connection would only confuse the reader. Besides they are, superficially at least, much more spiritistic in their appearance and offer themselves to that explanation to any one who is not familiar with the phenomena of secondary personality. For these two reasons, therefore, they should be given a distinct place by themselves.

One should not, however, lose sight of the fact that incidents occurred in connection with the Martian incidents that do not look like secondary personality. Recording them in connection with the Martian material would strengthen the spiritistic interpretation of the whole, even tho we did not regard the contents *in toto* as having any such source. Separating them from that connection may tend to misrepresent the real nature of the Martian material. But these earlier experiences of Mrs. Smead are not conclusive enough to lay any stress on this point.

The first of these was on August 15th, 1895, and represents an entire departure from the subject of planetary communication which was then just beginning (Cf. p. 47). In the sitting of August 7th Maude, the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S. seems to have been the only communicator and the only name given. But in this sitting of the 15th it is noticeable that a number of other friends are mentioned by name.

[The planchette wrote at first without any questions, and simply mentioned a number of names.] Maude, Willis, Ester, Vester, John, Bena, Fannie, Billy Russell, Alphonso, Grandma Smith, Adeline.

(Write something, Adeline, to prove it is you.) Mother is here. (Whose mother?) Your mother's mother. (What was her name?)

Mary Jane Watkins. (Any others here?) Lilia Wheeler. [Mrs. S. knew her as a little girl. She used to know and love her—Lila Wheeler.] (Does Lila want to say something to Ida?) My brother is here. You do not know him, do you? (Who else?) Lydia Emerson and Winnie. (Who else?) Washington Robertson. (What are you all here for tonight?) Come to visit you. (Who else?) Your sister. (My sister?) Yes. (How old is she?) Older than Helen. (What is your name, sister?) I did not have any. (What name are you called by?) None. (What are you called by your spirit friends?) Your sister. (Just sister. Is that it?) Yes. (Do you want us to give you a name, sister?) Have father or mother. (Shall I ask them to do so?) Yes. (Have you any message you want me to send to father and mother?) Yes. We think Joseph better stay on the farm, for he cannot be as lazy as if he goes in a store to work, and he will get mad with the boss man. (Anything else?) Vester says so. He knows Joseph best. (Any more?) Aunt Adeline thinks it would be very foolish for him, now that he has a wife, to begin to think of going to the city. But if he wants money he ought to run the milk business."

In regard to the names given in this sitting, Maude, Willis and Esther are children of Mr. and Mrs. S.; Vester is the abbreviated name by which Mr. S.'s brother Sylvester was called and who was killed in an accident. John could apply to either Mrs. S.'s brother who had died when two and a half years of age or to her grandfather who was also deceased. Bena (Robena) was the name of the child of Mrs. S.'s sister. The child had died at four years of age. Billy Russell was a friend of Mr. S. in the latter's boyhood and had been killed in a paper mill when seventeen years of age. He had always gone by the name "Billy" among the boys. Mr. S. says: "Mrs. S. did not know anything about him. I do not think I ever mentioned him to her before the writing. Possibly I did, but the chances are against it." Fannie is probably intended for Fannie Burch mentioned on July 27th (p. 181). Alphonso was the name of Mrs. S.'s brother who died before she was born. Adeline is the name of Mr. S.'s grandmother's sister. Mr. S. says: "She was an old maid and always giving advice. The reply of hers is characteristic of her. Mrs. S. never knew her, and it would have been very difficult for Mrs. S. to have made a reply for her that would have fitted her characteristics as this one did. Joseph is the

name of my youngest brother and events have proved that it would have been best for him if he had taken that advice."

"Lilia" was a mistake for Lila Wheeler, deceased, she was a little child that had liked Mrs. S. very much and her mother was a warm friend of Mrs. S. "Lydia" was also a mistake for Lida. Lida Emerson was cousin of Mrs. S. who had died at eight or nine years of age when Mrs. S. was a child. Winnie was the name of Lida Emerson's brother, deceased. Washington Robertson was the name of Mrs. S.'s uncle. Mrs. S. was but slightly acquainted with him. Mrs. S. was about eighteen years old when he died.

The next was in 1896, and rather indicates that the interval of five years between the first allusions to Martian communications and their resumption was disturbed by at least one experiment. The original record unfortunately is not complete. Mr. S. cut out a part of it and sent it to Mrs. Janes, the mother of the girl purporting to communicate, and it was not returned. But the latter part of it remains and in it mention of her occurs in a way to show the fact that the message was given on the date indicated. The experiment was on August 20th, 1896. During it a girl by the name of Maude Janes reported that she had died on a certain date with pneumonia. She had been known to Mr. and Mrs. S. when they lived in H——. I quote first the part of the record still accessible, and then the contemporaneous account written out by Mrs. S. herself.

"Mrs. Hubbell is here. Trust in God. (Were you conscious after death?) Yes in a few minutes. (Do you suffer pain in dying?) No. (How did you die, Mrs. Hubbell? Did you choke up?) Easy. (You were a good woman on earth.) Could have been better. (Mrs. Hubbell, is Maude Janes dead?) Yes she is. With Mrs. S. most of the time. Good night."

The account of Mrs. S. is dated "August, 1896". It thus appears to have been written very soon after the message. It is as follows:

"Alone in our room on the farm of Joseph Smead at S——, N. Y. [initials of the state are changed] the children were both asleep, and Mr. S. came up-stairs and wanted me to see if there would be any message from our little girl 'Maude'. We had hardly fixed our

hands on the planchette when the name 'Maude' was written, and Mr. S. asked who it was, or if it was our little girl. I don't know why he asked this, for we did not know any other person by that name in the other world and only a few of our personal friends we called by it in this, and as we had not heard from our little girl for about a year, I was sure it was she and said in reply to Mr. S.'s question that I did not see who else it could be, when the name was written in full—Maude Janes. We were both very much surprised, for we did not have any idea whatever that this young lady was dead. We had not even heard that she was sick. So Mr. S. asked: 'Is this really you, Maude? If it is, will you please tell me what you died with, so that I may know if it is you?' Her answer was: 'pneumonia'. Question next asked was, where she died and she told us at home. (Her home was at H——, Ct.) She said that the doctor's name was St. John and when asked what day she died, she said, (or wrote it after having tried to several times so that we could not read it) that is, 'March 25', but as we did not know Mr. S. said he should find out, so asked her where she was buried. She told us, but I cannot remember where this was. Mr. S. wrote the next day to her mother at H——, Ct., and asked her if Maude was dead and if so, if she would please tell us what the trouble was. She wrote back saying that Maude died April 25th, 1896, and that the cause of the death was pneumonia, that Dr. St. John was the doctor they had and told what part of the town she was buried in. But this I cannot remember, but think it was the West Cemetery."

In an interview with Mrs. S. about this incident she told me that four or five years before her death Maude Janes came over to see the baby and in the course of some general conversation, remarked: "I'll come to you when I die". This message occurred, as the dates show, about four months after her death.

Inquiries were repeated recently and a letter from Maude Janes' sister, dated Feb. 8th, 1901, says: "Maude died the 25th of April, 1896 after an illness of just twenty-five days from double pneumonia and typhus malaria. The physician in attendance was Dr. F. C. Hodge of T—— Dr. B. St. John of T—— called twice in counsel. The place of burial was Corn-wall Hollow."

Mrs. S. further adds to the information desired regarding the possibility of her knowing that this young girl had died and says: "It was impossible for us to know that Maude Janes was dead, because we had not seen or heard from her since 1894 when she came to our house at Th—— with two other young

ladies, and from the day she called in 1894 until the time when we received the planchette message from her on August 20th, 1896 at S——, we had not seen any one from H—— Ct., or heard one word from her or any one else from that town. We were living out of the state then. All this time we supposed that she was living and had no reason to think otherwise. She was a well healthy girl, much used to outdoor life; used to ride horseback and engage in many outdoor sports, so she was the last one we should have expected would have died at that early age. She was between seventeen and eighteen when she died.”*

The next incident also shows that another experiment had been performed in the interval of five years. It occurred, so far as the memory of Mr. S. can recall it, in 1899 while he was at another place than his present charge. The original record was not kept, but only some notes with the main incidents involved. They represent a message from a man who called himself Rev. Henry Smith who said that he had died at Saco, Maine, July 9th, 1896, of pneumonia; that he had two children, Carrie and Henry by name; that his wife's name was also Carrie. The congregational minister who preached Mr. Smith's funeral sermon also purported to communicate, he also having died in the meantime, and confirmed the statements of Mr. Smith, but without giving his name. Mr. S. was asked by the Rev. Henry Smith to look him up. Mr. S. adds also: “My impression is that when these messages were given this spirit said he was a member of the masonic lodge at Portland, Maine; that the masons attended his funeral; that the congregational minister attended and that he (Rev. Henry Smith) attended with him his own funeral.”

* (April 15th, 1901.) After the above record was made Mr. Smead discovered the papers of a sitting on January 21st, 1897 in which the name of Maud Janes is mentioned among others in a sitting of which the original record was destroyed. The incidents of the sitting are precisely like those that are associated with the children usually and it would not add any value to this record to include them, especially as they are peculiarly personal and amenable to the interpretation of secondary personality. The chief reason for mentioning the facts at all is that the record shows that there were some sittings between 1895 and 1900 that were forgotten, a circumstance of some importance in estimating the value of the record as a whole.

On September 13th, 1900, this Rev. Henry Smith returned again and the following colloquy took place, of which a complete record has been kept.

"(What spirit is this?) Mr. H. Smith. (What have you to say?) Why did not you do what I told you? (What do you mean?) You know. (I have a vague idea. I cannot clearly recall. What was it?) I told you to hunt me up. (Will you give me again a brief history of the facts of your death and burial as you did the last time?) Saco, Maine. You can look on there [referring to the manuscripts of a former séance in which all this was stated]. (Shall I get the old papers?) No. (What do you wish to write?) [In reply the profile of a face was drawn and then the planchette wrote: 'Please rub out those lines on the nose'. Other lines were then carefully drawn so as to complete the outline of a woman's face.] (Whose picture is it?) Mrs. Smith. (What next?) I wish she knew. (Where does she live?) Saco, Maine, where you will find her. She moved since I came here. (Very well. Where shall I find her now? In Saco, Maine?) Yes. (What street?) I do not know. (You mean to tell me you cannot tell what street she lives on?) Yes. (You must tell me or I cannot write to her.) I will find out. (Can you find out tonight?) No. (Will you let some other spirit write then? Are you through?) Do you want me to go? (No. What else have you to say?) I will say that the New Testament is true and you will find it so, brother. (Yes, what else?) I came to you because you believe that some were gifted with this power as the New Testament said. But so few of the brethren will believe it, and I hunted for quite a while, when I saw your family using this [planchette], so I thought I would call, and it seemed good to meet a brother that would let me in—write— Yes, Yes. I no [word 'no' evidently intended for 'know'.] I will just say good night, because your children are here and they have just come from a journey and want to tell you about it. I will come again. Thank you."

A careful inquiry into the details of this Rev. Henry Smith incident shows that not a single feature of it is verifiable, but that on the contrary it seems to be wholly false. The following facts indicate this, as obtained by an intelligent gentleman on the ground and after a most painstaking investigation.

"No Rev. Henry Smith appears on any of the records of the city of Saco, nor do citizens of long standing and wide acquaintance remember such a man."

The nearest approximation to it is found in the two following cases which are given, not to suggest any possibilities in the

incident, but to show how false the record is. There was a Henry Riversmith who had been a merchant in Saco. He had been known in his younger days as Henry Smith. But having failed in business he went to New York, succeeded and returned to Saco under the name of Riversmith, and died there in 1873. The names of his children are not in a single case what is stated in the record here, nor is that of his wife as asserted. He had variously lived on Main Street, Portland Road and Sumner Street, at the latter of which his wife still lives, and has not moved as indicated in the record. Apparently he did not belong to any Masonic Lodge in Saco.

There was also one other Henry Smith who lived in the same County as Saco, known as "Elder Smith", and therefore probably a minister at one time, and who had been County Treasurer at one time. He died somewhere about 1820, and no details of his family were obtainable. It is exceedingly improbable that his wife is still living, and possibly as improbable that any of his children are living.

The reader will see how inapplicable to the record these cases are and that the evidence favors secondary personality overwhelmingly. If the names and number of the survivors in the case of Henry Riversmith had been correct we might have supposed that, as in the Piper phenomena, there had been a most interesting confirmatory error in getting the name through. But this possible source of apology is hopelessly lost by the failure of a single incident to obtain substantiation. Hence as no minister whatever of the name of Henry Smith living or dying at the time named could be found we have strong evidence that the incident is an instance of subliminal fabrication.

Some time previous to October 25th, 1900 in the midst of some experiments the name "Genie Brown" was written. A message came in connection with this same name which stated that he was a boy eleven years old when he died; that he died in Manchester England; that his parents were dead; that he had died of diphtheria; that Joseph and Martha Brown were the names of his parents; and that they had lived in Montreal, Canada.

It has been impossible for obvious reasons to investigate the

truth of these statements. The clue to identity is wanting in the messages.

On October 26th, 1900, a sitting took place at the home of Mr. S.'s father and the communicator purported to be Sylvester Smead, the brother of Mr. S. The record is as follows:

"I am happy. I study and read and travel all I want to. I go to Billy's every night, with his little girl. We all love her here. I told mother, yes. I am here every evening until half past eight, except Friday evenings. That one I spend with Billy. I will be waiting, father. It is a magnificent place and words cannot describe it, father. I will be waiting, if Jesus is willing, to show you something that will interest you most. Then our little Maude will show you others, for she is always coming and teaching me.

(Have you ever seen Christ?) Yesterday I saw him. I see him often when he sends us on errands of mercy to this and other planets. (Is Christ divine?) He does as the Father tells him. Do not you believe his own words? You must. You all know the Father is over all. Your Bible is true. (You did not believe in all these things when you were in the body. How is it now?) I believe it all now. The Holy Spirit is equal. (Is there such a place as Hell?) There is such a place that is called that, but I have never seen or visited it. (Is modern Spiritualism true?) There are evil as well as good spirits."

The remainder of the messages were fragmentary, Mr. S. adds, but the substance of them was that, before one could see Christ, the soul must be taught by the little ones who had been taught by the angels; that it was easier for the angels to teach the little ones than to teach the older people, and that the children could then teach them. The idea was that even the greatest men must be taught by a child before they could see the Savior.

As indicated elsewhere this Sylvester Smead was the brother of Mr. S. and had died some time previous to this. There was nothing of an evidential character to be ascertained in these messages, as the narrative shows, except that "Billy" was the name by which his brother and no one else called Mr. S.

On December 1st, 1900 the following interesting communica-

tions were made, purporting to come from "Maude", the deceased daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S., before she recurred to the Martian matter.

"We are here—yes—we—Maude and Sylvester, Willis, Ester. We have others here. Yes. [Scrawls evidently intended to start the name William. Then clearly written.] William Calvin (Smead), [The number 20 was written on the sheet at this point, whether later or not it is not now possible to decide.] James, James. Yes, Eugene Xenos [deceased son of Prof. X. who was present.] Alphonso Robertson, Yes. Mary * * [word undecipherable to me, but read by Mr. S. as Rebecca, since he knew the person meant.] Lowery. Yes, yes. Mary Ellen Webster, Webster. Yes, yes, ask your mother ab—about me. Lived in New Hampshire. (What town did you live in when my mother knew you?) I did not live on earth then, but I was a relative of hers. Yes. (What relation to my mother?) Great Aunt. Yes. (In what town did you die?) Bristol. Yes. Yes. * * [word undec.] (Were you married?) Yes, now ask your mother. (Now, Mrs. Webster, do you want to write anything to my mother?) Call me aunt. (What is your message?) Aunt Mary Ellen. Yes. Yes. No. (What is your message?) I am here because we have been enjoying thanksgiving with all your people. Now some one else is waiting to write. Gone."

In regard to the names mentioned here it will be well to repeat that Maude, Willis, and Ester (Esther) are those of deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. S., two of them still-born, and the other a miscarriage. Maude was born and died on March 19th, 1891, Willis on April 29th, 1892. Esther was a miscarriage in March [18 ?], 1893. Alphonso Robertson was the brother of Mrs. S. He was born on July 24th, 1867, and lived but 3 hours and 20 minutes. Mrs. S. never knew him, as she was born afterward. He never came to Mrs. S. when using the planchette as a child, but on the occasion already described (p. 32) he communicated through another medium. Mary Rebecca Lowery was the name of Mrs. S.'s maternal grandmother. Mary Ellen Webster was apparently unknown to Mr. S., and he wrote to his mother to ascertain whether any such person existed to her knowledge. Her reply, dated December 7th (1900) and addressed to Mrs. S., says: "Willis sent some planchette messages. I do not know of any one by the name of Mrs. Mary Ellen

Webster. I only know that grandmother Watkins' mother's name was Webster. I do not know where she lived."

The explanation of the name James Eugene Xenos must be given by Prof. X. himself. It will appear to the reader from his account that the record is evidently not complete at this point and that the questions asked were not recorded. But the account of Mr. S. states that immediately following the message of Mrs. Webster there came this next message.

"Mr. John Rogers is here now. Used to live in Kansas City. Mr. and Mrs. X. know me. I have got Mrs. X.'s father here now. I will write his name when she comes." He then disappeared, and the next message was: "Well, Billy, are you feeling well?" Some Martian pictures were then drawn and Mr. S. tiring of this remarked: "Go ahead. That's enough for me", when his brother Sylvester, who was apparently doing the writing, replied as quickly as he could write it: "Who's doing this?" The sitting then came to an end.

It appears from the statement of Prof. X. that another experiment was made the next evening. The original sheets were left in his possession and were thought to be lost. But the most of them have been since found. I am able, therefore, to give the original record as far as possible, except the questions which were not put down. The sitting is especially interesting for the confusion that is evident in it. The date is December 2nd, though we depend upon the memories of Mr. S. and Prof. X. for this date, as it does not stand on the original sheets. The nature of the questions will have to be conjectured from the context.

"We were looking for you. We were away when you left us. Why did you ask me when you know, papa? Yes, the man came after grandpa. We were looking for you. When we look—Montana Helena—yes, yes. Better—all—after—I will go to him—a little while. No, yes.

The man said he left me and you left me—not—left—not the man. You know what I mean. He did not, but you did mama, mama, mama. You left me away off with grandpa, mama, did not you?

I staid most 2 years with the angle (angels). After 2 years Jesus said could go and see you and told grandpa he could take me to you. Yes—come—no—yes, yes, Eugene James Xenos and, mama, when

did you come here papa and mama. When—no— * * did—yes—man * * * Wait a little.

I am going to your new home when you go and learn all about it mama. Talk to us about God. Yes, but we study sometimes—study—study. First to learn about how we must do here and then who we on belong to on your earth. Then we learn to—then who we do ['do' erased.] did belong to on your earth. Then we learn if we want to about what you do, or we can study something. Mama knows me I think. Yes, some of the time. Yes, but grandpa took care of me most. Why who I have to ask—not papa—who do I ask—not papa and mama.—how she * * * it—no, yes. But grandpa has not told me how they write their words there mama. When grandpa and I are together we liked to stay near you—you must wait a while—but it is hard to use this mama.

[Maude] You told Mr. Rogers you would let him try. Do you want me some of the time?—We do mama. I told you, no—way off when she came here. Rowers John—yes, yes—he will come some time. Good night."

I asked Prof. X. to give his account of the messages connected with the name of his child, and the following is his reply.

"The little girl Maude was again giving us some writing and this was followed by the return of Mr. S.'s brother Sylvester. During the evening, Sylvester was asked to find my little boy and bring him to write with the planchette. He replied that he would go and return in half an hour. Promptly at the expiration of the half hour he returned and said that he could not bring him then; that the little boy would come with his grandfather on the following night. Sylvester was then asked to write the name of the boy. Promptly the words "Eugene Xenos" were written. I then asked to have the full name given and got as a result the name "Eugene J. Xenos". I then asked him what the J. stood for, and the name "James" was written. The name of the baby was James Eugene Xenos, but upon the headstone that I had placed at the grave the name "Eugene J. Xenos" was cut. I am positive that Mr. and Mrs. S. had never previously heard the baby's name. The baby died several years before and was buried in one of the middle states. This was positively the first time the baby had ever been referred to in Mr. and Mrs. S.'s presence. On the following evening the little boy came as promised by Sylvester, when the communication was received which was placed in your hands by Mr. S. In this

connection, the grandfather's name was asked for and the name of John Rogers, a friend of the family, was given. At the next sitting, which took place upon the following evening I think, the name of the grandfather, John Roberts, was properly given."

In regard to this John Roberts, Prof. X. says in a later letter that Mrs. S. could have had no previous knowledge of the grandfather's name. He adds also: "I failed, however, to get the middle initial at the time to which reference has been made. The interesting part of the experiment to me is the fact, that I had no knowledge of the middle initial, John Roberts being the only name in my memory at the time the experiment was tried. I learned from Mrs. X. that the name should have been written John R."

It will be observed that the name Roberts does not occur in the record, as implied by the statements of Prof. X. But 'Rowers' was interpreted at the time as a mistake for 'Roberts'. John Rogers was also known to Prof. X., but neither Rogers nor Roberts was known to Mr. and Mrs. S., according to the testimony of all parties, and there seems to be no reason to suppose that they had ever been heard of by Mr. and Mrs. S. Prof. X. and his family had come to this place but a few months before from the far West.

Some time in December, 1900, (the record does not contain the exact date), a message purported to come from one who called herself Carrie Siveres. The original planchette writing shows considerable confusion in delivering the message. There was evidently much questioning on the part of Mr. S., as the sheets are thickly sprinkled with "yes" and "no". But Mr. S. interpreted the message at the time to be that one Carrie Siveres had died in Jersey City on September 15th, 1880, and was eighteen years old when she died. The date of her birth was given as May 2nd, 1862.

An examination of the Jersey City Registry of Deaths shows that there is no record of any person by this name as having died during the year 1880. The Registry, however, shows the following names resembling slightly the one given in the message. Sabina Siewers, aged 30 years, died June 22nd, 1880: John C. Sievars, aged 21 months, died July 14th, 1880: Louisa Johanna Sievers, aged 74 years, died August 13th, 1880.

The directories of the same city for the years 1879-1881 do not show the name Siveres, but that of Sievers occurs frequently in the Directories of 1879 and 1880, but only twice in that of 1881. Occasionally the name Severs and several times the name Seivers occur during these years.

The sitting of February 6th represents one of unusual interest. The communicator is the Maude Janes that had appeared first in 1896. Her appearance here again seems to mark the declining influence of Harrison Clarke. This fact, however, is evinced by later results than this as well.

February 6th, 1901, [Automatic writing (not planchette.) First Sitting.] "Maude L. Janes. (When did you die?) You know, Mr. Smead. (Please tell me.) April 25th, 1896. [The word 'Smead' and the date were evidently written with some little difficulty as they were not written so freely as the rest.] (What was the disease?) Pneumonia. (Who was the doctor?) [Mr. S. adds in a note: 'I did not pronounce this question aloud so that the psychic could hear it, but simply wrote it and called the spirit's attention to it and asked for an answer. It was given.] Dr. St. John. (Where were you buried?) [This question was asked in the same way as the preceding.] Yes, West — (What place?) No, you know it— Cemetery. Mama is here and so is Mrs. Catlin and Mrs. Hubble [Hubbells] and Willis Catlin. Do you know that Professor H—— has given up the school and The [new sheet explains the capital T] girls are almost all married now. [Apparently an interrogation point after 'now'.] Minnie married 'mutton squash' and Ella his brother and Marian Alvord [Alfred] and Lewis Reynold [Lewis Reynolds] are married. Prof. H—— was ['was' erased] did wrong to Willie Capel Capel: took all his money and then Willie had to go away to work.

(Where did he go to work?) I do not remember but think it was New Haven. (Where did he go to work?) I think it was— (Is your mother present?) She was, yes. (Is any one else?) No. (Go on.) There are quite a number her(e) from the old town and we (Some unrecorded question.) have some good times talking about th— the time when you lived there. (Do you know what I have written to your father?) Yes. (Is your father living?) He was at last accounts. (If he was dead would not you know it?) I think likely, don't you? (Why did you write as you did: 'He was at last accounts'?) So you could know it was me. Don't you think it sounds like Maude L. Janes? (Yes. Can you tell me when you

were born?) No. It don't make any difference here. (It would be evidence to me.) R W Z. Read it if you can. (I cannot.) You can. (I cannot.) Don't you remember a postal card that I wrote to Mrs. Smead When you lived in Th—— that Was written Backwards. (I don't.) Well she [then the word 'he' was written over 'she', and on the next sheet the sentence was corrected to what follows.] Well she will. (Unrecorded question.) and you can read what is there if you begin with Z and count the other way and see if I have not spelled Ida. You will remember we used to write that way to each other, yes. ['Yes' underscored.] (Please to write the old letters and the ones they mean.) R W Z. I D A.

(Shall I rest Mrs. Smead?) There is not the least need of it. (Can she open her eyes?) If she likes. Why don't you say your A B C like I told you to and see if I am right? [Mr. S. here wrote the alphabet on the back of the sheet.] (I did it. It is correct. Go on.) We used to do it so that Emily could not know what we wrote. (You and Mrs. S.?) Yes. (About your birth and place?) No, I cannot—guess I have—yes, yes. I think it was 187. (About your birth.) 1879. (Your birth?) Yes. What month? Can you remember?) No, no. (Tell me the place.) It was somewhere near Cornwall hollow. You know, why do you ask?"

Mr. S. adds the following note. "Mrs. S. was conscious most of the time this was given, but did not look at the writing, nor know what was written."

February 6th, 1901. Automatic writing. Second Sitting. Interval between first and second sittings about three-fourths of an hour. Mrs. S. wholly unconscious in this sitting.

After some circular scrawls a face was drawn and Mr. S. began with a question. "(Who is it?) Minerva. [Mr. S. notes in his record: 'Minerva Catlin' that I knew in H——.] (Who drew that?) Maude Janes. (Cannot you write inverted so I can sit here and read it?) No. (Go on.) Mrs. Wilson the old lady is here and the Undertaker Batch. (What was Mrs. Wilson's name?) Was it S. C. (Go ahead and write it.) Then you ought to know that Lady over to Wilber Barbers 2 of them. They are here. [She supposed I told her to go on and write.] (What were their names?) You will know them when I tell you that Addie Barber took care of them. (I do not remember their names. Tell me.) Mrs. Hubert Barber. I do not know [the other name.] She was a very old lady, yes. (Was it Mrs. Clark?) I do not know. (Any more particulars?) It was Mrs. Barber's mother. (Go on.) You remember that man

that lived at the corner coming from the P. O. to our farm, well, they cleaned his place out. (What was his name?) He was a dirty person. (What was his name?) I used to be afraid of him. (Can't you remember his name?) No, I wish I could remember. (Never mind. Go on.) Mr. D. C. Wilson [written 'Will' at first and then the 'S' written over the second 'I'] had the P Office after Mrs. Russell (Go on.) and They would like to see you and Mrs. Smead there. Why don't you ever goas (?) [word erased] go home to H——. (I shall by and by.) I'll go with you. (Go on, tell me any facts about the town.) That man across the way from the parsonage Is dead, Bryant. I never liked him, yes. (O, well, he was a pretty good sort of a man.) Yes, but he was fussy. [True characteristic.] (Anything else?) Florence Hubbell Ought not to be with Fannie Johnson, and when you go to H—— tell her that her mother feels very badly about it. (Where is Florence Hubbell now?) She is in T—— with Fannie Johnson. (I think that Mrs. Smead has been unconscious long enough. I do not want her to go to heaven yet.) We would like to have her. (I think I will bid you good night and will wake Mrs. S.) I'll come again."

Sitting closed and Mrs. S. awakened with no special fatigue.

February 7th, 1900. Mrs. S. unconscious during the last part of the sitting and during the first part of the sitting ignorant of what was written and did not see it.

" (Please write your name.) H. C. (Is it Harrison Clarke?) Yes, yes. (Go on. Write your name.) There was a young spirit here since I was here and she tells me that she made some mistakes in her spelling and about the names she gave you and would like them changed. (Will you do it for her?) She will need to do it herself. (Is she here?) Yes, she is here. (Will you let her write?) Yes. (Please drop the pencil. I wish to wake her at 7.15.) No, she will wake in time, yes.

[Here Maude Janes assumes the communications, and it is interesting to observe that no change in the handwriting appears to indicate any alteration of personality.]

You see I wanted to tell you you were right about Nrr (Mr.) Wills ['Wills' erased] Wilson's name. (Tell me what it is.) You know. No need. (Please write his name.) Mr. A. G. Wilson. [The 'A' was started with a sign that looks like a capital 'I' and was written over the 'I', which makes the letter resemble a capital 'H'.] (Go on.) And that lady was Addie's grandmother. (Any more about that woman?) Was not that right? (I do not know.

What was her name?) Her name was not Clark as you said. It was the same as addie's. (Do you remember her name was Barber?) That's it exactly. (Mrs. Barber?) Yes. (What was the first name?) I never knew. (Was she Mr. Barber's mother, or Mrs. Barber's mother?) Hubert's, yes. [Period put after 'yes'.] [Hubert's I think is right, Mr. S. adds in a note.] (Go on.) Yes, you remember the old gentleman Bartholomew? (Yes.) Do you know he is here, yes? (Yes.) When did you know it? (Some time last year when Mr. Solomon Smith was here.) [Not a relative of either Mr. or Mrs. S.] Yes, Mr. & Mrs. Atwater went to New Britain, yes, and Mr. Smith (I can't remember) t was there, yes. [Then the letter "v" was written and something like "y" when a wavy line was drawn across the paper and back before writing.] Do you remember that Old Lady that lived with Evline S. Barker? (I can't remember.) Yes, you do. She was very much interested in missions, so was she— (What was her name?) I'll try to find out sometime she is here. (I cannot remember.) Have you not seen her lately. (Go on.) Yes, I was trying to recall her name. (Can you?) No, what do you think you would (Go on.) like to know that I have not told you? (Tell me when Minnie was married.) No. (Go on.) Why do uo (you) always want numbers? (Because they prove something.) They are hard to remember after we come here. We do not have to remember them here. (Where did Mrs. Russell go when she left H—?) She went to live with Emily. (Where?) I did know the place, but do not just remember. (Where is Mrs. Russell now?) I do not know. You see she left town (Go on.) when I was at South Hadley, Mass. (When was that?) I went to school there 1893 or 4. (What school?) My father can do that for you. I would rather not. I went with my cousin."

"The pencil then dropped and Mrs. S. awakened to full consciousness after the usual time."

I think it best at this point to go back over these messages and narrate the facts as ascertained by investigation. I must refer to some of the original communications, since they are repeated here.

It will be recalled by the reader that Mr. and Mrs. S. did not know of Maude Janes's death when the first message came in 1896 (p. 272), and had to write to her mother to ascertain the fact. The original message put the date on March 25th, and inquiry showed it to be April 25. It is interesting from the point of view of secondary personality to note that in the message of February 6th, 1901, the date is correct as known by Mrs. S. The other facts are correct as the reader may recall, except the

allusion to West Cemetery. Mrs. S.'s account at the time of the first message indicates that she did not remember the place mentioned by Maude, but thought it was West Cemetery. This is repeated here, though Mrs. S.'s normal consciousness knew from inquiries that it was Cornwall Hollow. The manner of delivering the message on this later date may indicate a more or less vague consciousness on the part of the subliminal that West Cemetery was wrong (p. 272). It is the recollection, however, of Mrs. S. that Mrs. Janes, Maude's mother, said before her own death and at the time of the inquiries that they had thought of interring their daughter in West Cemetery. The sister's statement makes this doubtful, as the family lot was in Cornwall Hollow.

In regard to the other incidents and names the following will explain their bearing upon the various problems connected with psychic research. Mrs. Janes died after her daughter. Mrs. Catlin and Willis Catlin were friends of Mr. and Mrs. S., and their deaths, as well as that of Mrs. Janes, were known to both. Mrs. Hubbells was a lady that Mr. S. had buried, a fact known to Mrs. S. Mr. S., it will be seen, all along thought her name was Hubbell, but Mrs. S. says it was Hubbells. In this sitting, however, it was first spelled in the original as "Hubble", and afterward as "Hubbell". Prof. H. was the teacher in the H—— Academy and was the teacher of Maude Janes, all known to Mr. and Mrs. S. Minnie is Maude Janes's sister and she married the person who is here called "mutton squash". This was the nickname that Maude gave him because of some dislike to him, and when reproached for it by Mrs. S., while living, she would say she could not help it. Ella was the name of the lady that married the brother of "mutton squash". Marian Alfred, misspelled "Alvord" in the original, is now married, as indicated, all the facts being known to Mr. and Mrs. S. Marian was a school mate of Maude's in the H—— Academy, when Mr. S. was pastor there. A Mr. Reynolds was a great friend of Mr. S., and was greatly liked by Maude Janes. Willie Capel was a lad about 15 or 16 years old who wanted to be a minister and in whom Mr. S. was much interested. He was a pupil of Prof. H. in the H—— Academy and a class mate of Maude Janes. The inci-

dent of Prof. H.'s taking his money was as follows, according to Mr. S.

"The Academy broke up and Prof. H. was not engaged as a teacher by the School Board, and therefore took some private pupils. Willie Capel was one. Willie had some money saved and Prof. H. persuaded Willie to give it to him and he would educate him (Willie). He did not keep his word, and Willie lost his money. So I understand it. I never knew the exact facts, but this is as it was repeated to me. Mrs. S. and I knew of this." A letter from Maude Janes' sister to Mr. S. in response to inquiries about incidents, dated March 4th, 1901, mailed March 7th and received March 8th, confirms this story about the money. Also the fact that he went to New Haven to work, the incident being unknown to Mr. and Mrs. S.

The incident of using the letters of the alphabet backward and of the postal card is correct. Emily was the name of the daughter of the postmistress and she helped her mother in the work. The postal was written for the very purpose here mentioned and was the only missive ever exchanged between Maude Janes and Mrs. S. in this way.

The date of Maude's birth was 1878, not 1879, as stated in her message. The answer in this case about the place of her burial, it will be noted, was irrelevant to the question asked, but was correct in regard to the name, now known to Mrs. S., though the word "near" is a mistake, as she was buried *in* that place.

Mrs. Wilson, if it refers to Mrs. Hannah Wilson, is dead, but if it refers to the grandmother of another Wilson, known to Mr. and Mrs. S. it is not known whether she is dead or not. The undertaker here mentioned is dead, the fact being known to both Mr. and Mrs. S.

There is some confusion in reference to the incident of the two old ladies that lived with Addie Barber. There were two old ladies living with Addie and Wilber Barber, brother and sister. They were Mrs. Clark, the grandmother, and Mrs. Hubert Barber, the mother of Addie Barber. Mrs. Clark is dead, having died some time ago. But Mrs. Hubert Barber is still living at this writing (March 24th). It is apparent from these facts that the statements and answers of the communicator show some misunderstanding and confusion regarding the questions. Mr.

and Mrs. S. probably knew something about the death of Mrs. Clark, but they are not certain regarding it. The sister of Maude Janes, living within a few miles of the place in which the Barbers lived, had to make inquiries to know whether Mrs. Clark was living or not. Mr. and Mrs. S. also did not know whether Mrs. Hubert Barber was living or not.

The incidents regarding the "dirty person" are correct, but were known to Mr. and Mrs. S.

The facts were these. "The man lived at the corner of the roads leading one of them to L—— and the other to Mr. Janes's farm. The man was always dirty and nasty in his personal appearance, very seldom washed his face if he ever did. He was unmarried and lived alone, and used to drink and carouse with a gang around him that was not much better than he was. He always had liquors to sell, (H—— was a no-license town). Take him all in all he was an unpleasant and disagreeable element in the community. Maude had always to pass his house when she went to school at H—— and she was afraid of him, if my memory is correct."

Mr. Wilson, whose initials were corrected at the next sitting from "D. C." of this to "A. G.", was the successor in the post-office to Mrs. Russell, but the fact was not known to Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. Bryant, mentioned by the communicator, lived across the way from the parsonage as said, and is dead. Both facts were known to Mr. and Mrs. S. Maude Janes did not like him.

Florence Hubbells is living with Fannie Johnson and the reasons for the objections to it are exceptionally good, but are of a nature that cannot be stated here, further than to say that Fannie Johnson is a negress and Florence Hubbells is Caucasian. Mr. and Mrs. S. knew that she had been with the person mentioned, but did not know that it was still the fact. Also they did not know that she was in T——, a fact that had to be ascertained by special inquiry.

In the next sitting the initials of Mr. Wilson's name were rightly given and were known only to Mr. S., but there are some interesting mistakes in the attempt to make things right regarding the two ladies who had lived at Addie Barber's, the facts being known to Mr. and Mrs. S. The communicator rightly states the relationship to Addie Barber of the lady whose name

she could not give before, namely, as Addie's grandmother, but gives the wrong name, saying that it is "the same as Addie's", which in fact was the name of this person's mother, Mrs. Hubert Barber, as indicated above and who is still living. The confusion here is evident.

The Mr. Bartholomew here mentioned was a very old man when Mrs. S. knew him ten years ago, and Mr. S. thought he had been told of his death. But inquiry develops the fact that he is still living at this date, and the reference to the information from Soloman Smith must be a mistake on his part.

There is an interesting association aroused here by Mr. S.'s mention of Mr. Soloman Smith. This man lived on the farm on which Mr. Atwater had lived at H——, the Atwaters having gone to New Britain, as Mr. S. thinks, though he is not certain about it. He may have learned this fact from Mr. Soloman Smith when the latter visited him at his present place a year ago.

Mrs. Cotton was the name of the "old lady that lived with Eveline Barker", and I ascertain by personal inquiries in the neighborhood both that she is dead, having died about a year ago, and that she was very much interested in missions. Mr. and Mrs. S. did not know of her death. They knew that Eveline Barker was interested in missions, being an eccentric character on this and some other things. Maude Janes used to make much fun of her. Mr. S. thinks he knew of Mrs. Cotton's interest in missions, but is not certain.

It is true that Mrs. Russell went to live with her daughter Emily. This was some years before. Maude Janes did go to South Hadley with her cousin, but did not attend the school there. The facts were not known to Mr. and Mrs. S. The date of the visit to South Hadley was 1894.

There is an interesting fact in connection with the name "Hubbells". It is always spelled "Hubbell" in the record of messages, with one exception when it was spelled "Hubble". In writing to me Mr. S., and also others in writing to him, spell it "Hubbell". But Mrs. S. says that the right name is "Hubbells", a fact that might suggest the limitations of secondary personality in the explanation of the phenomena.

February 9th, 1901. In the previous experiment of Feb. 8th,

Mr. S. remarks, Mrs. S. was not totally unconscious at the first of the sitting, but he observes that she was unconscious from the start in the present case, and that it took about twice as long for her hand to be controlled in this instance of the 9th as in that of the 8th. This fact needs noting because the communicator changes from Harrison Clarke to a new person altogether, who had never before communicated. There is some difference also in the handwriting.

"(Who is here?) Yes. A friend. (Give me your name.) What for? (I wish to know.) I lived at Sandwich. (Please give your name.) Do not you know me now? (No, give me your name, please.) Yes you do. (Please tell me who you are.) B. B. H. (I know now.) Yes. (Will you tell me anything you please?) Bro [abbreviation evidently for brother] why do not you write to my wife and comfort her. She is a good woman. Yes, only a few words will do her good. (I will try to do so. I am very sorry about your son George.) [He is in an insane asylum.] Poor boy! It is hard for his mother and Lydia. [Hesitation.] (Go on.) She takes her trouble well. They will be so glad to hear from you. (Do you mind my asking some question, so I may know it is you?) No (When did you die?) It was in July. [Correct.] (What day of the month?) It was a year ago last July. [Correct.] (What day of the month?) You was there and it was on Wed—at one thirty o'clock afternoon. [I am not certain about this fact.] (Can you give me the day of the month?) I don't just remember, but think it was the 17, yes, you know, you came over the next Saturday, yes. [This is partly correct. I think he died on the 19th of July. If so he has made a mistake of two days here. Possibly he is right and I am wrong. I did come over, as he says, and attend the funeral.] (Go on.) You remember what the people used to call me. (Yes, but will you write it for me to keep?) Captain Hoyt. [Correct.] (I thought it was Burleigh.) Yes. (Go on.) Then when you first came to our town you remember what I told I told you about finding water? (Yes, I do. Won't you write it out so I can have it as evidence?)

I, Burleigh Hoyt, told this Brother when I was talking with him in the driveway at the back of his house (which was the — [two letters showing the denomination are omitted] Parsonage.) h— near the pump that I could and did have the power or a gift from God which enabled me to tell whether the place which was secler selected was a place in which the water supply was good and would be lasting, and I, Burleigh B. Hoyt, No. Well they called me Burleigh. Get another— [Communicator wanted another sheet of paper and I got it.] (Go on.) and I, B. Burleigh Hoyt write this to

prove to any who may doubt my good pastor's word that it is and was B. B. Hoyt.

(Write your name as you used to do on earth.) I cannot do it with Sister Smead's hand. You know I was such an old Body and shook so: it has left me now. [All this is characteristic of him.] (Will you write something for me to ask Charles about that I do not know about?) Yes. Not quite. You know it was me. (Yes I do, but it would be a good test.) You know so much better than I do. Because you talked with Charles. (You can give me some test.) I don't know no what it can be about. (You can give me some test.) I told you about the water. You see Sister Smead don't know about it. [True.] (Perhaps we shall have to let that go. Won't you tell me the name of the lady I buried at C—— H——. You and I went to the cemetery, etc.) Your wife is waking up. I had better go."

["Mrs. S. waked up at once much sooner than usual with no sense of fatigue. I asked her if she had any knowledge of what had taken place, and she said, no; that she did not know who had been here. She supposed it to be Harrison Clarke."]

In response to inquiries from me Mr. S. replies concerning this interview with Mr. Hoyt: "I knew all of the facts, only I cannot remember what time in the day he died. I must have known at the time and forgotten it. Mrs. S. did not know the fact about the water as given by Mr. Hoyt. She knew that he died in the afternoon, but the time she did not know. It is possible she may have known all the other facts stated. I think that the only thing noteworthy in this is the style of the message and the shape of his statement about the water test. All the message is characteristic of the old man. The style of the writing is different from that of the others. More pains were taken to cross t's and dot i's, and the writing was done very slowly and deliberately."

February 9th, 1901. Planchette used and Mrs. S. conscious during the whole time. The sitting lasted for one and three quarters of an hour. The writing was very slow and difficult. Mr. S. was absent and an aunt of Mrs. S., Mrs. Miller, present whose husband was dead and appeared to communicate. Mrs. S. asked but one question and this at the beginning. Her aunt asked all the others. The following account, therefore, was written out by Mrs. S.

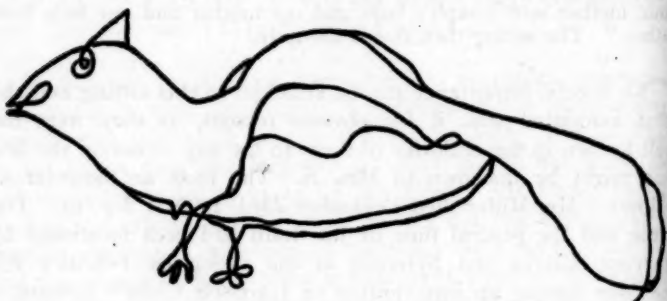
"(Is there any one here? If so you may write.) Yes, F * * [scrawl] me. (Who is 'me'?) Frank, yes. I am here. [Last was not read and a new sheet was put in place, and it was repeated.] I am here. (Who is here?) Yours friend. (Can you tell me your name?) Yes. (What is it?) Frank. (Have you anything to say to me, Frank?) I am very g lad—no— [Pause, and Mrs. Miller said: 'He has finished', and the answer was 'no'.] you are so brave. [scrawls.] ps me. (Write it again.) It helps me here. I can get along b better when I see you try my good wife, yes. (Is this all? Can you not tell me more?) Yes, but you se (see) Jane * * [scrawl.] I never did this kind of writing before. (Write it again.) You see, Janney, I never did this kind of writing before. (What more have you to say?) a—no [?] I [?] Mary ao... [one letter undecipherable.] We will try to d.. be ['d.. be' erased.] better Mary when she... [illegible.] she tries again. I can't write mch. * * hard, yes. (Can you tell me whom you have met since you crossed the river?) Jenn [?], Mary. w [?] met your mother and Joseph's boys and my mother and our little boy, father." The sitting then closed abruptly.

No special importance can be attached to this sitting and the facts associated with it for obvious reasons, as they were too well known in the majority of them to lay any stress on the few that might be unknown to Mrs. S. The facts are however as follows. Mr. Miller died December 23rd, 1900 at 3 p. m. The name and the general time of his death had been mentioned by Harrison Clarke and Sylvester at the sitting on February 8th previous during an interruption of Harrison Clake's communications (p. 253), and the statement made that he had died a few days before Christmas. Mr. Miller it seems was in the habit of calling his wife "Jennie", and according to the testimony Mrs. Smead did not know this until after the sitting when Mrs. Miller told her. Whether the name "Mary" applied to Mr. Miller's daughter by that name who was not living or to his mother who also was not living cannot be determined. The reference to "Joseph's boys" may mean Mr. Smead's brothers on that side, Joseph being the name of Mr. Smead's father. Both the father and mother of Mr. Miller are dead, and Mr. Miller lost a little boy about two or three years old. Mr. and Mrs. Smead always called their aunt either Mrs. Miller or aunt Jen, and did not know but that her husband called her by the same name. Her full name was Betsey Jane Miller.

February 13th, 1901. Mrs. S. unconscious the most of the sitting. Began with the planchette.

"(Who is here?) [No answer.] (Is Rose here?) No. [At once a very singular bird was drawn of which a reproduction is given.]

Me, me. (Who is me?) I. (What do you mean by the bird drawn?) Me, my you. (What do you mean by 'me, my you?') You. (Who is doing this?) I am. (Give me your name.) When I explain. (Please explain then.) Will you believe me. (I will as far as I can.) It might be yourself. Your friend told me that you had an impression that it w he ['he' written over 'w'] was Ida's second self but he is not her. Your brother Sylvester. (What about that bird? I do not see.) I thought it might be called your second self. Does it suit you? (What suit me, the bird?) Yes. (Was it



a Martian bird?) No, just fun. (All right, that is a good joke. Go on.) You have treated that fellow very mean Billy. (Who?) Harrison Clarke. (Go on. Tell me what you wish.) He has proved what I told you. Don't you think so? Yes, you remember I told you that if you did not want her id that she was a good girl. Your friend has put Ida to sleep for me and you do not need your hand on hers, no, no, cannot yo * * you do not need ls he is a g going to tell me how to write without it [the planchette] yes, no, I cannot yet. It will take sometime. (I do not care to know much more about Clarke and the conditions over there. I am disgusted with him.) Yes, you should be glad to know. [I asked some question, I forget what it was, but I knew that Mrs. S. knew the answer and the reply of Sylvester was as follows.] You have told Ida and so what good will it do, good night. (Will Mrs. S. come out as soon as usual?) It will take longer."

Mr. S. adds regarding the close of the sitting: "Mrs. S. suffered greatly in coming out; so I was alarmed and thought that she might die. The heart's action was much lowered and the breathing was noticeably affected. She was cold and weak in great distress, could not speak, cried, and was determined that she would never again go into the sleep state and indicated her disgust at the whole matter.

She said that it seemed as if her heart was larger than usual and that it would jump out of her body, and that some one had grabbed her by the throat and prevented her from speaking. It took an hour or more before she was in a condition to stand up alone. Mrs. S. also said that she seemed as if she suffered in the way my brother did when he was expecting to be struck with the engine. He was no doubt aware that he was to be struck.

The reason for the confusion, where I lost track of the reference to Clarke and his girl and the next question, was that when the communicator controlled the planchette without my hand on it the planchette would write so fast that I could not keep track of it, or write down any questions, or make any notes. I never saw it go so fast. It could write faster than Harrison Clarke could without it."

February 19th, 1901. The present sitting shows much confusion and error, and on that account was not sent to me at first. Having learned of its existence I asked for it, indicating that I should have everything whether thought worth anything or not, and received it. The explanation given for the character of the sitting was that Mr. S. had been the cause of confusion and error through impatience and too frequent questions. It will be important also for the reader to remember that all of the questions are not recorded. This ought to have been done to make the conception of the case clear, but it was not and we have only those which Mr. S. had time to record. Many others were asked before the answers were given and no record of them given.

There was first drawn a figure which represents a rough out-

line of a vase and two cactus-like plants in it, one of them apparently upside down. The dialogue then began.

"(What is this?) Plants in a wahrhhibive, yes. (Who is doing this?) [The reply to this was an outline of mountains in a landscape.] (What is that?) You can see. I am — [scrawls.] (Who drew these?) [No reply for a long time.] (Are you a spirit that has not communicated before?) No. (Will you write your name tonight?) No. (Are you Harrison Clarke after all?) No.

[A small hand was then drawn and Mr. S. asked.] (What does that mean?) [In reply four parallel lines were drawn and the answer given in rather indistinct writing.] Josie Murch is here. (Please draw those lines again and write your name.) Why? [followed by scrawls.] (Write it again.) waar a [and a scrawl.] (Write it again. I cannot read it.) You fix the lines. [This answer was written in a clear hand, and represented a request which had never been made before. I drew lines across the sheet and the planchette wrote.] Josie Murch is here. (Who drew those pictures? Did you?) No. (Who did?) A man spirit. (What was his name?) He dad ['dad' erased] did not give it to me. [The letter 't' crossed in two instances in this sentence, and 'i' dotted once.] You knew him very well he said. (Who else is here?) Miss br— Brown [written in larger hand] is here, yes. (Who is it?) Brown Emma Emma. (I did not know you were dead. Is it really Emma Brown?) Yes, yes. (Will you tell me about things? Give me some test that I may know that it is you.) Write to George Brown, N. Y., yes. (I cannot find him with that address, as I do not know what his address is as to street and number.) You knew it. Then write to Oliver Brown of Bristol, Conn. [All the 't's crossed in this sentence.] (Is Oliver there now?) he was when I came here, yes. (I asked several questions to find out different things and the reply was.) Write to the yes ['yes' erased] yes. I think he is— you must ask them. [One 't' crossed.]

[Here a decided change in the handwriting took place as a new communicator appeared. The first word, though the lines are well defined, cannot be deciphered. Immediately followed.] Mrs. Brown, nothing yes, yes. (Who is it?) Eunice Brown. (Mrs. Brown, you were well known to me and you were kind to me.) Well, the Lord was to me. (Is Mrs. Bishop alive?) No, yes. (Is Mrs. Merchant alive?) Yes. (Where does she live?) In the old home at Bolton. [All three 't's in this sentence crossed.] (What disease did Mrs. Bishop die of?) The old trouble. (What was that trouble? You need not hesitate to tell.) Female difficulties ['t's crossed and 'i's dotted in 'difficulties'] and old age. (What was her age at death?) Seventy 2. (Where did she die?) There, yes. (You died of old age, I suppose.) Yes, my heart gave out at last. ['t's crossed in

last two words.] (Where were you buried?) In Guilead. (Write it again.) No, you can read it all right. (I am not sure I know.) You surely do, yes, yes. (Where is Mrs. Bishop buried?) At Bolton. (Is Mrs. Merchant living alone in the old house I boarded in with all of you?) She was, yes, when Sarah came, yes. (When did Sarah die?) I cannot tell exactly. I think it was in 1897 or 1898. I don't just remember. ['t's crossed in 'don't just']. (I am glad to see you, Mrs. Brown.) know me brother, you cannot see me see me. (I said I did not understand the last answer.) You said you were glad to see me. [Then I understood it.] (Good night, Mrs. Brown. I am very glad you have come. Will you bring Mrs. Bishop?) I will tell Sarah we have found you. Good night. God bless you both."

Mrs. S. who was not unconscious during the planchette writing and knew from the reading of Mr. S. what was going on, adds some notes of her own as to what she thought and said at times during the writing.

When "Miss br" was written Mrs. S. "thought that the name of another person was going to be written, but the planchette finished by writing "Brown". When Mr. S. asked if it was really Emma Brown I said almost without thinking that Emma Brown is not dead and I do not believe it. Mr. S. told me to keep still, that the one that is writing knows best what to write. So I said no more. It then wrote Eunice Brown, and I some way felt that Mrs. Brown was dead. But when Mr. S. asked if Mrs. Bishop was dead before the answer was given I told him she was not dead. As to her age, she is seventy-two now."

An interesting spontaneous experience took place in connection with this confused sitting which I narrate in Mrs. Smead's own language. She told it to me when at my house and I give the corroboration of it by two witnesses. Mrs. Smead's account is as follows.

"After I had retired and thought I could go to sleep I found that it was almost impossible; for the vision of Mrs. Brown was continually before me. She was walking from her home to the church. This she did many times. I could see Mrs. Bishop and Mrs. Merchant both in the house, while she would come out and walk along the path across the field to the church, up the steps, and then go inside. She would remain there a few minutes and

go through the same strange actions. This was repeated over and over again until I finally dropped to sleep and on waking saw her just entering the church. I told this to Mr. S. and also Prof. X. before we received our first letter from Mrs. Bishop."

Mr. Smead says: "I hereby certify to having heard Mrs. S. relate this vision the next morning after the Bishop and Brown sitting."

Prof. X. adds: "I hereby certify to remembering Mrs. S. relate this vision before any information came from Bolton, Conn."

The fact, however, was known to Mr. and Mrs. S. Mrs. Bishop is still living, and were it not for the correction of 'No' to 'Yes' the statement in the message would have to be called an error. Mrs. S. says that she did not believe that Mrs. Bishop was dead when the message was written, and she knew exactly what her age was at the time which is correctly stated here. She has suffered for a long time with the troubles mentioned and the fact was well known to Mrs. S. Mrs. Brown was of course not buried at Guilead, but at Bolton, the mistake being an interesting one as Mr. S. supposed positively at the time of the sitting that she would be buried at Guilead. Mrs. Merchant is still living. Mrs. Eunice Brown died in June, 1895 at 87 years of age, the fact of her death being known by a letter from the daughter Emma at the time.

The confusion and error in this sitting is apparent, and Mr. S. assumes the responsibility for them. His statements are as follows:

"I cannot see what you can make out of this case except secondary personality. It looks so to me. It may be that I was the sole cause of all the false answers. I had my hand on the planchette and I was nervous and wanted very much to hear from Mrs. Bishop and Mrs. Brown, and supposed that I was having that privilege. Possibly I answered my own questions unconsciously. In this event the mistakes must not be charged up to Mrs. S.'s subliminal, evidently there is nothing spiritistic in these Bolton messages."

In regard to the facts in this sitting there are some interesting comments. Josie Murch was a schoolmate of Mrs. S., and the latter knew she was dead. Mrs. S. also knew Emma Brown, but did not know whether she was living or dead. She is still living,

as inquiry showed. She was not a relative of either the Smeads or Mrs. Eunice Brown.

The George Brown mentioned was not living, but had died before his mother and it is probable that both Mr. and Mrs. S. knew the fact. Mr. S. thinks that they did. His brother Oliver lived in Bristol, Conn. as stated.

February 23rd, 1901. Mrs. S. not unconscious and the planchette used. A communicator present who had difficulty in writing. It is also noticeable that the 'i's' are dotted and the 't's' crossed.

"These sp—Lettie Little Lettie yes, Lettie s is here. (What is your last name;) Yes, I cannot write it, no, (Try again.) Lettie. (Have you anything to say?) Not much. [Apparently some question omitted.] Yes, perhaps I will remember and will come again."

"[The communicator had a strange way of crossing the 't's'. This letter was seldom or never crossed by Harrison Clarke, and seldom by Sylvester. This communicator, instead of crossing them as they had been crossed before made a very short line, except once, at the top of the letter.]"

"Ida Ida Nicolls. (Is it Ida Nicolls?) Yes, yes. (Where did you die?) Near Boston. (What place?) P. Railroad. (Do you mean that you were killed on the railroad?) Yes, yes. (How old were you at death?) Seventeen, it must have been, yes. (When were you killed?) Long time ago. (About how many years?) Sixteen, might be fifteen. (On what railroad?) Providence. (Do you mean the Boston and Providence R. R.?) Yes, yes. (What was the name of the place where the accident was?) I cannot tell you, no. (What town did you live in when this accident occurred?) Roslindale, yes. (How many years did you live in Roslindale?) I cannot tell you sir. (Where was your body buried?) [No answer.] (What was your father's name?) [No answer.]"

In regard to the incident of Ida Nicolls the following seems to be the facts. Mr. S. went to Boston and examined the records of the Massachusetts Railway Commissioners for the previous twenty years. He found an account of the Bussey Bridge accident which occurred on the Providence Railway. It was not far from Boston. People from Roslindale, Mass. were among the killed and injured. He could not find the name of Ida Nic-

olls of Roslindale among the killed or injured. The Report, however, said that many that were injured severely or otherwise were taken to their homes by friends and their names were never ascertained by the Commissioners, and that some of this class were taken to Roslindale, Mass. But no further information was obtainable.

Soon afterwards another communicator came and the following is the record. The style of writing was slightly different from the previous communicator, having resumed its former character of not crossing the 't's' or dotting the 'i's'.

"[Scrawls.] Miss hrn. (Can't read it. Write it again.) Herie. [Intended letter 'n' made like 'ie'.] (Can't read it. Write it again.) Herri ['n' made like 'ri'.] (Try again.) Hern. (Is it Miss Hern?) Yes. (What is the first name?) Rosa. (Then it is Miss Rosa Hern, is it?) Yes. (Where did you live?) Boston. (How old were you at death?) tts 20. (What did you die of?) Pneumonia. [Other questions were asked, but no answers were received.]"

The next incident is not connected with a sitting, but is a spontaneous experience which came about in this way. As I left the house in January when Mrs. S. was not present I remarked to Mr. S. that I should want to have Mrs. S. come to New York for some experiments, as I could not come to his place during my work at the University. He agreed, later I wrote him a letter, stating when I should probably want her to come. I told him that I thus informed him beforehand, because the call might come any time and suddenly, but that it might be some weeks later than the date of the letter. This was a day or two before the experience narrated below by Mrs. S. herself.

"I was washing in the kitchen when my husband came in. I asked him if he had any letters. He told me he had one that would be of interest to me, so I asked him what it was. He said: 'come into the sitting room and I will tell you'. But while taking off his coat he said it was from Dr. Hyslop, and that he wished me to go to New York in a few weeks, or a month perhaps, and I at once said: 'Oh Lord', for I felt that it was more than I could bear, and almost, or before, I could say the words, 'Oh Lord', the following words were given me. It seemed as if they were thrown at me from a

distance of four or five feet, they seemed to come with such force. The words were these. 'Did I ever leave you? Have I ever forsaken you?'

Of course my heart and soul could only answer truthfully that Jesus had neither left nor forsaken men or at any time and that even now he was ready to help me in this hour of trial, and so if it is his will that I shall go I must say, 'I will', and ask him to go with me, for he has said, 'Lo I am with you always.'

I narrate this incident for two reasons. First it indicates the type of experience to which Mrs. S. is liable, though not so frequently as the case and statement might imply. Second it throws light upon her character and the motives which have moved her to allow such experiments as Mr. S. and myself have been conducting. The experience is dated February 25th.

The next sitting was on March 2nd, 1901. The planchette was used and Mrs. S. was not unconscious. The writing is again somewhat different from its usual character, though not significantly so, perhaps.

March 2nd. "Mr. G. Morse. (Write it again.) Mr. George Morse. (Is it Mr. George Morse?) Yes. (You may go on. Write what you wish.) Yes, take to my wife my love. Tell her she will be with me soon, that her mother and Lizzie will be with me waiting for her. (Give me the name of your wife.) Mary Morse. (That is your wife, Mary Morse?) Yes. (Tell me the street and number, so that I can find her.) I cannot tell you just where. You can find her by asking her pastor. (What church is it?) The Fourth Street. (Is it the Fourteenth Street?) No, Fourth Baptist Church. (What city?) South Boston, yes. (You may go on. Tell us what you wish. I will try to find your wife for you.) Miss Robertson knew me. [The maiden name of Mrs. S.] (What was Miss Robertson's name?) There were several girls, but we all liked this one best. You call her by a different name. (I call her by the name of Ida M. Smead. Do not forget that.) Not that. (What do I call her then?) Maude. [This is true. I often do instead of Ida.] (Is this the George Morse that Ida used to know when she was a girl?) It is his father. (When did you die?) hi (?) in the year When God called me. It was some eight years ago I think. (Can you tell me the month?) Mary can. You see she will remember better. (Will you tell me the disease?) Pneumonia, yes. (You have been dead eight years, have you?) It must be. (You may go on, Mr. Morse. You may give me any test I can have to find out

that it is really you.) I would like you to ask my wife what my trade was. (What was it, that I may know if her answer is correct.) Master mason. (Do you mean brick or stone?) Stone, yes, yes, yes, yes. (Go on.) Y—I will tell for yer [pencil ran over edge of paper] yo Ida. [I did not know what this answer meant, and we asked for an explanation and the following was given.] Your wife was wondering if Lottie was here. [Mrs. S. said she was thinking that "if this was really Mr. Morse I wonder where Lottie is". She did not say anything, and I did not know her thought. The answer refers to her thoughts.] (Go on. Give me another test that I can use.) You can ask Mary if her sister's husband is still living, but he is here. (Give me the name of this man.) It is Lottie's father. Dudley. (Give me his first name, can you?) No. (Good night, Mr. Morse. Come again.) I thank you. Some time when God is willing."

This sitting was one of the most interesting that has occurred. It represents quite a number of facts outside the knowledge of both Mr. and Mrs. S. We had best, therefore, devote some attention to them in order to understand their character and importance.

Mrs. S. had known this Mr. George Morse when she was much younger and before she was married. But she had not seen him for seventeen years and had not seen any of the family for fifteen years. Mr. Morse died on October 9th, 1895, two years later than his own statement would imply. This Mr. Morse had once lived in the house up-stairs in which Mrs. S.'s father lived and when the families separated they moved in opposite directions. This was eighteen years ago. Six years later Mr. Robertson, Mrs. Smead's father, moved to Malden, Mass. and Mrs. Smead saw the Morse Family only once or twice after moving out of the house in which they lived together and this was before moving herself to Malden as a young woman. Mrs. Smead has visited South Boston but twice since she was married, now nearly eleven years ago, and these two visits were only street car rides through that part of the city down to the point on the bay. She had gone to the Fourth Street Baptist Church when Mr. Morse was living, but only a few times to evening concerts there, her own church being Wesleyan Methodist. She has had no correspondence with any one in South Boston since she moved away from there to Malden twelve years ago. All

tnis makes it appear that Mrs. S. had no means of learning of Mr. Morse's death. She knew, however, that Mr. Caldwell, the husband of Mrs. Morse's sister, was dead, to whom one reference in the messages would appear to apply in this respect. He died in October, 1895. But this Mr. Caldwell was a member of the Wesleyan church which Mrs. Smead attended, and she does not recall the source of her information. She thinks most probably from her sister. Mrs. Smead did not know that Mrs. Morse's mother was dead. She was living the last Mrs. Smead knew of her some twenty years ago. She died in 1883. Mrs. Smead is not positive whether she did not know of the death of Mrs. Lizzie Dudley. She says it is possible that she did know it, though she also says that if it did not take place when she thinks it did she probably did not know it. She thinks Mrs. Dudley died before her father, Mrs. Smead's father, moved from Boston. She died in 1887. Hence it is possible that Mrs. S. knew the fact. Also Mrs. Smead did not know that Mr. Dudley was living. Nor did she know what Mr. Morse's trade was. She thought the night of the sitting that he was employed in some sort of job work, and never saw him dressed in any way to suggest his calling. The only work she remembered* him doing was service on a jury. He was a job mason until the last two or three years of his life, when he was in business for himself as a master mason. This fact had to be ascertained among the others by a special trip to Boston 150 miles distant by Mr. Smead to make the inquiries as said. Mrs. S. probably knew that Mrs. Dudley was dead, but never knew that she was called "Lizzie", always hearing her spoken of as Mrs. Dudley. A defective memory here, however, is possible. She knew that "Lottie", Mrs. Dudley's daughter was dead. She died about a year after Mrs. Smead's marriage, the fact being learned from a former pastor's daughter living in Millburg, Mass. who was on a visit about the time of the girl's death which was about a year after her own marriage.*

* Inquiry develops the following facts regarding the death of this Lottie Dudley. She died in April 1896, and not when Mrs. S. supposed in her conversation about her. The following are the statements of Mr. and Mrs. S. regarding the facts. I give the statement of Mrs. S. first.

"I find that as I look at Mr. George H. Morse's (son of "communicator")

To summarise the facts, Mary was the name of Mr. George Morse's wife still living, a fact not known to Mrs. Smead. Lizzie was the name of Mrs. Dudley, the sister of Mrs. Morse. Lottie was the name of the daughter of Mrs. Dudley, the death of both mother and daughter being known to Mrs. Smead.

The mistakes of the communicator are the time of his death and the name of his disease. He died six years instead of eight before the sitting. His disease was cerebral paralysis or apoplexy. There is an apparent mistake in the reference to the death of Mr. Dudley who is still living. The possible interpretation of it is that the communicator had Mr. Dudley in mind

letter, it could not have been Lottie Dudley that died in 1891 or '92 as I told Dr. Hyslop when I was in New York. I must believe now that I never knew of her death before Mr. George Morse told me that night of the message. Before I read the letter of Mr. George H. Morse I was positive that Lottie Dudley died at the time I told Dr. Hyslop (1891 or '92). I supposed that a Miss Rose Candlin told me of her death. Now I know that Rose Candlin died before 1895, and I saw her to talk with her in 1891 at Bolton, Conn. I find that Mr. George H. Morse says that Lottie Dudley died in April, 1896. I am sure, therefore, that I could not have heard of Lottie Dudley's death through Miss Rose Candlin.

"I believe that the party to whom Miss Rose Candlin referred was some other friend of mine whom I cannot recall. It may have been Charlie Dudley's wife (Charlie Dudley was Lottie's brother). I cannot see how I could have known of Lottie's death before Mr. George Morse told me that night through his message in answer to my mental question."

Mr. S. says: "I have always thought that Lottie Dudley was dead. For many years I have had that thought, and I received it from Mrs. S. I have had no other way or reason to know. I know that we have not heard anything about the Dudleys for years. I remember once when we were in Bl— Conn., that we took the big bunch of photographs that Mrs. S. has and we noticed the picture of Lottie Dudley. I cannot forget her face because it was striking and different from the usual run of faces, and it made an impression upon me that I have never forgotten it, and while we were looking at these pictures Mrs. S. said that she was dead. I am sure of this, as I have a positive remembrance of the fact, and wish to make this statement as strongly as I can, allowing for any possible error of memory on my part.

"When I read the statement of Mr. George H. Morse in regard to the comparatively recent date of Lottie's death I remarked to Mrs. S.: 'There must be another case that you did not know about.' I think that Mrs. S. did not know of Lottie Dudley's death until Mr. George Morse told her that night."

when he told Mr. Smead to ask whether his wife's sister's husband was living. But an interruption on the "other side" may have occurred by some one thinking that Mr. Caldwell was meant who was the husband of another sister and interposed the intended correction, "but he is here". Mr. Morse can be supposed to have gone on with the message and name he had in mind, and to have given the name Dudley who is living as the first part of the message implies, while Mr. Caldwell, husband of another sister of Mrs. Morse was deceased.

The next sitting shows much difficulty at the beginning and some variations from the usual handwriting. Not much was obtained on the occasion, and this appeared to be much confused.

March 3rd, 1901. 9 p. m. "Yes, Mrs. [Planchette moved the pencil point about a point for some time.] No, Mrs. [Repeats its motion.] No, no Mrs. [Repeats its motion.] Mrs., yes, no, no. Can't spell it. Mrs.—pes (?) [Possibly intended for 'yes'.] Mrs. no wero [Intended for 'who', but not distinctly written.] who, yes, yes, no. I have * * [undecipherable, but possibly MWEMOOOOO, followed by some scrawls in which lines like the upward and downward strokes of M and circular lines are found.]

[Then came some lines like two small letter 'm's' and more circular scrawls drawn, ending with the drawing of a hand or foot, and a repetition of the letter 'm' several times. Then a more systematic effort was made with the following results.]

"mim, no—shelleren, shelleren—movell (?) meoll (?) mood (?) meolle, yes. mnolle, no, no * * Maude is here * * [undecipherable] no yuo [you]."

March 4th, 1901, 8 p. m. Automatic writing with pencil. Handwriting becomes clear and distinct and no such confusion as marked the attempt of the communicator on the previous evening.

"This is me. (Who is me?) Me. (Who is me? Explain, please.) This is me. (Explain.) Lettie, yes. (Can you write your last name?) No. (Go on, write what you please.) [A pause of ten minutes.]

[Mrs. S. said: 'It is queer Sylvester has not been around since last night'.] Understand why don't you. (Who is writing?) I did. (Who is I?) Me. (I wish you to write your name so that I may know who it is.) Why. (I am sure that I want to know if it is you.) She will not be afraid will she. (No, write it. It will be all

right.) I will. Sylvester. (Write your full name.) Was not that enough? (Are you really my brother Sylvester?) No. (Who is writing here tonight?) Me, Sylvester I Smead. (How do you make that out? I cannot see. You say you are [not] my brother Sylvester, and then you say you are Sylvester I. Smead. How do you explain that?) I will. I am Ida's *self*. *Second one* ['self' and 'second' were underlined twice and 'one' thrice] one—no—one. You see it then. (That joke is all tired out, Sylvester.) You are not tired of saying it. (Will you try to prove your identity.) How, yes. (By telling me things that will prove to me that you are really my brother Sylvester.) No, I will try. (Will you give me the name of your girl, Sylvester? I know Ida did not know what it was. It would be a good test.) Evelyn. [Correct.] (Will you tell me the name of a young lady you and I used to know in Lawrence. Her father worked in the foundry and her mother was a very stout woman. The lady had another sister that was married. Will you tell me her name? You knew very well. This will be a good test.) Grace Cregg, yes.

[This was the answer I had in my mind and is correct. Mrs. S. did not know the name. The name should have been spelled 'Craig'.]

(This is good. Will you tell me the name of the station agent where you were killed at Messer's Crossing?) [Pause.] No. [Pause.] Mr. Hwt Hwett—no—Hewitt. [The correct name was Mr. Hoit and was not known to Mrs. S.]

(Will you tell me where we used to hold our meetings of the secret order we had when we were boys. What room in the old Judge Stevens house? I know very well and I know Mrs. S. does not and never did tell me.)

You can write it. (No, I want you to do it. It would prove that it was really you, Sylvester.) No, it would be your 2 self. (What is the use of fooling about that second self matter any more? Give me another test, so I can know.) We use to like to play tick tack. Do you rember [remember] that man that chased us * * [word undec.] (Give the name of this man.) Mr. Rober— Mr. * * Mr. Rober— Roberts. (Can you get him to come, Sylvester?) No, he will not come. (I am glad to have these tests, Sylvester. I hope you will give more of them. I hope this is not the last.) No, I am coming again [if] you want me to. (Will you go to New York with Mrs. Smead?) With who? (With Mrs. Smead.) Yes. (I meant Mrs. Smead. Will you go with her to New York?) No. For Ida. I don't know Mrs. Smead. (What! Did you say you don't know Mrs. Smead, Sylvester?) Yes, I know Ida, my sister, Billy. (Will you go with her?) I will. You won't be afraid now, Billy, with me.

[This remark of his alludes to my jealousy of him before my marriage. I did not like to have him with Ida [Mrs. Smead.] I

did not know but that she might marry him and give me up. I knew he had great persuasive powers. Sylvester knew this and so did Ida, and at that time they made fun of my jealousy.]

(Give me another test. What was the name of your girl?)
Evy— Evelyn was the name of my girl. (What was her last name?)
Sargent [indistinct, and hence repeated.] Sargent. (Then you mean Evelyn Sargent?) Yes."

Mr. S. adds in a note: "I know that her name was Evelyn from a brief poem that he wrote and that was found on his body when he was killed. It was kept in an old pocket-book that he had with him, and I took it and saved it, and I have it in my possession now. I do not know what her last name was. I think it possible that Mrs. S. may have known the first name of this girl, because I may have mentioned it to her and because we have never had any secrets from each other, except Masonic secrets. I do not know of any possible way I can find out whether the last name is correct or not. I shall try if it is possible."

The accuracy and pertinence of the incidents in this sitting are either indicated in remarks made at the time or explained in notes which I thought best to incorporate in the body of the record, and only the reference to Mr. Roberts requires separate comment. This was correct, but Mr. S. thinks it possible that he may have told his wife of the incident in his boyhood. There is no certainty on the matter, and hence no stress can be placed upon it as evidential.

Careful inquiry into the possibility of the name Evelyn Sargent results as follows, showing it partly correct and partly false. Mrs. Smead wrote out and signed the following statement on March 26th before the inquiry was instituted.

"I think this 'Evelyn' is a fictitious character, there is no such person, that this poem was written as a fancy of his. I never knew that he had such a girl by that name and I do not believe that she ever was his girl. I consider that the name 'Evelyn Sargent' is a fiction until proven otherwise."

Mr. Smead after inquiry reports on April 3rd: "I find these facts. Sylvester had a girl by the name of Evelyn. She was the last one he ever had. She lived in Boston at the time Sylvester worked in a law office in the Roger's Building. She was

an operator with the type writer in the same Roger's Building. Here Sylvester got acquainted with her. Her last name was 'Hamel', not Sargent.

"When the message was written I was thinking of three girls that I knew he had liked and not one of these was written. By and by the name 'Evelyn' was written and then I thought that the last name was 'Sargent'. I had in mind a Minnie Sargent I used to know and in some way that I cannot account for I thought that the last name of 'Evelyn' was 'Sargent'. I might have been to blame for the appearance of this word 'Sargent'. This is all hypothetical, yet very possible as I was thinking of it. I can easily account for it, and I do not think it is just to charge it up to Mrs. S.'s subliminal self as an error when I may have been unconsciously or telepathically responsible for it. At any event the girl 'Evelyn' is a reality and the last intimate friend my brother had before his tragic death, and it was natural for him to give the name as he did."

The following incident is a spontaneous one and not connected with any sitting or experiment. It finds its place in this order because it occurred in connection with certain events contemporaneous with it and related to the intention to experiment. I give it in the words of Mrs. S. herself who wrote it down the morning after it occurred. It was a vision or apparition that occurred on the evening of March 5th about 10 p. m.

"I was trying to sleep when I heard some one move. I looked and saw some one standing in the doorway. This person was tall, with dark complexion, and wore a robe which seemed to be that of a king or emperor. There was a crown upon his head and I could see three points in the crown. There was a smaller person near the one who seemed to be an emperor who took up the smaller person and tried to bring him near to me, but the latter refused to come. The king or emperor tried to speak, but I could not hear him. The other man turned his face away from me, so that I could not see him. My impression was that the tall man might be 'Imperator' of the Piper case, because I had been thinking of him in connection with what my husband had said to me about him. I did not know who he was, but looked at him very steadily for a few minutes, so that I might remember him, and while watching him the impression that I have stated came to me and in addition the feeling that he was a king or emperor of an early date and was a Christian, or had been while on earth.

"What I saw impressed me so that I thought I would waken Mr. Smead, but it occurred to me that I could tell him of it just as well in the morning, which I did. He at once asked me if I knew the meaning of the name 'Imperator' and I told him that I did not. Then he said that its meaning was 'emperor', and that the word had a Latin origin. I was very much surprised to learn this.

"I know that I was not asleep and had not been, and did not go to sleep until very near morning, the vision having made such an impression on me."

Mr. Smead adds: "I never told Mrs. S. the meaning of Imperator until after the vision. She supposes that Imperator in the Piper case was one of the old church fathers, having received this impression from something you said when you were here."

It is correct that, when there in January, I made some remarks as to the possibilities of the trance personalities in the Piper case, but did not say that this was an opinion of mine, but a representation of certain statements in the communications of Stainton Moses, and of Mrs. Piper as she came out of the trance.

The evidence for the origin of this experience in subliminal action is apparent enough not to be made a matter of argument, but there is an interesting coincidence connected with it that may be recorded for those who are hunting for them. I had been writing to Dr. Hodgson a few days previous to the experience about the opportunity to have sittings here at my home contemporaneous with his own sittings with Mrs. Piper. Our plan was to have Imperator look over my case and pronounce judgment upon it, as well as to try certain experiments. On the morning of March 5th Dr. Hodgson sent me a letter regarding these arrangements. There is nothing in these facts to give the coincidence significance for theories except chance. Perhaps it will be of interest to the telepathist who likes illustrations exhibiting the large possibilities of his hypothesis. For me it gets its interest from its reproduction of ideas suggested by myself, and from the fact that they emerge in the appearance of a sensory reality.

March 6th, 1901. Pencil used instead of the planchette. Mrs. Smead was not unconscious at first, but became so after

awhile. The point at which this occurred will be indicated in the narrative. Maude L. Janes was the communicator.

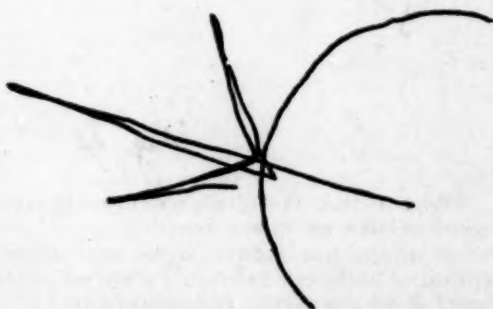
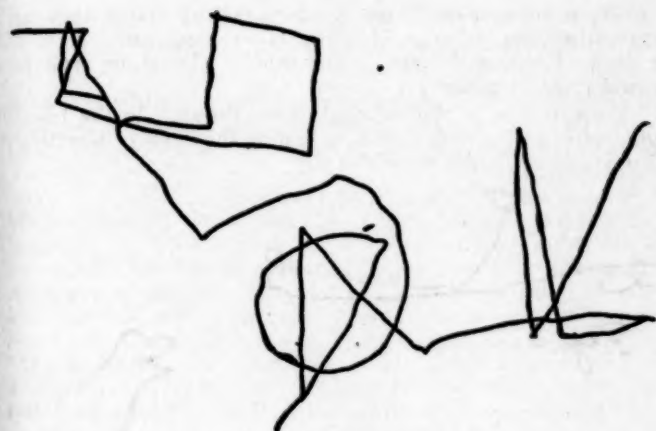
Mr. S. explains: ["I made the request that I should like to have Burleigh Hoyt present, and explained that we had loaned the planchette and must use the pencil, and that I did not wish Mrs. S. to become unconscious."]

"(Who is here?) [Scrawls.] Yes, yes, yes. [The first question repeated after each 'yes'.] Maude Janes. (You can write what you please.) Why don't you use the machine? (I explained the matter and said, do you understand?) It is easier. I do, yes. (Is Mrs. S. going into the sleep state?) No. (What did you mean by writing 'yes' a little while ago? Explain.) You said you had loaned [loaned] the machine. (I see now. You may go ahead, and write what you please.) Minnie will write soon about th ['th' erased] what I told you. (Go on.) Yes. (Any facts you wish you may tell me. I want to prove that it is you. I have a good deal of proof now, but I want more, Maude. Try and give it to me.) Can you tell me who was my teacher at H— before you came there? (No, I never knew. Who was it?) Mary was. (Mary who?) Will [erased] Wilson.

(That was very good. I am very sure I never knew that, and I do not think Mrs. S. ever knew it. I am very pleased. Give me another.) [No answer.]

(Don't let Mrs. S. become unconscious.) No. (Can't you think of another test?) Not now. (All right, you may let that go now. Write what you please. Be perfectly free with us, Maude, and make yourself at home.) Tell papa to look in mama's Bible for what I told you first. She did put it there when you sent it to her first. (Go on. Did your mother tell you?) she said so. She did tell me, yes. (I cannot write to your father and ask him to do that.) Why not? He used to like me. (If I do that I shall have to tell him all about this spiritualistic business.) Why not? I am his girl. (He will wonder and think I am a crank, and as I am a minister he will think that I ought not to have anything to do with spiritism.) You do not know him yet. (Probably I don't Maude.) No. (Shall I write and tell him the whole story?) It would not hurt (hurt) him. (Do you want me to, Maude?) I do not see why you should not, Mr. Smead. (Maude, Maude.) Yes, sir. (I will if you want me to.) I would like to have you, but you can suit yourself. (All right, Maude. Go on, and write what you please.)

[In reply the pencil drew some scrawls about the same point, and drew a clear triangle, after it quite a perfect square, then an imperfect circle with a clear triangle within it, and after this lines representing an angle outside the last figure, a right angle and bisected it. *Mrs. S. became totally unconscious at this point.*]



(Who is this now?) Maude L. Janes. (What is that drawing?) Geome [the letter 'e' erased.] Prof. H—— taught me. (You did not spell 'Geometry' right.) Geometry. (Draw me one geometrical problem, please.)

[A square and a bisected angle were drawn. In the bisected angle a circular line was drawn, indicating the mode of bisecting it. The reproduced figures show this.]



Fig. 3



Fig 4

(What is that?) I don't remember it, only remember how it looked. (Draw me another one.)

[A straight line and two angles were drawn above the line, as reproduced in the cut, and the lines lettered as also indicated. Then there followed an attempt at demonstration.]

a equals c. a ['a' erased] c and B are equal. (C and B are equal?) Yes. (Do you mean that, if a equals c, c and b are equal?) Yes. (What do you mean by A-B-C?) The angle [s] from a to C from C to B are equal.

(Please to take pains to draw the same figure again and go through the demonstration again.) [Two obtuse angles were drawn and lettered as indicated in the cut, and the following demonstration attempted.]

If the line a is equal to C=B, no. (You are all mixed up.) Yes. (Can you draw it now and do it?) I thought I could, but I don't seem to do it? (Well, let it go, Maude.) Yes.

(Go on. Anything you please.) I guess I will leave. (Good night, Maude. Come again.) Yes."

"[Mrs. S. came to consciousness without any disagreeable features and rested well that night. She has no knowledge whatever of Geometry and never studied it.]"

This sitting almost explains itself in respect of its incidents, and no detailed account of them is required. It is true that Maude Janes studied Geometry under the Prof. H—— mentioned in the messages. Mrs. S. affirms that she never knew the fact. She once visited the Academy and remembers that Maude was studying Algebra. The Smeads remained in H—— only a year and a half and this visit to the Academy was made in the second half of this period, so that the Geometry was probably studied the following year after the Smeads had moved away, and the only possible source of information that Mrs. S. could have of the fact on this supposition would be correspondence, and Mrs. S. had a short correspondence with this girl after leaving the place. It is possible, therefore, that Mrs. S. might have heard of Maude's studies, but this would hardly account for the character of the demonstrations with which Mrs. S. was never familiar.

In regard to other statements there are some matters of interest. The allusion to Minnie writing soon has this pertinence. Minnie is the name of Maude's sister still living and Mr. S. had written to her some time before regarding incidents of which he and Mrs. S. knew nothing. She wrote her reply on March 4th. This sitting, as indicated above was held on March 6th. The letter just mentioned was received by Mr. S. on March 7th, the post-mark indicating the time of its arrival, namely, the 7th.

Mary Wilson was Maude's teacher before the Smeads went to H——. In regard to the incident of the mother's having put a certain thing in the Bible I can obtain no confirmation. Maude's statement refers to her first message in 1896. Mr. S. had cut that part of his record out (p. 272) which pertained to Maude and sent it to Maude's mother before the death of the latter, and it was not returned to him. There was something in Mrs. Janes's reply at the time that indicated an appreciation of the messages, but the letter has been lost. I myself made a special trip to the locality in which the Janeses lived and inquired about the paper. Neither sister nor father knew anything about the paper. The Bible which Mrs. Janes used for herself and in which the paper was said to have been put had been in common use ever since Mrs. Janes' death several years before, and for a time also there had been another family occupying the house. There is consequently no trace of the paper in the Bible if it was ever put there.

New York, March 12th, 1901.

The present series of sittings was held at my own residence for which I had brought Mrs. S. to this city. I need not indicate definitely all the objects I had in this plan until there is call for it. But the main object was to have a chance to test the case outside of its home environment and if possible to establish some control over the phenomena that had not been reached in previous attempts. The experiments usually began with the planchette, but during the sitting the pencil was substituted for this, as will be indicated at the proper place in the narrative. There were six sittings held in this way.

The sitting began at 10:10 and continued until 10:50 a. m. I may characterize it as practical failure in every respect, both in respect to the matter of content in messages and the fact of automatic writing. There was some of the latter, but none of the former that could have even the interest of secondary personality. The sequel may possibly show that various emotional feelings and expectations on the part of Mrs. S. might have been the cause. This, however, can hardly be determined by a single sitting or set of observations. The trance condition came on after a while, but I could not decide definitely when this took

place. If I could rely upon the time when the planchette began to move as an index of the trance then it can be definitely determined. In this case it was not until 10:36. After waiting a few minutes for the planchette to begin I asked if any one was present. No response was made. I repeated the question and "Who is here" several times, four in fact, before the planchette stirred. This, as said was 26 minutes after we began. The first movements were a short distance across the page and then apparently some attempt was made to spell out a word, which was possibly the word "me". I said: "All right. Who writes?" the apparent attempt to write "me" continued and then ended in drawing the planchette across the page. I repeated my question and asked that the writing be repeated. There was some apparent confusion and the word "yes" was written and the word "me" after it. I said: "Now, go on". This was followed by a long pause. During it I asked first the question: "Can you write?" with no answer, then: "You may write" and no answer, and then: "Is this Maude?" To this the answer "No" was written. The planchette then drew the pencil across the page and I changed the sheet. It again drew the pencil across the page and when placed wrote the word "you" twice, drawing the pencil across to the other side of the page each time, and then wrote "no me", which might have been intended for "know me" though this is purely conjectural. I then asked again: "Is it Maude?" and the reply "No" was distinctly written, though the fact that it was followed by the word "me" again after drawing the pencil across the page may indicate that it was a repetition of the previous statement. But as I followed this second "no" with the statement: "All right. Tell me who it is," the answer "me" may be regarded as the usual one in this connection at the outset of a sitting. I then asked: "Who is me?" and received the answer "yes", which was immediately followed by writing that is undecipherable. But before it was completed a clear capital R was made and followed by a letter which appears as a capital M, but might be an attempt at a capital H, though it is not the capital H that is usually written by Mrs. S. The only reason to suppose it possibly an H is the greater approximation to this letter a little later, and the fact that the planchette with its necessary method of writing gives

some excuse for thus interpreting the case. The rest of the attempt at this point is unintelligible, except that on the next sheet the word "yes" was clearly written and apparently followed by another trial at the letter R.

I then said: "It is not clear. Please to write it again." The answer was "yes". I then said: "But it is the name I want written clearly." There was first a scrawl which, though it resembles a capital N, is followed by a clear capital R, read so at the time, and this by what most persons would again take as a capital M, but which has the cross for capital H. The rest appears as a scrawl, though as watched at the time might be interpreted as an attempt to write "ys". This would make the whole "R Hys", a part of the name of my father. But in addition to the necessary assumption that it must have been known from my articles in *Harper's Monthly*, I consider the evidential nature too dubious to regard it seriously. But the attempt, whatever it was, was followed by a scrawl after running the pencil across the sheet.

But having assumed that the attempt was to mention the name of my father, and having freely talked about him when I visited the S. family in January and also attempted to establish communications with him then (p. 247), I resolved to ask the next question which was: "Is this you, father?" The answer may be interpreted either as a scrawl or as a poor attempt to write the word "boy". The latter is extremely doubtful, and would be assuredly doubtful to those who were not acquainted with all the writing in this case. The reply, however, was followed by the planchette's drawing the pencil several times across the page, which was interrupted by my question repeated about my father. As the lines continued to be drawn on the next sheet I asked who was writing and got as answer the word "me", which is not clearly written, but is most probably as read. I asked again: "Who is it?", and received a scrawly attempt at some expression, possibly "no, me". I repeated the query: "Is it you father?" the answer, very indistinct and scrawly, in fact wholly unintelligible at present, was read and can be forced into the word "No". But I requested that it be written again, and the word "yes" was written, and on my asking to know if that was the word written the reply was "yes" again.

The next attempt at writing, which went on without further question from me, was a mere scrawl in answer to request for initials and to know if the sign was R. H. and was followed by the word "yes", apparently, and this certainly by the words "me pencil" and a scrawl. I took away the planchette and placed a pencil in her hand between the forefinger and thumb. The hand immediately wrote quite clearly: "We are not acquainted yet." I then asked: "Who wrote that?" The answer was: "I cannot yet." I said: "All right. Take your time," and the reply was: "Yes, when I can." I said, "good", and left the hand to proceed. It wrote: "What will" and an undecipherable scrawl, ending with drawing the pencil across the page and began a word on the edge of the paper. I asked that it be written again, and the response was: "You cannot yet", with a scrawl after it. The pencil then inclined to fall out of the hand, but in a moment appeared to be grasped again, and wrote a scrawl. I then asked: "Is Maude here?" The reply came: "You you must wait, yes." "All right", I said, and there was a pause of fifteen minutes without a motion of the pencil. I then asked: "Can you write any more, or shall we stop?" The answer "not" was apparently written and in such a fine hand that its interpretation may be doubtful. This was followed by writing so fine, though distinct in form, that I could not read it. I asked that it be repeated, and it was made more distinct, but I could make out only the first two words with any certainty, which were "with no" and the rest might be "useless now". The attempt to make it still clearer in response to my second request only resulted in making it undecipherable. On the next sheet was written without further interrogation: "We can [pause.] you [line drawn.] yes."

As the time was up I resolved to make a post-hypnotic suggestion before awakening her. So I told her twice that in about two minutes after she had awakened she would go to the mantle-piece and place one of the brass candle sticks on it beside the other, and remarking when she did it that she liked this better. I then told her to awaken. It was apparent that she was in a deep trance. Soon she began to breathe a little more heavily, and just before she came out cried considerably, but soon recovered her equipoise when she became at all conscious.

I must also add that I had asked my family physician, Dr. Floyd Crandall, to be present and try some tests for anæsthesia. When I was ready to close the sittings I asked him to proceed, and he applied pretty severe tests to the hand and fingers and found them exhibiting no responses and also discovered no influence from their severity on respiration. I did not at this time try for anæsthesia in any other locality, as I feared it might be only local and the trance only superficial. But the manner in which Mrs. S. came out seemed to indicate a rather deep trance. I also examined the hand, and so also Dr. Crandall, to find that the muscles in it were hard.

A still further fact is of some importance. Mrs. S. told me after the physician went away that she was on the point of asking me as she recovered consciousness where Mrs. Hyslop was, but refrained because she saw this stranger before her. I had brought the doctor in after Mrs. S. went into the trance and she did not know of his presence until she wakened from it. In regard to the fact of Mrs. Hyslop's death I had been careful to conceal it from her by a remark when bringing Mrs. S. from the station, indicating that she was not at home at present. Her death, however, might have been surmised from what could be observed about the house, though I had concealed all indications of the fact very carefully. The mere circumstance, however, that my wife was not at home to greet a stranger who was the wife of another person was calculated to set the mind of Mrs. S. to thinking, and I must assume that, if the death of my wife was not known, it would be apparent on the face of it. Mrs. S. had in fact asked the question where Mrs. Hyslop was of my house-keeper and the query was parried in the way that I had done it the evening before. Still I record the fact that, on recovering consciousness from the trance at the first sitting, she was on the point of asking where my wife was and of saying that she had an impression that she was not living. There was evidently some mental embarrassment until I told her in the evening after the sitting what the fact was, as the incidents narrated would indicate.

After Mrs. S. went up-stairs and lay down to rest from the experiment she had an apparition of a white church and some buildings on one side of a street in a strange town which she had

never seen before, and on the opposite side of the street a cemetery with a large number of gravestones and monuments about four or five feet high. Some were white and some were gray. But the vision was suddenly interrupted by a call from my housekeeper before it had developed into perfect clearness, and vanished.

March 13th, 1901. The sitting began with the use of the planchette which was not abandoned until near the close. We sat down at 10:15 and the planchette began to move at 10:26. It slowly drew a crooked line and then wrote "Yes" twice, and followed this with: "I he ——— you see — yes, is me" The planchette was drawn across the paper three times during the writing of this broken sentence. At the end of it I asked: "Who is writing this morning?" The answer was: "I am ——— yo you know know, yes" ——— followed by drawing the pencil twice across the page—"we are ——— me it is me. You do not remember me." (Did I ever know you at all?) Yes. (Can you write your name and I may remember you?) Mary." This was followed by some scrawls and apparently an attempt to continue the name, but without success. There was a pause in the midst of it and I said: "Go on if you can." But the apparent attempt to write further ended only in a scrawl for a letter. Again there was a pause with a slight convulsion in the arm. I said: "Go on and complete it, but take your time." But the hand continued to tremble for a short time and then wrote: "Telegrap tlegraph [slight scrawl.] operator. Do you know me?"

To this question I replied: "No, I do not know the operator, but I suspect who it is. [Hand shakes.] but be calm and get a part of your name." This was followed by a scrawly "you" and then "you" more clearly written. The hand continued to shake in the attempt to proceed. I repeated the request to be calm and there followed a scrawly "it" when I changed the sheet of paper and the writing became more clear, and reads: "does not work like it ['it' erased.] the one I had when held (?)." Here I changed the pencil in the planchette and the writing continued. "Yes, you cannot get my message through there

we are so busy. (Had we best use the pencil?) No. (All right let me change the sheet.) O (?) you see we are here. (Who is here?) I cannot. (Are you connected with me?) The hand began to shake rather violently at this point and continued it for ten minutes, during which I asked the writer to keep calm and to tell me whether he was related to me. The answer "Yes" was written, and I requested that I be told what the relation was. The excitement was renewed for a moment and I said: "Well try it. May be a very common word", and the word "yes" was again written, followed by a scrawl and the word "cousin" written with tolerable clearness.

I then said: "Now if you can tell me which cousin, all right." This was followed by excitement again after a scrawly attempt to start a word. I asked: "Shall we try the pencil instead of the machine (planchette)?" Much excitement followed this, but of a different kind. The planchette was drawn across the paper making a slightly zigzag line thrice, and then wrote: "James see her," and then a clearly zigzag line and "see her" repeated in zigzag letters, followed by a zigzag line. The planchette continued to show a trembling motion simply moving the pencil about the same point, when I substituted the pencil in the finger, and the subject wrote in a trembling style, resembling the cartoons that represent shivering, "she will fall." I noticed then that her elbow was resting near the edge of the table and was in danger of going over it. I placed her head back against the cushion of the chair and tried to put down the hand which was placed on her forehead, but found it in a condition like catalepsy. I put a support under the elbow and left the arm in its original position over the eyes and on the forehead. The pencil then wrote quite clearly: "Wait, she is all right." I asked if she wanted the planchette, and the reply was: "It makes no difference." I asked "who writes this," and received the answer: "Some one, you know me", followed by a line across the sheet and the word "you" with another line and the word "yes". Then I tried to encourage a further attempt to write the name by saying: "Very well I am glad to know you, but I am not certain who it is. Write your initials." There was a long pause and some excitement, when I asked if it was too hard, and receiving no reply, began to bring Mrs. S. out of the trance.

She was much longer coming out than the day before, and as she showed signs of motion shook her head as if to say "No". Sometime before recovering consciousness she first closed her hand tightly, when I rubbed it slightly, and soon afterward she stretched it out as if some distress was present. Then she opened her eyes and stared at me for a moment and closed them again, throwing her head back against the cushion. The sitting closed at 11:45, and she was fifteen minutes recovering consciousness.

Before trying to bring her out of the trance I repeated the suggestion of the day before, but it was not executed when she recovered, having produced no effect.

The name "Mary" is that of my wife, but she was not a telegraph operator. She was a performer on the piano. James, of course, is my own name, and is what my father as well as my wife called me. But it has no significance here for various reasons which it is not worth while writing down, as it is too well known by the general public to consider it for a moment as anything but the subliminal reproduction by Mrs. S.

Mrs. S. also tells me that after the sitting she had the impression of the name Hyslop in connection with the trembling of the hand and arm which continued for a long time afterward. But at the same time that this impression came she had a stronger impression that the person who was trying to communicate was a younger person than my father would be. This would apply to a cousin and to the person from whom I would expect a message. The relationship indicated in response to my question was not that of the Mary whose name was given, and there is nothing to justify the supposition that my cousin was even trying to communicate.

March 14th, 1901. 10 a. m. I began with the pencil instead of the planchette. After six minutes' waiting I asked: "Is any one here?" There was a pause of four minutes and I repeated it and again repeated it after another pause of the same length. In a moment "Yes" was written, and I said: "Very well you may go on," and "yes" was rewritten. In both cases it was done with great difficulty. Then followed: "I know you, yes" almost illegible, and interrupted with the request to have it written more clearly. But I

interpreted it before this was attempted and asked the writer: "Where did you learn to know me?" Immediately the hand began to show excitement and continued it for some time. Then it began to write in a very scrawly style that was wholly illegible. I asked that it be repeated and the reply was equally illegible. The hand continued to shake considerably and I finally proposed using the planchette, and tried it. But the hand only shook as before, but calmed down once, only to resume the trembling again. I then tried to call up Harrison Clarke when I noticed a calm moment, but the hand only began again to tremble. I resolved to bring the sitting to a close and told Mrs. S. she might come out, and removed the planchette. Presently the hand made motions as if to write, and I placed a pencil between the fingers and some illegible words were written. I repeated the request to come out and removed the pencil. Presently the hand closed tightly as the day before and as if in distress, the arm trembling all the while. As Mrs. S. began to recover she said: "Who is this twitchy person?" I replied that she should find out who does it, and the reply was: "Feels like the clicking of the machine, what you call it, we were talking about." I asked "telegraph?" and she replied "Yes". Her hand and arm were still trembling and continued so for some time after recovery. The sitting lasted only twenty-five minutes.

March 15th, 1901. Sitting from 8:30 p. m. to 10 p. m. Automatic writing without planchette. We sat ten minutes before I asked any questions. The first query was: "Is any one here?" There was no response and it was repeated in five minutes. In reply the pencil began to move very slowly and in a few moments wrote rather distinctly, but in a fine hand, "Yes", and followed it without lifting the pencil in still finer hand, with the word "me" and some undecipherable word or words, except that the first part seems to be "man". The remainder is too uncertain even to venture a guess. It was followed, however, by a reasonably distinct capital R with some fine scrawls and possibly a capital H with further fine scrawls. I must remark, however, that the evidence of the capital R depended upon my careful watching of the pencil at the time as much or more than

upon what is clear to a reader who did not witness it. But seeing that I could not rely upon this judgment I said: "Write it a little more clearly. I did not get it." The reply was a clear enough "Hyslop" except that the capital H was not distinct. All the rest was unmistakable. But it is possible that the symbols representing this in the first attempt were an attempt to make it R. H., as the lines will bear that interpretation and this was the form of his signature frequently in the Piper case. I at once acknowledged the writing by asking the question: "Is this you father?" Apparently, as determined by watching the pencil point at the time, the answer was "Yes", followed by writing too indistinct to read. I said: "Try that last word again, please. That, I think, is very well." The word could be interpreted as a repetition of the name "Hyslop", but I prefer to leave it undecipherable. I then remarked, what was a very noticeable fact in the last and present sittings throughout, "You are writing the letters over each other." There was a slight pause and shaking of the pencil about a point, and I said: "Father, try the pass words. Be patient." This was followed by some scrawls involving superposition of the writing, and I remarked: "Don't worry about that now. Do it again." But the writing went on and only continued to superpose the letters, when I again remarked the fact to the communicator, and waited for improvement. But only scrawls with superposition followed, and I said: "Spell it out one letter at a time." Nothing but superposition continued and made the writing unintelligible. I repeated the statement: "You write all the words over each other." What followed is apparently the name "hyslop", though very scrawly and after it some unintelligible letters, as the superposition began again. I said: "You are writing the words over each other again." The next word is undecipherable, though there was an apparent effort to improve the writing, and I asked: "Is any one with you?" The answer was "Yes", though this is not at all apparent in the writing, but was read at the time by watching the pencil point and taking into account my familiarity with the writing of that word all along. I replied: "Very good. I am glad to know that." There followed this a very labored attempt at the pass sentence, given me and agreed upon in my Piper sitting of February 7th, 1900. The first word

of this, in a language which Mrs. S. does not know, seems quite clear. To encourage the writer, I said: "Try again. You got the first part." The next word would be intelligible only to one who knew it. The last word bears no resemblance to the third word in that pass sentence. It might be treated as the English for the third word, tho the planchette at the end from habit appears to make the letter "y". It was repeated, but I could not be certain of its reading, as it was no better than the previous attempt. I then remarked: "Very well rest awhile." This was followed by some scrawls with superposition. I again said: "The letters are not clear," and only scrawls came again. I indicated the fact again, but got only scrawls, and repeated the remark more emphatically, and changed the sheet.

The response was probably an attempt to write the name "Mary", as the letters most resemble this, and are much better made than before. In fact the word is either this or undecipherable. I said, by way of encouragement, "That is better." The pencil then began moving across the paper and seeing that its point was worn off I changed it for another, when it continued its movement across the page in a slightly wavy line, and in a moment wrote apparently the word "son" and after it quite clearly the word "Hyslop". I acknowledged it by saying: "Very good." Some scrawls followed, and I asked: "Can you hear me, father?" Much excitement in the hand followed this question, and after a few moments suddenly stopped, when the hand wrote quite clearly the word "Yes". I said: "Very good. I understand. Let me move the hand and pencil." An attempt at some word was begun, and before the first letter was completed the pencil stopped in its place and trembled about a point for awhile and finished the letter, or better, scrawl.

I at once determined to put the following question, and I could do so for the reason that Mrs. S. knew my wife was not living. I said: "Have you seen my wife on your side?" There was a pause, and I repeated the question, when much excitement appeared in the hand, and presently what seems to be the word "this" was written and then probably the word "Yes", as read by watching the pencil point. It can be well interpreted as this without depending upon the remark just made. Then the pencil began to move in a wavy line across the page until it reached

the edge, when I told it to wait, and placed it. But it repeated the movement, though less wavy, and after a little hesitation began to write and wrote "yes yes", and followed them by some scrawls, ending with an apparent attempt to write my wife's full name. The "Mary" is distinct. I waited for the middle name, and watching the pencil point very carefully suspected an attempt to write "Fry" confused with the word "yes". The lines as they stand, however, could best represent "pyes", and the "pyes" would be doubtful though "yes" is clear. I then asked: "Is that you, my wife?" The pencil was drawn across the page a short distance and the word "Yes" was clearly written. I asked: "Did you try to write your middle name?" Again the answer was a clear "Yes". This was followed by a scrawl, and I said: "Try it again." A moment's hesitation with the pencil remaining in a point, but trembling slightly, and then an attempt at a word followed, the letter appearing as "g" and then a clear "Yes," though written in a trembling hand. Then came "Fry" tolerably clearly with the "f" quite wavy, when I said: "That is right." and the word "Yes" was written at once, and the pencil began to move across the page in a very wavy line, and came part the way back and wrote a wavy "Yes". Probably no one else would suspect the name "Fry" in the letters. I said: "That is good." The "Yes" was repeated in a very trembling hand, and after a pause in which the hand showed considerable excitement it wrote quite clearly, but still in wavy lines, "Mary Fry James" with a short line between each word. The letters for "Fry" are not clear. The pencil then moved back and tried to write further, when I said: "That is right, wait." I changed the sheet and the hand wrote "Yes" and after it an undecipherable word or words, still in wavy lines. I said: "I cannot quite read it. Try again." The answer was: "Yes, * * [some scrawls.] Mary". [?] I asked: "Is that word 'aunt Mary'?" The reply was "Yes". I said: "Please write it again, and I shall wait." This was followed by a scrawl and apparently the letter "f", though this interpretation must not be pressed. I then said to her: "Please give the last name of 'aunt Mary'." The response was a scrawl that should be regarded as undecipherable, though in watching the pencil I could detect resemblances to the letters "f" and "y" with an

"1" between them. I repeated my request and added the words "with you". The answer was apparently an attempt to write "Hyslop", as the motions of the pencil indicated with some definiteness the syllable "Hys" or "hys", though the letters do not indicate this so clearly as the writing at the time when my eyes could detect movements that do not show themselves in the pencil marks. Without stopping the hand went on and wrote quite clearly the word "Fry", when I said "Yes." But the writing went on and the hand wrote in a very scrawly style the name "hyslop", which I had to interpret by watching the pencil in its movements, and finished it with the word "Yes." I acknowledged it with the statement: "That is right," having the full name of my wife in mind and as soon as I changed the sheet, said: "You had best rest and come again." The hand wrote a clear "Yes", drew a wavy line across the page and wrote with some clearness, though trembling a little the name "James". I said: "Very good", and repeated the advice to rest and said goodbye. The hand began to shake a little and soon the pencil fell over to one side and I removed it. The hand again shook for a little while and stretched itself out slightly, showing a more limp condition of the muscles. Presently Mrs. S. slid down a little in her chair as if relaxing the muscular tonicity of the whole body. In a few minutes she recovered consciousness, and the first thing she said was that she felt as if some one had put something cold on her forehead. I had not touched it. She rubbed it and repeated the statement. She remarked the same fact when she came down to breakfast the next morning on which day these notes were copied.

This sitting makes the names in one or two of the others apparently significant. Mary Fry were the Christian names of my wife, and James was what she always called me. Mrs. S. of course, knew that she was not living. I felt obliged to evade concealment of the fact no longer after the first experiment. But I told Mrs. S. no names whatever and was careful always, and that but twice in alluding to her, not to use the name Mary. I spoke of her as "Mrs. Hyslop". After the writing of "Mary" in the sitting of March 13th, I once used it purposely in her presence. The next sitting, as the record shows, was a failure. I should also remark that when I used the name I was not

speaking to Mrs. S., but to my housekeeper, and Mrs. S. was attending to her little boy at the table. But at no time did she have any opportunity to ascertain my wife's middle name, except by directly asking for it which she did not do either of myself or of my housekeeper. Two of my children, eight and five years, knew their mother's full name, and affirm that no one ever asked them what their mother's name was, and make the same definite affirmation of Mrs. S. I do not lay any stress on this fact, more than to indicate that I am quite conscious that the public must assume the possibility of all sorts of fraud and I must assume it also. Moreover, I do not mention the fact because I have any suspicions of my own, as Mrs. S. is to be trusted implicitly and accepts more than gladly the conditions under which the experiments are conducted. She is not allowed to know the contents of the writing and the originals are always copied out of her sight and presence, and are locked up when I am not working with them in an iron box, of which I alone have the key, which I carry always in my pocket.

My question regarding my wife's aunt and her last name was apparently misunderstood and ignored, and interpreted to be a request for her own last name, which was finally given in the confused manner indicated.

But the incident that is proof against all suspicion is the first word in the pass sentence of my father. I should have the whole before I lay any stress upon it, but no one except Dr. Hodgson and myself know that sentence, and I have it sealed with exceptional care and locked away out of the reach of any one in a safe to which no one has access but myself.

I need to remark but one thing more. The whole *modus operandi* of the writing exhibits many of the physiological characteristics of the Piper phenomena. The action of the hand in the act of writing, and the time and circumstances of its excitement showed the same fitness and adjustment to the occasion as I remark of Mrs. Piper's case in my Report.

March 16th, 1901. Sat. from 8 p. m. to 9:45 p. m. Automatic writing. The coming on of the trance lasted eighteen minutes before any motion of the pencil was observed. During the period I asked whether any one was present three times.

When the writing began there were a few scrawls and the name James Hyslop was written. While the word "James" was being written I asked that it be written more clearly, as I could not read it. But as soon as the two words were finished I saw what it was and acknowledged it by saying: "Yes, all right". Then the word "Mary" was written, but I did not read it at once and asked that it be rewritten. The answer "Yes" was given and then the name "Hyslop" written in so scrawly a style that I could read it only by following the point of the pencil. I said: "Wait a moment and let me move the hand." Some excitement followed, and in a few moments "Yes, Mary * * [undec.] Hyslop" was written in a very wavy manner. I acknowledged it by saying: "That's right, Mary, very good." The words: "Yes, Mary" were written again, and as the pencil began to run up over the writing I called to wait a moment and moved the hand. There was a pause after trying to write further, ending only in something unintelligible, when I said: "Be calm and patient. It will come." The answer was, if I read it rightly, "Yes, I am waiting." I changed the sheet and the word "Yes" was first written, followed by what appears to be scrawls, involving four attempts to write something which I could not read. I asked to have it rewritten after the fourth time. It was rewritten in a wavy style, but I could not read it and repeated my request, when it was written again, and by this time I thought it was meant for "George", and said: "Oh, I think I know what it is. Is it one of the children?" A scrawly "yes" was the reply, but decipherable at the time only by watching the pencil. Immediately the name "Mary" was written again with something undecipherable after it, but I did not read any of it and asked that it be rewritten. The answer was very uncertain, but I suspected the name "Winifred", and asked if it was so. The answer was "Mary" followed by scrawls that I could not read. In the midst of it, however, my suspicion was strengthened and I said: "Very good" and as soon as the word "Mary" was written quite plainly, but in a wavering manner, I asked: "Did you write Mary Winifred?" and received the reply "Yes." I said "Very good. I understand." Then immediately the word "Baby" was written. I first thought it an attempt to write the

name of the youngest child, ou. saw in a minute that it was what I have indicated, and I said: "Yes, I think I understand." The word "Yes" was written when I asked that it be written again and slowly. The word "Baby" was then very clearly written, except the capital B. I acknowledged it by saying: "That is very good, Mary. What was the middle name?" and a very scrawly "Fry" was written. I said: "Yes, that is right" and told her to say what she pleased now and said that I would wait. Then came a scrawl and I had to call to wait, when a word was written which I could not and cannot decipher. It was followed by another word that appeared undecipherable at the time, but which seems to be an attempt at the word "mamma", but written with one "m", and then an unintelligible word, though the letters seem well defined. I suspected another reference, however, and asked if she said "aunt Mary". A scrawl was the answer and then an attempt to improve the case. I changed the sheet and the word "mama" was clearly written, and I asked: "Is that word Mamma?" The answer at first was accompanied by considerable excitement in the hand resulting in a wavy line being drawn of some length, and I said: "Be calm" when a scrawl was written and after it the word "Yes". I asked for the name of her mother, but the answer was undecipherable. The letters might indicate to one who knew the name that it was a poor attempt at Isabel. This was the name of her mother. The letter "b" is possibly plain, and the next is "a" or "e" and a possible attempt at "l", but doubtful, too doubtful for tolerance, and then apparently the word "yes" was immediately written with a scrawl, from movement of pencil, possibly an attempt at "Fry", and the writing became very wavy, so much so that I said: "Rest awhile." But the name "Mary" was apparently attempted in wavy letters and after much difficulty in starting. There was then a pause, and in a moment Mrs. S.'s arm, upon which she was resting her head, fell, and she leaned her head against the back of the chair. Her body seemed quite limp. Her hand was certainly so. She remained thus for ten minutes before the hand showed any signs of motion.

The writing began again by the pencil moving across the page, and writing some scrawls in fine letters which I could not read, and ended in a pause with the pencil moving about a point.

I said: "Wait, try again." The attempt was renewed, and possibly was intended for the name "George", as it resembles in this and in the previous case the word for "George" written before, who was my little boy. I asked that the letters be made larger, and the attempt only resulted in a scrawl, and I said "Wait", and moved the pencil. The writing then became more definite, and the word might be an attempt at the name "Washington", which was the middle name of my wife's father, George being the first, though this interpretation would hardly be suspected by any one else than myself. In fact, the only thing suggesting this attempt is the appearance of "George" just before it. When it was completed I said: "Can't quite read it." The word was repeated, but with no more clearness than before. It might be the letters "Washington", the intermediate signs being too doubtful to conjecture. Then another word was written which I read "Jenny" and asked if it was this, while the hand was beginning another word, the letter "n" being written. The hand finished with the word "Yes", and at once showed embarrassment and confusion, making a stronger line in wavy movements. I said: "Keep calm", and there followed a pause of some six or seven minutes, when it began to move again.

I asked: "Is my father here?" There was no response for two minutes, and then the hand began to move. I asked: "Are you back Mary, and the answer was "Yes", which was written in much excitement, and I said: "Very good". The word "Yes" was then written more clearly, and I repeated my acknowledgment, and changed the sheet. The first word written was "your" followed by "f" and two doubtful signs, and a wavy line. Then the letter "y", a line, and quite distinctly the word "Father". I said: "Very good father. You hear me." The answer was some excitement and shaking of the pencil about a point, when I explained the failure to get the pass sentence completely the previous sitting, and asked that it be given clearly. The response was a few scrawls at first, then a wavy line and a definite effort to write clearly, the lines being made heavier. I suppose the scrawls could be interpreted as an effort to write the first word of that sentence, but I am not inclined to regard it as definite enough to form that conclusion, especially as the continued efforts only made it more certain that the experiment

was a failure. I complained that this first effort was superposition, that he was writing the letters over each other. More scrawls worse than ever followed, and I requested that it be written in large letters. The writing became more distinct, at least in the formation of the lines and separation of the letters, but it required much stretching to suppose that there was any success, though the sentence might show traces of the first and the last word in the pass sentence, with the second word totally illegible or false. I said: "I can't read it. Try again." The reply was more illegible than before, and not only shows no traces of what I wanted, but suggests suspicions of all possible interpretations in the previous efforts of this sitting. I then asked: "What did I ask for? Let us be clear in our understanding of it." A scrawly letter "p" was first written, followed by another scrawly "p" and possibly a letter "s", and this by a clearly written example of "word". I said: "Right", as I read aloud what had been written, and asked him to write the pass words slowly and clearly. I can detect no resemblance in the answer to what I wanted. It was more scrawly than ever, and I asked what language the pass sentence was in, and received an answer that is uncertain. The signs might be made a clear effort at the first part of the word "remember" finished in a scrawly and wavy line. It may be a clear "rem" with the beginning of "n" or "m" before the writing ended in a pause and shaking of the pencil about a point just preceding the finishing in a scrawly line. It was repeated on the next sheet where the word looks more like "memory", but this is more than doubtful to me. I said on seeing the difficulty: "Never mind: try the first word." The scrawl that follows has no semblance to the word I wanted, and thinking that I had better bring the sitting to a close I asked if he could take a message to Dr. Hodgson, explaining when Dr. Hodgson was to be present, namely, on the day following the Sabbath, using Rector's and Imperator's lingo. The present sitting was on Saturday night. The reply was "Yes" quite clearly written though the letters were shaky. I then gave the message, which consisted of the two words, and to say that my wife was with him on his side. I repeated the message, spelling out the two words mentioned, and asking if he heard and understood. The reply was

"Yes", written in a very scrawly style though clearly defined. I remarked: "All right. Now we will stop as the light must be nearly gone." The hand stopped writing and the pencil soon showed evidences of relaxation in the muscles and in about ten minutes Mrs. S. came easily out of the trance, but with a headache which soon disappeared, and with a feeling of drowsiness that would not leave. She thought she would soon go to sleep when she retired which she did immediately. But she passed a rather sleepless night until two o'clock, having been bothered for some time at first with the consciousness of some one trying to tell her a few words. She could not remember what the words were when she wakened.

I cannot attach any evidential value to this sitting for any view except for secondary personality, simply because Mrs. S. is staying in my house and knows the names of the children. She has met my father-in-law, but knew nothing about his Christian name. This, however, has no importance in the absence of any or sufficient assurance that "George Washington" was the name intended in the sitting where I have supposed it possible. As to the names of the children Mrs. S. did not know the full names of any of them, having heard only those which are used about the house. She carefully refrained from asking any questions about them, and only the accusation of dishonesty can throw any suspicion on the evidential feature of this part of the sitting. In this connection it will be interesting to note that George is always called by his first name and Mary Winifred by her second, and when I endeavored to recognize it as Winifred, conjecturing from the previous mention of George, that it was she that was meant, I was corrected and the "Mary" written first and I could then see that it had been written so before. When "baby" was written I knew that her first name would be known by Mrs. S. and that her middle name would not be known except by special inquiry. Hence I asked for that and got it, though the interpretation had to be determined more by the movement of the pencil than from the appearance of the writing afterward. But the maiden name of my wife's mother was wholly unknown, also her death, to Mrs. S. Perhaps this might have been subliminally guessed from the giving of the

middle name of Mrs. Hyslop and my recognition that it was right.

On the whole the sitting was not so good as the previous one, and this in two respects. First the names given were not evidential as they would have been if Mrs. S. had not been at my home. Second, the writing was less distinct and its interpretation lends itself much more to illusion. But the important difficulty was the failure of my father to give the pass word. In fact I could detect some of the evidences of shuffling that characterised the conduct of Harrison Clarke, though this evidence appears only in the evident failure to come as nearly to the pass word as before.

March 18th, 1901. Sat from 7:45 to 9 p. m. No signs of the trance appeared for ten minutes. As soon, however, as I observed indications of writing by the pencil I knocked on the door for the admission of a friend whom I had asked to be present. This seems to have interrupted the writing as it did not begin again for nine minutes, and then in response to the statement "You may write." The first word is possibly a scrawly attempt to write the name "Mary" followed by a clear enough "you" and after this an undecipherable word, unless the last part of it is "writes". Immediately and without interruption, as I would not disturb the writing until I had reason to suppose certainly what was written, the hand wrote "Mary" and I recognised it *in thought*, when the word "yes" was written, and I then asked: "Is this you 'Mary'?" The reply was again "Yes, it" and some scrawls that I could not read. I said: "Wait. You are writing the words over each other. Try that word again." The first part of the response is undecipherable, and then the words "wait ... [scrawl.] soon will soon" and scrawls again followed by "our are, yes, your", and as determined by watching the motion of the pencil an apparent attempt to write "father", though this would not be suspected from the result.

On the next sheet the word 'mother' was clearly written, and I said, "very well", and "Mary yes rs" was written, and a scrawly line drawn, when I said: "Well mother, what was your

middle name?" At once there was some excitement in the hand, as if attempting to write but it could not. All at once it occurred to me that the juxtaposition of the words "mother" and "Mary" indicated that the intention was to refer to my wife's mother whose name had been given previously, and I exclaimed: "Oh, you mean it was Mary's mother." The excitement in the hand increased and a wavy "yes" was written. I then said: "Write what you wish to say." The first attempt to answer is undecipherable, followed by an apparent effort to write "remember" as there is a tolerably clear "rember" (cf. p. 479), and possibly an attempt to repeat it more completely with the word "yes". I remarked: "I can't read it." Then the hand wrote quite clearly, but in a wavy style, "renember yes". The sheet was changed and a scrawl was written resembling some word, but not clearly enough to venture any interpretation, and was followed by "it will sometime", with the first line of the "n" written over the "i". I read aloud: "It will soon?" and the answer written quite clearly was "No", and "sone" was written. I read aloud again: "It will come?" looking at the first case and the answer was again, "no". I thought of "some" and was trying to decipher the rest of the writing when the letter "s" was written, and I at once said aloud: "It will some time?", and the answer was a clear and emphatic "yes", written with some difficulty and apparent excitement. I asked: "Who writes this?" and the answer, though written over and over again in response to my statement that I could not read it, is undecipherable, unless it is an attempt to say that "Mary is writing". There is some trace of this, but not enough to be assured of it. But it ends with a scrawly "will some" ———. I said: "I can't read", and apparently the letter "y" was written twice, and following it a word that I could not read, but I asked: "Is that robe"? after the words "my yes" were written, and the reply was a clear "no". The word was rewritten more distinctly, but owing to the first letter or letters I did not suspect what it was until after some unintelligible scrawls were written and then the pencil stopped writing altogether and the head began to fall back on the chair and the hand which was over her eyes and resting on her elbow fell down on the table. I arranged her head in a restful position and then saw that the word was a

clear effort at "trouble" with the ambiguity about the letters "tr" and "le". She remained in a passive condition for ten minutes, and I resolved to stop the sitting, which I did by telling her so, and to wake up. She was the usual length of time recovering normal consciousness, some ten or fifteen minutes.

I must remark two things by way of comment. The first is that after Mrs. S. retired she had some difficulty in getting to sleep owing to a tendency of her arm to tremble, which it had not shown during the sitting. Before she sat down for the experiment she remarked that she did not feel in good condition, as she had a bad cold. This morning she remarked that she was nearly sick with it when she sat down and that her lungs were almost stopped up with it. Her cold was much worse this morning, and she could hardly speak. As she began to come out of the trance she said she felt choked.

Before this sitting I had talked to her quite freely about what had been said by the trance personalities of the Piper case in regard to her own mediumship, taking care not to put it in too discouraging a manner and to say that they thought it might develop in time. I wanted to see if I could find any traces of this on her subliminal mentation and writing. Whether the allusion to "it will some time" is a reflection of this I cannot say positively, but it is consistent with that supposition. But the sitting was wholly a failure in all other respects. There is no evidence in it of anything except to repeat something delivered in the previous sitting. There is apparently a recognition of physical difficulties in the way of success, as the word "trouble" seems to imply. But nothing else. The writing at times appeared to indicate a tendency to become less scrawly, even when it was undecipherable.

Not much can be inferred from the results of my sittings. They must be set down either as failures or as unimportant, as judged from the standpoint of the outside observer. I have intimated in my general notes why the success in getting certain names will not appear important to the reader who admits the possibility that the information might have been obtained by inquiries. Knowing all the circumstances in the case I cannot personally indulge in the same scepticism on the point. While it was possible to obtain this information by inquiry of the

members of my household I am confident that there is not good reason for suspecting it to have been a fact, though admitting also that I cannot appeal to the names obtained as indicating objectively what we desire in so important a matter. I must say also that I think the force of scepticism lies in another direction altogether, and does not affect Mrs. S., but myself. The writing was so poor and scrawly that the interpretation is liable to the accusation that it was an illusion of apperception on my part. I have indicated this by the nature of my notes. In some cases I did not recognize the writing until I suspected who was meant by it. In others, when recognized, one who did not previously know the name supposed to be meant would have difficulty in admitting that it was free from suspicion as to its integrity. The repetitions help to remove the doubt on this point, but in spite of all apologies of this sort there remains the fact that any one else would see serious difficulties in the reading that I gave of the writing. If there were any certitude that the name of my wife's mother was actually given, and also that of her father, I could speak more favorably of the whole series of names, as I can be very certain that no one about the house could in any way know the maiden name of my wife's mother, I alone knowing it and not certain even of this until I looked it up afterward. But I am myself extremely doubtful about the writing being fairly interpretable as referring to her. A stranger who did not know the name would not suspect the resemblance. The name "Fry" was repeated often enough to make the claims of the supernormal more plausible, whether we choose to regard it as telepathic or spiritistic. But taking the whole series of sittings together I am not disposed to attach any weight to the evidence, as it is too complicated with confusion to speak of its contents as confidently as the evidential problem requires.

There is an interesting incident that confirms this conclusion if we can attach any weight to the incident itself. One of my objects in the experiments was to have the trance personalities in the Piper case try their powers on the fitness of Mrs. S. for mediumistic phenomena. Dr. Hodgson and I therefore arranged to have our sittings simultaneous, and to try communication with each other, and then to have an estimate made of my case

These arrangements were carried out. I was not successful, however, in getting any message through, having heard nothing whatever of the attempt made at the sitting of March 16th. I had intended to try it at the sitting of March 12th, but saw from the difficulties of getting even automatic writing that it was useless. But near the close of the sitting with Mrs. Piper on that date, March 12th, at Arlington Heights, simultaneous with my sitting and about 11:30 or 12 o'clock Dr. Hodgson told Rector, the control in Mrs. Piper's case, what I was doing, and intimated what was wanted of him. He went on to finish the sitting and after he had closed it with the usual form of statement it appeared as if he suddenly recollected an important point, and there was written out in a very strong hand the message: "Remember _____ Hyslop." I omit purposely the pass sentence that had been agreed upon between my father and myself on February 7th, 1900 at a sitting with Mrs. Piper. On the next day, March 13th, Rector took up a part of the sitting at which Dr. Hodgson was present with Mrs. Piper discussing the case of Mrs. S. I report it as given, with the omission of references to other cases not affecting mine.

"Friend in looking over the light in the distance with friend Hyslop there is little indeed to be said by us concerning it, or the antecedents therein.....therein...exercised by the so-called light. We see little, and only little. It is really not worth recording, *i. e.*, the genuineness of it. (You mean that there is little real light, but not much.) Yes, have we not so expressed it, in different words, perhaps? (Is there enough for you to send any message there?) No, there is not. (Then is it worth our spending any more time about it here now?) [Hand listens to invisible.] (Have you any advice to give?) Yes, and hast thou an article of his, Hyslop's friend? (No.)

We will for absolute surety send Prudens there at once and see precisely what the conditions are while the meeting is going on. We ask thee to ask him to be wary. The so-called light as seen by us is not a light given from our world at all, but the conditions are deceptive and fanciful.

(Then, do you see whether the deception is on the part of the supraliminal consciousness, or is it due to the subliminal or understratum?) Subliminal and not supraliminal. And therefore the subject is not consciously deceiving, but a few suggestions from the experimenter would soon determine in his mind the conditions as

herein described. It would be infinitely wiser to suggest to the subject that the statements, visions, etc., were due to the hidden consciousness, and were being produced through the condition known as *thought transference*.

(She has, I understand from you, a capacity for receiving impressions to some extent telepathically from incarnate persons.)

Yes and not discarnate. This explains absolutely the conditions there represented. [Hand then thumps the table once, then points to invisible.]

Prudens. The statements by the spirit registering are correct. (You mean by Rector?) Yes, I do. Prudens.

We can point out numerous cases similar. (It is quite frequent do you find?) Yes, in our long search for other lights than the one through which we now operate we find this unfortunately to be the case. (Do you in such cases see a light?) Not in all such, but with an exceptional few.

(Do you mean a light that cannot be used by discarnate spirits?) No, but a light which if rightly developed and understood could be used at times by discarnate spirits."

This record which is here abbreviated is printed in complete detail in the *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vol. IV, pp. 446-454 with notes explaining the influence of Mrs. Piper's subconscious prejudices on the results.

Some further statements were made about other cases, comparing them with my own, and they ended with the sentence: "There is in the person with Hyslop a light but not a deceptive one."

I have given this account free from some of the confusions that occurred in the original, and also very much abbreviated, omitting, however, only those portions pertaining to cases not connected with the present experiments and the conversation that took place between Dr. Hodgson and Rector about certain misunderstandings between them. I have given all that will throw any light upon the view that the trance personalities in the Piper case take regarding the subject of my experiment. The reader may form his own opinion respecting them. The following facts however will help in the interpretation of the relevance and importance of these statements.

(1) It has been already seen that my own experiments were practical failures, unless we choose to admit telepathy into the case to account for the coincidences. This would confirm the

judgment of the trance personalities as regards thought transference in my case. (2) The record in Chapter II indicates with sufficient clearness the possibility of subjective visions. (3) The general verdict of Rector coincides with the conditions as I should most naturally describe them from this side at the time, whatever we may think of them at other times. (4) The evident indications of secondary personality in the Martian matter and other incidents seem to justify the verdict of Rector regarding the influence of the subliminal. (5) The acute advice to try suggestion through the normal consciousness or supraliminal indicate precisely the experiment which I have been trying all along, though in an indirect way. I could not do it directly. I shall explain in the conclusion the way in which this was done.

On March 19th I gave a crystal ball to Mrs. S. for experiment. At first it produced no effect, but it was not long before she could see faces. The first thing noticed was a reflection of her own face in the crystal, but this presently developed into the face of some one else. She could not recognize any face that thus appeared. In a short time she could see her own double beside the reflected image of her own face. This double repeated itself in several attempts at experiment, and once a face appeared as if that of a dead person, as it was very pale.

In the evening the experiment was repeated and this time she could see various things besides faces. Landscapes, a railway track, etc. were seen, but nothing recognizable and nothing suggesting the supernatural.

An interval of some days elapsed before any further sittings were held and these were held after Mrs. S. returned to her home. She was too ill from the "Grippe" to continue them here and she had to recover her normal health before any more attempts were made. The first was held on April 3rd. The planchette was used and Mr. S. reports that Mrs. S. was quite conscious during it. The following is the result:

April 3rd, 1901. " (Is there a spirit present?) Yes. (Who is it?) Mar (?). (Will you tell me who you are?) Mr. (?), yes. (If you are a spirit will you write yes?) Yes. (Go on. Please tell me who you are?) [The hand began to tremble.] Mrs. [scrawl.] (Please write the last name.) Hys (Please write the last name.) [Hand and arm trembled some.] Hyslop. (Will you write your

first name?) [scrawls.] [I asked Mrs. S. if she knew who was writing and she said she did not. The hand trembled and no reply was made.] (You may go on. Write what you please.) [Some scrawls resembling 'Mr.' or 'Mrs.', and then lines across the page.] (Is the same person here now that was here?) No. (Who is here now?) [No reply.] (Will you write your name?) No. (Do you understand that I wish you to write your name?) [No reply.] (Go on as you please.) [Answer undecipherable. One word may be 'yes', but the rest is unintelligible. Looks like the name Weis.] (I don't understand. Write it again.) [There is an apparent attempt to repeat the previous writing which was undecipherable, but it is still unintelligible. The last word might be 'mar'.] [Mrs. S. was here given a rest for a little while and then the writing began with the following suggestion.] (Go on as you please.) [This was followed by a lot of circular scrawls in the form of loops which terminated with the word 'Hyslop'.] (Will you please write it again?) [Circular scrawl] H [circular scrawl] Y [circular scrawl] S [circular scrawl] L [circular scrawl] O [circular scrawl] P [circular scrawl] P. (I asked him to repeat the last. The answer was) [circular scrawl] R [circular scrawl] O [circular scrawl] B [circular scrawl] E [circular scrawl] R [circular scrawl] T. (Have I the letters right?) [No reply and the sitting ended.] "

Mrs. S. reports the following vision or apparition during the writing of the planchette. "While the machine was writing I saw a man standing by the door with a mask over half his face. As I watched it the mask seemed to pass away. The head was rather broad across the forehead and there were chin and side whiskers, and no hair on the top of his head. There was quite a little on the sides of the head. The eyes were rather large and dark, and the nose quite prominent."

Asked by Mr. S. as to her opinion of the sitting Mrs. S. expressed herself very emphatically as follows: "I feel very positive that no spirits were here writing. I am sure that I did not write these things that appeared. I think that they were due to unconscious movements of the arm. I cannot think that Mr. Hyslop could not write his name without making those scrawls."

The apparition seen during the writing has some interest in this connection. In some of its features it is a description of my father, or near enough to suggest him. But the interesting part of it is the fact that a picture of my father hung in my

room while Mrs. S. was in New York. He was the center of a group representing himself and us children when we were quite young. Mrs. S. undoubtedly saw the picture, but was neither told what it was nor asked to know. The only natural inference possible for any one who saw it would be to suppose that it was my father, as it was the only photograph in the room except one other group not mentioned. Mrs. S. also has shown herself all along to be very keen at inference and suspicion, and where scientific purposes are not to be kept secret, inquiries whether her suspicion is correct or not would be easy and the answer trustworthy, if there were any propriety in doing so. We can suppose, therefore, that the apparition is the result of subliminal action based upon her suspicions when at my home.

I am not inclined, however, to interpret the vision in this way. There is not reason enough to suppose that it represented my father. Two facts are rather fatal to this supposition. My father's head was not broad at the forehead and his eyes were not large nor dark. His head was unusually narrow at the forehead, his eyes small and of a bluish gray tint. The other features described were applicable enough to him, but are poor evidence to make any decision upon for identity. I have tolerated the possibility of its representing him for two purposes. First, it is a good illustration of apparitions that people have the habit of recognising as representing a given person when the evidence of identity is worthless. Secondly, it enables me to produce a possible explanation in the supposition of subliminal personation arising out of a possible thought whose occurrence can hardly be doubted. In spite of all this, however, I am inclined to think that it is a pure fabrication of the subliminal and not the reproduction of any past thought with reference to my father. The writing of the name has no significance, and Mrs. S. not only has had abundant opportunity to know it, but it was deliberately given her while in the trance in January (p. 246).

As indication of secondary personality and even its delicate mental operations it is interesting to note that this occurs immediately following the visit to New York and simply takes up the mental thread left off there. Even the scrawly writing and confusion are examples of this continuity. The circular loops may be treated as subliminal badinage. They are like the line

drawn by Harrison Clarke to represent marching at the last sittings of my series in January (p. 250).

April 4th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. The first communicator a Miss Thompson and the next apparently my father.

" (Is there a spirit here?) Yes. (Go on.) Revere Beach. (Is it Revere Beach?) [I thought that it might be the Rev. Jno. W. Beach, a minister that I knew very well. He was a very old man when I last saw him and I thought that perhaps he was dead and was writing. The idea of Revere Beach was far from my thoughts.] Revere, Yes. (Go on, write as you please.) Thomas. (What is the last name?) that is ['t's' crossed and 'i' dotted.] (Please write what you last wrote again. I cannot see it very plainly.) that is ['t's' crossed and 'i' dotted again.] (Please write your first name.) Miss ['i' dotted.] (What is the name after the 'Miss'?) [This question was intended to have the name completed as nothing had been written after 'Miss'. No reply was given.] (Go on, write as you wish.) revere Beach miss Thompson. [The letter 'm' was written before and immediately connected with 'revere'.] (Is Miss Thompson your correct name?) Yes. (All right. Go on as you wish.) Tell papa— (Did you write 'tell papa'?) Yes. (Who is papa?) No. (Don't you want to tell me?) Yes. (Go on. Explain please. You said 'Tell papa'. What do you mean?) You found me. (All right, go on. Is Lillian your first name?) [I thought of a Miss Lillian Thompson that I knew. She was not dead as far as I knew. She was in good health last summer. Yet I did not know but that she might have died. I never knew that she had anything to do with Revere Beach. There was no answer to my question, and we were interrupted at this point by callers and the sitting was postponed for an hour and a half.] "

Mrs. S. adds the following note to this sitting. "About 'Miss Thompson of Revere Beach' I wish to say that I do not know of any person living there and never did. I never had any correspondence with any one living there. I never visited the place but once and that was in the summer of 1885 when with a party of friends we went for a ride and only remained for about an hour or two at the longest. I did not meet any one there while there that I knew. We sat down for a short time, then walked along the beach to Crescent Beach and then took the

train for home. During this time I did not leave the party and no others joined the company there."

Mr. S. adds for himself: "I know of no one connected with Revere Beach and never did." [Copied April 11th, 1901.]

At ten minutes of 9 p. m. the sitting was resumed and the communicator purported to be my father. There was nothing but repetition of attempts to give his name, after it had been written quite clearly once.

"Show me * * , [followed by the loops of the previous date and apparently the letters 'rnbarn' and two letters that are undecipherable.] (Go on.) remember Robert Hyslop. (Is this Robert Hyslop?) [Hand began to tremble.] Yes." This was followed by a line and apparently the letter 'u', and then the pencil continued in a line with marks in it indicating several pauses. This was followed by unintelligible scrawls which began the writing after the substitution of the pencil for the planchette. From this point on the time was taken up in attempts to write something which is not clearly intelligible, except that it is undoubtedly *not* an attempt to give the pass sentence. The first thing apparently intelligible is either 'Slesoen' or 'Hesoen'. The questions were simply requests to write more clearly or inquiries to know who was writing. This caused the repetitions probably. After writing something like 'HoHrslop' the word became 'Heslow', written twice, and then 'Heslop' followed by 'Heslow' again. This was repeated until the close of the sitting and this was six times, with only slight variations.

There is nothing for comment in the sitting except the indications of secondary personality. The words are too unintelligible in all but two or three instances to consider them as having any definite meaning for intentions of any reasonable sort. There is only the paucity of knowledge exhibited that must evidently be the case regarding my father where nothing has been asked for by her and nothing imparted to Mrs. S.

April 5th, 1901. Planchette work. Mrs. S. conscious. "(Are there any spirits present?) [Answer was a pause of about ten minutes, followed by scrawls.] (Who is here?) Me [followed by some undecipherable letters.] (Write the second answer again.) Me [followed by scrawls in loop form repeated over and over again until

the page was filled, in response to the request to have the writing of the second question done again.]

(Please write your name plainly.) [Large scrawls though they represent lines definitely drawn, most of them in the shape of the figure 8 lying on its side, and then suddenly followed by the clear writing of the name George.] (What is the last name?) [The last mentioned scrawls again covered another page and in the midst of them was written clearly the name Smead.]

(Is your last name Smead?) [A few lines drawn across the page and then:] Yes. [Followed by serpentine scrawls.] (Will you tell me more about yourself?) [Lines drawn again across the page, some straight and some curved.] (What does that mean?) [Between two of them written:] Mines. (Do you mean 'mines'?) Yes. (Go on.) He knows.

[The next question was a mental one, not asked aloud.] (Does it refer to some one killed in the mines?) Yes. [Mental question asked.] (Are you sure?) Yes. (Go on.) [There was then drawn some lines across the page representing apparently something like a triangle, though not intended for this. In it near the base was drawn a pocket-like figure and two lines connecting it with the edge, or surface of the larger figure. Then:] He will know. [Another mental question.] (Who? My father?) Yes. [Mental question again.] (Are you sure?) Yes. [Then aloud.] (Who will know? Will you write his name?) Joseph. [Another mental question.] (Joseph Smead?) Yes. (Joseph Who?) * * [undecipherable.] Brother. [Another mental question.] (My father?) Yes. (Whom do you mean? My father, Joseph Smead?) Yes. (Go on.) [Scrawls like two figures 8, and then:] Sylvester, Calvin, George. (Go on.) [A serpentine line drawn across the page and under it a straight line, and between them the word: 'father'.] [Mental question.] (My father's father?) Yes. (That is what you mean, is it?) Yes, Samuel.

(Go on.) Tell Joseph father tried (?) — [Mental question.] (You wish me to tell my father.) Yes. (Go on.) Sylvester — [Mental question.] (My brother?) Yes, Billy. (Is my brother Sylvester here?) Yes.

[At this point I had used all the paper I had on the table and I asked 'Can I get some paper?'] No. (Go on.) We are busy. (All right. I will try to manage it.) Yes, tell father we all came tonight and send our love to him and mother. (I will.) Yes. (Go on.) Good night. (Is there a spirit here now?) [No answer. Séance stopped after lasting an hour and ten minutes.] "

In regard to this sitting Mrs. S. wrote immediately after it the following account of her knowledge and ignorance in respect to the matters concerned.

"All I know of what was written tonight was that some one by the name of George was present, and then that the name Smead was written. I do not know any one besides our little boy George that bears the name in the Smead family, and never did, he being named for my own brother George S. Robertson. The machine made a lot of lines. What they were I do not know. Then after that I did not know what was written, but Mr. S. asked if it was his father, Joseph Smead, that was meant, and I do not know what it wrote in reply, except that Sylvester said he was present. I felt that Sylvester was present, but who else I cannot tell."

Mr. S. adds some remarks of his own regarding the sitting. "I noticed", he says, "that there was no trembling of the hand or arm as in the case when Mr. and Mrs. Hyslop claimed to communicate. I noticed also that the communicators who tried to control the machine seemed obliged to make several scrawls before they could write. It looked as if they were practising. They were all new communicators unless we except my brother Sylvester. Who the George Smead is or can be I cannot imagine. I do not know any of my father's people by that name that can be dead."

"The reason that there were so many mental questions was that I could not help asking them. I would observe something written, and I would ask at once involuntarily the mental question and as soon as it was asked the answer would be written at once and then the machine would continue writing. I did not have time to write down the question, but could remember them afterward and inserted them accordingly."

In order to be conclusive the mental questions should have been of a sort whose answers were other than 'Yes' and 'No'. This may be tested in future experiments, but no importance can be attached to such as appear in this sitting. There is, however, an interesting suggestion regarding the rich adaptability of the subliminal in the absence of a trembling hand when the "communicators" are not my father and wife. The repetition of that trembling which was associated with their personalities at my home some weeks before, when they purported to appear at her own home, is a significant fact that in the estimation of the delicate subliminal machinery involved. While it may not prove

much if anything for secondary personality it is certainly the very phenomenon that we should expect on that hypothesis.

April 9th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious, but tired. Much confusion and incoherence in the writing.

"I began", Mr. S. says, "by talking about Harrison Clarke, saying that I was somewhat sorry that I had sent him away so roughly, and invited him to write if he were present. The planchette at once began to write, and I supposed that our old friend had returned, but I was mistaken."

"In reply to my question about Harrison Clarke the planchette wrote a word that is undecipherable. It might be a rough attempt at 'history', or as conjectured at the time a rougher attempt at 'platers'. [I think the more probable attempt is 'histor'. J. H. H.] I made a figure 2 and drew a line to indicate where my second question, 'Go on', was to be inserted, the line crossing the word written, when the planchette at once erased the figure 2 and the line indicating that the line ought not to be there. I recognized the meaning and asked:] (Is that correct?) Yes. (Explain.) It historian—is a— [The pencil came back to the space between 'It' and 'historian', and wrote 'is a' between them, and in a vertical direction, so that the sentence would read 'It is a historian'.]

"(Explain.) Read it, yes. (Write it again.) Yes, it was a historian that wrote his name, that could not write more, but I am not him. (Who do you mean is a historian?) I as ['I as' erased] I am said to be Plato, but I am not. (Who are you?) Will that do? (No, kindly tell me who you were on earth?) Not at present. (Were you a philosopher when you lived here?) No. (Tell me more about yourself.) Platow (?) Rosstor * * [undec.] is he to * * [undec.] Essie (?) is she * * [undec.] do try him, yes. (Can I read it?) Yes. (Will you write?) Platowe Rosstoln [last word uncertain.] (What is the first letter in the second word?) [small letter 'r' written twice.] (Is that 'P' in first word?) looks that way to us. (I cannot understand that word 'Platowe'. Write it again, please.) No, Platoar, yes, ar. Platers. (?) (Will you write the last word plainly?) Rossiter, yes. (Tell us the meaning of all this mixture of words.) [The answer to this question though it occupies a page is wholly undecipherable. The word 'yes' is apparent, and also the word 'fault', and after this last possibly 'look as if yu'. But nothing intelligible is ascertainable.]"

This is a most interesting sitting when we come to know the incidents that gave rise to the contents recorded. They show

undoubted evidence of secondary personality. The first of the incidents refers to the mention of a historian. It originated as follows.

Some time ago a sitting was held and the results seemed to Mr. S. so worthless that he tore up the sheets and threw them away. As a result of this present sitting and an experience of Mrs. S. to be narrated immediately he looked up the fragments and sent me one of them pieced together. On it he had written at the time the name of Charles N. Weir as the interpretation of the name of the communicator. There is no date fixed to the paper, and Mr. S. cannot remember exactly when it occurred. But Mrs. S. narrates the following experience that took place on the afternoon of the day on which the present sitting occurred. I give her own story.

"A while ago there was a person that tried to write his name, but had a very hard time doing it. The name proved to be Charles N. Weir or Weis. He wished very much to give some kind of a message, but could not write anything that was readable, so we paid no more attention to it.

"But on April 9th I was looking through some books for the letter that I know Mrs. Janes wrote in regard to Maude's death, when one of the books that I took up stayed open at one page. I did not pay any attention to it except to notice that the word 'Weis' was in very black type, but took the leaves up again to run them through to find the letter I was searching for, when my hand stopped at the same page, and this time as it stopped there the impression came to me 'Not Weir, but Charles Weis', and so I looked to see what the first name was that was given with 'Weis' and was much surprised to find that it was Charles Weis. Then I looked to see where he lived and when he died, or if he was dead. I did not read the whole of the article, but just where he lived, and at the end to see if he was dead. Then I looked over to the opposite page to see what name was given with 'Weir' and it was very different. So I read more about him and in my mind got it mixed up with 'Charles Weis,' that I had noted first, supposing that he was some Professor of languages in some university. I know that when I saw the name 'Weis, Charles' I did not look to see what his occupation was, because I could not consciously write it if I tried. When that

evening the intelligence said he was a historian I could not believe I had known that fact, but I think that I must have known it unconsciously.

"I wish to add that I took pains to tell Mr. Smead of my book experience just as soon as I went down-stairs that afternoon."

Mr. S. certifies also that Mrs. S. told him the experience that afternoon upon her coming down-stairs.

The next incident is quite as interesting. On March 17th while Mrs. S. was visiting me for experiment I had a sitting with another person in this city whom I shall call Mrs. M. I told Mrs. M. purposely that I was experimenting with another medium. In the course of her trance she told me that the control in my other case, that of Mrs. S. whose personality and identity I had not revealed, was Plato. I narrated the fact when I returned home at the table, and we all had a hearty laugh at it. Mrs. S. treated it as humorously as the rest of us. Now it turns up here that her subliminal action denies just what the supraliminal had laughed at on that earlier date. The name it will be noticed is not spelled rightly, and it shows that the subliminal apparently has difficulties of this kind in proper names where there is not any reason to suspect spirits. On the contrary, when there is reason to suppose that it is secondary personality, and not spirits at all. It must be remarked, however, that the error is in part due to the sitter, as the word Plato was clearer at first than when 'Platers' was suggested by the sitter in his attempts to decipher it.

The word 'Rossiter' has no meaning that is determinable in this connection. It also appears that this form of the word is the final result of suggestion, as it is quite certainly more like 'Rosstor' at first.

Both incidents reflect the influence of secondary personality. The evident impression on the mind of Mrs. S. in connection with the name Weis was that there was here something of interest, and the subliminal corrected some of her assumptions in saying that it was 'historian' that was right. There is besides no proof that the name written at the sitting whose record was destroyed was that of 'Weis'. According to the record it was supposed to be 'Weir', and nothing but the experience of Mrs.

S. on the afternoon of the day on the evening of which the sitting was held suggests a connection. On April 3rd there was a word which looked like the name 'Weis' (p. 338) in the sitting in which my father purports to communicate. It is too doubtful an interpretation however to attach any special significance to it. The consequence is that the evidence is in favor of subliminal action and not any extraneous intelligence. It is only to be remarked as a matter of some interest that there is no claim of spirits in it. Neither is this the case in reference to the name Plato. On the contrary this idea is renounced. But in spite of their not being spiritistic in their allegations the evidence of an influence upon the subliminal from the information possessed by the normal consciousness is such as to show that it must be reckoned with in the explanation of the general case.

April 11th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious, but quite tired. Present a clergyman who was a friend of Mr. S. I shall call him Mr. Hanson, abbreviating this to Mr. H. when necessary.

"(Is there a spirit here?) Yes. (Who is it?) a friend. (A friend? Write his name.) Yes. He cannot write much, yes. (Go on.) I am not him. (Go on.) We (or me) [erased.] No, I am not him. (Who is writing?) Me. (Go on.) * * [undec., but looks like an attempt to write Mr. or Mrs. The last two letters, however, are clearly 'so'.] a a few friends. (Go on.) Elder. Elder. No, I must not tell who I am. (I do not ask you to tell who you are, but will you tell who any of them are?) Yes, but they can tell—no, no, no, yes, who they are if they wish. (Give us any names you please.) Hanoon. (Is that a name?) Yes. (I cannot read it. Repeat it.) Yes, try it, let Elder try. [Mr. Hanson here began to ask the questions.] (Is it Dexter Sanborn?) No. (Is it Hanson?) look and see. [The word 'look' was indistinctly written and the planchette after finishing the sentence moved the pencil back and erased the word and rewrote it clearly under the first instance.]

(Go on.) Does he know me? (Is it father Hanson?) I want you to see. (How can I?) read it. (It looks like Hanson. Is that right?) Yes, it is me. Yes, it is me. (Is it you, father?) [This was asked by Mr. Hanson in French. No answer was given. Mrs. S. said she knew what the question was and did not allow the answer 'yes' to be written. Mrs. S. knows no French. Yet she said she

knew what the question was. It seemed to her as if the question was asked in English as far as the meaning was concerned.]

(Go on.) Tell your mother I would that we could be together once more but she is needed on earth awhile. I need to be *here* a waiting for you. (Write your middle name father.) [scrawl.] J * no. one * * [scrawl, possibly 'th'.] yes, on. James E. D. ['E. D.' apparently erased. Scrawl, possibly T. D.] S E s. Theo Te T. no, no. Missions, C— (Is that word 'Missions'?) Yes. (Repeat it and go on.) Missions, Canada. [scrawl] pere (?) Prare no, no, sh— no, no."

"The reference to missions is correct. Mr. Hanson's father was interested in French Missions in Canada, and was a missionary to the Roman Catholics to turn them to the Protestant faith. Mrs. S. did not know that he had ever been in Canada, but I did and this statement "Missions, Canada" must be discounted by so much. I am sure I did not write it, however." Mr. S. had his hand on the planchette.

The "communicator's" name was "Thomas A. Hanson". There seems to be an attempt to give this in the letters "Theo Te T." but the "James E. D." is wrong. The sitter's name was "E. C. E. Hanson". All that Mrs. S. knew of the sitter's father was that he was dead and that when living he had been connected with the French work at Manchester, N. H., but not that he had been in Canada, at least so far as her memory goes. She did not know his Christian name, nor that he was an "Elder" in the Church. The sitter, who was as indicated the son of the "communicator", is not an Elder and Mrs. S. knew that he was not. As she and Mr. S., however, are friends of Mr. Hanson and have had many conversations with him on these phenomena it is possible that the name of the sitter's father may have slipped out and have been forgotten. There is no evidence that this is a fact, but also none to the contrary except the testimony of Mr. and Mrs. S.

April 13th, 1901. Planchette used. "Mrs. S. lying on the couch and at no time looking on the paper on which the writing was done. Part of the time she was asleep, and a large part of it dozing. The writing began in less than thirty seconds from the time she placed her hand on the planchette. We were both thinking of Dr. Hyslop's father and wife, and hoping to get a message from one or both of

them, but we could not control the result by direct or indirect suggestion."

"(Are there any spirits present?) Yes. (Go on.) [scrawl. Possibly M] [pause.] Cemmore. (Cannot read it.) Seymore, yes. (I don't know what you mean. Write it again.) Seesmore. (I cannot understand it. Is it 'It is me'?) No. (Go ahead.) Seymore. (What is the first letter?) L [or S.] (Is it L?) No. (What is it then?) S. (Is it S?) Yes. (Write it.) Seymore, ye—. (Very good. Go on.) No (?). (Is the name 'Seymore'?) Yes. (Go on.) Thank you ser [sir], yes, they wi— Christian (?). (Mental question: 'Is that last word 'will'?) yes. (I cannot read it. Will you rewrite it?) [scrawls.] let us— [Pencil point too sharp seemed to interfere with the writing.] (Go on.) That is what I said. (I will fix it. Let us try this one? go on.) Yes, yes, not that. (Do you want the other sheet?) Yes. [I gave sheet No. 3 which had been written on, and the following was written just over the attempt to write the same before.] they will let us try. (Go on.) Seems good seems good to be here, yes. ['Seems good' erased and rewritten more distinctly.]

(Mental question: Is it 'seems good to be here'?) Yes. (Go on, please.) You know us [ns]. Us?) Yes. (Who is here?) You know us. (I must know your names to recognize you.) I did give my name. (To make it certain, write it again.) Seymore. (What is the first name?) [scrawls. Probably Annie.] (Is it Carrie?) Carrie— Caroline— [scrawls.] no [scrawls.] (Have you a middle name?) Yes. (What is the middle name?) a. [?] [the period was very strongly marked.] [Mental expression of doubt.] a. [?] [Continued doubt.] Yes, A. [Period marked in each case.] [I did not say a word aloud and these last two 'a's' were written to make me know what the letter was.]

(Is your name Caroline A. Seymore?) Yes. (Have I spelled the last name right?) I did. (You did?) Yes. (I cannot remember you. Tell me anything about yourself, so I will remember you.) You called to see me and (In what town or city? Can you tell?) you prayed for me. (Where was the place?) Hartford Connecticut [Pencil ran over edge of paper before finishing the word.] (What is that word?) Hartford. (What do you mean by the word after 'Hartford'?) Connetcut. [Both 't's' crossed.] (Tell me more so I can recognize you.) You came you * * [rest of word undecipherable] and that [?] other young man. (Who was he?) A young man. (What was his name?) do not know. I was sick then and he read the Book. (That is all possible.) and you prayed. (Where did you live in Hartford?) East side. (East.) Yes, East St ['t' crossed.] (Go on.) St [scrawl, possibly attempt at 'Se'.] (East St.?) no. (What do you mean?) Side, yes. (East side of what?) I told you ['t' crossed.] (Do

you mean that you lived in East Hartford?) Yes. (Did you die there?) Somewhere near it. (Is that what you mean?) Yes.

(You have told me your name was Caroline A. Seymore of East Hartford, Connecticut, and that you died somewhere near there. Is that true?) I did write what I want to write. ('I didn't write what I want to write', is that it?) No. (Go on.) I did write I wanted to thank you and your friend for helping me to get here. Tell him too. (What was his name?) Frank. [Correct.] (What was his last name?) I don't know. (You think his name was Frank?) You called him that thas (I have a very faint recollection of it. I cannot remember your name. I remember Warfield and I going over to East Hartford. Do you think Warfield was the last name?) I do not know. (Have you anything more?) no o yes, tell him he * * [possibly '&'.] helped me get here, good by. (I tried to read this for some time and was not clear, and hence asked that it be written again on a separate sheet of paper. It was written as follows.) tell ['t' crossed] him you helped me o [to] get here. (Good night, I am much obliged to you for your kind expressions. Will you come again? You will be welcome.) Yes, thank you."

Mrs. S. wrote out the following statement immediately after the sitting:

"After the planchette wrote the first 'Yes', I thought Mr. Perkins, of the Hartford Seminary, a friend of ours who died in Brazil, was present, and I thought at the same time that if the name of Mr. Perkins was written, one would say it was caused by secondary personality, or telepathy, and I hoped it would not be written and it was not.

"When Mr. Smead asked what the young man's name was (the second time) I thought then that it was Mr. Perkins, and I was about to ask Mr. Smead if he and Mr. Perkins ever went out holding meetings together. But I refrained from asking because of Dr. Hyslop's advice not to speak until the sitting was over.

"At the close of the sitting Mr. Smead first spoke of his impression that Mr. Perkins was there when I told him what my impressions had been, that I thought Mr. Perkins had been there all evening.

"I never was in East Hartford, knew nothing about the place, never knew that Mr. Smead ever went there to hold meetings. All these events were before our marriage ten or twelve years ago. I never knew that Mr. Smead had ever been in East Hartford for

such a purpose until tonight. I never knew any person by the name of Carrie A. Seymore."

Inquiry in East Hartford results in the following information. "Desire (Loomis) Seymour (wife of Ardon A.) died February 22nd, 1894, at Pleasant St. (meadow) aged 75 yrs. 8 mos. 2 days. This is the only female Seymour of whose death our town has any record." It is apparent that this does not fit the record of the sitting. But it comes fairly close to it.

April 24th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious, but not knowing what was written.

"(Who is writing?) [Scrawls and lines all over the page with two or three letters in the midst of them quite clearly written. They were 'rer'. Then without scrawls on the next page] Rus— (Write it plainer.) Russell. Russell. (I asked a mental question, "Was your name William Russell? If so write it.") My name was not that. Sister's was. (Go on.) She is not here. (What was your name?) Stearns—Lowell. (Write your name. I cannot read it very well.) Mrs. Stearns (Write the last word again.) Stearns. (The name is Stearns, is it?) Yes. (What was your first name?) [Scrawl] what * * Lowell Rose. (Try to tell me your first name.) * * [Looks like Celee.] Lowell Rosa. [Scrawl.] (Will you tell me who you are?) I did. (I know that you told me your name, but you did not tell me your first name. If I can get that I shall have a fact that I can work with.) Rob—[scrawl] will kn [know]. (I was impatient and said that all that was of no use.) Wait. (I will. I am sorry that I was in a hurry. I ask your pardon. Go on.) Rober [scrawls] Rober (Robert? What Robert?) R o b e r t will know. (What is the last word?) Know. (What Robert?) Russell will know. (Robert Russell of Sandwich?) I told you. Do you know him? [Question asked here forgotten.] Yes, you do. Robert, yes. (Whom do you want Robert Russell to know?) Mrs. Stearn—Lowell, his wife's sister. (Did you write sister?) Yes. (Will you give your first name?) * * [looks like Celee as first written and then repeated less distinctly. Both may be attempt at either 'Cecilia' or 'Celia'.] (Are you Robert Russell's wife's sister?) I am her sister. (You may go on. What is your message?) [Scrawl. Possibly 'Sh'.] she was good to me and she was good to father, you will remember him. She told me about your preaching, so I have hear— [pencil ran off sheet] heard you. (Is that last word 'heard'?) Yes, it is. (I cannot read what you have just written.

I can see that one word looks like 'planchette'.) You do not read it [rightly.] (Will you write it again?) Read, yes. (Well, you may go on with your message. [Scrawl.] ask her—I thank her—tell her— (I cannot read it. Did you say, 'thank Mrs. Smead'?) look, read it better, ye— (I did and it was clear. Go on.) no, I thank her— tell her. (You want me to thank Mrs. Russell?) Yes, my father [?] does too. (What was your father's name?) You know. [True, I knew his name was Thompson.] (What was his first name?) [Something that I did not know.] [Lines drawn across the sheet and at each end a series of circles. This done twice and on the second line was written.] wires. (What do you mean by those wires?) Ask on them. (You want me to find out that way?) Yes. (You want me to telephone to Robert Russell?) tha(t) is it. [The lines and circles at the end were drawn again.] (Go on.) You can ask her what that sister's name was that came here last, yes. (I cannot make it out very well. Will you write it again?) no need. (What else can I ask her?) I.. [scrawl.] I will come again. (Will you write it again?) I will come again—thank you—Mrs s [scrawls] Stearns (?). [This last is so indistinct that it is illegible, except the letters 'rns'. The reading is a conjecture.] ”

The incidents of this sitting have some interest. Mr. and Mrs. S. knew the Robert Russell here mentioned four or five years ago, but have not seen him since they moved from S——, except two or three times. His wife's sister was a Mrs. Keliher and she had been dead about a year. The almost undecipherable "Celelee" may be an attempt at this name. Her husband worked in the Stearns Manufacturing Company at Lawrence, Mass. Neither Mr. S. nor Mrs. S. knew the lady or her husband, nor did they know where the husband worked. Mrs. Russell's and Mrs. Keliher's father died in Lowell, Mass. Mrs. Russell went to Lowell to take care of her father before he died. This possibly explains the allusion in the message indicating that the sister and father thanked Mrs. Russell for being good to him. This was known to Mr. and Mrs. S. at the time. But Mr. S. discovered on inquiry that he was mistaken in supposing that the name of Mrs. Russell's father was Thompson. He learned in his investigation that it was "Slye". He had never known any of the Slyes connected with the family concerned.

It may be a matter of some note to record the fact that Mrs. Keliher died in a delirium in which she had lost the sense of personal identity. When the physician was called in he asked her her name,

and she replied "Mary". This was correct. She had been told the name of the doctor, which was Buckingham, and on being asked by him what her last name was, replied "Buckingham".

April 25th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious at first, but soon became unconscious, passing into this state easily without pain, but with a slight trembling of the hand. Mr. S. reports as follows:

"I began by talking about my brother Sylvester, hoping to get him to return and control. We were surprised to note what took place. A scrawl was drawn and then some writing which we found could only be read by the use of the mirror. I cannot give all the questions asked, but they were few and unimportant."

"[Scrawls.] harrison, yes. [Mirror writing.] (Is it Harrison Clarke?) y— H C. [The 'yes' was not completed, and 'H C' was written in the form of a monogram, and both in the inverted style.] So you di(d) not do much. [Normal.] So you do not get much * * [two or three letters undecipherable, but all in mirror writing.] * * [apparently two letters are 'nd'. Mirror writing.] you you b yes. [Mirror writing.]

[The words 'you' and 'yes' were written while I was trying to read what had already been written. Mrs. S.'s hand was on the planchette alone. Mine had been removed.]

So you have changed your mind. [Mirror writing.] (I replied that I had, that I was glad that he had returned, and that I hoped he would now control the psychic and help others to write as he used to do. I then asked: If this is Harrison Clarke will you write your name in full, so that I may know that it is really you?)

No. [Normal.] (Will you please write in the usual way, so I can read it easier?) I am doing this. [Mirror writing.] (Is Mrs. S. willing that she should enter the trance state as she used to do?) She is when I wish. [Inverted.] (Please write in the ordinary way, ordinary English, please.) I told you I was doing this. [Mirror writing.] (Go on. I— yes I an and I will stay [Mirror writing.] until I— [Normal.] [Sheet changed.] (Go on.) I did not finish. [Mirror writing.] (Go on then.) stay until I get ready to leave. [Normal writing.] (Will you take control of Mrs. S.?) not now, [Normal.] when I get ready. [Inverted.] (We need some one to help us on your side. Will you help us?) I do, I will— [Normal.] ... [scrawl.] when I get re...." [Mirror writing.]

"Here the writing stopped. I looked at Mrs. S. and found that

she was in a complete trance. I took the planchette away and put a pencil in her hand, as I had done before when she was in the trance, and supposed that it would write as it used to do. I did this again, but it was not possible to hold it. She soon came out of the trance, but cried a little as she did so. She felt her jaws locked a little, but soon felt all right."

April 26th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious all the time, and asking most of the questions herself. The séance was prefaced by vocal prayer by myself (Mr. S.), praying for the Divine blessing and guidance, that if it was not the will of God all messages should cease.

"I said, 'All right, cannot there be a message from Mrs. Hyslop or Mr. Hyslop? Cannot Mr. Clarke, if he is present, arrange that?'"

"Mrs. S. had her crystal and was looking into it before we began the sitting and I said that I would like her to fix it so that she could see into it as the planchette was writing. She seemed pleased at this suggestion, and arranged the crystal so that she could see into it. Mrs. S. has always liked the crystal work and had expected that there would be some very marked developments with it. She has been much more interested in it than in the planchette work.

"Mrs. S. says that while she was looking into the crystal before I asked her to put her hand on the planchette and to fix the crystal as I have indicated above, she saw the face of a man. The following is her description of it. 'He had very black hair, high forehead, very black eyes, pointed chin whiskers, and his mustache fixed with long pointed ends. It was black and heavy. The sides of his face were smooth.'"

"(Who is here?) I do not like it— whose has been here? (Go on.) She must put it away, it will hurt her eyes. [Mirror writing.]

[While I was reading this by the aid of the mirror the planchette made a number of movements on the table, with only one finger of Mrs. S. upon it. The crystal rested on the table about 12 or 15 inches away from the planchette. There was no covering over the crystal, but Mrs. S. had placed a sheet of white paper back of it. Behind the white paper was the box in which the crystal had been kept. The planchette hit the crystal sideways and then backwards with a very decided bunt, and then it went back upon the table and all that touched the planchette was the tip of Mrs. S.'s finger nail.

Then it went round and round in a circle with considerable swift-ness under her finger nail. I finished the reading and placed a new sheet of paper under the planchette. It made some scrawls and then followed.]

I do not like it. [Then it made a dive for the crystal again and hit it. Only one of Mrs. S.'s fingers was on the planchette. I put the planchette back on the paper and Mrs. S. said 'I like it there. I have something to do. Why not leave it there?'] The planchette then wrote:] hit that [and then made a bee line for the crystal and knocked it off with the paper into Mrs. S.'s lap.] Do not use it again. (I cannot see the sense of that. Tell us why she should not use it. Make it clear to us, please.) I have— [planchette moved off the paper.] (Mrs. S. thought that she might see you in it. She wanted to see you.) I have appeared to her once, but do not like that. [I asked 'What is that?', hoping to get him to write 'crystal'. I thought that if he wrote 'crystal', it might indicate that it was her secondary personality. The following was the reply:] I don't like it, it hurts her eyes and she cannot see us [seus] as well if she uses that ball. [Before writing the word 'ball' the planchette drew superposed circles representing it.]

I could not read the writing at first and asked: Is it 'she cannot see as well?') no—us—see. (I do not understand.) see [first 'us' apparently erased] see us. (Mrs. S.: I thought I could see you better. It is not clear to my mind. Explain please.) I have. (It is not yet clear to her.) She does not need it to help her see us, when we come to her we will let her soul or spirit see us, as we always have, why does not that satisfy her? (They say that this is all secondary personality or telepathy, that my unconscious self does this, or that I get it from others by telepathy. How can I be satisfied with that, and I don't like it.) Tell them to try it. (Who was it that said to me when I was thinking of going to New York, 'Did I ever leave you? Did I ever forsake you?' and then when I went to New York I had no one with me. I want to know.) I did not know about anything like that. (Who was it?) I do not know, you asked me to go away and I did. (Did you know of her New York trip?) I did not go there with her. (I asked you a plain question.) and I answered you. (That is so. You did in your way. Will you answer that question 'yes' or 'no'?) I did. I did not go with her. (But you knew of her trip afterwards.) I knew she went away. (What told you?) I saw her go. (Didn't you go with her?) No. (Who did?) that young man Sylvester. (Who else?) No one. (Have you seen Sylvester and talked with him about it?) No. (Will you try and bring him?) I will try. (Can you get him to-night?) No, not soon enough.

(Please do not put Mrs. S. into the trance state tonight. I think that she is too tired and she was in that state last night for a little while. Let her rest tonight.)

do not let her use that, I do not like that, it troubles me.

[We had taken the crystal and put it in its box and it rested on the table near us.]

(Go on.) take it away. [Here the planchette made a dive for the crystal, and we put it away on the mantel shelf some feet away.] (Mrs. S. is tired. Had we not better stop?) as you like it. (Good night.) Good night— [scrawl.] (What did you write after 'good night'?) Sir. (That was it?) Yes."

Mrs. S. writes regarding her own feeling about the crystal as follows: "I cannot see why Harrison Clarke should take the position that he does. I am sure that the crystal has not hurt my eyes, as far as I am able to judge. It has never made them tired or caused any blurring of the sight. I have had no bad symptoms whatever with it. I have always like it, and it has fascinated me. I have liked it so well I cannot see why he should not wish me to use it."

April 27th, 1901. Prof. X. also present. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious during the sitting. Began by placing the crystal as it was the night before, hoping that Harrison Clarke would repeat his experiment of knocking the crystal off the table. Harrison Clarke appeared as the communicator.

"you do not do as I tell you, so I will go. [All but the first word 'you' in mirror writing.] take it away. [Mirror writing.] [The crystal was removed.] Thank you sir. I like it better. [No record of question asked at this point.] No. (Prof. X.: What is it that you wrote?) I like this better. (Prof. X.: Have you a word? Is this you, Mr. Clarke?) I am glad you are here. (It seems to me like meeting an old friend again. I have not seen you for two months. Have not you some communication to give us?) so you believe me better. (Mr. S.: We cannot make it out.) So you— (Is it 'so you believe me better'?) yes. (Yes, I think that you are all right, Mr. Clarke.) I do. (We cannot read that.) I do. (Prof. X.: All right, Mr. Clarke. Will you talk to us?) This [circular scrawls] this is me and you will sometime know me better. (Mr. S.: I cannot read it. Will you write again?) no, this is me and some, yes. ['Time' and 'know' omitted. All except the word 'yes' in mirror writing, and the 'i's' in 'this' and 'is' were dotted.] Mr. Xenos you will some [time kno] w me better. (Is that word better?) Yes. (What is the word before 'me'?) some. (Prof. X.: I shall be very glad to know you better, Mr. Clarke. Will you talk to us?) Yes, I told you ser [sir], but you thought I did not no

(know) best. (Mr. S.: 'Did not' what?) no Best. (Prof. X.: What do you mean, Mr. Clarke?) B E S T. (Prof. X.: We think you know best now, Mr. Clarke. Have you a communication now to give us?) you must wait as it is very hard. [Words 'you must' in mirror writing.] (Prof. X.: We will give you a better pencil to use, Mr. Clarke. Is that better?) It is, but there has been trouble that hurts me. (Mr. S.: I read over what had been written and asked if it was correct.) Yes, yes. (Prof. X.: Will you tell us what the trouble has been, Mr. Clarke?) I do not know what they did. It troubles me to write. (Is it because Mr. X. had his hand on the planchette?) yes, not that. It is with that ball. It gets makes me d— [circle drawn] dizzy [series of superposed circles drawn again after 'dizzy'.] (What is that last word? 'dizzy'?) Yes. (Mrs. S.: I think that this is silly, is it not, Mr. Clarke?) no. Prof. X.: Can you explain to us why it makes you dizzy?) son [some] next time. I do not like it, it ma— makes me feel like makes me me feel like going. [Then the pencil drew some scrawls in an elliptical form which may be interpreted for 'round and round'.] it makes me feel like [?] going.

(Prof. X.: Mr. Clarke, you know the theory that Dr. Hyslop has that the spirit is in a dream state when it is trying to communicate. How is it?) Yes [?] I did not * * all may come (?) it not me untill that [circular scrawl] came (?) no, yes."

April 29th, 1901. Planchette used. Present, Mrs. Miller, Miss Jennie and Miss Eva Miller besides Mr. S. Mrs. S. conscious. The two Misses Miller were anxious to hear from their father, Mr. Frank Miller, who was the communicator at an earlier sitting (p. 291). This was in the mind of all present.

"(Is Mr. Clarke present?) [Scrawls representing large curves covering half the sheet, and ending with] yes. (Please write your name.) who are these? Yes I know, the sione [?] [All but the relative pronoun 'who' in mirror writing.] Miller (What is the word after 'the'?) same [mirror writing.] [The ladies present were now introduced to Harrison Clarke, and I said 'go on'.] I tried to get him. (Do you mean Sylvester?) No. (Who do you mean?) The one with the little boy, they will come next time and try to [to] write for them. (Write the words before 'with' again.) the one. (Go on.) he is small child. (Write again what was written after 'boy' above in the manuscript.) they will come next time and try to write to them. (This was read over and I asked if it was correct.) Yes. (Go on, can Frank Miller come tonight?) I

told you next time. (Go on. Cannot some one come tonight for these people?) [No answer, but a long pause.]

(Are you still here?) [No answer. Pause.] (Go on, perhaps he is reading our minds.) I do not do that. (Go on.) there are an a lady, there is a lady. (Go on. Tell us about her.) she is waiting for her father. (Mental question. Is this lady Mrs. Miller? Who is at the table?) Not this. [The planchette then moved over rapidly to Mrs. Miller to indicate that she was not the lady to whom Harrison Clarke referred.] (Who is this lady waiting for?) her father. [The planchette again made a move in the direction of Mrs. Miller.] It was his wife's when on earth when I understand her better. (Please give the lady's name.) I will give it you. I— yes, yes, yes. [The three 'yeses' were in answer to minor questions as to what was written.] (Will you give us the name?) [Illegible, except the last three letters which are 'sey'.] (I cannot read it.) Betsey. (What is the last name?) wait. (I will. Go on.) * * [undec., but having no resemblance to the real name, which should have been 'Hall'.] (Please write that which is in page 27 over again.) [I held the page up before Mrs. S.] 20. [This was the right number of the page. I had made a mistake in calling it 27. Second attempt at name also illegible, but resembles the first attempt.] (I cannot read that. Please to write it so that I can read it.) [Scrawls representing a star shaped figure.] (What does that mean?) Some [Sime] flowers. (What is the use, Mr. Clarke, of fooling this way? If you cannot get that name, why not say so?) I cannot understand her but will try to get it so that I cannot [cannot] will some [ot] her time. (What is the word after 'cannot'?) will some. (Write that over again.) Read it [written in large plain letters.] (I tried to do, but stumbled at it.) will some other time. (Go on.) She is too tired. (Who is too tired? The lady that is trying to tell you her last name?) [In response to this last question the planchette made a line in the direction of Mrs. S. and the pencil went up between the fingers on the hand that was not on the planchette. This seemed to indicate that Mrs. S. was meant. She thought that the force came from the hand of Miss Miller, which was also on the planchette. I was about to stop the sitting when there was written.] Harryson Clarke."

Betsey Hall was the name of Mrs. Miller's mother. Mr. S. says that no one present was thinking of her, but was wishing to hear from Mr. Frank Miller, Mrs. Miller's husband. At the time the word "Betsey" was written, Miss Eva Miller said, no, but Mrs. Miller shook her head and said, yes, after Harrison Clarke had written "Betsey". Mrs. S. did not know this name, and it was first recognised by Mrs. Miller, who of course knew it at once.

In both this sitting and the one of April 27th the handwriting of Harrison Clarke was not as legible as it has been in the past. It was specially bad on the 27th, possibly connected with the conditions under which he complained of dizziness.

I come next to a spontaneous experience in the form of a waking vision which took place after Mrs. S. had retired. I give it in her own narrative, as written out the next morning. It is dated May 2nd.

"We retired early and while Mr. S. was talking I was lying on my right side listening to what he was saying and answering him, with my eyes closed, when to my surprise I seemed to be as it were transferred in spirit to New York City and back about thirty-five years ago, and while standing on a corner of the street, at a further corner there seemed to be a large crowd, some were making considerable noise while others like myself wondered what the cause of so much confusion was. I was about to speak to a lady when she made a motion from the direction where the crowd seemed the greatest, and I looked and saw the soldiers returning from the war. Many were so tired that it seemed all they could do to keep in line, while others were joyous over their return and marched with a very quick step. While watching this it seemed as if some one spoke to me and the voice was quite clear in one ear, the left, while I was listening to what Mr. S. was saying with the other. The remarks impressed me, as I was not thinking of this matter, nor of the person that was mentioned.

"My vision seemed fixed when the voice said, 'count', and I looked as the first of the regiments passed. There seemed to be sixteen men abreast and eight lines. Then there was a space, and the next was the same, except there were ten lines, and so on until there was one that this voice seemed to want to impress me as being interested in it. The voice said, 'Look for Harrison Clarke—count'. I watched each line for that face and I counted 1—2—3—4—5—6—7—8, and it said 'stop, look'. I did so, and I could not see it, and the voice said, 'I told you so. I was there 125th', and I looked at the procession as it marched on and I wondered how it was that I could not find the face I was looking for. When this regiment passed the crowd seemed to close partly upon it, and it was impossible for me to tell one form from another. The voice said, 'returned—no', and I was once more alone with Mr. S. talking. I

wondered what the meaning of it could be, and so turned over on the left side, when I had a vision of a very different character. It was as follows:

"I was conscious and talking with Mr. S. just as before when I seemed to be up very high and was gradually descending. When I was about a mile from the planet whither I seemed to have gone I thought, where am I? when there was no answer. So I was very much interested to know and watched what looked like a sea of hats moving up and down. They were all of one color and kind and made in the same way. By this time I was about two feet from the surface of this very strange place, and I again thought, where am I? The answer came, 'On Mars', and I cannot describe the feeling I had to think that I was, as it were, on that planet, and yet not be able to touch it. The owners of these peculiar hats were now within about one-quarter of a mile from me and there was one who was as it were an overseer. He came up very near to me and looked right at me. This seemed to be done in answer to my wish to see and know just how they looked. Just before this, however, I had thought, where are all these people going to? the reply came, 'to work'.

"When they were about twenty-five or thirty feet from me they changed their course and went to their left. This one man dressed like all the rest came nearer to me as I seemed to glide toward where he was, and when within speaking distance we were face to face with each other the expression of his face caused me to smile. Then he turned toward the others and about one-half of them had passed from sight while I was watching them. I was careful as I could be to see how they were dressed, as they were all dressed alike, and they were nearly the same height. I was about two feet from the surface and could not seem to get any nearer. This man that came the nearest to me was as tall as I am. He did not appear unusually tall, as all of the others were of the same height.

"They were dressed in a suit of grey material with trousers made similar to those of the Chinese, except that they were gathered at the ankle and tied so that they extended about one or two inches below where they were tied. The upper part of the suit was made very much like the blouse a sailor would wear, except that there were no collars and the blouse was of a lighter color than the trousers. In place of the collar they each and every one of them had a red

handkerchief, quite long, around his neck. They all had a very pleasant expression as though they enjoyed life.

"I should say that there was not much difference in the ages of these men. But as they all passed into the place where they worked I was just allowed to glance at the building. It was very large and constructed of some dark stone, I should judge. I could not see whether it was all one or not, as it looked to be, for I seemed to be immediately turned towards the other side where there were others dressed in a darker costume, with a little difference in the hat which was smaller and the top was square while that of the first group was round. Then these did not move as rapidly as the others and went to the right into a building which was of a whitish grey. I thought all this seems to be such a happy quiet place and that I would like to stay and see what they do and get acquainted, when a voice said, 'look', and I was wondering what I should look for, when it said, 'the green grass', and then I seemed to see that it was nearly sunrise. I then thought, 'Yes I see', and at my thought I was as it were lifted and placed back on the bed. As I moved I realized that I was still on earth. Mr. S. had stopped talking, and I turned over and went to sleep."

May 3rd, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. Jennie Miller and Miss Eva Miller present with Mr. S. Mrs. S. conscious throughout, but in a dazed condition much of the time. Miss Eva Miller had her hand on the planchette with Mrs. S. I was free so that I (Mr. S.) could take notes. The writing began with a few marks and then stopped as if Harrison Clarke had come and seen the Millers present and gone away again to get Mr. Miller, according to his promise.

"(Who is here?) [Long pause, and finally written.] it is Hre Hre [here] Mr. Miller. (Is it Frank M. Miller? Is that right?) no it is not that. (What is it then?) read it. (Is it Frank W. Miller?) no, Here mr Miller is what I said for him. (I read this over and could not be sure of the word 'here'. I said write that word again.) Hre. [The capital 'H' is made so that the loop at the end of it, as in the previous cases where it was spelled as in this, serves also for the letter 'e', and the word appears clearly as 'Here'.]

(Is it Mrs. Miller?) no, here. (Did you write 'Here Mr. Miller is what I said for him'?) You are right. (Is Mr. Frank Miller

here?) over here. (Do you mean that he is near, over Mrs. Miller.) no I did not say that. (What did you say?) here. (Do I understand you to say that Frank Miller is here?) where here. (Is Frank Miller here tonight?) why don't you ask him to sit down with your circle. [When the letter 'y' in the word 'you' was written the planchette moved back to the left to begin another word, and evidently discovered that 'you' had not been finished. It then returned to the proper position and finished the word by writing the letters 'ou'.] (We do. He is welcome.)

[I at once removed some papers from a chair near me and invited him to sit down. It made the ladies a little fearful and it seemed a very strange thing to ask.]

(What is the word after sit?) no down. (You may sit with us.) thank you. (I offered him a chair.) put it over here. (What is the word before 'to'?) no, put it.

[I placed the chair between his daughter and Mrs. S. It had been before that at my side.]

(Is that right?) yes. (Go on, we are all ready now.) he wants to write. (Is it 'He wants to write'?) Yes. [in large letters.] (We cannot see clearly what that sentence is. Write it over for us.) You do. [in large clear letters.] (Please, Mr. Clarke, make the matter plain to us.) he will write. [The 't' crossed and the 'i' dotted in the word 'write'.] (Your meaning is then that Mr. Miller will write to us?) yes. (Let him write now.) yes. [Change in handwriting.] I am here (Go ahead.) can you here (hear) me, Mary [referring apparently to his daughter May, who is a little hard of hearing.]

[I asked a question regarding what he had just written and which I did not record. The answer was] us—no can y (We are glad to know you are here. Have you any message for us?) yes, I have mic much to say and w— [scrawl] wish that you could let me hear you so that I could know you did, that would help me. tell me, why don't you Jane. Mary, can you tell me so that I can talk to mother. (Do you want Mary to ask questions?) Yes. (Mrs. Miller: You want me to ask, do you Frank?) [This was spoken in an ordinary tone of voice.] speak loud Jenny. [Mrs. Miller put the same question in about the same tone of voice.] speak loud. (Mrs. Miller: Frank, are you happy where you are now?) why won't you say it so that he can here Hear better, yes. [Mrs. Miller was so nervous that she could hardly control her voice.] (Mrs. Miller: Are you happy?) [Spoken clearer and louder.] I am very very ha— very very happy and when you see the little boy you will thinn [think] what a pretty boy he is. do you understand me? (Let me read over what has been written.) tell me do you know what I said said? (Yes.) [At this point Mrs. Miller and May Eva, the daughter, were in tears, and I had to stop and try to com-

fort them.] (Go on.) when we cm [come] mus [started to make 'n' of next word, and then made 't' over it as if to erase it] must not worry. it will trouble us. we are not dead, Jenny. I am talking to— could I if I was, yes, cannot you heree me? yo you don't tell me, do y(ou) hear me? speak Jenn— yo. (Mrs. Miller: Yes, Frank, I hear. Talk to me if there is anything you want to say to me. Can you see that I am doing right?) yes, you did right to come here, yes it was better to come here nearer to Wils [Willis]. [She had recently sold the farm and moved into the town, taking a tenement near myself.] (Mrs. Miller: 'He knows'.) and we can talk to yo(u) too Jenny. we can be happy because we tio [erased] know Willie will look after you. [He always called me Willie.] (Please write the last sentence over again.) Willie will look after you. (Mrs. Miller: Don't you think, Frank, that I can look after myself?) yes, but when you are not well, Jenny, let him know. (Mrs. Miller: Have I got it right? What can Willis do for me, if I am not well?) yes, he can see to all things for you, don't forget, because we cannot always be just near to you. (What is the word after always, 'so'?) no, be. [in large clear letters.] (Mrs. Miller: Frank, cannot you tell me whom you have met over there, besides Charlie? Are you with any one else?) I see them all sometimes. (Mr. S.: Go on.) talk to me. (Is it Mary you want to talk to you?) both. (Mrs. Miller: We are trying to do just the best we can. We were awfully sorry to have you leave us.) yes, that is right. I must go now. good night, Jenny; Mary. come some soon again." Sitting at once came to a close.

May 10th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. The writing was so illegible that Mr. S. could decipher only a few words of it.

The sitting began with two pages of scrawls, the first being a possible attempt to produce what was done clearly on the second, namely, to draw a large square with diagonals and to cut it up into four smaller squares each with diagonals.

"Mr. Harry [scrawls, but evidently not an attempt to complete any name. Also lines like a series of the figure 8.] Hickey (?) [The letter 'k' looks more like 'p', but I conjecture its meaning from the next attempt.] Hickey His [or He is. compare 'Here'.] Hill— (?) Isl (I cannot understand anything but Harry.) [Scrawl ending in 's'.] [scrawl] hin [scrawl.] Tsl (Please write it again.) rs Mrs B [?] henry [?] (Is the first word 'Mr.'?) yes. (What is the word after 'Mr.'?) Henry * * [two words undecipherable, one looking like 'hosH'.] (What is the word after 'Mr.'?) Henry [?] * * [undec., but might be Qilly, or a rough attempt at 'Kelly'.]

[This was followed by a page of scrawls which had no regularity,

and then a page of circular scrawls of enlarging concentric circles. Another page was taken up with a few irregular lines in circular form, and then followed, after the question, 'Who is here'?

Ho * y * * Sweden * * (Do you mean you lived in Sweden?) yes. (I cannot read it.) joking. (Where did you live in Sweden?) Mill.. (?) [scrawls] Hillis (?) [possibly Hollis.] "

There is not enough in it to justify notice, except to call attention to the singular fact that it exhibits an unexpected inability to write or communicate clearly.

May 13th, 1901. Present, Prof. X. with Mr. S. Planchette work. Mrs. S. conscious during the sitting. The conversation was about Mr. and Mrs. Miller for a little time, and then concerning Mrs. J. H. Hyslop and Mr. Hyslop's father. We were hoping that they might communicate.

"(Go on.) Frank is here. Where are his friends tonight. (We could not find them.) He will wait untill they come. tell them to come to him next time. (Please to write the word from the word 'them' again.) to come to him next time. (Have you any other message?)

[Mrs. S. spoke of a vision of a man she had had some weeks ago (p. 338) and said that he had a mask on his face. I said that it might be a subconscious representation of Mr. Hyslop at those séances that he had with Mrs. Piper, but Mrs. S. did not think so, when the following was written without any request:] That was hi.. His Father.

[Mrs. S.'s hand began to tremble, so that it was very noticeable, and I spoke of the fact to the effect that it seemed as if some one was needed on the other side of the planchette to steady it and to make the writing easier, when the following was written, without our request:]

Yes, we get better control wh (with) wo [erased] some one here. (Please finish the sentence.) Yes, [scrawls, possibly Minnim.]

[We took the planchette away and tried to work with the pencil. Prof. X. much desired to have a certain friend write.]

yes, we try—m yar * (y?) Miss * * ec * yes, yo— (Please repeat.) yes en yes e.. I will ser sr [sir] (We cannot read it.) yes we try, it is very hard, bu.. * (but?) (Won't you finish?) that lady is gone. (Won't you give the name of the lady?) no, she was trying but failed, so she will come again. Prof. X.: Who is writing?) H. C. [inverted.] (Prof. X.: Will H. C.

get my friend for me?) it was [scrawl.] her [inverted.] (Prof. X.: Was it my friend who was writing?) it was her sir. (Did she not give you any message?) they do it themselves. (Prof. X.: Could you tell what her business was in life?) * * (Have you anything more you wish to say, Mr. Clarke?) [scrawls.] (Prof. X.: Who is here now?) she . . . [scrawls] * es * * . [Hand trembled considerably.] (Prof. X.: Try again to write your name.) [scrawls.] (Prof. X.: Evidently you cannot seem to write. Let some one else try.) no. (Prof. X.: Please write your name. Is this my friend for whom I asked?) * * [possibly an attempt at 'yes'.] (Prof. X.: Can you write the initials of your name?) * * [mere scrawls.] (Prof. X.: I will give you a new start. Cannot you write your initials?) she (?) * * you [inverted] orsi (?) [two letters 'rs' clear, but the others very doubtful.] (Prof. X.: Cannot you write your name?) [scrawls.]”

May 16th, 1901. Planchette used. Present, Mrs. Frank Miller, and Miss May Eva Miller. Both had their hands on the planchette with Mrs. S., who was conscious during the sitting.

“(We are all ready to go on.) Frank Miller. (Go on.) yes, Willie. (We are glad you are with us, Uncle Frank. You may write what you wish.) yes, yes, I know it. I am glad to be with you all tonight. a [letter ‘a’ erased] it Seems S [letter ‘S’ erased] so stre [letter ‘e’ erased] so ts [‘ts’ erased] strange to call it night because it is not night to us here. [As I was reading it I could not make out the word night very clearly and the planchette wrote without my request.] night. (Go on.) my dear girl why don’t you talk to me. I would love to hear your voice again. (May Eva: What have you to say to me papa?) yes, O Mary, I can see you and hear you. I know what you are doing. I cannot always hear, but I am glad when I do hear y you so don’t be [pencil ran off the sheet and the ‘e’ in ‘be’ was not written] as fraid to talk to me and mama must talk too. If you cood [could] only know how pleased * * ann [am] to be here. (Minor questions as to reading.) pleased I am to hear your you, yes, and her voice. (Mrs. M.: Frank, if this is really you, tell me something that the others don’t know.) yes, Mary came [?] after me [?]. (Mrs. M.: It is I that asked you Frank, not Mary.) [Mrs. M. evidently misunderstood the answer, as Mrs. Miller’s sister Mary Hall was dead and the allusion may have been to her. But she died before Mr. Miller.]

Well, Jennie I can. Mother was talking to me abo.. [about] her * * (May Eva: Have you anything more to say, papa? You wanted to hear me talk. Cannot you say something?) [no answer.] (Mrs. M.: Frank, have you not anything more to say to me tonight?)

[Slightly changed and improved handwriting. Apparently Harrison Clarke writes.] He is gone now with that lady that came, Betsy you called her what her name was. the t.. [erased] other h [erased] ome [one] I could not hear. do you know her. [From 'I' to 'her' the writing is all in very large clear letters.] (I think we know her. Will you wait till I read what has been written?) I am. [Very large letters.] (A little of it is not clear to me.) with her. (I do not seem to understand, Mr. Clarke.) read it, the— [I did so very carefully.] (We think we know whom you meant. She is Mrs. Miller's mother, Mrs. Betsey Hall.) mrs Betsy Ball, did you say? (We said *Hall* not *Ball*.) [Spoken loudly.] yes, I hear you. (Has she got anything to say.) She has gone with Frank. (Mrs. M.: Is there any other friend of mine that is here tonight?) I will try to get them for you next time. it [t]akes time to get them so that they can use this. [The letter 'x' in the word 'next' is incomplete as it was twice on one evening in January last.] (I asked him to make few words clear.) you next time. [An intermission of twenty minutes followed.]

(Is any one here?) yes, her uncle is. [The planchette began to move to May and then to Mrs. Miller.] (Will he give his name?) yes, George. [Correct and absolutely unknown to Mr. and Mrs. S. Written in large clear letters.] (We would like to have him write now.) he will try. He [loop in the capital 'H' again serves as letter 'e'.] cannot now. it troubles him. next.. (We wish he would, Mr. Clarke.) he will stay near until he learns. I think he will be able to by then, do not you Mrs. Smead? (Yes, I think so, Mr. Clarke.) George was too much surprised to write."

This sitting has considerable interest. The pertinence of the names will be clear from a few statements. Betsey Hall was the name of Mrs. Miller's mother, and was mentioned before (p. 358). George, as said, was the name of an uncle of Mrs. Miller, unknown to Mr. and Mrs. S. Mrs. Miller thought that the allusion to his too great surprise to write was characteristic of him. Mary, by which he addressed his daughter, May Eva, as she is called by Mr. and Mrs. S., was the name by which Mr. Miller always called her in life. This was unknown to Mr. and Mrs. S. 'May' is her nickname for 'Mary'. The expression "my dear girl" addressed to his daughter Mary was his characteristic mode of addressing her while he was living. As soon as it was written, she exclaimed, 'How natural of papa'. The mother writes of it: "That would be the way my husband would speak of her."

The answer to Mrs. Miller's request to tell something that the

others would not know has some interest, although it is not complete. It appears, in the parlance of that expression as usually interpreted in the Piper case, that he meant to indicate that a Mary died after him. But this is not true of either Mrs. Miller's sister Mary or of his own mother Mary. But about this point Mrs. S. had an impression, which she wrote down immediately after the sitting. It is as follows: "Just before Mr. Miller went away I had an impression that there was something that was, or was to be, written that dated back to the time of Miss May Miller's birth. What it was I could not tell and after the sitting I told of the impression while we were talking." This statement is signed by the three persons present.

May 16th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. I began by asking Harrison Clarke to give us some specimens of mirror writing. The request was useless.

The sitting began with scrawls, first representing apparently hundreds of large circles drawn in a concentric form, and then similar large figures 8, the two sets covering the whole sheet. At the bottom of the sheet was written the name of George Miller in clear handwriting.

"George Miller. (I said his name was not Miller, but George Hall.) Hall Miller. (Write his whole name.) George Hall Charlton. (What is the name after 'Hall'?) Carlton Hall. have we got that right? (Is there another Mr. Hall?) no, Carlton Hall. (What is his name?) George Hall, Brother's name [name written very scrawly] you do not know us, yes. (What is the other Mr. Hall's name?) Charlton. that don't sound just like it ser, but that will do. I think it will do. (What is your message?) I am just practising so that I can do much better some other time."

This is interesting in as much as the Millers were not present. Mrs. Miller had a brother Charles, not Charlton, who is dead. George was the name of her uncle, mentioned at a previous sitting p. 253). Mr. and Mrs. S. say that they had never heard of this Charles Hall. The failure to get it exactly right prevents our making any cogent use of it in the case, unless we wish to treat "Charlton" and "Carlton" as possible attempts at it. In the light of this possibility the statement of Harrison Clarke, who might almost be recognised by his "ser", that the name did not sound right, is interesting.

May 20th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. We had planned sitting to have it private and had no intention of reporting it. We wished to hear from our little daughter Maude who had not communicated for several months. It had seemed to us as if she had left us and would not communicate again. We agreed to think of her during the afternoon and to earnestly wish to have her present, hoping that if she was away Harrison Clarke would get her for us. I was obliged to attend a wedding at 8 o'clock, and so did not return until half past eight. Then we sat down and again spoke of our little girl and wished for her to communicate. The results are as follows, entirely contrary to our expectations and wishes:

"[For some time nothing was written. Then came:] Hellen. (Is that word Helen?) yes, Hersey. (Hersey) yes, (Helen Hersey? Is that the name?) yes. (You may write what you please.) * * [Might be Sbenen, or Henen, or Horen, followed by several capital 's's.] Gelun [?] (We cannot read it.) [Mrs. S.'s arm became stiff and pained her. This was something unusual.] Leheol [?] Fo— [?] (We cannot read it.)

[Mrs. S. said at this point that she knew a girl by the name of Helen Hersey. She saw her, as she last remembers, March 8th, 1881. She has her autograph in her autograph book that she had when she was at the Gaston School in South Boston. Mrs. S. then got the book referred to and opened it at the place where this Helen Hersey had written her autograph. Mrs. S. does not know whether this girl is dead or not.]

(We know you. Tell us more about yourself.) We did not like that teacher * * * [two or three words undecipherable. Possibly the first is an attempt at the teacher's name.] (Please tell me the first word in the last sentence?) Hmlnn [Helen?] your wife knew me. (Did you write 'your wife night?') knew me * * (Go on. Write something that we know.) Lella [Lilla?] is here and so is Eva Daisy too. (Who is 'Daisy?') Semonds [Simonds] Lella [Lilla] is here and so is [scrawl] Eva. (We cannot read it. Who is 'Daisy?') Daisy Simonds. (Mrs. S.: I did not know that Daisy was dead or you either.) no, we are here. (You mean that you have passed to the other life.) Lela [Lila] is too and so is eva (What is the last word?) Eva. (Do you mean Etta?) no, Eva. (Do you mean Eva?) yes. (Eva Simonds?) no. (Eva who?) N [erased] [scrawls] White. Is that word White?) White. ['i' dotted and 't' crossed.] (Do you mean to tell us that Eva White, Daisy Simonds, and Helen Hersey are dead?) yes. [We know nothing about this, whether it is so or not. Mrs. S. knew the parties as school girls.] (Well you may go on.)

Lella is here too. (Stella?) no. (What is that name?) Lella White. (Lila White?) no. (Stella White?) no. (Go on, if you please.) * * field. (Field?) [scrawl.] yes. (Please write the whole name?) [A line was drawn under the part of the first word on the sheet that was not deciphered before 'field'.] (I cannot read it. Will you write the name again?) Jennie. (Jennie?) yes. (Did Jennie Field die?) She did, yes sir. (If you are Helen Hersey, you never knew Jennie Field.) no, but you did a little, and we were talking about when we were at School and we all knew you, so we are going to find out how many are left there. (Repeat after the word 'and'.) we all knew. (Go on. Who is writing now?) Hellen Hersey. [Written slowly.] (Mrs. S.: That was natural, Helen.) why? (Mrs. S.: You remember Miss Willett used to say to you, Helen, that you never knew how to move, you moved so slowly. She said that you would never get anywhere in the world.)

I am out of it now and she will be soon. then I can show her how to move. (Mrs. S.: Can you tell me what seat you used to sit in most of the time in that room at school?) yes. (Mrs. S.: Which one was it?) at 35. (That is wrong. How do you explain your error?)

[We figured it up and it was seat 40. There were 5 rows and 7 seats in a row, making 35. But Helen sat in the next row and her seat would have been the 40th in the room.]

I forgot to add in the fraction of a row. (That is all bosh. You did not know and so you tried to make believe. You did not know.) yes I did, but I never did like fractions. (Tell that to the marines. Do you think that you can make us believe that?) true, yes, I sat there enough. (Can you tell me where you died?) Dooschester, Wo— [First letter 'D' very doubtful, and it is followed by a scrawl that makes the whole much like a small 'f'.] (Is that word 'Dorchester'?) no, (What is that place?) Worchester. (Do you mean 'Worchester'?) no. (Do you mean 'Winchester' where you died?) I did not die. (But you passed out of this life.) yes. (Will you write the name of the place?) Woschester. [Very scrawly, then a scrawl like 'no' or 'Wo', followed by:] Worster. [Then another scrawl and] yes." [The sitting then came to a close with Mrs. S. considerably fatigued.]

There was some difficulty in finding out whether there was any truth in the "communications" purporting to come from Helen Hersey. Mr. Smead finally got into communication with the Miss Willett mentioned in the record and ascertained that Daisy Simonds and Eva White were dead. Mrs. Smead did not know this fact. They did not know any Lella White, but Mrs. Smead knew a Leah

White. It was found that she was still living at the time of the sitting. But Miss Willett knew nothing about Helen Hersey. After some difficulty it was found that she was still living and was married. Communication was established with her and it was found that her father and a brother were deceased. But it would be out of the question to assume the possibility of any "communications" from them. The whole sitting shows relevancy with Mrs. Smead's schoolmates. Nothing has yet been ascertained to confirm or deny the death of Jennie Field. It is clear that the messages purport to come from Helen Hersey. But with two correct hits and two mistakes and one indeterminate incident there is nothing in the sitting to support the supernormal of any kind. The confusion about the names and the spelling is the most interesting feature of the sitting. Miss Willett is still living, so that the implication of this fact in one of the messages is correct. It was strange that any mistake occurred about the number of the seat occupied by Helen Hersey in the school mentioned, as Mrs. Smead knew this fact apparently well enough.

"Mrs. S., while the sitting was in progress, was wearing Mrs. Hyslop's waist. This was done deliberately, thinking that if articles that had been used by the departed seemed to help Mrs. Piper, possibly this article would help Mrs. Hyslop to communicate. But there was no sign of her presence, no trembling of the hand such as had occurred in New York. Suggestion seemed to have no effect."

May 22nd, 1901. Present, Prof. X., Mrs. Miller and Miss May Eva Miller. Mrs. S. conscious about half of the time, having passed into the trance without being observed to do so. Writing began with the use of the planchette, but this was changed for the pencil at the suggestion of Prof. X. The latter placed his hand on Mrs. Smead's and with this arrangement she soon began to write.

"(Is there any one present?) yes. (Prof. X.: Write initials, thinking he might get those of a friend.) M. S. J. ['S' read as 'L' at the sitting. It may be this. Interpreted as referring to Maude L. Janes. Writing said to be characteristic of her. It is certainly different in character from the previous sitting. J. H. H.] (Maude, will you write your name?) ask you to * * [doubtful, possibly 'write'.] (Please to repeat.) ask you to write to Minnie. (Do you want me to write to Minnie?) no. (What do you want?) Mrs. Smead.

[We made some remark that we knew Maude and that Mrs. Miller and Miss May Miller did not. Mrs. Miller thought that it might be some friend that she knew, of her folks, etc., until this remark was made.]

Yes, they know me. (Do you want Mrs. S. to write to Minnie?) (Go on. Have you any message for us?) your little girl will come soon. She does not want to yet. (Why?) She will whe— (when) [Pencil ran off the sheet] she comes. (Repeat please.) she will when she comes. (You may write anything you please. Do you want Mrs. S. to ask Minnie anything?) no, only to write. (Have you any message for us?) Why do you w [erased] like this. we do not understand ['a' for 'u']. (To what does this refer?) I do not know what you call it. (Do you mean this writing?) Yes. We have reasons to desire this. We wish to know if the intelligence is really a spirit. Will you not prove that to us. We shall be very grateful.) I have before ser. (Prof. X.: Will you give us something more overwhelming in its evidence?) You have not told Florence what I told you to yet. [This is correct. We had forgotten to do so.]

(Prof. X.: Could you find my friend and bring her to write for me?) I will try to ser. (Prof. X.: I shall be very glad to have a message from that friend. I expect a message from her.) H. C. (Good evening, Mr. Clarke.) so you sent her away did you? (Yes, I am very desirous of hearing from that friend.) We will try to help her to write. (I shall be very much obliged for your assistance.) when she comes. (Will she come tonight?) Yes. (Have you talked with her, Mr. Clarke?) the last time you came she tried, but failed. (Did she give you a message, Mr. Clarke?) no, I told you she must do it herself. [Large clear letters.] (Have you anything to write while we are waiting, Mr. Clarke?) I told you that before. (What did you tell us before?) that I knew best. (Prof. X.: We have come to believe that, Mr. Clarke. Will you give us any message you please?) ye—

[At this stage Mrs. S.'s arm became badly cramped. She could not drop the pencil for some time. She complained of pain in the arm, so that we stopped the sitting and allowed her to rest.]

(Prof. X.: Are you still here, Mr. Clarke?) Yes, you did not get me away, did you? [Then in answer to some unrecorded question regarding the previous message.] * * did you me yes. (Prof. X.: We want you to write, Mr. Clarke. We think you are an old friend.) Yes, that is good. (Prof. X.: Can you do as well with my hand off, Mr. Clarke?) I do not wish to because you can prove to yourself that it is not her.

[I made some remarks that Mr. Clarke intended to impress Prof. X. that he was really here, and that Mrs. S. was not the cause of the writing. Prof. X. did not see the point.]

Well it ['it' erased.] if your hand is here you can be a better

judge and [letter 'd' erased in a manner evidently intended to cover the whole word] and you can tell them that you expect— [pencil ran off the sheet. New sheet given] bet [erased] a better judge [Evidently asked here to repeat.] and so you can tell them [apparently another similar request] knew better about it. [Apparently another also.] so.

(Prof. X.: Will you take a mental question from me, Mr. Clarke?) why? why? (Prof. X.: In order that I may know that Mrs. S. knows nothing about it.) no. (Prof. X.: Will you try, Mr. Clarke?) yes. [Prof. X. now put his mental question. It was: 'How many minutes will it take for my friend to come and write?']

[The control at once changed and apparently Clarke was gone. Prof. X. noted the fact as indicated in the action of the hand which at once became more limp. In a few moments the writing began again.]

* * Helena, yes mss (?) [might be 'Miss'.] (Please repeat what you last wrote.) W E L W (?) (Cannot read it.) Th * * (It is not clear.) * * (Prof. X.: Is my friend here?) Yes. (Prof. X.: Will my friend write her name?) [The control at once changed. This is apparent in the easy clear handwriting.] she will if she can see, get her a paper. (We did so.) Lillian * * Yo— [Here Mrs. S. became entranced. I was a little worried by it and got up to bring her out of it, when the hand wrote 'no'. I said, 'Is she all right?' and the hand wrote 'yes'. I then let her remain. Several little questions of no importance were asked regarding this friend and the replies are not readable.]

[I detect among them in one instance a tolerably clear attempt at 'Winifred Hyslop'. The letters are 'Winifred Hy— with the second 'i' doubtful. The syllable 'Win' appears in two of the other attempts, but the rest of the letters bear no resemblance to the remainder of the proper word. If I recollect rightly the attempts resemble those which were acknowledged in New York in March to be attempts at 'Winifred'. On the next sheet there are a lot of circular scrawls, and amid them are found first apparently a figure 3 followed by the capital letter 'L' or 'T', then 'Lop' or 'Top', and a word like March. J. H. H.]

(Prof. X.: I should think that she could write all right. She was so bright mentally while living.) Your friend will need to learn just like the rest of us. [Evidently a request to repeat some of it.] learn. the rest of us. (Prof. X.: Will you ask her name? Perhaps, if she cannot write it you can do so for her, Mr. Clarke.) I have tried to tell her how to do it. (Prof. X.: Will you write her first name for her, only that, Mr. Clarke?) I think it best that shed ['d' erased] should do it herself. (Prof. X.: Tell me the city in which I last saw her.) no. no * * let (?) her. (Prof. X.: Will she write it tonight?) when she gets control she will do it.

(Can she tonight?) no, it is too hard for her. let her see how I do it a few times."

[Prof. X. requested that Mrs. S. be permitted to come out of the trance easily and without discomfort. She woke up all right.]

There is nothing special to remark regarding this sitting, except that the name "Lillian" has no significance to Prof. X., nor to the others present. Where I have recognized a possible reference to the name "Winifred" I had in mind my little daughter whom Mrs. S. met while in New York. There is too much doubt about the reading, however, to even lay any stress upon it in favor of secondary personality. Besides, no matter what the pertinence of the results little stress could be placed upon them when we consider that Prof. X. had his hand at times upon that of Mrs. S.

May 30th, 1901. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. Mr. S. hoped that Harrison Clarke would appear, as it was his intention to tell him an incident that he had learned that day. Harrison Clarke did not make his appearance. Instead Sylvester came.

"(Whoever is here may write.) Your what you call it. (Please write it over again.) your what you call it Billy. (I do not understand.) (Go on.) your (Do you mean the word 'your'?) yes, you said who was doing it, read it. (What do you mean by it?) never mind, Billy. Mother is feeling bad tonight. they put flowers there. (On your grave?) Yes, why does she always mourn, Billy. we are not dead. I wish she would not. tell her to— (I will.) [sheet changed] you o [erased] know Joie ['i' dotted] allways would make her feel so. you know he is sad and mournful. it was enough to kill a living person to hear him. (Word after 'kill'?) living. I heard him today. (Go on. Did you go to New York with Mrs. S.?) when. (In March?) yes. but she stayed. (Did you not stay?) no. (Why did you not stay?) there were others there. (Who was there?) there was one young man. I heard them call James. I did not stop, just passed on. I went back. I just stayed too (?) [erased] around near there, and when I saw them writing and talking I just heard this ['this' erased] an older gentleman say James and I did not stop, but came back to mother to comfort her. (Do you hear me, Sylvester?) yes. (Will you be here when Dr. Hyslop is here?) no, cannot, I am sorry. (Why not?) I am very busy. (What are you doing?) ask them to find out. (Whom do you mean by 'them'?) your friends that are coming. (Will you wait a little while, so I can see what is written?) not long. (Have

you any other reason?) I[f] they can find me I will come. (Passage read to see if it was right.) yes. (Will you please to come?) let them come and find me if they can. (How can busy people find you?) not that. they are coming. [Read to see if it was right.] yes. (Whom do you mean?) you will know when they get here. (Who is meant by 'they'?) this James living here, not on your earth, Billy. (Do you know his last name?) no, good bye. (Come again some time.) yes. (Come soon.) no."

There are some incidents of interest in this sitting. Mr. S. ascertained from his father the next morning by telephone that Mr. Smead's mother had been feeling quite badly all day of the 30th and that she and her husband had talked about decorating their son Sylvester's grave with flowers, but finally decided not to do it because of the long grass on the grave and in the cemetery as the day was rather wet. It was therefore postponed.

The brother Joseph was usually called Joe in the family, but when his brother Sylvester wanted to tease and annoy him he called him *Joie*. Other members of the family sometimes teased him in the same way. Of course Mr. and Mrs. S. knew this fact, but they did not know the intention of the father and mother in regard to the grave. This brother Joe is a very melancholy temperament. I append the personal statements of the father and brother.

The father says: "Relative to the question you asked me through the telephone, mother was very much troubled concerning the decorating of Sylvester's grave and felt very badly because she could not do it."

Mr. Joseph Smead, the brother called "Joie" in the record, writes: "I was at home in Methuen, Mass., that day and mother was feeling badly because she could not go to the grave where Sylvester was buried, and said it was the first Decoration Day that she had not put flowers on Sylvester's grave, and I told her that Sylvester knew how badly she felt about it and she said she believed he did.

"It was raining quite hard and mother was afraid of getting more cold and so she could not go.

"I was feeling very badly about not being able to go there. I was feeling badly because Sylvester was dead. I told mother how badly I felt. I told her how I hated to go to his grave as I wanted to think of Sylvester as living and not in any way associate him with the grave stone and the earth. And yet I thought I ought to go and

put some flowers there, and I was even on the point of going out and buying some, and decorating it myself, but mother did not go and so I gave it up. I told mother all this and I think I made mother feel badly because I felt so.

"Besides I was greatly troubled that day about some private personal matters. I told mother about what was troubling me. I felt that if Sylvester had only lived I should not have had so much trouble. I told mother how I felt that day."

Mr. and Mrs. S. of course knew of this habit of decorating Sylvester's grave and the fact greatly qualifies the significance of the message. It would have been a most important fact otherwise.

The reader will remember that at my sittings in New York (p. 324) I got the name James, which could have no importance evidentially for reasons indicated in the record. It is curious to observe here, however, the narration of events as they would be on "the other side" in regard to that name. The narrative is all very plausible and possible, but non-evidential. Quite as curious also is the reference to a "James" as "living" on the "other side", as I had an uncle James McClellan deceased who had been a "communicator" in my experiments with Mrs. Piper, the Report of which was not published for some months afterward. But my articles in *Harper's Magazine* had been accessible to Mr. and Mrs. Smead and had been read. Besides I had probably mentioned this uncle and his name in telling them incidents of the sittings.

The next few sittings were my own personal experiments. I had arranged for them and it was these which Mr. Smead had in mind when asking if his brother Sylvester would be present.

May 31st, 1901. Present, J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil used. Mrs. S. conscious the whole time, but evidently confused. The writing did not begin for about twenty minutes. This time was taken up by waiting and occasional remarks by Mr. S. to the effect that the communicator could write. Just before the writing began Mrs. S. remarked that her arm felt as if some one was holding it.

The first indication of the writing was the slow movement of the pencil across the sheet of paper. Then there was an attempt to make a letter apparently, but this ended in a scrawl. Then followed a clear James. I give it in the dialogue form.

"James. (Very well, write on.) yes you know (Yes, when you can tell me the name.) Mary. (Very well, Mary, that's right, is it?) yes. [several words undecipherable] (Well, Mary, can you tell me what you were doing before we were married?) [word undecipherable.] (I can't read it. Write it again, please.) study, yes. (What did you study?) German. (Yes, all right, anything else?) Music. (What did you do after you came home?) taught. (What did you teach?) music. (Do you remember your most intimate friend out there?) yes. (All right.)

[There was a pause here and I asked the communicator if she wanted to rest. No answer was made to this, and I continued my question.]

(Do you remember your most intimate friend where you taught music?) yes. (Very well, who was it? You know what I want.) [The answer is not readable.] (I can't read that.) [Answer again illegible.] (Write that again.) [No answer.] (Is she married?) yes. (Write her maiden name clearly.) [Answer undecipherable, except that the first word looks very much like 'mama'.] "

It was evident that the writing was becoming more difficult and I remarked that we had better close the sitting. I was too ill myself to continue. It is very noticeable that the writing is like that which occurred in New York. It is the same wavy style, and was exceedingly slow and difficult.

As to the facts in the case they are as follows. I was rather expecting my father to appear first and was surprised to find the name of my wife written so promptly. Evidently the order of my thoughts had nothing to do with the result. Of course Mrs. S. knew this much of my wife's name and no importance can be attached to thus getting it. But Mrs. S. did not know the other facts given. My wife spent five years in Germany studying the German language and music. After her return to this country she taught music, as indicated in the answer to my question. When I asked for the name of her friend I had in mind a certain lady also well known to me, but the fact seems to have had no influence on the writing. As I could not read it I soon thought of another lady that was intimate with my wife whom my question might suggest. She is married, and my question was rightly answered for what I had in mind. But there is no clear trace of the name.

I should remark regarding this sitting that it occupied about an hour and a half. This will serve as an index of how slow the writing was. It should also be observed that when I asked the question

'What were you doing before we were married?' I was thinking of my wife's teaching. When the reply came that she was studying I thought of her studying music, and expected that answer to my further question to know what she was studying. The reply 'German', though correct, was not what I was thinking of. The reply to my next question was what I wanted.

June 1st, 1901. Present, J. H. Hyslop, Prof. X., Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil used. Mrs. S. conscious, though betraying some evidence of tending to go into the trance which may have been resisted. Prof. X. present after the sitting began. This will be noted at the proper place. Ten minutes elapsed before the writing began. Several remarks were made to the effect that any one present might write.

"Yes me Mary, yes. (I can read only the first and second 'yes'. What are the other words?) me Mary. (Is that Mary, 'me Mary'?) it is me. (Shall I let you tell your own story?) this is so hard * * (Is it hard work?) * * (Very good, take your time.) there is so much to say an[d] then [it] is so hard can you understand? (Yes, I understand. Whenever you get ready tell what you wish.) Tell auntie that I thank her, James, for the care she—she * * [undecipherable. One word possibly 'George' or 'young'.] my dear little ones. (Which auntie do you mean?) why auntie Braine. (Yes, all right.) [scrawl.] he sh she told me she would come to stay she did you rem—"

[Prof. X. had arrived a few minutes before and noticing that the writing was slow and difficult remarked at this point that he might help it by holding his hand on the pencil and Mrs. S.'s hand. While there was a pause he held his finger first on the pencil and then his hand on Mrs. S.'s, slightly clutching it. Nothing occurred and his hand was removed. There was then a long pause and various arrangements were made to make Mrs. S. rest comfortably. Then Prof. X. again placed his hand upon the hand of Mrs. S., holding it so that he could influence its movements consciously or unconsciously. Presently the writing began.]

Mrs. Miss Miss * * [Letters might be 'Mreme Ruis'] Miss Millee (Prof. X.: Write the last name again.) Millee. (Is that name Miller?) yes, Minnie * * * * Dr. Minies Miller (Minnie Miller?) Dr. Miller, yes. Mr. Xenos knows me. (Prof. X.: Where did I know you? Where did you live?) Kansas City. [Period inserted.] (Prof. X.: Where did I meet you in Kansas City? At what place?) [There was a pause here and another, the following, question asked.] (What official position, if any, did you

hold when I knew you?) * * (Write it again, please.) Mer * * minister. (Prof. X.: Do you mean to say Dr. Miller, a minister? Is not that a mistake?) [No answer.]

[Prof. X. removed his hand and went across the room and sat down. He said that he knew such a minister, and was thinking of Emporia, Kansas, when he first saw the name written, as he had met this Dr. Miller there. This Dr. Miller was a teacher and minister and died, according to the statement of Prof. X., about fifteen years ago. He talked considerably about him, Mrs. S. being perfectly conscious and in her normal state. He remarked that he met the man at a normal institute in Emporia, while he, Prof. X., was principal of the High School. It then occurred to him that he should have asked for the initials of his name. The sitting was resumed with the intention of bringing these out.]

"(Prof. X.: Is Dr. Miller still here?) W. S. Miller. (Prof. X.: Where did I meet you? Tell me something to identify you.) when y (ou) Knew me you were superintendent, once you were my teacher * * teach— (Prof. X.: Did I know any member of your family?) yes, you knew my wife * * [Might be Emily. Some conjectures were made as to the reading and Emma or Emily supposed when the writing was resumed.] no * * Mrs. Mill— (?) Miss Miller Minie (?) (Miss Minnie?) yes. (Prof. X.: What relation did I sustain to her, if any?) teacher, yes. (Prof. X.: I was her teacher, do you mean?) yes. (Prof. X.: What was my official position at the time?) normal (Write it again.) normal teacher, yes. (Prof. X.: What relation did I sustain to her after this?) [No answer. Pause.] (Prof. X.: What became of the daughter? Did she afterwards marry?) [No reply. Sitting came to a close.] "

In explanation of the contents of the writing it is necessary to say that the name of my housekeeper is Brain. It was spelled wrongly by Mrs. S. She knew well enough in her normal state how to spell it. Mrs. S. also knew her personally and what was said in reference to her offers its own explanation, especially when I remark that the children always call her "auntie". My wife knew Mrs. Brain and was a warm friend of hers, and besides Mrs. Brain was in the house at the time of my wife's death. I do not know whether my wife ever alluded to her as auntie in the presence of the children. But no importance can attach to this fact except to say that it is not as absolute proof of secondary personality as it might have been, though I do not consider any other interpretation as credible.

The only incident apparently supernormal was the writing of the name Miller and the accompanying details. As already said Prof.

X. knew a Dr. Miller who was a teacher in a business college in Emporia, Kansas. He also knew a daughter who was student under himself and afterward a teacher under him when he was superintendent of the High School. He thinks the initials of Dr. Miller were W. O., instead of W. S. In the reference to "normal teacher", "superintendent", and the statement that Prof. X. was the teacher of Dr. Miller's daughter would be fine evidence of secondary personality on the part of Mrs. S. were it not that Prof. X. himself had his hand on the hand of Mrs. S. The subconscious muscular action of Prof. X. would be as largely a cause under the circumstances as that of anyone. The only fact suggesting the subliminal of Mrs. S. was the allusion to Dr. Miller as the teacher of Prof. X. If the facts had been obtained by Mrs. S. alone and without the presence of Prof. X.'s hand on hers there might be very good evidence of the supernormal of some kind. But the complication of Prof. X.'s own secondary personality with the result precludes certainty as to that of Mrs. S.

June 3rd, 1901. Pencil used. Mrs. S. conscious. Present, Prof. X. with myself and Mr. S. No results.

Prof. X. began as on the evening before to suggest that the writing could proceed and one held the pencil for a few moments above Mrs. S.'s hand. A few minutes later he moved to place his hand on hers as on the evening previous, but I protested so vigorously that he retired. Twenty-five minutes elapsed before the pencil began to move. When it did it moved very slowly and succeeded only in making some lines on the sheet with two attempts to write a word or words that are illegible. There were frequent pauses. After fifty minutes of this I insisted on bringing the sitting to a close, and it was done.

The entire failure was probably due to the intrusion of Prof. X., as it had put a stop the evening before to the writing that I was getting. Mrs. S. also resented his interference very naturally, as I did, and she was in no mood to do any subliminal work.

After the sitting Mrs. S. narrated the details of an apparition which she saw during the attempt to write. It represented a soldier standing under the table near her and toward which she was looking. She saw only the face and upper part of the body. She thought him

an officer in the Civil War. He looked like a mounted guard with very short whiskers all about his face, thin face, blue eyes, wearing epaulets, gold braid and buttons, and wearing a general's hat.

June 4th, 1901. Pencil used. Present, only Mrs. S. and myself. Mrs. S. unconscious most of the time. Time, 7:25 to 8:35. Seven minutes elapsed before the pencil began to move. During this period I first asked if anyone was present, and twice if Mr. Clarke was there, the second time just after the pencil began to move.

"Marmond (Is that word Marmond?) no. (Was it started for Mary?) no, H (Was that last letter H?) yes. (Was the word Harmond?) yes, you know. (Who was Harmond? You have not got it quite right.)

[I here thought of a young girl we had as a servant one summer in the country. Her name was Harmon, not Harmond. I thought the intention was to mention spontaneously the place and incidents connected therewith. The words 'you know' were written indistinctly and I said.]

(Press a little harder. I am not sure. I want to see it written out here.) you d— Harmond. (Harmony?) no, no, Harmond. (Harmond?) yes, (Now can you tell me what that name means? Where did you learn that name?) [The hand at once began to tremble slightly. I could detect only the letter 'L' in the reply. Its meaning became apparent later.]

(This is you, is it, Mary?) y—it is me. (Well, write clearly where you learned that name which you wrote.) Liebsc. [All but 'L', 's', and 'c' unintelligible to me at the time.] (I cannot read that.) Germany. (Germany?) yes. [more emphatically and distinctly written. Also it is interesting to note that the 'y' of the word 'Germany' was used for the first letter of 'yes'.] do not you read it? (Yes, the word you wrote was Germany. That was not what you meant.) not that. (All right. You can try it again. You know exactly why I want it written.) Leipsic. (Is that word Leipsic?) that is it. [There was no doubt in my mind as to the name, but I wanted confirmation by rewriting it. The previous attempts became clear.] (Very good, Mary. Now can you name any one we met there?) * * (Was the first letter M?) yes. (Now try the rest.) * * (I can't read it, Mary.) * * (Don't try any more. Let me try another question. What did you do in Leipsic?) I studied there music. (That's right.) you know. (Yes, I know.) yes. (Now go on.) yes after while it will get easier. yes, I try to help you, th(i)s right. ['This right' written in slightly larger letter and more distinctly.] (I can't read all of it.)

which. (Do you remember a young boy you met in Leipsic?) yes. * * [not distinctly legible. It might be 'maine' or an attempt at that which would have been right. Had I been able to read it at the sitting as now, my next question would not have been put as it was, but I suspected the attempt, and so put the question so as to have the correction made without any suggestion.] (Is that word 'many'?) no, not this * * (Are you getting tired?) * * [possibly 'it is hard', followed by a clear 'gone'.] gone. (Who wrote 'gone'?) [No reply.] "

The facts which will make the incidents of this sitting intelligible are that my wife studied music in Leipsic, Germany, and that she called me by a nickname that I suspected after the sitting was intended by the name "Harmond", though this was a mistake far removed from it in all except the first three letters. I resolved at the next sitting to test this matter. She met there a young boy whose name if it had been clearly given would have been positive proof of the supernormal. But it is not clear enough to be certain of it. The reason that I asked if it was "many" was that I wished to make it certain without suggesting it, and as the nature of the continuous writing in these sittings makes every word end in a line which might be interpreted as "y" I read it purposely as "many". It was not corrected. I cannot attach conclusive weight to the two names Leipsic and Germany and the statement that she studied music there, though there is absolutely no reason to suppose that Mrs. S. knew anything about the facts either in this or the sitting of May 31st. The sceptical difficulty which has to be overcome is the possibility that she may have suspected, while in New York, from the piano in the house and the music lessons that my little boy was taking then that my wife was a music teacher. This once suspected, the fact that Leipsic is one of the few places where music can be studied in a special way, or is a frequent resort of music lovers, a fact known to almost all persons, we can see how the subliminal might do some effective guessing. What was needed was a clear answer to my two questions, one asking for the name of an intimate friend where she taught and the other for the name of that young boy.

June 5th, 1901. Pencil used. Present, Mr. S. and myself. Mrs. S. conscious for 15 minutes, but began going into the trance at the

end of this period. Sitting began at 7:25 and ended at 8:40. Hand began to shake slightly at 7:35. Pencil began to move a minute or two later.

" [Scrawl, possibly 'yes'.] yes * * [possibly an attempt at 'Mary'.] (Write distinctly. Is that you, Mary?) yes. (Now one word I did not get certainly the last time. It was the first word. Can you spell it out one letter at a time and in capitals?) H A R M O N D. (Harmond. Is that right?) yes. [New sheet given.] yes H (?) If I could talk (Yes, all right.) I would (Yes, I understand.) tell you, yes. (Yes. Tell me important words. I can tell what you are trying to do. Can you tell me what you called me in Leipsic?) you * * [two words undecipherable.] Hislop [first two letters doubtful and the last with some resemblance to small 'n'.] (All right. Wait a moment.) [Sheet changed.] yes, is (?) (Is it too hard?) yes. (Give me any word or name that you can recall, for instance, your room mate where you taught music.) * * (Write it again in capital letters.) [Illegible scrawl.] (You had better rest and get my father here. Have you seen him?) many Hysslop, (Yes, all right.) yes. (Have you tried to reach me through Mrs. Piper?) yes (What was the reason you did not communicate?) you did not come. [Written in scrawly and wavy letters, but in heavier lines.] (Have you seen Imperator? You remember Rector and Imperator.) [Scrawls with some resemblance to three separate 'y's'.] (Did father take you to Mrs. Piper?) yes [?] he did. (Is there anything special you want to say?) yes. (All right, you may say it.) do [?] you know it is very hard. I am trying to help you. (All right, Mary, I am glad to know that.) yes, I knew you to ['to' erased] would be [The pencil then moved toward my hand across the sheet until it almost touched it and then wrote.] James. [Noticing that the pencil was getting dull I put another into the fingers of Mrs. S. and changed the sheet. Immediately was written in clear strong letters.] this is yours. (Yes.) I like it [not read at once] better. (Write that word after 'yours' again.) I like it. (How did you know it was mine?) you gave it me just now. [Pause, and then some straight lines were drawn across the sheet.] (Had we better stop now, Mary?) [Letters superposed in the answer.] (You are writing the letters over each other.) Good night, James. (Good night, Mary, we will have one more evening together.) good, yes, more to—going now."

I had asked for the rewriting of the first word of the previous sitting because, as remarked above, I had suspected after the sitting that "Harmond" was an attempt at my nickname in Germany,

known to only one other person living and possibly forgotten by her. The "Harmond" was rewritten out according to my request and without hesitation. No suggestion came from me as to what I wanted or what I wanted it for. The word is wrong. I know nothing of its meaning unless it is a confused attempt at the name of the boy asked for. I tried to get the word by directly asking for what I was called in Leipsic, but the scrawls that I received for an answer bear no resemblance or indication of what I wanted. Neither does the answer to my request for the name of her roommate where she taught music.

The episode of recognizing my pencil which I had taken from my pocket was interesting, especially as Mrs. S. was in the trance. But the subliminal might have recognized it from its temperature and the fact that Mrs. S. saw me sharpen it before we sat down. I had never given her one before, and Mr. S. does not keep the pencils he uses in his pocket. But throughout the sitting there is absolutely no trace of anything that can claim to be supernatural.

After my arrival home and careful inquiries which I at once made I obtained clear evidence of secondary personality in regard to the incident of studying German. My little boy is studying this language at school and one day while speaking of the fact with Mrs. S. while on her visit in March my housekeeper remarked of his mother that she was "a splendid German scholar". This circumstance would afford a hint for a great many true things which the subconscious might safely venture to assert or infer. The circumstance also shows how little we can rely upon messages obtained under such circumstances. No one knows what may be inadvertently dropped in this way and forgotten, only to turn up in the necessities of subliminal operations. This remark is strengthened by a circumstance which shows that I was correct in March in not attaching any value to the names obtained in my sittings, wholly apart from the doubtful reading of some of them. Three times recently (June 26th) I have heard my housekeeper speak of my youngest child in both her Christian names and know nothing about it afterward. Such slips may have occurred with both my younger children in March and in the presence of Mrs. S., whether she noticed it or not. All sorts of inadvertent remarks may thus be recorded and turn up to astound us in our search for the supernatural.

The general consequence is that there is no trace, whatever of

any supernormal process by Mrs. S. in any of these last sittings. Not a word or expression can be found that cannot be explained by secondary personality or is not definite evidence that it is this. There was a bare possibility that the reference to Mrs. Brain, my house-keeper, contained one incident which might have involved something of importance. It was the statement of the promise of Mrs. Brain to care for my children. Something occurred at the time of my wife's death to make this possible, but inquiry shows that it did not occur, and I thought it extremely improbable from the nature of the circumstances which I cannot explain here, that it should occur though possible. Inquiry, however, shows that nothing of the kind took place and not a coincidence in the six sittings has a mark of supernormal character about it.

Sittings were not immediately resumed after the date of the last record owing to private reasons which have no interest for the public but which made it necessary for Mrs. S. to have quiet and rest. In July, however, Mrs. S. found it possible to continue the experiments at judicious intervals. The record, therefore, proceeds as usual.

July 6th (1901). Present Mr. and Mrs. S., Mrs. Frank Miller, Miss May Eva Miller and Mr. J. L. Smead. Planchette used.

[Some unrecorded question or statement was made, perhaps such as "If any one is here he may write". This was followed by a straight line, and then an undecipherable word or words, though the lines seem intelligible and regular enough.]

"(Who is here?) Frank W. Miller. [Not read at first.] (Is this mirror work?) No. Frank W. Miller. [Written clearly.] (Are we right in thinking that this is Frank W. Miller?) Yes. (What have you to say to us?) Where have you been? [Followed by a scrawl across the page.] [The next question was lost.] Why not Jennie? (Have you a message for us?) Yes, I want to tell [scrawls.] want to tell you to tell you much, my mind is confused when I try to remember. When we are [New sheet given.] when we are here we would like to talk just as we did when here with you, but we cannot [scrawl.] we [scrawl.] just [?] try * * [possibly "to".] do the best we can ["can" written scrawly.] Mother is here and so [scrawl.] others. It is hard to

write and listen both. We try and write the best we can. [Some unrecorded question.] Yes, no [?] Mother is here and so [Sheet changed.] mother is here and so i—— are others and it is hard very [?] hard to write [?] [Sheet changed.] write when so many [Sheet changed] so many are talking. It tires us [scrawls.] Good night, Mary, Jennie, all."

There are no evidential incidents in this sitting and only some statements regarding the difficulties of memory and confusion involved in the attempt to communicate which are like statements and incidents in the Piper phenomena. It is not possible to determine how much these are affected by the subliminal of Mrs. S. The most that can be said is that they may reflect opinions formed in her ordinary conscious states.

No further sittings seem to have been held until September 2nd. But in the meantime the sudden death of the older of their two children was connected with some incidents having an interest to psychical research. This child, Cecil by name, took sick on Sunday morning August 25th (1901), possibly poisoned by eating some canned shrimps, and died on the evening of the same day. Mrs. S. apparently had some premonitory experiences which were afterward thought to point possibly to some event of the kind. They were narrated to Prof. and Mrs. Xenos on the morning after the death of the child and they sign their names to this fact. The account of the experiences was written out by Mr. S. on the date of September 2nd at the dictation of Mrs. S. The experiences seem to have taken place on the day of the child's sickness and death. The following is the account.

"Cecil was resting on the couch in the sitting room. He was dressed. He had only a slight fever so far as I could judge. I was not in the least nervous in regard to him. I had no thoughts that he was so soon to die. Willis and George (Mr. S. and the younger child) were at church. Cecil and I were talking while I was fixing my hair. I heard a very heavy step as if a man was coming up the cellar stairs. He came up to the top and tried the door, so that it shook the whole room where I was. It frightened me. I heard the knob turn. I tried to be quiet and sat down. I did not tell Cecil. I kept still and listened and for some time, five minutes or so, I expected to see some one walk into the room from the shed. I finally found that they did not come in,

and then I waited to hear the person turn back and go down stairs, but heard nothing. I did not go to the door. I thought it best to stay in my room with Cecil. All this occurred at about 11.30 a. m. on this Sunday of his death. At the time of this occurrence I did not have any idea that he was sick enough to have a doctor see him and had no possible thought of his coming death.

Between one and half-past one o'clock of this same day, when Willis and George were at Sunday school, Cecil and I were in the same room. He was on the couch asleep. I was sitting in the Morris chair reading a magazine. I had no thoughts of Cecil's critical condition when he woke up and wished Papa and George would come home. He then shut his eyes and went to sleep again. Then I seemed to be about half conscious, in a state of stupor or trance, or approaching to this condition when I saw the most beautiful hall I had ever seen. The walls were of gold. It was about eight feet wide and from fifteen to twenty feet long. The floor was either crystal or gold, which I cannot be sure. It was very bright. I thought as I saw it: 'Is not this the most beautiful place I have ever seen. I wonder where it is. I was never here before. I have never seen anything like it.' Then I began to wonder what made it so light, since I could not see any windows through which the light could come, when I seemed to be impressed with the pureness and brightness of it. Then a voice spoke to me and said: 'Can you not see that there is no need of the Sun here?' So far I had seen no one. I still wondered at the beauty and brightness of what I was looking at when, at the farther end (of the hall) a lovely little spirit came running towards me. I do not know where this spirit came from, for there did not seem to be any doors or windows, and as she or he (I could not distinguish which, it came so rapidly) neared me I thought apparently without taking time to think, 'Is this Maude? Or is it that I am to lose our little one which God has not yet left to our care? (referring to a prospective birth). Is it Cecil?' The little spirit called 'Mamma, Mamma,' and I saw it lay its head back and its beautiful eyes closed and it vanished, I being left to wonder at its meaning. As I seemed to come to myself there was a strange odor in the room and I thought that perhaps Cecil was to have the scarlet fever and that when his father came

home I would send for the doctor. When my husband came in then Cecil awakened from his sleep and asked me if Papa and George had come from Sunday school. I told him that they were coming just as they stepped upon the first step and then I told his father to see how he was and call or get the doctor, which was done at once."

There was also an incident in the death of the child that may have some interest, though it has no evidential characteristics. It is simply one of those death bed occurrences which might be observed in many cases and which could only have evidential value if we could afterward obtain communications under proper conditions indicating the same incidents. Mrs. S. reports the facts to me after making a record of them and at my request. The record is as follows. The date of the occurrence was, of course, August 25th, and the record was made on September 2nd.

"While Cecil was passing from this to the other life he at first asked me: 'What makes it so dark?' It was only about 3 p. m. and very light in the room. I told him that it was not dark and he said: 'But it is Mamma'. I did not even then realise that he was passing through the valley and the shadow of death. Then when I talked to him he jumped up and pointed towards the top of the room and cried: 'Mamma don't let that man get me'.

"I took him in my arms and told him there was no one there. He replied: 'But I see him Mamma'. After this I talked to him and he quieted down for a few moments, and as he seemed to rally from the stupor he again jumped up in the bed and reaching out both his hands cried: 'Mamma, don't let them up there get me. They are throwing ropes down trying to get me. They will hurt me. Don't, Mamma, let them get me'.

"I still told him that he was with Mamma and that I could not see any one. He cried out again and reached for the ropes which, of course, were invisible to me, and when he caught them the first time, he said: 'Take them away', and threw them back to the invisible ones. It seemed as if the invisible intelligences lowered these ropes again to him. This time he reached out and caught them and then said: 'Got them, Mamma. Get the scissors and cut them quick, quick, quick'. This was said by him

very rapidly. I replied: 'I would, Cecil, if I could, but I cannot see them, my dear boy.' He then said: 'Cut them Mamma.'

"I was afraid that he was suffering too much as he was lying on his left side, and I told the nurse that, as he was getting quieter, perhaps we could turn him over, when he either heard me, or the invisible intelligences were still waiting for him and trying to get him to take these ropes. He jumped up just a little and reached out and cried: 'Got it, got it, got it', and then sank back very easily and closed his eyes, and the nurse and I turned him quietly and he did not wake again. His soul was then in that eternal world which he always loved to talk about."

On September 2nd, 1901, a sitting was held in which apparently there was an attempt on the part of the deceased child to "communicate". The writing was accompanied with some confusion and difficulty and the letters for "Papa" were generally in capitals. But nothing of importance seems to have been accomplished. Mr. S. did not see fit to transcribe the sitting and unfortunately either did not save or certainly did not send me the questions which were asked and which were marked in the usual manner on the original manuscript, so that I cannot give as intelligible an account of the record as otherwise would be the case.

I returned the original manuscript, however, to Mr. S. at his request and he has reproduced the questions as nearly as he could from memory. Mr. S. says that they are only approximately correct. They will probably be better than no record of them.

September 2nd, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Mrs. S. conscious. First sitting after the death of the child Cecil.

"(Go on. Whoever is present may write.) [Scrawl.] Yes, we w [Sheet changed.] (Tell me if any one is here.) we here. (Who is it?) [Scrawl.] (I cannot read it. Write it so I can.) Maude. (Write what you wish. Have you seen Cecil, Maude?) Yes, he is * * [Read by Mr. S. as 'to in'.] heaven. (Go

on.) [Scrawls representing lines and loops across the sheet.] (Is Cecil here?) Yes. (Let Cecil write if he can, if he is here.) Cecil [very scrawly.] maMa PAPA GE Oe [George.] (All right my boy. Go on.) [Lines.] PAPA. YES. (That was good, Cecil. We are very glad to hear from you. Keep on and try to write.) [Lines across the sheet with 'YES' erased at one end and 'no' written at the other end.] (You may come when you can. We love to have you come. Come all you can and learn to write to us.) Cecil will try. [Handwriting changed here to the usual style. Probably written by Maude.] (Go on.) Cecil loves [Lines, pointing to Mr. and Mrs. S.] YES."

September 5th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. Sitting held about 9 p. m. Nothing special to suggest the particular communicator or the line and style of communications. The sitting began with prayer.

"[A scrawl something like the letter 'w'.] (Who is here?) Sylvester Smead, your brother J. Houston (Do you mean my brother Sylvester and Mrs. Smead's brother John Houston?) Yes. (Have you any message for us, Sylvester?) Cecil John is happy. He wants mama too [to] know he loves her more now, and Willis to know, we should say his papa, your brother was with me when he came here and he did not know him, so was some afraid and we were careful not to hurt him. (Will you wait until I can read what has been written? Shall we keep our hands on the planchette?) Yes, keep them on. (Where is Cecil now?) playing (How is it that he is not here?) It is not best yet Ida. (Mrs. S.: Sylvester, if my brother is here what has he to say?) he is here, but has not written for so long. He says he loves Papa and Mama and so he will be near them for the time that is coming to them. I will tell you some time before very long, he said. (Who?) he Ida's brother said it. (He Ida's brother said it?) Yes.

(What was the cause of Cecil's death?) God's will. (What disease did Cecil have? [In answer to this the planchette moved the pencil back and drew it across the words 'God's will'.] (What human reason was the cause?) Drs. did not know, but he was to [too] tired ['i' dotted.] and was nervously exhausted. [Words 'to [too] tired' repeated in response to request as they were not read.] (Was he poisoned?) No. [apparently erased after writing.] (Was there any truth in the idea that he was poisoned by eating canned shrimps or any canned goods?) No. (Did the injection hurt him?) It helped him come a little sooner, but he had been nearly here before. (Sylvester, was not my son poisoned in some way?) No. (If he was not, how do you explain those offensive

discharges?) It is so with every one when they die. (Go on. Have you anything else to write?) Are you all through, Billy, with those other men? (I cannot read it very well. Will you write it again?) with those other men, yes. (I do not know what you mean.) You know. (I do not.) Yes. (Explain please.) Book Billy. (That book I have been at work on?) Yest (Do you mean the publishers Holt, etc.?) No. [At this point Mrs. S. said "Hyslop" in a very low tone of voice.] Ida said it. (You mean Hyslop, Xenos —) Clark. (I am not done yet and cannot tell just when I shall be done.) I will say good night until you are, yes, we do not like that way. We come for you and do not like that." Here the sitting closed as Mrs. S. seemed to be tired.

This allusion of Mrs. Smead's brother, John Houston, to Cecil's fear when dying has an apparent sequel in a later sitting (p. 435) when Cecil referred to his confusion of Sylvester with his "uncle Jogle", and the incident of his explanation about the "ropes" and his fear that a man would get him (p. 387). This brother of Mrs. Smead's was never known to him.

September 12th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used, both parties having their hands on it. Mrs. S. conscious. Sitting began at 7.45 p. m., and lasted about an hour. Nothing said to suggest the character of the communications. The party communicating absolutely unknown to Mr. and Mrs. S.

"(Who is present?) [Scrawls across the first page but no attempt to make letters.] (Please write your name.) [Curious scrawls on the second sheet ending with the name—] Thomas. [Very poorly written.] (Please write your name.) Yes. (All right, please write your name.) Thomas. (Is your name Thomas?) Yes. (That is good so far. Write the rest of it, please.) [Scrawl something like 'mine', but undecipherable. Then written in large letters.] Thomas Henry. (I cannot read the last word very well. Try to write it carefully.) Henry [written more carefully and legibly.] (Do you mean your name was Henry Thomas?) No. (Do you mean that your name was Thomas Henry?) Yes. (Where did you live on earth?) [No reply.] (What is your message?) * * (Is that mirror writing? Must I get a looking glass to read it?) No. (Is what you have written the English language?) Yes. (Go on. Write what you wish.) Mill, Q. C. (Go on, please.) R. R... [scrawl.] (Is that 'Rx'? [Both 'R' and 'Rx' were underlined for reply.] (What was your business

on earth?) Yes. [Then words written that are undecipherable. The first resembles 'Rdmit', or 'Rdinit'. The second resembles 'Hstin' or 'Hslin'.] (Write it plainly.) [The answer was the sign for *dram* and *mix* as used by druggists. This was repeated and can be described as a large '3' followed by the letter 'm' with the cross line to indicate '*mix*'.] (I think I understand what you are trying to show me. Will you please to write it plainly in ordinary English, so that there can be no confusion?) [In reply the same signs were written quite plainly and followed by the word —] Druggist, no. (Anything else?) [A curious scrawl ending with an undecipherable word which was followed by the sign 'Rx' and two or three letters that are uncertain, and then in clear writing after the question —] (I cannot read it. Will you write it again?) Thomas Henry. (Where did you live?) 24 Mill. [The number 24 not clear.] (Where did you live?) [Circular scrawls ending with something like the sign 'Rx', and then an apparent attempt at '24', though doubtful, followed by a clear 'no' and the figure '2' and an apparent attempt to write the figure '4'.] (Where did you live? I cannot understand.) 24 Mill. [Great effort to make the '24' clear, apparently a period after both figures.] (Explain please.) [Circular scrawls and then —] Mill st. (Go on.) [Answer illegible.] (Write it over please.) No, I cannot [followed by a circular scrawl.] (Do you want to stop?) [Line drawn.] (Had you anything to do with the firm of Druggists that made these smelling salts that Mrs. S. has now in her hand?) [Line drawn.] " Sitting then closed.

There is nothing evidential in this sitting. The sign for prescriptions is correct and so also is that for the word '*mix*', or '*misce*', following an apparent attempt to name certain ingredients. The part of a physician is very well represented, but whether it all comes from the subliminal action of Mrs. S.'s mind on recollections of prescriptions cannot be determined. For alleged meaning of name "Thomas Henry" cf. p. 424.

September 13th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Mrs. S. conscious. The sitting was divided into two parts, the second part being separated from the first by a pause.

" (Go on. Whoever is here may write.) [Circular scrawls ending with an apparent H. C.] (If it is H. C. write your name in mirror writing.) [Circular scrawls covering a page.] (What is that for?) [Circular scrawls covering another sheet.] (What is

that for?) [Circular scrawls, then some lines across the page, and circular scrawls again.] (I do not understand this at all. Who is present?) [Irregular scrawls followed by —] Relinm. (Please write that last word carefully.) Relinium. [In response to questions regarding the letters in the word it was repeated.] Reline * * ['rim' apparently, but erased and 'um' written under it.] (Is the word 'Relineum'?) Yes. (What does it mean?) [Only lines were drawn in answer to this and other questions, the last of which was a suggestion to quit.]

A pause followed before the sitting was resumed. When it began it was very difficult to keep Mrs. S. from going into a trance.

"(Go on. Whoever wishes may control Mrs. S.) Yes. [scrawls followed by a word which Mr. S. could not read, but which looks like 'mesage'. The 'a', however, resembles 'b', though like the 'a' sometimes made.]

(Is this Mr. Henry?) [The answer was the sign for *drams* and *mix*, followed by 'No, I think you' * * [The first three letters make 'she', followed by two others like 'ell'. Apparently, however, the planchette, after writing the word, went back and either erased the 'e' in 'she', as Mr. S. read the word 'will', and wrote the letter 'e' at the side, or wrote the letter 'a' or 'u' in its place. I think it more probable that the writing was 'e' to correct the reading 'will'.]

(What do you wish here?) He said * * [two words undec.] (Who is here any way?) Thomas Henry. (What is your message?) [Scrawl.] to help you (Well, what have you to tell us?) * * [Sign for *drams* and *mix* and prescription, followed by —] Jentian [sign for *drams* and *mix*, and prescription.] colofora * * [possibly 'm'.] stricknin, no, alcohol. Yes. No, * * * [Evidently some unrecorded questions were asked here.]

[Some further words were written with the druggist's signs repeated as before, but the words were undecipherable to me. I have had a physician who was familiar with prescriptions examine the writing and he can make nothing certain of these words. J. H. H.]

Inquiry of a physician shows that this combination of materials would make an anti-ferment for stomach use. The "communicator" does not indicate what it is intended for. A later sitting possibly suggests what was in mind (p. 426).

September 14th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious.

"(Whoever is here may write.) [Scrawls followed by some lines like several letters, but not definitely intelligible, and these by circular scrawls resembling a series of figures 8 connected with each other. The figures are often seen in embroidery.]

(Who is it?) MAMA I A— HERE. (Mrs. S.: Mama is glad.) [After writing 'here' the planchette went back and inserted between the 'A' and 'HERE' the omitted letter 'M'.] (Mr. S.: In what part of the room are you Cecil?) [No answer.] (Go on.) PAPA I SEE You. (Are you happy, my boy?) YES PAPA. George is not here ['t' in 'not' crossed.] Papa. (No, George is in bed asleep. Have you seen him tonight?) No. (Do you mean that you want George when we use the planchette?) YES PAPA. (We will use the planchette in the daytime and then we will have George with us. [George is the remaining and younger child.] yes. (Go on, tell papa about the place where you are.) You MuSt ['t' crossed.] wait ['i' dotted and 't' crossed.] (What was the cause of your death.) PAPA. I AM HERE. (You know that you have left this world, don't you?) YES. [emphatic period placed after the 'yes'.] (What was the disease you had? Tell papa.) NO, NO. (Do you mean that you will not tell me?) it HuRtS. [The 'i' dotted and the 't's' crossed.] (Does it hurt you to think of it?) YES. (Do you know what I took out of your desk?) [Answer undecipherable. Mr. S. says that Mrs. S. guessed what he had in mind and told him afterwards. Hence she knew what it should be all the while.]

(Try again.) [Illegible and apparently not the same word as before.] (What is it Cecil?) [Figures drawn.] (I cannot tell, Cecil. Did you think I took out your sticking paste?) No. [Then a figure like the previous ones but more poorly drawn.] (What things are in the box in the other room?) [Mrs. S. knew all that was in it, for she put them in.] [No answer.] (Are you still here?) Going to ['t' crossed.] bed with ['t' crossed.] George. [scrawl, possibly 'Soo' with the second 'o' erased.] (Are you going to see George?) Yes. (He sleeps in your bed in our room.) [A line was drawn toward me, Mr. S., and others toward Mrs. S.] (Want papa to kiss him?) Yes. (Want mama to kiss him?) Yes. (Good night Cecil, come again.)" The sitting then came to a close.

Mr. Smead reports that the child Cecil was in the habit of writing in capitals. It was a very decided habit with him. The fact was of course known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead and amen-

able to secondary personality. But it is an interesting indication of the exactness with which the personality of Cecil is represented. This use of capitals later almost or wholly disappears, as the reader will remark.

September 15th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and their little boy Georgie. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. Hands of all three on the planchette.

"(All ready.) [Circular scrawls all over the page ending in an undecipherable word. The hands of Georgie were removed and only Mr. and Mrs. S. held their hands on it this time.] Ceel [Cecil] wains [wants] George, papa. (I think I read it.) No, Cecil WANTS GEORGE, PAPA. (What do you want him to do?) [Circular scrawls.] [Georgie then put his hands on with ours.] Good LtLE BRoTher.. [The 'd' in good was made so that the line served also for a part of the capital 'L', and the 'i' omitted in 'Little', and all the small 't's' were crossed.] (What is the word after 'Good'?) Little. ['i' dotted and 't's' crossed, followed by scrawls all over the sheet.] (Go on.) GOOD littl BRoTher [followed by scrawls. 'i' dotted emphatically and 't's' crossed in 'little'.] (Please tell us what the last was. Let somebody help you to write if you cannot very well.) my good little brother. ['i' dotted and 't's' crossed in little'. Mr. S. then said: 'Cecil, George will speak to you.' (Georgie: Tell me a 'Bill story.') (Mr. S.: Let somebody help you, Cecil.) [In answer a picture of a cage with two wheels was drawn and an animal in it. Below it was written—] tigER, yes, TIGER. [The 't' crossed in the first of these.] [Mr. S. adds: I told Cecil a story of Bill's circus before his death with which he was very much pleased and also he had seen a circus before his death a few days. Georgie had seen one some time after his brother's death, so that this picture had much meaning and significance to him and to us. It does not prove that he was really drawing it, but it is very suggestive of his personality.]

(Good, Cecil, write to me.) I LOVE You ALL. (Mrs. S.: Cecil we are all glad you are here. Do you know it?) YES. (Mama wishes she could see you.) not now. ['t' crossed in 'not'.] (Who have you seen in heaven?) not yet. ['t' crossed in 'yet', followed by beautiful circular scrawls, amounting to very good circles.] (I don't understand.) [Two sets of circles drawn connected by lines and lines drawn across the page with one undecipherable word, and then the word 'mama' written at one side of the sheet and the word 'Papa' at the other side and 'Geor—'

at the bottom, the rest of the word, evidently intended for 'George', undecipherable.] (Go on.) No. [Connected circles drawn.] (He is drawing his eyes.) no. (Go on.) [Circles drawn.] Good night mama, George, Cecil, Papa. (All right, Cecil. Come again.)"

September 18th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. The "communicator" a new person.

" (Go on. Whoever may be present may use the planchette.) [Scrawls and an attempt at some word that is undecipherable, followed by—] Ennis is— [rest undecipherable.] yes. (Who is it?) Bessie [Very poorly written: looks like Berrir.] Bessie Ennis. (Is it Bessie Ennis?) yes.

[Mrs. S. remarked that she thought she had heard the name of Ennis, but she did not know any one by that name and was sure that she could not recognize any one by the name of Bessie Ennis. After her remarks the following was written.]

Bessie [poorly written.] yes, Emers [or 'Ennis' poorly written.] Malden wes— no, no [erasing 'wes'.] yes Malden [scrawls.] Farm [scrawls.] [Some unrecorded question asked.] Bessie Ennis Learn [Farm] Malden [scrawls and then 'Bessie' erased and wrote—] Elisabeth. (Do you mean Malden, Mass.?) Yes. (What street was it?) Farm [written very clearly.] (Do you mean that you lived on Farm St.?) no (Do you mean that you lived on a farm?) Yes. (I did not know that there were any farms in Malden, Mass.) look and see. (See what?) them. ['t' crossed.] (What do you mean by 'them'?) Farms. (In what part of Malden was the farm?) West (What was your father's name?) [No reply.] (Have you forgotten it?) Yes. (How long have you been dead?) Don't know much about it. ['t' in 'don't' and 'about' crossed. A word or two undecipherable, but the letters seem to be 'yeresssS ... (undecipherable). here.] (Do you want me to see any body or write to any one for you?) Yes, Nettie. ['t's' crossed.] (What Nettie?) [scrawls.] yes, Robinson. (Do you want me to write to her?) Yes. (What shall I tell her?) * * [three words undecipherable. The first seems to be 'Hesee'.] (I cannot read it.) S. Jessie [scrawls.] is here. [The 'S' written first and the 'J' superposed upon it.] (I cannot read it.) [Scrawl.] Meeting * * [several words that are undecipherable.]"

Mr. Smead inquired of the "Nettie Robertson" here mentioned in the communications, whether she knew of the "Bessie

Ennis" indicated. Her reply is that she knew of but one family Ennis in Malden. It consisted of father, mother and one daughter. The mother's name was Jennie and the daughter's Anna Cora, and no one by the name of Bessie or Elisabeth Ennis is or was known to Mrs. Smead's sister. The Ennis family lived in the outskirts of the place, northwest from the center of Malden on a farm. This was fourteen years previous to the "communications". About two years ago Mrs. Ennis and the daughter Cora both died of cancer within two weeks of each other. The house and land were sold to the town for a cemetery and the house used for a pest house when the smallpox broke out about the time of the death of Mrs. Ennis and her daughter. Mr. Ennis has disappeared. He was in England or Scotland for a while, but returned and his whereabouts at present are not known.

I obtained the same facts from another independent informant, with the exception that she gave the name "Kate" as that of the mother and states that the farm was "north" of Malden. But as her information was obtained second hand the name "Kate" as that of the mother may be a mistake. It is apparent, therefore, that the message has no evidential value, though it is interesting to note the statement of Mr. S. that he and Mrs. S. knew nothing about this Ennis family, at least do not recall ever hearing of it.

September 23rd, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S., Mr. and Mrs. Bowles. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious and taking an interest in what was written. Mr. and Mrs. Bowles had never been present before at the sittings.

"(Whoever is present may write.) [Singular scrawls all over the sheet.] (Please write your name.) [Singular scrawls again.] (Go on. Do as you please.) [scrawls.] (What are you trying to do?) [Singular scrawls ending with a drawing of a human figure.] (Please explain.) no. (What was that picture?) [Drawn a square like figure and some scrawls ending with—] a new discovery [several words undecipherable, probably the same as what follows.] (What are the words after 'a new discovery'?) one we found. (We do not understand. Will you make it plainer?) [There was evidently some difficulty in reading the answer to this question and no record was kept of the questions put to secure the correct reading. 'Yes' and 'no' were written several times

evidently in response to queries regarding the reading of the writing, but nothing was recorded to enable me to determine the order. J. H. H.]

Mennuis. [Evidently not read, and then repeated.] Mennuis. [The 'i' dotted. The word was finally written also as 'minnuies' with the 'i' dotted and the handwriting poorer than in the other instances. Lastly the phrase 'this new discovery' was written quite clearly. This was in answer to the question as to what the new word meant.]

(Please tell me what this new dialect or language is.) Mars. We were there when Brother came. Yes. (Who is writing?) me. (Who is *me*?) Why do you always ask me, papa? (Will you please write your name?) Maude. (Please tell me about that new discovery.) Why just the way they fix up their houses sometimes before they come here. it is most like our way. (Won't you write more about it, please?) You know Papa. (What do they do to their houses?) [Rough drawing without any apparent meaning, except that there is an apparent attempt to make it rectangular.] (Tell me what you mean.) [Same drawing repeated and rectangle more evident. The figure referred to above (p. 398) and connected with the drawing of a person is a perfectly definite rectangle.]

(Never mind that, Maude, please tell me something about Cecil.) [A pause of about two minutes.] Yes, he ['he' very indistinct.] does not play with your kind of play things, he does not. ['he does not' written over at request.] (What does he do?) [At this point Maude evidently disappeared and Cecil came in her place, as two sets of connected circles were drawn and the capital letters used by him usually appeared.]

PAPA iS [The 'A' was crossed and a dot put above its apex to indicate the letter 'i' in 'is'.] THIS MiSR TER BOWES HE NEVER uSE tO ['t' in 'to' crossed at top possibly intending to make it a capital.] HE DID NOT COME WHEN I LIVED ERE, DID HE? (No, he did not, Cecil. I will ask Mr. Bowles to ask you something.) (Mr. B.: I would like you to write something for me very much, Cecil.) WHERE IS — (Jack?) YES. [Mr. B. said: 'He means where is Jack, a favorite dog of Mr. B.'s that Cecil knew'.] (Go on.) I AINT AFRAID OF HIM Now. (Good night, Cecil. Mama is very tired and we must stop.) YOU DOO [second 'O' erased.] NOT HEAR [?] IT."

It is interesting to remark in this sitting a return to the Martian phenomena as connected with the personality of Maude. She has not appeared for a long time and the Martian episode was connected closely with her action. There is nothing in the "communications" of Cecil which cannot be explained by secondary

personality, as the reader can remark from the record. Hence he may also suspect that the matter of Maude's messages suggests the same explanation, independently of the evidence in the nature of that matter. The resumption of this subject on her appearance suggests it most clearly. Mr. Bowles also was too hasty in suggesting the name of the dog as the thing which Cecil had in mind. It is worth remarking that Cecil, when living, was afraid of the dog.

September 24th, 1901. Present Mrs. S., Mrs. Frank Miller and Miss May Eva Miller. Mr. S. absent on business connected with the church. Planchette used. Mrs. S. fully conscious and taking an interest in what was written. The record was not as carefully kept as when Mr. S. was present, but at the close of the sitting he took pains to get every question and answer in its proper place, so that the record is fairly accurate.

"(Is there any one here?) This is better. we like to do our own work. [He referred to the planchette as preferred to the Ouija board which the ladies had and were trying to make work with Mrs. S. It was a failure with her. While her hand was on it it would indicate that it, the intelligence, wished to write.]

(Who is it?) Frank Miller. (That is right. We are glad that you have come.) Yes, yes, you all try. (Try what?) yes, write. [Evidently some unrecorded question connected with the reading as the following answer indicates.] No, write. [Evidently another similar question.] [Scrawls.] Yes, yes. (What have you to say?) I am WELL ['well' in very large letters.] always now. (Mrs. M.: "You are always well now"?) Yes, you are better acquainted with me through this down here ['through this down here' not clear and decipherable only by means of repetition. This was evidently asked for as it was written clearly on the next sheet.] Me through this down here. (Is this right?) this down here, yes. (Mrs. M.: Do you think that I had better go to Boston?) Will you feel better? (Miss May. M.: Do you think that she had better go, papa?) No, she will be very much exhausted. (Would it be better for her to stay at home?) Yes, it would be best for her, Mary. (Mrs. M.: If I go to Boston, will I feel better, Frank?) Yes, it would be very much worse. (Mrs. M.: Now, I think it would be better to go.) You may try it for yourself. (Miss May M.: You know what you are talking about, don't you papa?) I usually do, Mary. usually [evidently not read at first and asked to

be repeated.] (Mrs. M.: Will my head ever be any better?) Get out of doors. no, Doors. [evidently not read at first.] much of it, yes. ['yes' apparently erased and then rewritten.] yes.

(Miss May M.: Do you want me to stay at Draper's and work so hard?) Is it necessary. (Miss May.: Yes.) No. ['no' repeated three times.] (Mrs. M.: Can you see how sick my father is?) Yes. [erased.] When I go over there. (Mrs. M.: Will my father die soon?) H [very large capital.] he will live all the time. we do not die. (Mrs. M.: Will he pass over the river soon?) not yet. (Mrs. M.: Do you think we had better move to Boston after he is through?) You are better here, no. (Miss May.: Did you know I went to Buffalo, papa?) I went to [too.] (Mrs. M.: Can you see what we are doing all the time?) Yes, when I come. (Mrs. M.: Do you like the gentleman May is acquainted with?) Does Mary? (You won't give me away will you, papa?) No. (Mrs. M.: Frank, did you write to me yesterday on the Ouija board?) I tried to, but this is better. (Miss May.: Is there anything more?) Yes, [scrawls.] yes. I will say good night."

There are no evidential incidents in this sitting and it speaks for itself to the reader. There is interesting intellectual play, but unfortunately it affords no indications of the supernormal. The allusion to being "well now" is interesting.

September 26th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. 9.30 p. m. There was no special intention to have a sitting, but I had fixed up my study different from what it was before and had a little table that I thought might be all right for Mrs. S. to work on, and so I was anxious to try it with the planchette. Mrs. S. was very tired and almost ready to go to sleep when I began. But she kindly consented to see if my table was all right. The following important sitting occurred.

"(Write your name.) [Scrawls like the letter 'n' made several times.] Cecil [poorly written.] (Mrs. S.: Is it you, Cecie?) Maude * * (Go on.) We are here. (Mental question: "Is the above 'we are here'") Yes. (Write what you wish.) Mercy is here. (Who is Mercy?) Grandpa knows her. (What Grandpa?) Grandpa Smead. (Please write Mercy's name in full.) Mercy, just Mercy. (Was it a man or woman?) Lady. (Please write her full name. She must have had a name besides Mercy.) Mercy Smead. (What relation were you to grandfather, or to my father?) Sister.

[Mr. S. evidently forgot that he was talking to Maude, his daughter and did not ask his question rightly. He should have said: 'What relation was *she* to grandfather'? The answer involves this conception of the situation and it was evidently what was meant by the question. We might suppose a change of personality or communicator. J. H. H.]

(Tell me anything that will help my father to remember you.) My brothers are all here except 2. (What two are living?) Joseph and [scrawl.] Samuel. ['Samuel' poorly written: in fact decipherable only from its repetition later.] * * (I cannot read the last name plainly. Try again.) * * Joseph, Samuel. (Go on. You say your brothers are all there except Joseph and Samuel.) Mother cannot write with this. She does sometimes come, but does not understand this way. it is hard [?] to her.

Mrs. S. said she was tired and must stop. Mr. S. explained this to the "communicator" and the word 'yes' was written three times. Then the planchette made some lines across the page the words 'yes' at each end to signify that Papa and Mamma should kiss Cecil good night, and the sitting closed.

There are some matters of interest in this sitting. In reply to inquiries Mrs. Smead's father says that he had no sister by the name of Mercy, but that he has a deceased sister by the name of Lucy. This Lucy was also a full sister, so that the allusion to her mother as the same as that of Mr. Smead is pertinent, a fact of which the son and his wife, Mrs. Smead, seem not to have been aware. Mr. Smead's father reports, however, that so far as he knew at the time of the sitting there were three other brothers still living besides Samuel and himself, Joseph. He also says that it was general not to have any middle name in the family. Mrs. Smead, it seems, did not know that this was a fact.

Inquiry, however, shows that Mr. Smead's father has two brothers deceased and all the rest living. If the message had been that all were living but two it would have been correct. This mistake is an interesting one since Mrs. S. knew the facts in the case.

September 27th, 1901 Present Mr. and Mrs. S. [Presumably planchette work. No record of this fact, however.]

"(Go on. Whoever is present may write.) Yes * *

[scrawls or undecipherable words made of letters resembling 'm' and 'e'.] (Who is trying to write?) George Lowrey. (What is the last name?) Lowrey. [This is not the way that we supposed the name was spelled.]

(What do you wish to write?) We Mr. [?] Smead He is here * * [a word undec.] [At this point Mrs. S. removed her hand from the planchette and Mr. S. kept his upon it and an undecipherable word was written. The handwriting is slightly different from what it was before, though some resemblance still remains. It is fainter in appearance.]

(What Mr. Smead?) George. (Do you mean George Smead?) Yes. (Who was George Smead's father?) * * [one word undec.] Samuel Smead. (What was George Smead's middle name?) F [Scrawls.] F. (You do not know. You are fishing.) no. (What is that you wrote?) * * [Word undec.] Sometime. [?] ['homtine' apparently, but after writing it the planchette went back and apparently made an 'S' instead of 'h'.]

The George Lowrey mentioned was Mrs. Smead's uncle. He had died some three or four years before. It seems that all that Mrs. Smead knew of the fact was merely that he was dead. No particulars were ever told her. Mr. Smead says: "We both knew George Lowrey (Mrs. Smead's uncle) was dead. She never was especially interested in him. I never saw him. Ida saw him but once in her life when she was 13 years old and then he came in the evening and stayed two or three hours. This was all."

Mr. Smead thought that the name George Smead, the son of his uncle Samuel, was a fabrication of Mrs. Smead's subliminal, as neither he nor Mrs. Smead could recollect any person by that name. A letter from Mr. Smead's father, however, in answer to an inquiry, says: "My brother Samuel has a son named George S. Smead. I do not know whether he is living or not. I think he is. If he had died some one in the family would have written me. I feel quite sure of this."

A later letter from Mr. Smead's uncle Samuel also mentions this son George as still living.

The following is an account of a vision which Mrs. Smead had on the same night of this sitting after retiring. I give her own narrative of it as written by herself. The date of the vision was the night of September 27th.

"I had been to ride Friday afternoon and was very tired, so

could not sleep very well during the first part of the night. I would sleep a little, then wake up quickly and was very feverish at times, so much so that I thought that I was going to be sick. But at about midnight or a little before, I woke with my right arm so painful that I could not move it from the wrist. It was limp (that is, the wrist and hand) and I turned over to the left of the room and thought that it was very lonely without Cecil, and how much I would like to see him, if only for a few moments, when there was a loud rap in his room and another near me on the floor. I looked toward the spot where the rap came from, when I saw a vision of an elderly lady. This vision was very different from any that I had ever seen before. It looked very ghostly. It had snowy white hair and wore a white gown. The hands and face were very white, so much so that I looked very steadily at it to be sure that I was not mistaken. I thought that, perhaps, the lady we had seen that afternoon had died. This was not true. This person that I saw was very old and I was so much surprised at the difference in her appearance as contrasted with those that I have seen before that when morning came I at once told my husband what I had seen. He told me to write it out at once. I said that I did not wish to do so because it was so ghostly that I did not like to think of it."

MRS. W. M. SMEAD.

The date of this writing and signature is September 30th, 1901. Mr. S. writes on the same date: "I hereby certify that Mrs. S. told me the above on Saturday morning, September 28th, at 7 o'clock a. m."

There was apparently no hint of a possible coincidence in the case until she received a letter from a friend dated September 30th and received the same day, saying in a postscript note an aunt Sarah in Baltimore had died. Nothing was said about the time of her death. They then wrote to the mother of Mrs. S. to ask when this aunt had died. The reply, dated October 26th is as follows:

"I wrote to your aunt Annie to send me aunt Sarah's age. She died on September 26th, 1901, but I do not know how old she is."

Mrs. Smead's sister Nettie had written a letter to Mrs. Smead,

saying that this aunt Sarah was sick, but the letter was misssent to ——— Mass., (a town of the same name as Mr. Smead's home in another state), but it did not arrive at Mr. Smead's home until two or three days after the vision of this lady, possibly the aunt mentioned. In reply to a letter addressed to an aunt in Baltimore Mr. Smead ascertains that this aunt Sarah died on the 26th of September, 1901, at the age of eighty-six years, that her hair was very white, that Ida, Mr. Smead's wife, had never known this aunt Sarah, and that Mrs. Smead had not seen the writer of the letter for thirty years.

It is interesting to remark that the George Lowrey mentioned in the "communications" in the sitting of the 27th, the day after this aunt Sarah's death, was a nephew of this aunt.

As soon as I had copied the narrative regarding the apparition, supposed after the receipt of the above mentioned letter to be that of the deceased aunt Sarah, I wrote to Mr. Smead and asked him to secure a photograph of this aunt without the knowledge of Mrs. Smead and to place it among some others and place them where Mrs. Smead might see them, taking care that he should be present when she saw them. Mr. Smead did as I requested, but it was several months before he was able to secure the desired photograph. At last he was able to report the following letter and experiment, and it apparently represents as good an experiment of the kind as could well be performed. The letter was received the day after I left W——.

"W—— ——— May 29th, 1902.

"Dear Dr. Hyslop:

"I was fortunate enough to get the reply from Baltimore with the picture of that aunt Sarah that we wanted to try the experiment with. I took great pains with it to make the experiment conclusive. Mrs. S. did not know that I had received any picture or any bundle the size of any picture. She knew that I had received a letter from Baltimore, supposed it to be an ordinary letter, thought that contents related to some matters of detail about this message, that you wanted me to write for more particulars about this aunt Sarah and that this letter might have the reply needed. She knew nothing of its contents and had no possible idea that I got a photo in it.

"I put the photo that I got from Baltimore in the midst of a lot of others, over 50 of them, and after an hour or so had elapsed I brought the whole lot down-stairs, began to talk of some of her girl friends, told her I wanted to see if she could find me the picture of Lottie Dudley that she knew was dead, asked her to see if she knew who Annie Hedengran was in a lot of pictures and named over two or three others, so that she thought that some of those that I named were dead, or had died recently, and that my point was to see if she could find their pictures. I fooled her completely and threw her off her guard as to aunt Sarah. So she went along looking at the photos and talked of this one and that one of her girl friends. Some she was sure were living, others she knew were dead, and others she thought might possibly be dead, thinking all the while that I was driving at that to see if she would pick out the photo of this dead girl friend when by and by she came at once upon this photo of aunt Sarah. She was greatly shocked, looked at me, and knew it at once and recognized the face, said the face she saw had no glasses, the hair was crimped as in the photo, but flatter on the forehead. She had a white dress when Mrs. S. saw her and was not quite as fleshy as the photo would indicate. The recognition was absolute. I then took another tack. I told her she was too sure, that it was all nonsense for her to be so positive, that I might have got a picture of some other woman and put it there to make her think it was that of the one she saw and kept back the real picture if I had it, that I was trying to fool her, etc., etc. It was all no use. She was sure and positive. The identification was complete. I had to give it up. So I told her then that it was the photo of this aunt Sarah. She had never seen a photo of her before. This picture of her was the last one taken of her before her death.

"I send this to Boston, care of Dr. Hodgson, thinking that you might like this now.

Very cordially yours,

"W. M. SMEAD."

September 28th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mrs. Jennie Miller, wife of Frank Miller deceased and appearing as

communicator in this record. Mrs. S. in good condition. Planchette used.

"(Whoever is present may write.) Mrs. J. Clound [not clearly written: might be 'leound'.] (Please write it again.) Mrs. J. Clound. [clearly written.] (Go on, please.) Good by Sir.

[There was then an intermission of about five minutes.]

Yes. [Scrawls and lines.] (When you can write you may do so. I do not wish these lines and scrawls. I will not have them. You can wait until you can write without them. You may make circles if you wish.) [Scrawls.] you are very kind, sir. (I apologize, if I have said anything to hurt the feelings of the intelligence, Sir.) I am a lady. (Excuse me, Madam.) I will, sir. (May I call you Mrs. or Miss.) Mrs. (Go on.) Carue [not clear.] (Please write that last name again.) Came. [might be read as an indistinct 'Carrie'.] (Is it Caine?) No. (Is it Caw?) No. (Go on.) Carrie. (Is it Carrie? Please write the other way of the sheet.) [She had determined to write in a different way from any other "communicator".] No, yes. (Mrs. Carrie —?) Rand. (Is it Mrs. Carrie Rand?) it is. [one word, apparently 'me', not indicated in its place in the record of Mr. S., J. H. H.]

(You have made me do as you wished, Mrs. Rand. I think that you were used to bossing your husband when you were with him, weren't you, Mrs. Rand?) No. (Appearances are deceptive, Mrs. Rand.) they are. [The communicator had insisted on writing across the narrower part of the sheet instead of its length. J. H. H.]

(Please tell me where you used to live?) * * [Letters seem to represent 'Maendu'.] (I cannot read it.) not now. (You may write what you please, Mrs. Rand. Outside of my jokes &c. I am very glad to have you with us this evening. We are delighted with your presence.) do you mean it? (I do mean it, Mrs. Rand.) we do not [?] we do not. (Please write it again.) no doubt. (Please write what you please. What is your message? Are you through?) for now. [followed by lines and scrawls all over the page.] [Then a pause of a few minutes.]

[After the pause Mrs. S. took a pencil for trial, but nothing was done and she resumed the planchette.]

(Is Mr. Frank Miller here?) Mr. who? (Mr. Frank Miller.) no. (Where is he?) he is home. (Can't you bring him here?) no. (Is he at home with Mary?) yes. (Please tell me who you are.) Sylvester. (I am glad you are here. We shall have to stop soon. Mrs. S. is tired and we shall have to retire.) yes, you may now. (I will be glad to sit up. Won't you write what you may wish?) will come again. (I will wait for you.) no. (Come

Monday evening?) sometime [sometiune.] (Good night, Sylvester.) Yes."

Mr. S. sends me an obituary notice of a Mrs. Catherine F. Rand printed in a paper (Zion's Herald) of October 16th and says that Mrs. S. saw it on the 17th of that month. The notice reads: "Rand.—Mrs. Catherine F. Rand died Sept. 27th, 1901, at her home, 114 Upland Road, Cambridge, aged 98 years, 2 months, 17 days." Mrs. S., it seems, never knew such a person.

There is no definite evidence in the case that the coincidence is significant. The mistake of 'Carrie' for "Catherine" is easily explicable, but there is not enough corroborative evidence to permit any apologies in this direction, and no apparent reason for such a person turning up.

There is an interesting coincidental incident, however, connected with the statement that Mr. Frank Miller was not present, but was at home with his daughter Mary. Miss May (Mary) Eva Miller had remained at home this evening and tried the Ouija board for experiment herself and reports as follows:

"This is to certify that at the time when the writing was given purporting to be from Sylvester Smead to the effect that Frank W. Miller was not present but was at his home with his daughter Mary, I was using the Ouija board and received what seemed to be a message from my father Frank W. Miller. This would indicate that the statements made by 'Sylvester' were true.

"Oct. 1st, 1901.

MAY EVA MILLER."

September 30th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mrs. S. in good condition, not tired. Began the sitting with prayer, closing with these words: "May Thy will be done in this matter this evening."

"Yes, it ssall [shall] Be as thou desirest. (That is good. Go on, please.) Yes, I am here to do this. (I do not see. Explain please.) In answer to your prayers. (All right, my friend, who are you?) Mrs. farah B—— (Write it again.) Brown. (How is this. You did not write the same thing.) Mrs. farah Brown. (What is the letter before the small letter 'a'? Is it 's'?) Yes. Sarah. [written in large clear letters. It is possible

that the 'f' written twice for 'S' above was an attempt to write the old fashioned 's'.]

(Tell me something about yourself, Mrs. Brown.) You know me. (What was —) [I did not have time to finish the last word when the planchette wrote as follows.] not Sarah, Eunice. (You mean that it is Eunice that is present?) yes. (Why did you write 'Sarah'?) wanted her. wanted. (Go on please.) tell Sarah I am here. (You mean who?) why Sarah Bishop.

(Mrs. Brown, you knew me very well when you lived in B——, C——. I want you to write something that will help me to know that this is really you.) you did not bring me my papers home. (What papers?) The Congregationlists. [Congregationlists.] (I am not sure that I understand that.) I let you take it But you were so Busy you forgot about them. [This is probably correct.] (I think I recall it.) Yes. (It seems so.) Am I noheoght [not right.] (I think so, Mrs. Brown.)

(Can you give me the name of the man who used to live in Gilead C——, when you were there and who ran for the office of sheriff?) Mr. Puennes. [not clear.] (Make it clearer.) Penuines. [not clear.] (That is all wrong, Mrs. Brown.) No. Plum * * (If you cannot write it, please print it.) PLUMMER. (Do you mean Mr. Plummer?) Yes. (Do you mean that Mr. Plummer once lived in Gilead, C——, and that he ran for sheriff?) Yes, I do. (Please give Mr. Plummer's first name.) it is too much for now Thomas. (Thomas?) Yes. (What office did he have?) sometime. tell Sarah. (What do you want me to tell Sarah?) Good night. I am here. (I cannot promise that I will tell Sarah.) Yes. (I cannot tell Mrs. Bishop very well.) you can. (I will do all that I can about it. I will not promise to tell her. Will that do?) Yes."

October 2nd, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. We were thinking of Cecil and Mrs. S. had a picture of him before her all the time. Mrs. S. conscious through the sitting.

"(We are all ready.) Yes. (Is Cecil present tonight?) [Scrawl.] yes, me papa. (Who is it?) Cecil. (I am not mistaken, then. This is my son Cecil?) yes, yes papa dadie, Cleve. [We called him 'Clevie', and he often called me 'papa dadie'.] (I am glad you are here, Cecie. Won't you write to papa and prove to him that it is really you?) Yes. (Go on.) [Here a line was drawn across the sheet lengthwise with a circle at its end and then a line drawn back to the starting point at the other end with a circle also at its end, so that the representation is that of a tube.

This was repeated until six tubes in all were drawn and lines at right angles across them. Then a railway engine was drawn with its wheels, fender, cab and projections on its top.] (What is that, Cecil?) PuSSEL. (I cannot see what it is. Is that first letter 'P'?) Yes, PUSSEL, PiSSEL. [This was followed by 'no, no, yes, no'.] [Mr. S. does not explain their meaning in any note. Apparently some questions were asked that have not been recorded. J. H. H.] (I cannot see what you mean.)

[I thought that he was making Martian characters. This was Mrs. S.'s impression.] [There are two or three marks that might suggest this view. J. H. H.] [Then follows:] PUZ. [period.] ZEL [all in large capitals with the last three letters written below the first three.] PUR... [scrawl.] no, Z [large capital written at end of the first syllable 'PUZ'. Then:] PUZ. [period.] Z. [period. Sheet changed.] ZEL PU [The planchette here went back and wrote this syllable 'PU' in front of the syllable 'ZEL', making the word 'PUZZEL'.] (Is that word 'puzzle'?) Yes.

(Do you mean to help to remember that puzzle that you had Saturday evening and that you could not put together and laid aside?) no, TRUNK, yes N [circular scrawl ending with capital—] K. [period inserted.] no. (That is good Cecil. I remember that. Tell me some more dear.) TRUNK. [period.] yes, yes. [There is some imperfection in the record of Mr. S. here. He records the answer 'Yes' to the question about putting together the puzzle, while the original has 'no' before the word 'TRUNK' as first written. J. H. H.]

(Do you mean a trunk that you had?) Yes, little one. (What little one, Cecil?) george took it. (Was it Georgie's?) no. (Mama and I do not remember about George taking a little trunk. We cannot think that he did. We don't understand.) Yes, he did. look in my desk, Papa dadie [line and scrawl.] yes. (Go on. Explain to us, Cecie.) You took me ['me' erased.] away. [period inserted.] [Then the planchette went back and wrote lines as if to erase the erasure over the word 'me', and rewrote:] me (Do you mean I took your body to bury it?) you took me away, yes. (Where, Cecil? I don't see what you mean.) up-stairs. (I see what you mean now. Go on.) George took it. (Took the little trunk?) yes, yes. (Mama thinks that I took it, not George. How is that Cecil?) No, George did do it. I asked him to. (Why did you ask George to take the little trunk, Cecil?) I was going with you. (I cannot remember that you asked George about it.) [No reply.] (Are you not mistaken?) no. (Have you some word for us?) Love you all. (That does not sound like Cecil. I cannot think that he wrote that. Is he here?) no, (Who is writing and helping him?) Maud.

[There was evidently some further conversation in connection with which the questions have not been recorded, since the next

sheet has the following words on it. J. H. H.] yes, some, yes, yes
* * yes."

There are incidents of unusual interest in this sitting. The first one of course is amenable to explanation by secondary personality. Cecil had a puzzle consisting of an engine and train of cars which was to be put together in a certain way and he had many times succeeded in doing it. But on the evening of the day before his death he tried it and failed. Mr. S. reports the following regarding it.

"The puzzle that Cecil put together the last thing before his death was one of an engine and cars. It was a card board puzzle. He had put it together many times before, but could not get it right this time, and laid it aside in disgust. This was on Saturday afternoon, and he died Sunday at about 7 p. m." Mr. S. can discover no special meaning in the lines which I have described as apparently attempt at drawing tubes. He does not see that the puzzle would suggest them.

The incident regarding the "trunk" or box is more interesting. The facts, briefly stated, are these. Cecil had a little box or toy trunk. When Mr. and Mrs. S. *were not in the room* it seems that he asked his brother Georgie, four or five years of age, to give him this trunk to play with. Georgie did so and after a while Cecil again asked Georgie to put it aside for him, as he did not wish it longer. This was on the Sunday morning of the day on which he died. Mr. and Mrs. S. did not know of the facts until thus told them at the sitting and afterward verified them by asking Georgie. The following is the account of Mr. S. signed by Mrs. S. on October 3rd.

"The sitting was at 8.30 o'clock that evening (October 2nd) and the next morning I asked my little boy George without telling him any of my reasons for asking him, or telling him anything about what was written that evening, if he remembered a little trunk or blue box that belonged to his brother Cecil. He said he did. I then asked him if he had it playing with it on the Sunday that his brother Cecil died, and he replied that he did have it that day, that Cecil asked him to get it for him to look at while he (Cecil) was lying on the sofa sick. 'Mama was out in the kitchen when I got it for Cecil'. All that was about 11 a. m.,

church time. 'Cecil asked me to take it and put it on his desk'. 'I did it for Cecil'. 'I didn't have it after that'. The quotations are Georgie's exact words.

"Mrs. S. tells me that she remembers that I gave this little box or trunk, as Cecil always called it, to him Saturday afternoon, and does not remember seeing Cecil have it after that. So she did not see George get it for him, or see George take it from Cecil, as he asked him to do and put it back on his desk (about three feet from the sofa or couch upon which he was lying). George could have easily done this and Mrs. S. not seen it. George's memory of this event is very positive, and at once without any leading question said that he had the trunk and that Cecil asked him to get it for him as it was lying on his desk nearby, and that soon Cecil, having got tired looking at it, asked him to put it back where he got it from.

"I have no remembrance of the matter and rest the case solely on Cecil's declaration in the sitting and George's prompt recognition of the fact. George said that Cecil asked him to get it for him. I did not ask a question to bring out this answer. He said this of his own accord as he remembered it.

"W. M. SMEAD,

"I. M. SMEAD."

Mr. S. adds in a postscript after the above was written the following further statement:

"I asked George what Cecil did when he gave him the trunk. He said: 'He opened it,' and took out the 'little cloth rolled up. He then looked at it and put it back in the box and then kept it a little while and then asked George to put it back on the desk for him.'

"I think there can be no doubt of George's remembrance. I have tried to make him tell a different story, but he sticks to the same essentials and says he didn't know about other things. I worked into it for the purpose of testing his memory."

The incident would thus appear to have some possible supernatural significance. Taken in connection with the other it is certainly interesting to say the least.

October 4th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. conscious. Both Mr. and Mrs. S. tired.

"(We are all ready.) [Hand drawn with a ring around the forefinger. Then:—] Yes, We are Cecil Yes. (Go on.) Yes * * [First letter undoubtedly 'S', and next may be either 't' or 'l'. Whole word followed by scrawls.] (I do not understand this at all.) Yes, Silver stars, yes. (Do you mean your ring with silver stars?) Yes. (Of course you are not here tonight, are you?) yes [?] [poorly written.] (You are not writing are you?) Yes Papa. (No, you are not doing it. Some one is doing it for you.) Yes. [Sheet changed.] (What finger did you wear the ring on, Cecil?) Papa ['papa' erased and a hand drawn as before with indication that the ring was on the first or forefinger and then the planchette went back and indicated by emphatic marks that it was the second or middle finger and wrote after it—] Yes. [Mr. S. says that so far as he knew this was correct.]

(What did you draw it on the other finger for, Cecil?) don't no [know.] (Can you explain?) Both, Papa, both. [This was true.]

(Do you remember your little trunk?) Yes. (What is in it?) just Cloth. (Is that all that is in it?) Yes wole. (Write that word over again.) wole. [Evidently intended for 'wool' which was correct. Mrs. S. knew well enough how to spell the word 'wool'.]

(I am going to get it and see what is in it. I do not know and mama does not know, Cecil.) Yes. (Are you willing that I should get it?) Yes, yes. (Do you want to write anything before I get it?) no. (Will you remain here while I get it?) * * [word or words undecipherable.] (Tell me, Cecil?) If i can Papa.

[At this point I got the trunk, the little box he called the trunk. I opened it and found the cloth, the wool, and some bright paper rolled up under the cloth, so it could not be seen, unless one took out the roll of cloth. One could not see it if he looked at the box or trunk when it was opened.]

(Why did you not tell me about the paper in it, Cecil?) I did not ['t' crossed, and 'I' and 'd' in 'I did' made in one letter.] see it. ['t' crossed.] (If you remember the cloth and the wool why did not you remember the paper?) did only look now, Papa. (I think that you didn't know about that paper.) no, I did at first though. (Don't you mean that you didn't know?) though Papa Yes, Papa * *

(We will drop that, Cecil. Tell me something else that will help me to know that it is really you.) don't know what to say. (You can tell me what you put in that pocket book.) Cards and stamps and ['and' erased.] like ['i' dotted in 'like'.] you did in yours, Papa dadie. (Tell me anything else in it.) No, no. (Are

you sure there was nothing else in it?) [Lines made in the direction of Mrs. S.] (What is the matter, Cleve?) my potty [?] [Interpreted by Mr. S. as 'pretty'.] Mama. [Mrs. S. here broke into tears.] (You would not want Mama to cry, would you Cecil?) no, don't want her to. (Write her something, Cecil.) Mama I [word undecipherable, possibly 'love' or 'lovd'.] here to [too.] love here. (Mrs. S.: Mama would like to hug you, Cecil.) Yes, kess [kiss] you and papa George. (Are you going Cecil?) Yes. (Good night, Cecil.) Love."

This sitting explains itself in most details. Of course Mr. and Mrs. S. knew all about the ring on the fingers and nothing important can be made of this. It bears well enough on identity, but does not escape the interpretation of secondary personality. The incident of telling what was in the trunk appears more like the supernormal of some kind and may have that meaning. It is borne out by the spelling of "wool". The incident is comparable with one or two others in this record, for instance, my experiment with the moving hand. The reference to the cards and stamps is true.

In reply to further inquiries, Mr. Smead says: "I think it was his third finger counting either way. Mrs. S. thinks that the ring was on his third finger when he was buried. She is not very sure about this. She says that he had his ring on his finger when he was taken up-stairs and put in the bed in which he died, that the ring dropped off and that she picked it up, did not notice what finger it had been on, and placed the ring on the bureau, and that it was not put on him again until he was dressed for burial. She thinks that he usually wore his ring on this middle finger." Compare drawing at later sitting (p. 461). Mr. Smead's recorded note in the body of the sitting makes it possible that the child wore the ring on both fingers.

October 7th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mrs. Frank Miller. [Planchette presumably used.]

"(Go on.) Scrawl, apparently the letter 'M.' M. period. M Cecil, Papa. (Write what you wish.) Papa Be Good To [I interrupted to say that I thought that it must be Mrs. S.'s subliminal.] Mama [Then an undecipherable letter followed by scrawls like an emphatic period. Possibly intended for 'Be'.] Good TELL GEORGE BROTHER ... [scrawl erased.] CECIL.

(I cannot think that this is you, Cecil. You are Mrs. S.'s subliminal self.) no. (How is it you can write so well?) PRINT it [both 't's' crossed.] * * [probably another attempt at the word 'print'.] (Go on.) BROTHER GEORGE I COME TO SEE HIM. (Do you want me to tell brother George?) YES PAPA. (Go on.) I AM HERE PAPA. (Yes, go on. It is easy to write, Cecil.) NO ['no' erased.] IT IS HARD. (Have you something to tell papa? What sort of a world do you live in, Cecil?) YOU MiST [MUST.] [Only one line of the letter 'U' made.] NOT ASK ME PAPA. (Why must I not ask you?) BECAUSE I CANT TELL, PAPA. (Why not, Cecil?) DONT NO [know.] HOW. (What do you do there?) PLAY AND LEARN. (Have you been to the planet Mars?) [No reply.]

(Whom did you see when you were passing out of your body?) MEN. UNCLE [only one line of letter 'U' made.] VESTER [Then the planchette went back and erased 'UNCLE'.] FRANK, no BABY. (Who else?) JOHN BABY [Planchette went back and wrote 'BABY' in front of 'JOHN'.] UNCLE (What do you mean by 'Baby John?') ['UNCLE' and 'JOHN' underscored many times by the planchette indicating that the answer to this question was 'UNCLE JOHN'.] (Do you mean your Uncle John?) YES. (Have you seen your uncle Frank tonight?) We see him. (Have you seen your uncle Frank tonight?) NO. (Were others there?) YES. (Who were they?) I DONT KNOW ALL THERE NAMES. MAUDE WAS AWAY. [The 'a' in the word 'names' was made in the printed form for the small letter as it is seen in type, but also made as large as the capitals. The 'a' in 'was', however, was made as in ordinary handwriting.]

(Please get uncle Frank for us.) NO HE IS BUSY [letter 'Y' not finished.] (What is Frank doing?) BUSY. May Eva Can TELL. (Let some other spirit write, Cecil?) GOOD BY PAPA, NANE, MAMA, AUNTIE. ['t' crossed.] "

There are no evidential incidents in this sitting as the reader will perhaps remark. One interesting feature of it, however, is the statement of the "communicator" that he does not know how to tell about his new world. This we should expect from almost any one, and especially from a child. It is precisely what ought to be said on the spiritistic theory, but unfortunately it might also be the reflection of opinions on this side.

The expressions "Baby John" and "Uncle John" have some interest. Mrs. Smead's brother John had died when a child two and a half years old and was of course Cecil's *uncle*. The writing

of the words "baby" and "uncle" so nearly together and with reference to the same person is an interesting incident on any theory. Mrs. S. says that she never called him uncle John in Cecil's presence but always her brother in heaven. Quite as interesting also is the statement that it was his uncle Sylvester that he saw when passing out. There is nothing evidential in the statement, but it coincides with his dying statement that he saw a man (p. 387). "Frank" possibly refers to his uncle Frank Miller, a former "communicator" (p. 362). Cecil, it seems, had never seen him while living and knew him only by name as uncle Frank.

October 10th, 1901. Present Mrs. Miller, Miss May Eva Miller and Mrs. S. Mrs. S. conscious all the time and much interested in the sitting. Mr. S. says: "I was away and no record of the questions asked was kept. I shall take up the record as best I can from what I was told were the questions asked."

Mrs. S. says: "Mrs. Miller and her daughter wanted to hear from Mr. Frank (Miller). As Mr. S. was not here to keep the record I did not think it would be worth while, for there has been so very little of interest to me, and so little that I felt really amounted to anything. I did not think it would be at this time. I did not want to take the P— (planchette), but did not refuse because I did not want her to think that I did not wish to be accommodating, so agreed to for a little while. She had brought over her Ouija board, and we were going to try it just from curiosity, but it would not work for me, but instead would try to write.

"She asked so many questions that it was impossible to keep a record of them, but I have written as many as I can recall from the answers."

"(Who is here?) [scrawls.] (Are you here Frank?) Mary. * * [apparent attempt either to repeat the name 'Mary' or to write 'Mamie'. Letters most distinctly resemble 'Mamm'. This interpretation based on later attempts.]

(Who is Mary?) M... M... Mann... (Mary who, please tell us who you are.) Me... Maunn [?] [or 'Mamm' or

'Mamie'.] (May Eva M.: Do you mean me, papa?) mam... no. mam... no. (May Eva M.: Then if you do not mean me do you mean that your name is Mary?) Yes, Mary. [Then apparently an attempt again at 'Mamie', but very scrawly.] (Mrs. M.: Then we are to understand that you are Mary Hall, my sister?) no... Pall [?] [or 'Hall'?] (Are you Mary Hall?) yes. (Are you Mary H. my aunt?) no, no. (Then I guess you are Mary H. Whitney.) no. (Then who are you?) One mary hall. (Then if you are Mary Hall you must be either Mary Hall, sister, or Mary Hall Whitney, aunt.) no, one *Mary*.

(What do you mean by 'One', and 'One Mary Hall?') Are you Mary Hall, or who are you? We would like to know.) no, no. [Then lines drawn through the word 'one' and 'yes' written.]

(Mrs. M.: I guess you don't know *much* or you could write more than just *Mary*.) Mary hall one. [planchette then made a curve and drew a line through word 'hall' and wrote 'no' superposing it upon letters 'll'.] (If you are any relative to me will you tell me what your mother's name was before she was married?) annie [?] Mary [?] [or 'Mam' ?] [scrawl, possibly 'one'.] [scrawl.] mame [?] [or 'mimi' or 'mime'.] (Then are you related to Otis Hall?) no. (Are you related to Fletcher?) no. (Perhaps you can remember Otis Hall coming up to N. H. to get some cider.) no.

(Mrs. S. notes: There was some more said that I do not recall, but it was about its being some relative to her and Otis Hall. The answer was:) no, no * * [apparently an attempt at 'Mamie'.] no.

(I guess you are not Mary Hall at all.) Yes, I am.

[Mrs. S. notes: Aunt Jennie (Mrs. Miller) was so nervous to think she could not get any communication from her husband and nothing of interest to her from this Mary Hall that she said we will wait awhile and see if Frank will come. We waited for about ten minutes and aunt Jennie said, 'I guess if Frank is going to write he would be here by this time'. So we tried again.]

(Is there any one here?) Yes. (Have you any message for us?) Yes. (Is this you Frank?) no. (Who is it?) no, Mma [?] [or 'Mme' ?] (Please tell me who you are?) Mar [scrawls.] hall * * [undecipherable owing to its having been written through the scrawls, but apparently ends with 'mlo' and possibly a scrawly 'p'. Apparently also a 'Mar— hall' written again in the scrawls.]

(Have you any message for me, Mary Hall?) no. (May Eva M.: Have you any for me or Mrs. S.?) no. (Mrs. M.: Can you tell me what your sister's name is? Was your sister's name Betsey A. Hall?) no, I did not have any sister. (Didn't you have a sister Betsey A. Hall?) no.

(Then I guess you are no relation of mine.) [scrawl.] no, no. (Can't you tell us some one that will know you?) Mary hall

Hyslop. [Mrs. S. records that this last word could not be read, but Mr. S. afterward read it and it is fairly clear.]

(What do you want to say to us any way, Mary Hall?) no, * * my [?] ork [possibly 'N york.'] no, no. my husband is sick. I would like to know if you are any relative of mine?) no, here * * Mrs. J. H. * * lo... Mrs. * * [Next question not recorded.]

[scrawl.] no... Mary ... [scrawl.] wait. Mary [scrawly.] my husband, New York. (Who is your husband?) Yes, when he comes over. (Was your sister's name Betsey Ann Hall?) no, no, no. Mary Hall [scrawly.] (What is your husband's name?) no, no, not now. yes, he will tell when he comes here. His name [scrawl.] no not * * slop [?] H. [apparently erased.] hyslop [?] (Who is your husband?) you know him. (Is he Dr. Hyslop?) yes. he is coming soon and he can write it I cannot. his name [scrawl.] no, * * [Frye, apparently not read.] no, Frye, yes, no, no, no, my husband is sick. Mary * * no, Mary hall, new york. not much. yes, George, yes, no, yes, Mary Frye. no, my husband [scrawly.] is sick. yes, New York. Mr. James ... no, no, no, when he comes over here. yes, not here [?] (What do you wish to say?) What I want to say is, don't tell James he is coming yet. [apparently not read.] no yet. not [?] * * yes."

[By this time Mr. S. had returned and the sitting was resumed. Soon after, and before the sitting closed Mrs. Miller and daughter went home, according to a note of Mr. S. The writing became quite distinct.]

"(If Mrs. Hyslop was present she may write.) Yes, Hyslop. (What do you want to write?) Frye. (Was that word 'Frye'?) yes. (What is it about that word 'Frye'?) James knows. (What relation was 'Frye' to you?) my mother hall. (Was Mrs. Frye your mother?) yes. (What is that last word?) Hall. (Hall?) yes. (What was her first name?) Mary. (Mary?) yes. (Mary Frye was your mother's name?) yes, Frye hall. (You mean she married a Hall?) yes. (Are you Dr. Hyslop's wife?) yes. (Are you really Mrs. S.'s subconscious self?) no. (Prove that you are not.) yes. (Go ahead.) George Hall * * [undec. possibly 'Wast'.] (What is that last word?) * * (Tell me that word.) Hyslop mary * * "

Mary Fry Hall was the maiden name of my wife. It was not spelled Frye, as in this present record. The reader may remember that in March 1900 at a sitting in New York I received the name "Mary Fry" in much the same manner as here (cf. pp. 323,

324). It will also be recalled that the circumstances prevented me from attaching the weight to the name that I would otherwise have had. The same circumstance prevents my using it here as I might wish to do. But it is interesting to see the persistence of it in all the desires and attempts of the sitters to receive communications from another person. The possible attempt to give the name 'Mamie' is more suggestive. This was what my wife was called by her parents and relatives, but was *never so called by me*. She preferred to be called 'Mary'. I am certain that Mrs. S. never heard that name applied to her, unless Mr. Hall when he met Mrs. S. at my house may have spoken of her in that way. The reader will recall my reference (p. 324) to her as Mary in the presence of Mrs. S., but he may rest assured that I never called her 'Mamie' in the presence of any one. The possibility, however, that her father may have spoken of her in this way prevents my having any certainty that the writing of it here has any other source than the subliminal. Besides even this possibility is diminished by the doubt about the writing and its interpretation.

Mrs. Hyslop's mother was not named 'Mary'. Her maiden name, however, was 'Fry'. Her father's name is George Washington Hall. It is most probable that Mrs. S. never heard his Christian names: it is more than probable that she never heard the second part of it, but the significance of this is diminished by the doubt about the reading.

Mrs. S. knew that I was sick, and that the tuberculosis from which I was suffering was generally regarded as a fatal disease. I had just gone to the Sanitarium at Saranac Lake, having been admitted on October 5th. The prediction here recorded evidently has not yet been fulfilled, as I am here to record it and the rest of the "communications". There is nothing, therefore that can be treated as important and evidential in this interesting sitting. It savors too much of secondary personality.

[Mrs. S. after writing the sentences regarding the Ouija board drew lines through them as if to erase them on the ground that they had no importance, but I have copied them because of the allusion to the tendency of the Ouija board to write like the planchette. J. H. H.]

October 14th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Both our hands on the planchette. Mrs. S. conscious.

"(Go on.) [Scrawls. Resembles 'Snm': further scrawls.] (Is that mirror writing?) no. (I cannot read it.) Mrs. Bames (I cannot read this last. Will you write it again?) Yes, Mrs. B. [very large capital.] ames. (What letter is the first letter of your name? Is it the letter 'B'?) Yes, B. (I cannot see through it. Please explain.) B. ames B ames no B ames.

[This was very curiously written. The planchette first made the capital letter 'B' in corner of sheet and then wrote 'ames' under it. Then it went back to the beginning of this 'ames' and wrote a capital 'B' in front of it and drew curved lines under the word 'ames' as if to indicate that 'B' belonged to it, and then after drawing a line went to the top of the sheet and wrote 'no'. Then it went back to the second letter 'B' and drew a line through it and then a circle about the first capital 'B' and wrote after it 'aomes', evidently intending it for 'ames'. Then it wrote 'Bames' and under it the word 'no' and then drew a line through the capital 'B' and apparently wrote the letter 'M' above and to the right. Then wrote 'no'. J. H. H.] (I cannot make it out. Please print it.) B [Then five spiral coils were made without taking the planchette off the paper.] (Go on.) [Scrawl with a period after it. Probably the letter 'M'.] Bames Bames Mrs. Bames, Yes, Mr [possibly letter 's' poorly made.] ames. [Scrawls follow.] (You may write what you please.) Mr. ames, yes, Bames, Bames Mrs. Bames Mrs. [letter 's' erased.] (Will you please tell me your first name?) Mr. ames [letter 'a' probably intended for a capital as it was made of large size though in the form of a small 'a'.] Mrs. B. ames. [letter 'a' again made apparently for a capital as it was of large size, though in form of small 'a'.] (Will you tell me your first name?) Mrsh buens [?] (You may go on as you please.) [Scrawl.] mrs. [scrawl.] no. [scrawls.] Mr Ames [letter 'A' made as before.] * * W [or M] ames. Mr. ames. Mr. Ames to, no, yes, Mrs. Bames. (What is the message?) to Mrs. B Ames. ['Ames' written under 'B' and the 'A' though written in the form of small 'a' is enlarged as if intended for a capital.] she is my wife, yes. (What is your message to her?) Mrs. Bames I know what she does, yes, where she goes. (Will you tell me anything so that I may find out Mrs. B. Ames?) Yes. (All right. Go ahead.) Ashland Manchester, Lawrence, yes, Mrs. Bames. (What do you mean?) these yes. (Go on. You may tell me what you please.) Mrs. Bames, Lawrence, Manchester now. (Do you mean that Mrs. Ames is still living?) Yes. (Do you mean that she is living in Manchester now?) Yes, Mrs. B. Ames.

['A' made in form of small letter 'a' but enlarged for capital.] (Will you tell me anything about Mrs. B. Ames?) No. (What is the name that begins with 'B'?) Betsey. ['t' apparently crossed.] (Please give me your first name?) [Scrawls.] Bames Bames (Write what you please.) Mr. ? or Mrs. * * Ames. ['A' made like small 'a', but enlarged.] Mrs. B. Ames. ['A' enlarged small 'a'.] Mr. * * [rest of word undecipherable. Resembles 'Islnasheel'.] Yes. B. thank you. Good Bye, Yes."

Mr. and Mrs. S. seem never to have known either Mr. or Mrs. Ames. Mrs. S. when visiting Mr. Smead's mother a short time ago made inquiries about the two persons. She ascertained that Mr. Ames had lived in Ashland, Manchester and Lawrence or Methuen (the last two places are practically one and the same town). Mrs. Ames had lived in Ashland and Lawrence, and finally went to Manchester, N. H., to live and lives there now. The parties thus seem to have been known to the elder Smeads and not to the parties concerned in this record.

October 17th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mr. and Mrs. Bowles. Planchette work.

[Mr. Smead did not make the usual transcript of this record as there was too little in it that was decipherable or intelligible to make any clear account of it. J. H. H.]

"(Go on. We are ready.) [Five minutes delay before anything was done. Mrs. Bowles then put her hand on the planchette.] (Go on.) [The planchette then drew the picture of a man or woman with a pair of spectacles hanging by a chain as it were from the right eye.] (Who is it.) [No reply.] (Put a frame on it.) [Planchette then drew circles about the picture.] (Please explain.) [Sheet simply covered with lines and scrawls having no apparent meaning.] (Please tell us.) [Figure drawn which is evidently a yacht with two sails.] (What is that?) Boat. [poorly written, but with the 't' crossed.] * * (Is this Maude?) no. [very indistinctly written and completed by going back to finish the 'n'.] (Who is it?) [No reply.] (Can you tell me?) [No answer.] (Go on as you please.) [Picture of an animal's head drawn, possibly a cat, ending with the letter 'Y'.] (Go on as you please.) [Apparently a house drawn, but not clear.] [Mr. S. put his hand on the planchette. The planchette then went over to Mrs. Bowles.] [Lines drawn with the word 'must' written clearly in the middle of them.] (Go on.) Go must. ['must' poorly written, but the

't' crossed.] (Who is here?) [Scrawls.] George [?] [not apparent until suspected.] George is here with [very poorly written.] * * [Interpreted by Mr. S. at time as 'Cecil Smead'.] Papa Bowles."

[The writing in this message is very scrawly and fine. It resembles very much some of the hand-writing that I received in my sittings as described in this report. One would have to see the letters made to suspect their meaning, but once supposed some of them are intelligible. J. H. H.]

Mr. Smead reports the following experience as occurring on the night of October 20th. No sitting was held on this date. The account will explain itself.

"October 20th, 1901. I was obliged to be busy that evening. At about 7 o'clock p. m. I called at the house of Mr. C. H. B—— and we discussed the abstract of the report of Dr. J. H. Hyslop upon the case of Mrs. Piper. I left this house at half-past seven, or near that time, and went to the house of Mr. A. F. B—— where I stayed until nearly 9.30 p. m. I then returned home and found Mrs. J. E. Xenos present visiting Mrs. Smead. We talked about various things and she went home about 10 p. m.

"Mrs. S. and I were then left alone. Before I went out I had said aloud: 'I think that when I come back we will try the planchette.' But when I returned I was too tired to do so, and we got ready to retire. I went into the kitchen and locked all the doors and put out the light in that room. I then put out the light in the sitting-room and lighted the little hand lamp and Mrs. S. and I started to go up-stairs to go to bed. We had to pass through a hall-way and up the front hall stairs. I know that the front hall door was locked, because it has a spring lock and it was locked when Mrs. Xenos went home, and after the event that I am soon to relate I found it locked.

"Mrs. S. and I had gone through the hall-way and were about half way up the stairs when I was startled beyond expression by two or three sharp, clear, strange raps that thoroughly frightened me. They were not like any I had ever heard before. They were given on the door we had just passed through. As I listened in

my fear (and I was afraid. Why I cannot tell.) there were two more not quite as loud or sharp, yet very distinct. We went up-stairs then and I made up my mind when I could collect my thoughts to see what was the cause of the raps. So Mrs. S. and I went down-stairs and examined the house down-stairs. We could not find any reason for the noise.

"We then went up-stairs to bed and at regular intervals the raps came. These that were given in the bed-room were of a different character than those I heard in the hall-way. Those in the bed-room were like a click or a snap. We could not make the intelligences answer us."

October 20th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Hands of both on planchette.

"(All right. You may go on.) [Lines and scrawls.] Yes, we will let you know. go to her.

[This answer apparently refers to the thoughts of Mrs. S. She had been given the name of a medium in B—— and she wished to go to see her, so that she (Mrs. S.) might find out who was her own control. Mrs. S. wished this very much. She had not spoken of her desires until after these words were written.]

('Go to her' is it?) Yes. (What do you mean? Please explain.) who controls here? ('Who controls here', do I have it right?) Yes. (What do you mean by 'Go to her'?) * * Letters apparently 'yese ...nefetinght'. [Question repeated.] Mrs. [?] * * will tell you about her when we see her. Mrs. Smith ['t' crossed.] will tell ['t' crossed.] you about ['t' crossed.] her. (What do you mean by 'her'?) go and find out. (Who is writing?) [A line drawn under the above words indicating the same answer.] (All right. Will you go with me?) [Another line drawn under the last message as before.] (Will you not be kind enough to tell me something about yourself?) when she tell you who I am. (Can I find out if I go alone?) if it ['t' crossed.] is necessary. (You know Mrs. S.'s present condition. She cannot go so far now.) Yes she can. (I don't think she can safely.) It will not hurt her. (I should be afraid.) then wait. (Whoever you are do you want to write anything for us?) no.

(I do not see the use of waiting. Please tell me your name. What is the need of my going to Mrs. Smith's to find out who is communicating tonight? Please tell me who you are.) Sylvester. (I am very glad to greet you.) Cecicee [not clearly written. Probably intended for 'Cecil'.] we will ... [scrawl. Possibly for

'g'.] o [written on next line.] to [?] [period.] (I do not quite understand.) Cecil, we will go to. [too] [planchette went back and crossed the 't']. (All right. Go on.) with mama when she goes. (Mother is here. What do you mean?) Yes, yes, to find out me. ['i' dotted in 'find' and 't' crossed in 'out'.] (Write it over so I shall be sure. We don't need to find out you. We know that it is you.) no you dont ['t' crossed.]. (Tell me something that will prove that you are not Mrs. S.'s secondary personality.) Go and find out. (Will you not write me something that will prove it?) Henry is here [last two letters in 'Henry' not distinct.] (What is that first word?) Henry (Who is Henry?) Henry * * [Letters apparently 'Seenthnns'. Might be a rude attempt at 'Smith' or 'Stevens'.] (Is it Henry Stevens?) Smith, not * * [Resembles 'Nishishuoy'.] no. Stevens he is [?] with es [us ?] now [?] (You did not answer me about Henry Stevens? Who is Henry Stevens?) You remember Billy Russell. (Yes.) Yes, well he, Yes, is he will write * * [letter or word undec. Possibly, as interpreted by Mr. S., a scrawl for 'if'.] you keep her [scrawls and lines.] * * * (If Billy Russell is present he may write.) no, not now Billy. (Did Billy Russell write that?) no, I did."

No explanation of names need be given as they appear in this sitting. Secondary personality accounts for all of them, especially as the Henry Stevens seems not to have been known. Mrs. Smith is the name of the medium to whom Mrs. S. thought of going.

October 25th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Hands of both on the planchette. Before the sitting we had been talking about "Imperator" and Mrs. Piper and Alfred the Great, who Mrs. S. thinks must be "Imperator". She wished that he might make known his presence to her. With this in mind we began the sitting. I did not think she could sit very long because she was so nervous. But as she had these thoughts in mind I thought it was worth while to sit and see what might be written. The result is very singular. The "communicator" was very free and had very little trouble to communicate. He seemed to affect Mrs. S. very much and it was very difficult to keep her from entering the trance state. In her present physical condition I did not wish her to enter that state, so finally I stopped the sitting.

Sitting began with prayer. At its close a rap was plainly heard by us.

"(Go on. We are ready.) [Lines drawn across the sheet.] (What does that mean?) Guy M. Pease [letter 'a' not clear.] (What is the last name?) Pease. (Did I get it right?) Yes. (Is it 'Guy M. Pease'?) you did. (What do you want to write?) He wants to tell you that he [pause for some minutes.] has not been here very many moons. (What is the last word?) moons. [Planchette drew a line through the first word 'moon' before writing it a second time.] (That is good. Go on please.) [Scrawls like the figure eight.] (Go on.) [Scrawls like a number of letters 'm' followed by scrawls like inverted letters 'e' and those like 'm' repeated. Then—] My home man [?] [was] not [Pause.] [Scrawls.] (Why do you make those scrawls? Please write without them. I have not very much paper. Do not waste it.) [Lines and scrawls in more confined space.] Yes, you do not understand why it is so hard. my home was in Boston soeweh here [somewhere] before I came, [scrawls in corner of sheet.] you understand [word finished on another line.] me [New sheet given and circular scrawls made in its upper left hand corner to which the planchette would go every now and then. Mrs. S. called it his ink well, but in reality it was evidently an accommodation to the request of Mr. S. to save paper. After making the scrawls there was a pause. Mrs. S. was greatly affected, as if she would go into the trance state. Mr. S. checked this and waited until she was normal again. This took about three minutes.]

(Go on. We are right now.) [Scrawls.] when I was here my mother lived in Boston somewhere. [Sheet changed and the 'ink well' made in its corner.] (Did you write your brother?) no, my mother ['t' crossed.] when I came here she did not know where [where.] what she was."

Here Mrs. S. became so nervous that the sitting was broken off much to my regret. This communicator was a very good one, clear and rapid in his style of writing, using his 'ink well' from time to time. The name is wholly unknown to both of us. We never knew any such family.

October 27th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(All right, friend.) How are you? [scrawls.] (I am all

right. Glad to have you with us.) Aer you to? [too.] [Interrogation point inserted.] (What is the first word?) are. [The question was directed to Mrs. S.] (Yes, I am. Mrs. S. is too, I guess.) Mrs. Smead! Who is she?

(Listen. Mrs. Smead is my wife. She is the lady here. She is the "light".) I wish to say she is not well. [scrawl.] (What is the matter with her?) Elastic * * is her trouble. (I cannot read it, so as to tell what is meant.) Elastical muscular ['al' is 'ecistical' apparently erased.] not enough of it do you see? (I don't understand. Explain it, please.) She has that trouble and should have it seen to. [scrawls.] (What trouble is it? I do not understand.) muscles are not as limber as they should [scrawl.] do you see? (I know that it is hard for her to move. What can be done for her? What is the matter with the muscles?) * * [several words undec.] to take. She will need special care if she is not more careful. (What should she do?) Have here [last letter 'e' erased.] see her phys. [word unfinished and period inserted as if recognising the abbreviation.] she does not like what I say. True. (What is the matter with her?) now I have told you. (What do you mean any way?) Best take my advice. (What is that last word?) advice. (What have you to say to us tonight?) I will wait. (Does it hurt her for me to have her use the planchette? No. [period inserted.] (Please tell me who you are?) Thomas Henry. (Will you find some one for us and bring him so that we may ask him some questions?) who. (Alfred the Great.) [No reply.]"

For the possible meaning of the name 'Thomas Henry' I refer the reader to the close of the next sitting (p. 426). The present one is apparently connected with the previous communications from this 'Thomas Henry' and his prescriptions. As they were apparently intended for Mrs. S. who at the time was expecting confinement some months later I at once saw a possible meaning in the reference to her condition in this sitting and wrote to ascertain whether any investigation had been made into her physical condition in respect to her muscles, and suggested that if it had not been made it might be advisable to consult a doctor. This was done. Her physician reported that there was certainly trouble with her muscles. "He said that if he had not known her so well he should have been much alarmed at her symptoms." In regard to the statement about her walking Mr. S. reports that there "was much difficulty in her walking. This was two or three days after the message when she could not get up from the

lounge without severe effort and pain. It was not a case of cramp of the muscles, but seemed to indicate some poison, some irritation in the muscles. Dr. G—— found no excess of albumen in the urine and no lack of proper proportion of urates in it."

October 29th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

[The record was not sent me in full as it contains matter pertaining to the future. Only the map drawn by Sylvester was sent me. I reproduce what Mr. S. writes me in his letter. J. H. H.]

"In the experiment that I tried yesterday morning at about 11 a. m. with Mrs. S., with the planchette as usual. She drew a very singular map of several points, connected with lines to represent railroads. The names of the places were Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Nashau, Saranac Lake and P——. These places were so placed on this map, as I call it, that the relative positions were found to be correct. When I afterwards looked the matter up in an atlas I was struck with the accuracy of this map. The communicator pretended to be Sylvester. Several facts were stated in the communication that relate to the future and they may all be right and may all be wrong. He said to me in regard to the subject matter: 'Billy, keep this for me'. So I cannot send it to you, but I will send you the map if you wish. I should want you to return it as soon as you have examined it. Do not copy it yet until I get permission from Sylvester. I will do so if I can some time."

I have examined the map and it is quite accurate in the relative positions of the cities except that of Boston. 'This city is placed on a latitude south of New York.' It should be slightly north. I should like to reproduce the map here, but it might lead to the identity of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. There is nothing in it that might not be produced by secondary personality.

Some months later, the last of May, 1902, Mr. S. decided to give me the full record of the sitting in which this map was drawn. I am therefore now able to reproduce it. The date, of course, is October 29th, 1901. Sitting held in the morning thinking that the results would be better.

" (All right now.) * * (I cannot read it.) Plimther (?)
 * * Yes. C * * [period inserted at end of word.] Mullin
 (?) Mr. * * metereny (?) men * * (I cannot read it.)
 yes, where is my mother * * * * (I cannot read it.) we
 (?) want (?) papa * * * * make mama (?) well * *
 (Please write it plainer. I cannot make out what you mean.)
 must wait for a while * * * * head (?) should * * light
 (?)

[Then a figure was drawn which might represent the bottle of smelling salts that had been placed on the paper just at this point and then the planchette wrote:—]

What is it here for? [Mr. S. explained it saying:—] (Mrs. S. smells it so that she will not be faint.) that light is hurt by it. [Mr. S. removed the bottle. Then the map was drawn which has been described above.]

(That is very good. I think I can see what you are trying to show me. I am very much pleased with that map, as I shall call it. Is Dr. Hyslop going to visit us at P——?) Selles [meaning of this not intelligible, possibly intended for word 'Letters'.] not yet, sometime soon. (Is it really Dr. Hyslop that you mean? Who do you mean?) You should know [kno] your letters * * works and so forth ectra [last probably intended for *et cetera*.] [Mr. S. adds note: This phrase is characteristic of my brother Sylvester.]

(Is Dr. Hyslop going to visit me?) not yet. (Is he going to visit me as spirit or as in the body?) Spirit. (Do you mean that he is going to die at Saranac Lake?) [Line was then drawn by the planchette to the place called New York on the map.] (Is he going to die in New York City?) Leave the earth there. (Who made that map?) [Line drawn again drawn to place on map called New York.] (Some one from New York when in the body?) yes. (Who was it?) [Line then drawn to place called Philadelphia on the map.] (Did you go from New York to Philadelphia? Is that what you mean?) yes. (Now will you write your name?) not yet, this is enough for now. (Do you want me to stop now?) we will tell him, you need not. [Question evidently misunderstood.] (I said, do you want us to stop now?) yes. (Please write your name?) what for? (I want to know so that I can be sure who is doing this.) Sylvester. (Shall I tell Dr. Hyslop this sitting?) no (I understand that Dr. Hyslop will leave Saranac Lake, and go to New York and leave this earth at New York City. Is that it?) sometime. (Is that what you mean by what you have shown me?) it is. (Anything else you wish to write?) yes, keep this, Billy, for me. (Listen, Sylvester. Do you hear me?) yes. Who is this Thomas Henry that has been here?) me. (Who is the spirit that calls himself Guy M. Pease?) Guy M. Pease. (Then he is a real spirit?) yes.

(What do you think of calling Ida's disease "elastical muscu-

lar"?) It is. they are this, I said. (Cf. p. 488). (I must ask another question.) no, going."

The allusion to the smelling bottle "hurting the light" is not certainly intelligible. If I could be certain that it meant the same as the word "light" in the Piper case when referring to her I could explain it as referring to the conditions for communicating. But it has not been customary to so call Mrs. S. It is possible that it was the intention to say that the smelling salts were not good for Mrs. S.

The remainder of the sitting comes very near being suggestive. It appears that a prediction is made regarding myself, and that I shall die in New York. But it also appears that I shall visit Mr. S. at P——, which, by the way, has been done since this record was made. But I attach no significance to the fact. The reference to Philadelphia, however, and the answer "spirit" to one of the questions shows some confusion in the supposition that the communication is wholly connected with me. Now my wife lived in Philadelphia and died in New York, and if we will suppose that the word "spirit" and the messages about a "visit" might possibly refer to an intended communication from her we get a clear and consistent account of the record, as complicating a prediction about myself with both an indication that a spirit related to me was wishing to communicate and the fact that it would do so later. I cannot, of course, have any more in support of this view than mere conjecture and even this is unwarranted on the basis of the present case alone. It requires the importation of the results in the Piper phenomena even to raise a suggestion as to possibilities in the matter. Mrs. S. knew too much about the facts thus indicated to attach any such importance to the incidents and we have to be content with the explanation by secondary personality. The sitting has very great interest, however, on this supposition as indicating the kind of complications involved in the manner of the "communications", especially when we remark the personality through which they are delivered, a personality that claimed to have gone to New York with Mrs. S. and not to have taken any part in the experiments there (cf. p. 355).

October 30th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. 2.30 p. m. Mrs. S. in good condition.

"(All right. Go on.) [Circular scrawls with occasional and apparent attempt to write words, ending in the word —] Yes. (Go ahead.) — [undecipherable. Apparently 'mmi' yes mm'.] no nana [?] * * (Who are you?) My name [?] is J. Smead. (Please write that again.) J. [scrawl.] Sm J. Smead. (What is that first initial?) J. Smead. (That is too thin.) [I thought that her subliminal was writing the name of my father who I knew was living.] no. (Explain it then.) no. (That person is alive.) no. [I thought that my father might have died and I not known it.]

(What relation is the writer to me?) Son. [not clear.] [I often called my boy, Cecil John Smead, John Smead. I called him this as much as I ever called him Cecil. I wanted to be sure, so I asked.] (What was that word?) son. (Did you not then tell me what relation I was to him?) no. (Please tell me again what relation the writer was to me.) son. (Please print that word, so I shall be sure.) Son. [not printed.] (I am sure what is meant now. Please explain.) you s— [say] hello, J. Cecil. (I don't understand clearly.) Your boy S. J. Clevie. J. Cle—. (Cecil never wrote that.) ues. [yes.] (What word after 'of'?) [No reply.] [There was no need of asking it as there was no word 'of' in the writing.] Get eie [me] som [some.] of my [letter 'y' made like 'S'.] thngs [things.] * * [scrawls interpreted by Mr. S. as 'that I'.] use— [scrawl possibly an attempt at letter 'd'.] his [written 'hes', but the 'e' dotted so as to show it was intended for 'i'.] w— [circles drawn so as to make a spot about half an inch in diameter, then on next line.] Ch [?] get * * [Letters seem like 'linan'.] (What shall I get?) Set [Let] me Se [See] it. (What do you want to see?) my books, watch. (What book do you want?) daily food.

[He had a little book that he thought everything of, called 'Daily Food'. He could read some of the verses in it.]

(Shall we stop until we get them?) Yes. (Here they are Cecil. Do you want mama to take off the wrappers and the rubber cloth?) Yes, papa. I am with you here mama. break them. [The string.] I want to see what time it is. Will you mama?

[This was very characteristic of him. He could tell time as well as any one when he was living. He always loved his little watch and his little 'Daily Food'.] (Mama has Cecil. Do you want mama to take it out of the rubber sack?) [We put this watch in rubber cloth so that no hand should touch it but his own.] Yes. * * (There it is.) Yes, put it on there. [We put it on the planchette.] (We have. Don't you see it?) mine [?] yes, mama

my book. (Tell me what you want.) Eleven o'clock, no, 25 min * * [rest undecipherable and finished on next line. Might be 'nis' or 'uts'.] mama my mama's.

[The time of the watch was 11.20 a. m. Mrs. S. knew the time, as she was looking right at it. Cecil might have readily made the mistake at first sight of calling it 11 o'clock. Still he corrected it at once to 25 minutes. This was strange when the real time of the watch was 11.20 and Mrs. S. was looking straight at the dial plate and could hardly have made this error twice. It is much more reasonable to suppose that my boy, Cecil, was really present.]

(There they are on the table, Cecil.) Give me my watch, Papa. (Shall I put it on the planchette?) Yes. (All right.) George, love him I do Papa. (Go on.) I love George, Papa. (Shall I not put away the watch and book.) no.

[I was called away and Mrs. S. asked the next two questions.] (Will you do something for me, Cecil?) Some, yes, what mama? (Can you bring uncle Sylvester with perhaps Imperator. You know whom I mean. You know who that is. You have heard papa and mama talk about him.) When I can talk with uncle vester. (Cecil, let me take your watch off from the planchette.) no.

[His brother George came in and sat in a chair opposite him.] (Do you see George, Cecil?) Yes. (Say something to him, Cecil.) my li [?] my * * [Possibly 'nice' or an attempt to finish the word 'little'.] going papa. (Do you hear me Cecil?) Yes. (Shall I tell you a story, Cecil, so that you will stay. I will be glad to.) not now, papa." [Planchette moved to left side of the sheet and circles drawn to make a dark spot, and sitting closed.]

This sitting explains itself. There are no incidents not known to Mr. and Mrs. S. They are, however, well chosen to illustrate personal identity even if we cannot escape secondary personality as the explanation.

November 2nd, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used, with hands of both on it. Mrs. S. had her picture of Cecil before her. I had received a letter from Mrs. B. F. Smith, a medium, to whom I had been referred. She said that she would see me Tuesday next at one o'clock, and I had planned to go.

"(Go on. We are all ready.) We are here, Papa. seem [seems] like I can't here [hear] you, Papa. (Cecil, Papa loves his boy.) Yes, Cleve loveS Papa [very indistinct.] (I cannot read it

Cecil.) * * * (What do you want to write?) number AT SMITHS ['i' dotted.] (What is the word before 'at'? Is it 'number'?) Yes. (Please explain it.) 2. [period inserted after the number.] (Please explain it.) We will be the number 2. [period inserted again.] (What do you mean by the 'we'?) you and me, papa. (Will Sylvester be there?) Yes. (You and Sylvester?) Yes. (Who is writing now?) me, Cecil. (Write me something that will help me to know that it is really you that is writing.) * * Be sure to visit [?] [weesit ?] (Explain this.) minurstiny [?] ministry [?] iinto [?] the house. minuestiny [?] minestiny [?] ministry.

[This is very queer. I can explain it when I remember that Cecil used to play minister and preach, and that he wrote this so I would know that it was he and to recall this fact to me.]

(Go on. Tell me something else, Cecil, so I shall be sure it is you.) Expres ['xp' a mere scrawl.] to ashland ['d' a scrawl.] Expres ['x' made like 'r'.] to ashland. Expres ['xp' looks like 'rt'.] to ashland. (Explain it.) when mama was in new york, papa. (What did you do when mama was in New York, Cecil?) ashland. (What about Ashland?) Express, yes. ['x' still like 'r', but with a line to suggest an attempt to make 'x'.] (What about the 'Express to Ashland'?) * * yes. (Did you and I go to Ashland?) Yes. (What did we go for?) Lecture. [Correct.] (Tell me anything else Cecil.) my night pants. [This is a pertinent incident.] (Tell me something else, Cecil.) Mitten. [This is correct.] (What about the mittens?) You no [know.] (I don't remember.) You bought them. [True.] (Did I buy them when mama was in New York?) Yes. [This was true. I had forgotten it at the time, but recalled it afterwards.]

(Tell me anything else about it, Cecil.) his sister played with me. (Can you think of anything else, Cecil?) Lillian. [This was true. Mr. Hanson's sister Lillian played with Cecil that afternoon.]

(Go on, Cecil.) not now papa. (Don't you want to say something to mama?) kiss her good night. [After this the word 'yes' was written on the left side of the sheet and the planchette drew a line to the other, the right side and made a series of little circles and went back to the left side and drew similar circles and then again went to the right side and wrote 'yes'.]

This sitting again explains itself very largely. Most of it is certainly explicable by secondary personality, though it has incidents that are equally explicable by the spiritistic theory.

In regard to the incidents about the "Express", and "pants", and "mittens" Mr. S. says in response to inquiries:

"Cecil and I kept house alone while Mrs. S. was in New York. He needed some night pants, or a night dress. So I bought him a new pair. He was pleased with them, and when Cecil and I went to Ashland we took these new night pants. It was a combination garment. For him to refer to it was to me an evidence of his presence, unless we ascribe it all to Mrs. S.'s subliminal which I don't believe. She knew he had the night pants and mittens. She did not know he took them to Ashland with me. She knew he went with me to Ashland. She did not know he went on the "Express". In fact there was no "Express" to Ashland. But when Cecil was with me in the car he was so pleased and tickled to go that he referred to his playing "train" at home and said that the train on which we were was an "Express", and said he was going "Express to Ashland". This was a good test of identity to me, for Mrs. S. did not know it and I did not think of it until it was written."

November 10th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer as usual. Nothing special to suggest what was written.

"(All right. Go on.) we are here. (Who?) memes [?] memes. (Memes?: mentally without asking question aloud.) no, no. (Who are you?: mentally.) unstell, yes. [Mr. S. thinks the 'yes' was in answer, probably, to a mental question regarding Cecil by Mrs. S. or himself.]

(Who is writing?) Sylvester. (What is the answer to question two?) me, me, yes. (What do you want to write?) helping Cecil to understand. (Understand what?) this way. (What do you mean?) This way of working. (Do you mean the planchette?) Yes. (Have you anything to write to me?) he says, tell papa and mama I do come to love them much. (Sylvester, please tell Cecil we love him with all our hearts and miss him so much.) we know it papa and little brover [brother] too papa * * (What is written after the word 'little'?) brover too papa. [Then the planchette moved the pencil and erased the undecipherable word mentioned above.] (That was good. Tell us what you are doing, Cecil.) no. (Tell me what you can, Cecil.) I come to see you Sometimes papa. does mama see me now? (Mrs. S.: Mama can't see you, Cecil, with the light here.) [Sawtooth scrawls.] mama can sometime. (Go on. Tell us what you

please.) It is hard work, it is hard to spell and write, papa. (Let uncle Sylvester.) no, papa. (You can tell him what to write, Cecil.) no. (If you have anything to write, you may, Cecil.) Mama, Papa, George, Cecil, Maude, Ida, Jamie, Bertha, Henry, I am tired. Good night, Papa.

(There may be other spirits present.) Kiss little brother fo [for] me, and little mother. (Go on.) Good night, Papa. [Circles were drawn on each side of the sheet to represent kisses and then the words written—] for brover ”.

The reference to “Mama, Papa, George” explains itself. Cecil and Maude are the names of two deceased children of Mr. and Mrs. S. and the only deceased persons mentioned. Ida is the name of Mrs. S., Jamie the name of an intimate friend of Cecil and still living. Bertha is the name of an aunt of Cecil whom he liked very much, and Henry the name of a boy whom he also liked very much.

November 16th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

“ (All right.) Yes, Smith George, yes, yes. (Write the name again.) George Smith. (All right, you may go on.) Yes, where? [Apparently asked to know whither he should go.] (I mean that you may write what you wish.) we came when you did not let us write. (When was that?) 3 days ago. (What do you want to write?) yesterday we came [?] twice, yes. (Tell me something about yourself, Cecil.) * * yes, when we mistake [?] him for uncle vester. I am telling you about uncle Jogle. [Cecil's name for my brother, his uncle Joseph. He used to call him this.]

(What did you mean by what you wrote?) I thought uncle Jogle [‘Jogle erased.] vester was uncle vester [‘vester’ erased.] Jogle, when I first saw him. [The change in both cases was made without suggestion, so that the message meant: ‘I thought uncle Vester was uncle Joseph when I first met him’. This had a definite reference to something he said about my brother Joseph as he, Cecil, was dying. We cannot tell now what that reference was.]

(Who is writing now?) [I thought that it must be Cecil, yet I was not sure, because he had not said that he was, as he usually did, but gave the name George Smith.] me, papa. (Are you here Cecil?) Yes. (What was meant by George Smith?) Dewey. [The reference to ‘George Smith’ was now clear to me. Cecil had written ‘George Smith’ meaning ‘George Dewey Smith’, the name of my boy Georgie when he was in New York.]

[When Mrs. S. was brought to New York for the experiments recorded above (pp. 312-337) I arranged to have her called Mrs. Smith so that her identity would not be known even in my family. The little boy Georgie came with his mother and he had been told before he came that he was not to be known by his real name, but by George Dewey Smith. J. H. H.]

(Then you wrote it all, Cecil?) Yes. (Cecil, George wants to have me tell you a story. Shall I?) Yes, papa. [Mrs. S.'s hand shook very much: seemed to be great excitement there. I told him the story and asked him how he liked it.]

tell more yes. [This was just what he used to say when I had finished a story that he liked very well.] (Papa cannot tell you any more now Cecil. Do you like to hear papa tell stories?) Yes. (Go on. Have you anything else to write?) Yes, going to see little brother. [George, who was in his crib in the next room, a curtain being between the two rooms, said:—] (I love you Cecil. Good night.) New york. (What does 'New York' mean, Cecil?) we went there. (Tell me anything else Cecil.) Can go easier now, papa. (Go on. Tell me all you can, Cecil.) we don't have ['don't have' illegible.] guns here. [Apparently a letter made at end of 'here' and then erased.] (Write that again.) we don't have Guns here, papa. (What is the word after 'have'?) Guns.

(What did you mean when you said something about 'uncle Jogle'? When did you see him? Tell all you can about it, please.) I told you papa when I came here first. (What was the 'cause of your death? Why did you leave this world? Tell me, Cecil.) [Scrawls.] mr. Bowles made me. he didn't know. [Apparently a period inserted.] (What disease did you have?) not any but tired, papa. (Do you mean that you did not have any disease?) tired papa. (How do you explain your high fever?) don't know. (Dr. Bowles wanted to help you.) Yes. I told him to stop, yes I did papa. (I know you did, but he didn't. He thought that he could help you. He didn't want to hurt you Cecil.) [Pencil in planchette broke and one was put into her hand when it wrote—] I will forgive him. [This was very scrawly.] [Planchette repaired.] (Do you think that you could have gotten well, if he had not done that?) I guess mr. Garland could have helped me most papa. I liked his [Planchette moved pencil across the sheet to begin another line, but went back and erased 'his' and wrote 'him' under it.] him best. I didn't know Mr. Boles was a Doctor, papa. (Do you mean that you didn't know that Mr. Bowles was a Doctor?) Yes. (Have you anything else to write?) I come when you was u— [Planchette moved to other side of sheet to begin new line.] up-stairs, yes, now I come here when brother was sick, papa. Dr. Garland made him well, papa. [All this is just as he would say it if living.]

(Mrs. S.: Clevie, be a good boy, and mind all God tells you,

won't you?) my dear mama I love you and will do it like you used to tell me and like papa too. (Is there anything else, dear?) Yes, I want mama to tell Aunt Sadie I found Bena, Jamies [Jamie's] sister, tell her. (We will. Mama will.) good night papa, mama, George. "[Lines drawn to each side of sheet intended as a kiss to Mr. and Mrs. S.]"

"Uncle Jogle", as a note in the record shows, was the name that Cecil applied to his uncle Joseph, Mr. Smead's brother, still living. There is an apparent confusion between this "uncle Jogle" and "Vester", the name for another brother, Sylvester, of Mr. Smead's, and deceased, as we have seen. Whether it means that "uncle Vester" was taken for "uncle Jogle" or "uncle Jogle" for "uncle Vester" might be open to doubt. But supposing that it meant that Cecil had supposed that his uncle Sylvester was his "uncle Jogle" I wrote to inquire whether the two uncles had resembled each other in any such way as thus to be mistaken for each other, remembering that Cecil never knew his uncle Sylvester. Mr. S. replied: "Joseph and Sylvester resembled each other as brothers do, size, build, height, and color of hair. But in features the resemblance was not marked. Sylvester had blue eyes. Joseph had black eyes. I do not think you or I would have confused their faces. I cannot think there was great similarity. Still Cecil might have mixed the two when dying, knowing Joseph and never knowing Sylvester, only as he had seen his large crayon portrait in his bed-room, *not in the room in which he died*, but in the room in which he usually slept. I cannot see how he could have mistaken Sylvester as a spirit for 'uncle Jogle'. Still this might be possible, they being brothers and some resemblance certainly as above indicated. Dr. Bowles and 'Jogle' looked very much alike. Possibly Cecil mistook him for 'uncle Jogle' and then as he disliked Dr. Bowles mixed him up with uncle Sylvester, and when, if he really saw Sylvester, he mixed him up with 'uncle Jogle' who was suggested to Cecil's disturbed mind by the presence of Dr. Bowles and his striking likeness to 'Jogle'.

"I cannot give you any more light on it. I do not know what to think of this incident of 'uncle Jogle'. What do you think of it? What is it probably, subliminal or spiritistic?"

It will be interesting to note in this connection that, when

dying, Cecil, just before he spoke of the "ropes" (p. 387) said: "Don't let uncle Jogle get me." Mr. S. says: "He did not want to die and leave us." The reader will also recall what has been said of his dislike of Dr. Bowles and the confusion of mind in which the child was when dying.

Mr. S. adds in a later note: "I have not done the incident full justice. The case is stronger than I thought. After I wrote you I went up-stairs in Cecil's bedroom and looked at the picture of Sylvester hanging on the wall directly in front of his bed. I was struck with its resemblance to 'uncle Jogle'. In the picture the eyes were *black*, the hair *dark*, and the features much like 'uncle Jogle's'. Cecil never knew Sylvester, only by *this picture*. He never knew Sylvester's eyes were *blue*. 'Jogle's' were black."

The regular family physician was Dr. G——, but this Dr. Bowles was on a vacation in the next house and a son of the Mr. Bowles who had been present at these sittings before. He was hastily called as the family felt there was no time to lose. There was some fear that an obstruction was present in the bowels of the sick child. "Dr. B—— began to press upon Cecil's abdomen at different places to find if there was an obstruction there. This Cecil did not like. Dr. B—— probably hurt him some. Then he gave him an enema, a high enema, with a bulb syringe forcing the water above the sigmoid flexure. This caused Cecil great pain and he told him so. Cecil expressed his dislike for him strongly."

Of course both Mr. and Mrs. S. knew the facts and hence the message or reference cannot be used for evidential purposes, but it is an interesting and relevant circumstance nevertheless as showing that, if we urge no other interpretation than secondary personality it has pertinence for identity in a form that shows what the subliminal is capable of, in case we do not feel impressed with any other significance.

November 21st, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

(All right. We are all ready.) [No writing for about five minutes. Mrs. S. said she was thinking of Cecil. We had some

dates on a plate. I placed them on the table on which we were writing. I said, as if talking to Cecil, "Papa and Mama are eating some dates." This was followed by slight motions back and forth of the planchette, but no words were written as yet. Finally it began.]

[Scrawls. Apparently the word 'men'.] my mines. S * * mines * * men they [?] there [?] S S S S S. (I don't understand that. Please write that again, so I can see what you mean.) [Scrawls.] my mines, men [scrawls.] mine, yes. (Will you please explain.)

[A long pause followed this question. Finally the position of the planchette and writing was changed. Mrs. S. and Mr. S. remained in the same position as before, and so also did the sheet of paper on which the writing was done. The planchette, however, was moved about so that it appeared sideways, or pointed toward the left side of the sheet of the paper, and from this moment on the writing was done in a vertical line, so that Mr. S. could not see it until the planchette was ready for him.]

men there, my mines. (Please explain. Is that word 'mines'?) no, mines. (Please explain more.) me * * is [part of word illegible.] memphis [still not distinct in the two letters 'ph'.] (Please write it clearer. Take plenty of time.) memphis. [clearly written.] (Please to explain more.) men hurt there. (Is that word 'hurt'?) Yes. (Please explain more.) we could not get out of it, our souls are here. (Please go on with the explanations.) when we were shut [last three words very scrawly, almost illegible.] in we were gone but were surprised when we were Still alive. (Go on please. Tell me who you are or where you lived or anything that will interest me.) my home ill [I'll] try to get, but don't remember my name now. (I read that all right, but tell me some more facts.) west memphis.

[Mrs. S. became faint and Mr. S. thought he might have to stop the sitting. But he went on to ask a question.]

(Is that 'West Memphis'?) Yes. (Where you lived? Or where the mine is?) home there, mine near there. (What state was it?) [Lines drawn vertically, and apparently a period placed after them. Mr. S. conjectured that they were an attempt to draw the mountains in which the mines were. Then followed two words that were illegible.]

(What state please?) Tennessees. (Go on.) SmE til time. [reading doubtful.] we will come again. (What is that word you write first?) Stillwell, yes. (What does that word 'Stillwell' mean?) [Lines drawn as before.] (Was that the name of the mine.) [Lines drawn again.] (What does that mean?) * * [Might be an attempt to write 'Stillwell' again.] (I cannot read that. Will you please explain.) [Five lines of scrawls written across the sheet as if they might be attempts to write again the same

word as before.] (Do you want to send any message to any body on earth. I will try to send it for you, if you do.) [No reply.]

[Mrs. S. showed signs of being very nervous and I stopped the sitting.]

There is a marked difference between the handwriting in this sitting and previous cases. This, of course, may be due to the unusual method in which it was executed.

It has not been possible to ascertain whether this incident of the mines at Memphis has any pertinence. We could attach no importance to it even if proved to be true. Mr. and Mrs. S. recall nothing that would suggest it.

November 28th, 1901. Thanksgiving Day. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and the little son Georgie. Planchette used.

(We are all ready.) I am here. (Who is it?) me, Your Cecil. (Write what you want to.) Yes. (Go ahead then.) Here s Clesle. (Write it again please.) Heres Clesle. (I do not understand it. What is that first word?) Here is Cleve. [clearly written.] (All right. Write me something so I will know that it is you, Cecil.) Yes, no, no, papa. I do, papa. (Do it again, please.) Maude is big as me, papa. (What Maude? Maude Janes? Bena Maude? or Ida Maude?) my Maude, of course. (Do you mean Mama?) no.

(Do you see brother George here?) Yes, papa. he wants to come here, papa. [George said that he had been thinking of it for three or four days. He did not tell us.] (We don't want him to leave us. We want to keep him, Cecil.) He will come sometime, papa, though. [period inserted.] (Cecil, have you anything to write me?) we find lots to do, play everything nice and pretty. we can learn to help you to do things when you don't know it, papa. I helped little [Planchette went back to other side of sheet to begin a new line and apparently wrote 'to', and sheet was changed.] brother to read. I did any way. perhaps u— [you] don't believe it, but I d— [did] I did any way. (We believe it, Cecil. Tell us more.) best to tell much, papa. * * boys here heare. (If you have anything to write, do so.) does mama see me now, me h [?] mama. (I don't understand. Mama says she does not see you now.) She did see me. (How? When?) we were very near mama. (When?) how (I want to know when it was that mama saw you?) she sees me lots of times. (Have you any message for us tonight?) we would like to make you see us too, papa. it [?] * * help —s [us ?] not ——— [Sitting closed.]

There are two matters of interest in this sitting. The first is the reference to a wish of George to come to the "other side". Apparently this was an incident unknown to both Mr. and Mrs. S., and should be noted as a possible intimation of the super-normal.

The second incident is the reference to his mother's having seen him when the fact is that up to date his mother, in spite of the wish to see an apparition of him, has not had such an experience. This experience came later (p. 444). Have we here such a thing as a *subliminal hallucination*? If we have we can understand the verisimilitude of reality and can explain the phenomenon without supposing anything devilish in the action of the subliminal. If the subliminal has hallucinations and interprets them according to the well known principles of supraliminal judgment we can understand that she has actually seen her child, in this subliminal way of course, and so takes the apparition for reality without any knowledge of the fact by the supraliminal, and consequently has no means of correcting it.

I may remark, however, that similar phenomena have occurred in the Piper case, where "communicators" have thought they had been able to send a message through when as a matter of fact no such thing had been received.

December 1st, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. had a slight headache.

"(All right.) Cecil [?] is here. (Go on.) * * * * First two words resemble 'Mrs. here', then illegible until the last word appears to be 'heer'.]

[Mrs. S. had a fainting spell and the sitting was broken off as she was not able to control the muscular system. She remained conscious and very soon became normal again, and the sitting resumed.]

(Go on.) your letter ['letter' not clear.] Is [word 'Is' begins a new line.] coming. it will tell about h [apparently the 't' of the previous word 'about' and the 'h' that follows were an abbreviation of 'that'.] lady that left [deft] your earth recently, very lately. (What is the first word?) letter ['t's' crossed.] (What lady is it?) my ous ['ous' erased.] Cousin. (Please tell me who is writing?) George Lowrey. (Go on tell me what you

please.) he is with mother now. [Planchette went back and crossed the 't' in 'with' and in 'mother'.] (Is that sentence 'He is with mother now'?) Yes, your little boy. (All right. Go on.) I think that is all, thank you. (All right. Go on.) me m [Line drawn to right side of sheet.] (Go on.) Yes. [written in vertical line and a scrawl above it. Then planchette went to the other side of the sheet.] (Mrs. S.: Hullo, Cleve John, did you try to write for mama this morning?) [Scrawl and under it—] Yes. (Cleve, tell papa where mama sat.) my desk. (What did I take, Cecil?) pencil to him ['to him' not clear.] * * * * [two or three words undecipherable.] (I cannot read it. What did you write after 'pencil'?) Picture. [No resemblance between this and undecipherable words.] (What picture?) Brother's t me. (All right go on.) [The planchette then drew a line through the 't' before 'me', so as to make it read, according to the interpretation of Mr. S., 'Brother's & me'.]

(All right, go on.) Smead * * [two letters illegible.] Cecil * * * [several words undecipherable.] (We cannot read it.) Tell little brother to be careful how He ['He' begins new line.] goes across the Street ['Street' begins new line.] To look both ways. (All right. Go on.) I have to watch him. (Haven't got through watching him yet, have you Cecil?) no, I am going to go home with George, yes. [George was down town at the Junior League alone.] "

Cecil used to watch and help his little brother across the street. The allusion to the picture has some interest, especially as it appears to be confused by the answer to the question by Mrs. S. Apparently the subliminal gave the answer "pencil" to the question and then went on with the "message" about a picture of the two children, it seems. There is such a picture. It hung above the desk at which Mrs. S. sat during the attempt that day to get some automatic writing. This desk was Cecil's.

December 4th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(We are all ready.) [Scrawls.] (Go on.) me. Papa, my good Papa. (I am glad you are here tonight.) Yes, papa. Why papa don't you go to the church and tell The ['The' begins a new line.] boys to be good, Papa.

[I explained the matter to him. We were having a sale at the church and I presume that the boys were making some noise run-

ning about. Cecil never liked this, and so if he was really there, as it seemed afterwards, he probably saw this and was bothered by it. Hence this remark of his.]

Papa, you are the minister. [I continued to explain to Cecil why I was not there, looking after the boys, that I did not want to be a policeman, and that I was very tired and did not want to go there.] You can do them good, Papa, like you did me. [I continued to explain it to him.] Yes, Papa. (You understand, do you?) Yes. (You don't blame me, do you?) no. I would do it, papa, if I was on your earth. (Go on, my boy. Write what you want.) Selling the sand, mama. [not distinct.] (I cannot read it.) Selling the Sand. (Mrs. S.: Yes, Mama did it Clevie. She made it into emeries for needles. Are they selling them?) Yes, lots of them. (Mrs. S.: Have you been down, Cecil?) Yes. (Mrs. S.: Have you been with Papa?) Yes. (Mama?) Yes. (Go on dear.) my little Sands were pretty, mama. [Mrs. S. and I were in tears, this was so like him.] (Mrs. S.: Did you see the little dolls?) Yes. (Mrs. S.: Clevie, you remember the little white dolly, the one you said looked like an angel. Hattie's mother bought that for Hattie.) marion [Marion] is pretty and good. I liked her to have it for Christmas, mama, yes. (Papa don't understand. Tell papa.) That doll, papa. (I don't see.) what mama Said. (Mama said the doll that you thought was so pure and good and was like Jesus. Hattie has bought it.) Y—.

[An interruption occurred here for some three or four minutes. A caller came and we had to stop for that time. At the end of it the sitting was resumed.]

"Marion F— was the name of a little girl about nine years old that Cecil thought very much of and used to play with a great deal."

Of the incident regard the "selling of sands" Mr. S. says: "When Cecil, his mother and George were at Revere Beach last summer the boys got some beach sand and brought it home to Hedding, N. H., in tin pails, and when we came from Hedding to P— it was brought here. Cecil thought a lot of it, and said his mother could have it to make emery balls, or little needle scouring balls in fancy shapes. So she took the sand from him, *before his death*, and *after his death* she made a lot of pretty strawberry shaped needle balls and filled them with Cecil's fine beach sand. These balls or sand balls, or 'emeries' as Mrs. S. always called them, were placed on sale at the church fair, and on the Junior League table. They were nicely arranged on a

plate. Several of them were sold at the fair. Mrs. S. did not go down to stay that evening, but had gone in the afternoon for a few minutes to arrange things. I staid at home with her that evening and we used the planchette. When Cecil said, 'selling the sands' and 'my little sands were pretty, mama', he never wrote anything more evidential to me than the way he made up that word *sands*. He used to do this very thing with words when living. He said once, 'Papa, let me *lawn mower* the grass', and again, 'Let me *scythe* the grass'; and he often invented words to fit ideas as he did when he saw these little emeries and called them 'sands'."

"(Go on.) [Scrawls both in circular form and like the figure 8.] (All right.) [Scrawls like the small letter 'l' and then the planchette drew the pencil around in circles many times, making a remarkably round set of circles and then followed them with lines like the small letter 'l' again.]

(Write your name.) Yes, Ida. Her Friend. (Who is it?) her friend. (Who is it?) [Scrawls as before like the letter 'l'.] (Are you Harrison Clarke?) no. (Who?) her friend. [Further questions are by Mrs. S. until the change is noted.]

(Who is my friend?) [The previous 'her friend' underlined for an answer.] (Are you a man or a woman?) [Previous 'her friend' underscored again, and 'man' written under it.] man. (What is your name?) [Word 'man' underscored.] (Is that your name?) no. (Can't you tell me your name?) When you go to Boston you will find out. (I want to know now.) sometime you can know better why I do not give it tonight. (I would rather have it tonight, then I would know better some other time.) I will tell you just as soon as it was ['was' erased and 'is' written above it.] is told to you. (I would rather know tonight, then I would know who it was. What is your name?) When you are told I will say it is I that told you first. (I don't believe that you ever met me. If you did you would tell me your name.) wait and see. (When did you ever meet me.) Long [written 'Song'.] time ago. (I guess so, so long ago that you have forgotten your name.) you wait and see. you will not think so when your mother or Nettie tells you that I am here. (Is your name Gibbons?) Wait till you find out. (Where did you ever meet me?) Miss Ida M. R. [written in large letters.] (I haven't found out your name yet. What is it? I know my own name. I asked for yours.) yes, Miss Robertson, City Point, South Boston, Mass, No 4 [figure interpreted as 4 looks like a combination of the letter 's' and the capital letter 'D'.] Pleasant Plaice. (You haven't told me your name yet.)

no. (How old was you when I knew you?) wait. (What did you come here for, if you cannot tell me your name. I should not think that you would come.) Do you mind. (I must know who you are before I can tell.) wait and see. [Mr. S. here resumes questions.]

(How do you do, sir.) well, thank you sir. (What are you here for?) [Words 'wait and see' underscored for answer.] (What do you want to write?) I have told you sir. (Have you any message?) just what I have told Ida. (I think that you must be Sylvester.) no. (Will you come again? Mrs. S. is tired and we ought to stop now.) when you desire. (I want you to come Friday evening at 7.30 o'clock.) does you wife so desire? (Yes, will you come then sir?) I will try, good night, Sir."

The address given here was that of Mrs. Smead when she was living in Boston an unmarried lady. Robertson (pseudonym) was her maiden name. Mrs. S. guessed 'Gibbons' because a man by that name had been an admirer of her when she was young, but she did not reciprocate. She thought he might be dead, but had never heard whether he was or not.

[Further comment on this "communicator" will be reserved until later when his communications have been completed. J. H. H.]

December 6th, 1901 Present Mr. and Mrs. S. This sitting was held by appointment of the "spirit" who would not give his name the other evening, but said he was a friend of Mrs. S.'s and agreed to come Friday evening at 7.30. Within one minute of the time agreed upon he was present, as will be seen by what is given below.

"(All right. We are ready now.) [Scrawls like small letter 'e' or 'l'.] yes I ave [have] [apparently an 's' in the word as if 'has' were attempted.] I Have [the 'I' and 'H' are made together.] come. (All right. You are welcome. I see you are on time. Write what you please.) here we don't have time as you do. [written in an unusually clear style. The first response was not so clear.] (How is that matter arranged? Will you tell me?) we are able to know a ['a' erased.] just when the friends on earth are thinking, so we come to them. (Very good. Why don't the friends come that we think of most?) it is not always so we can at once, but when we fis [fir ?] promise we are alwous ['alwous' erased.]

almost ala [last 'a' erased, and 'w' written upon it.] ways alowd [planchette then moved to the other side of the sheet to begin a new line, but went back and erased 'ow' and wrote upon it 'lowed', making the word 'allowed'.] allowed to keep it. (That is all right. Will you allow me to answer— to ask you questions and will you answer?) If I think that it is right that you Should k ['k' erased.] have an answer. (That was very good. You did see what I was up to with that word 'know', and you changed it, didn't you?) Even if I did, what good will that do you? [interrogation point inserted.]

(They say that you are not a spirit, but Mrs. S.'s subliminal, whatever that is, and that what she writes comes out of her head or mine. I am trying to prove that a spirit really is here. Help me to do this if you can. Write something that will prove you are a real spirit.) I wish I were for a while. (What do you mean?) her subliminal. It is .. [followed by a letter that is undecipherable, but is apparently erased.] always [always] was a puzzle to me how she knew what was not told her. I never [written 'ne—' scrawl r'.] could understand her, can you, you? [I tried to read this when it wrote.] yes, no. was a puzzle. (I got that right, didn't I?) Yes. (I cannot understand her. Has she a subliminal self?) I never found one. [The last word was written so that it might be read either as 'one', or 'oul', or 'ow'. The planchette then went to the other side of the sheet to begin a new line, but immediately went back and erased the last letter and returned to the other side of the sheet and wrote 'one'.]

(I never found one yet, but these psychologists talk glibly about one, and they say that you are not a real spirit, but that this planchette writing is really by her subliminal self. How is this? Try to prove to me that you are a real spirit.)

I have read of it, but since coming here * * [either 'S' or 'I' made and erased.] I find that we are just as much individual beings as we were there, and when we go to those we were supposed [supposed] could tell our friends we find it is about as easy to go to our friends and make them feel our presence. I never knew she had this power until after * * [perhaps a scrawly attempt at next word.] coming here.

(Let Mrs. S. rest a minute. She is tired.) Yes, call her Ida. [Apparently before the writing stopped some time was taken up with questions and answers to determine the reading of the above long passage, and is occupied with making clear the words 'after', 'individual', and 'supposed', the last being written 'supposed'.]

(Ida, Mrs. S. is rested now. You may go on if you wish.) I came because I wanted to understand her better. (Will you tell us who you are tonight?) no, I do not wish to. (May we rest about ten minutes? Ida is weary.) I will go soon. (I did not mean that I wanted you to go.) I must. (Have you seen Cecil?)

Your little one? (Yes.) yes there is a little girl that looks like her mother. (What is her name?) Maude. (Write what you may wish.) I will leave now. (Will you come Sunday at 3 p. m. ?) no, I will come Wednesday Eve at 7.30. (Is that it?) yes. (Good night, sir. I shall expect you then.) ”

One of the most interesting of the mechanical features of this sitting is the clearness and apparent ease of the writing, and the very prompt correction of errors. The contents represent no evidential importance, but have a psychological interest worth attention. It is especially interesting to note that probably “subliminal” is understood by the “communicator” to mean or imply the loss of individuality. It is of course not clear as to what “individuality” means. It may mean the normal personality.

The next record is an experience of Mrs. S. in which she saw an apparition of the child Cecil. This occurred on the night of December 9th and was written out by her and signed the next morning. I give the record as made by her.

“Last night I saw Cecil after we had been in bed and asleep. I turned over toward the door and he was standing with his back to me while he was looking in the crib at little George. I was very much surprised to see him, for I was not thinking of him at the time, and I put out my hand and said: ‘Oh, Mama’s Clevie’, when my speaking either frightened him or something, for he was gone almost in an instant. But after a little while he came back in another part of the room, but did not stay long. He did not speak to me.

“MRS. IDA M. SMEAD.”

December 10th, 1901. I was soon to go to a prayer meeting. I had been at the meeting of our psychological society at Prof. Xenos’s and while there we had been discussing the condition of Mrs. S. when she was in the conscious condition. I said that I thought that she was in every way normal. Prof. Xenos said that he could not detect anything abnormal except in her eyes. He said that they were an index of her abnormal condition. I said that I did not think that there was anything to be seen in her eyes to make any one believe that she was in the least abnormal. He said that there was no stare or fixedness or anything like

that, only a strange expression that made him sure that she was in an abnormal state. I think that it is all nonsense. I have watched her eyes time and time again, and I never have seen anything that made me take Prof. Xenos's view. I took pains to tell Mrs. S. all this and told her that I would watch her eyes this time, so that I could see if there was anything out of the ordinary. I did this. I could detect nothing while the writing was going on, and she was conscious.

"(I shall look at her eyes while you write. Go on.) I have seen them. (Seen what?) they are all right, Billy. (That is what I think. Go on.) I have been where you went the other night and your friend don't he know ['k' written or superposed on the syllable 'he' without erasing, by planchette going back.] how to study her Billy. (That is good. I have to go to meeting soon.) Yes, So shall we. (Who is here besides you?) yes, the babies. (Mrs. S.: Do you call Cecil a baby?) Cecil is a good boy, Ida. he is a very good boy to all. (Write what you wish, Sylvester.) shun [sun] sin the universe, Billy. tell the People to REPENT. Shun Sin in the Universe, yes, yes. (Tell me some more, Sylvester. Hear George a laughing?) I will help you to do it, yes. (I will give it to them red hot.) yes, it is needed. begin at Once. (I have been doing it, Sylvester.) Dont be Afraid. Yes. Cannot You See those men are getting other People's boys to Commit Sins [writing larger than usual.] that if y ['y' erased.] others so ['so' erased.] Should ['Should' begins new line.] do to theirs they would not enjoy it themSelves. We are watching them. tell them so ['so' made in larger letters and underscored.] don't forget."

A page was then given to questions and answers regarding the reading of certain words in the above. The words in the automatic writing without the questions being recorded are: "no, do to [?] [not clear, but apparently the word 'to' with the 't' crossed.] their Sons they would not enjoy it themselves, ye—" Sitting closed, having lasted about thirty minutes.

I must consider it a serious mistake that Mr. S. told his wife, Mrs. S., of the talk at the house of their friend about her case. If the present data had been given without that conversation there would have been definite traces of the supernormal. But, of course, the probability is that the references which might have been quoted as such evidence would not have been made. The

allusion to preaching and repentance, and counsel about the boys is probably suggested by the fact that it was prayer meeting night, and the knowledge that Mr. S. was expecting to attend the service.

December 11th, 1901. This sitting was by appointment of Mrs. S.'s unknown friend. Writing began at 7.25 p. m. by my watch. Present Mr. and Mrs. S.

"(We are now ready.) [Writing began with a very singular, but well formed scrawls and a line drawn through them when the writing then went on in a very clear style.] Yes, I am here. have been waiting. (Oh all right.) Yes. (Go on please.) his will [possibly, as interpreted by Mr. S., it is 'He is will' with 'ing' omitted.] now to help those on earth by letting us come Sometimes to them. (Who wrote that?) Me. (Whom do you mean?) Your Friend, The one your wife knew, Yes. (Will you give me your name now?) [No reply except scrawls like the letter 'S' or the figure 8.] (Go on.) Yes. (I think that Mrs. S. has not much power tonight.) She is all right. What did you want me to come for on Sunday last.

(I wanted you to prove to me that you were a real spirit. You may do it now if you will. I shall be glad to have you. Why will you not tell me who you are?)

Here [Her] life is to be fought for this way. [Evidently a question as to the reading arose which has not been recorded, since the sheet has the words 'life', 'her', and 'is' repeated.]

(What can you mean by that sentence? What do you mean?) we are trying to show those there how were [we are] here alive while those there do not beive [believe it.] we are using it here, you people over there.

[Further questions as to the reading were asked resulting in the following answers written in the order given.] "we are using", [circular scrawls.] we a [or w ?] [letter erased.] "we are using", "h Yes Yes, people"

(That is very good. I can see what you meant. I thank you very much. It is evidential somewhat. Will you not give us your name now? Ida wishes it very much. She wants to know who you are.)

She must wait. (Why?) [No reply, or attempt to reply.] (Go on.) She can wait, because I have * * [undecipherable letter erased.] planned to let h—" [The sitting was abruptly broken off by a visitor whom we were obliged to see. It was not resumed for about an hour. This "communicator" did not come again that night.]

December 11th, 1901, (same evening as previous record) 8.40 p. m. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mr. C. H. Bowles. Planchette used.

"(If the friend that was here this evening is here I would like him to continue. The break could not have been foreseen or prevented. Will you go on as if no break had occurred?) Cecil. (Is Cecil present?) Yes, papa. (All right. Go on and tell papa what you want to.) * * [word undec. followed by scrawls.] Smead [very poorly written.] tell mama my ma [mama] [apparently unfinished because a new line had to be begun.] that she must not feel so bad, mama. (Do you see Mr. Bowles here?) Yes, and Jack to [too] papa. George is afraid of Jack like I use [used] to be papa. [Jack is the dog Cecil knew.] (Cecil, Jack is not here with Mr. Bowles.) Yes, comes to [too] but you don't See ['See' begins new line.] him like I do papa. (Cecil, Jack is not here. He is over at the barn. Yes, his body. (I cannot believe that, Cecil. Jack is not here.) he did come. (That is wrong, Cecil. Jack is not here and has not been. I cannot believe it.) Yes, yes he came when he heard him papa, no. ['him' probably refers to Mr. Bowles.] (I cannot believe it. It is too silly.) well you can ask him. but I know he *did* ['did' underscored.] (I don't believe it. How can I ask him? What nonsense! How can I ask him? He cannot tell me.) he can bark.

(Mr. Bowles: Have you anything to say to me, Cecil?) What does his boy do now he outit [?] [possibly an attempt at 'out'] here. does he play ball with George ['his boy' is the Doctor Bowles (p. 435.)] (Mr. Bowles: George Bowles is not here now, Cecil. He will come and play with George next summer, and play ball with him.) George is h ['h' erased.] a going away [first 'a' in 'away' made much like an 'h'.] before him. he can't Mr. Bowles. (Mr. Bowles: Have you seen my little boy George?) what George. (Mr. B.: I mean my little boy George that died many years ago, Cecil.) O, yes. (Mr. B.: I cannot see him, Cecil. I would like to.) I know it, but my mama can see me [circular scrawls.] I can come to see you to [too] sometimes.

(Mr. B.: Cecil, will you give me some word for my son George in Boston. I mean the Doctor. I am sure that he would like to hear from you, Cecil.) I told him I would not play ball with him any more. I knew best. he said Get well. but I don't have any more pains now, so I play ['I' and 'a' made together.] sometimes. play. [evidently made to certify reading.]

(Mr. S.: I am glad that you can come and see us, Cecil. Tell Mr. Bowles what you can. I am glad that you can talk with us.) I can papa. you will be gla ['I' and 'a' apparently made together again and also apparently a period inserted, or it might be taken as a

scrawly 'd'.] when you come, because it is better here, Mr. Boles. (Mr. B.: Cecil, I have a little boy over there where you are, and I would like to know if you have seen him.) Yes, that was why I asked you what George, Mr. Boles. I have seen him. thet [letter 't' erased, making the word 'the'.] little boys and girls here don't grow old here. tell Mrs. Boles. (Mr. S.: How is that, Cecil?) they grow bigger but not old. (Mr. B.: Who was with my little George, Cecil?) he was with some other boys and girls that he ['that he' erased.] they were bigger than me, papa. I didnt know them. (Mr. S.: How did you know that the little boy was Mr. Bowles' boy?) I knew it was him because he went to Mrs. Boles and called her Mama. went ['went' evidently written to assure reading of same word above which was not clear.] (Mr. B.: I would like you to find him, Cecil, and bring him with you sometime.) yes, I will for you, Mr. Boles. I am going to tell him when I see him again, Mr. Boles. (Mr. S.: I suppose that you have met many of Mr. Bowles's people, Cecil. Can't you tell us about them?) I can see lots of them, but I have ['have' written more like 'hone'.] been with uncle Vester and Bena Maude mostly all the time, papa. (Mr. S.: Have you ever been to Mars, Cecil? Tell us about it.) I know about it some, papa. (Tell us please.) no, on. [Map drawn, resembling slightly the map drawn at the beginning of the Martian episodes.] (What is that?) Mars, yes. no. [This 'no' appears at the beginning of the writing on the next sheet, is separate from all the writing and is not explained by any note of Mr. S. J. H. H.]

(Mr. B.: I am very much obliged to you, Cecil.) yes, your [you are] welcome, Mr. Boles. (Mr. B.: I thank you, Cecil. Good night.) yes, why didnt Mrs. Boles come. She did once. (Mrs. Bowles could not very well tonight, Cecil. She will some time.) Yes, tell her good night for me, George her little boy. [Scrawls.] yes, no. [scrawls.] (Mr. B.: I will, Cecil. I know Mrs. Bowles would like to have you tell him for her.) I will tell him for her." [Sitting closed.]

Mr. S. adds in a note: "I am very sorry that I cannot be more sure of what the questions were that were asked. We did not keep a record, as there was so much confusion with Mr. Bowles being here. He would talk so that it was not possible to get the questions exact. I have done the best I could in putting in the questions from memory and think that they are very nearly exact. They convey the thought of every question that was asked. Of course the replies of Cecil are in the automatic writing. If there is any error in transcribing this it can be seen and corrected."

In response to inquiries regarding the incidents of this

sitting I received the following information. Mr. S. could not recall the incident of Mrs. S.'s feeling badly. She says: "I nearly fainted away and was either going into a trance or a real faint, and so we stopped the sitting for awhile, and resumed it after I was all right." The earlier record indicates that it was interrupted by a visitor, though this may not be altogether incompatible with the existence of bad feelings as indicated.

Dr. Bowles was Mr. C. H. Bowles's son and Cecil knew him as Dr. Bowles's son. The afternoon of Saturday before Cecil's death he played ball a little with Cecil. This was Saturday, August 24th, and Cecil died Sunday, August 25th. Cecil asked very naturally if he played ball with his brother George, thinking of his own play with him. When Dr. Bowles was attending Cecil before his death Cecil, because of the pain, said to him that he would not play ball with him.

Mr. Bowles's son George, here mentioned by the father, died about forty years ago. The allusion to boys growing bigger but not older may have some pertinence here on any theory.

Dr. Bowles did say something like "get well" to Cecil, but not in these words so far as can be recalled. "He talked to him as doctors always talk to cheer up a patient. He may have used these very words. He may have said, 'Try to get well, Cecil', or 'We want you to get well, Cecil'." Mrs. S. of course knew all these facts, or most probably so, as it could hardly be otherwise, as she was with him during his sickness.

December 13th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 7.30 p. m. I thought that I would see if Mrs. S.'s unknown friend would come without suggestion of his presence. I did not tell Mrs. S., but she told me afterwards that she guessed what was in my mind, so that the test was of no use.

"(All right. Everything is ready.) [Scrawls and loops like the letter 'l'.] next Wednesday ['x' in 'next' made as usual like an 'r'.] (Please explain.) your unknown will come. (Who is writing now?) Me. (Who is me?) [The word 'me' underscored and then the planchette moved the pencil upward and underscored the words 'your unknown'.] (I see who you are.) Cannot Stay. (I see that you will come again. What time Wednesday will you

come to write?) Same as before. (I explained the interruption of the other evening and asked him if he would not stay tonight.) no must go. (Come Wednesday evening at 7.30 and plan to stay awhile, please.) will try. (I suppose then that I must bid you good night.) yes."

"I did so and the sitting was at an end. No more communications came that night. We tried two or three times to get writing but it was of no use."

Mrs. S. records the following dream as coming somewhere between 3 and 4 a. m. on December 14th.

"Near our front door I saw a peculiar black cloud come down to the front of the house and touch me. I waited and it went up again. I thought I would die within three hours. A little while after another cloud and a large wreath of black roses with white in the center came and touched George (living child). Hyslop was in no way connected with my dream, as far as I knew."

December 14th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. 7.35 p. m.

"(All is ready.) J. H. (Go on please.) Hislop. (Write your name please.) J * * J. H hhhh. (Write your name, please.) Yes, J. H. H. James Hyslop no, (I see.) H Hyslop. (Will you write your name?) Hyslop. H. James Hyslop. [Apparently underscored and the planchette underscored first 'Hyslop' on same page and then again underscored the last one. This was done in response to question, "Who is writing"?]

(Do you mean to tell me that the spirit now here is James H. Hyslop?) yes. (Has James H. Hyslop passed out of the body? If so write out your full name please.) James Hervey Hyslop. Hervey, Hervey James [Janes] (Is James H. Hyslop dead? I cannot believe it.) yes. (Tell me something to prove it.) James Hervey Hyslop. (Tell me something, Dr.) Get slop, He ... H * * * I am here Smead [?] (I cannot make that out clearly Dr.) I will try to better. came [?] late last night. (Write it again. I cannot make it out clearly.) late last night, came here. (Do you mean you died last night, Dr.?) yes, called here, yes. (I see. Go on.) Mrs. S. is to rest [not distinct.] (I cannot read it.) Mrs. S. is to rest a while. (Go on.) when [?] she fel ... She feels better she will be easier * * (Go on.) [scrawls in which the letter 'H' appears.] (Who is writing?) me. (Who is

me?) I am. (Who?) Hyslop * * (It is pretty hard for me to believe it, Dr.) me too. (I suppose we must stop now. Mrs. S. is so weary.) yes."

Mr. S. made the following note at the time. "Both Mrs. S. and I do not believe that there is a thing in this message. We think that Dr. H. is alive and that this is a vagary of the subliminal of Mrs. S."

Well, I am still on this side to copy my own discarnate messages, possibly as a reincarnation and fortunately retaining my identity! It is the first case in my knowledge of a ghost coming back to study his own communications and feeling obliged to confess that they are the result of secondary personality. It is enough to confuse a man even on this side.

Humor aside I think this sitting is a most interesting one. It is a fine exhibition of what the subliminal can do, providing I did not go in my sleep! The writing is clear.

December 18th, 1901. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"Me [scrawls.] yes, have come. (Who is it?) unknown. (Would you like to stay and see me marry these people?) unnecessary. (I do not know, but you might be interested.) [Scrawls.] (May I ask some questions?) you can. (Will you try to answer?) I will do so if right. (What is spirit body made of?) No, we cannot tell you. (What is human consciousness?) It is of God and you must ask Him. (What is spirit consciousness?) It is to know that we are still living after leaving your earth and that we can live to 1 [or 't'.] [erased.] make our lives better here than they were there. we are conscious of all this and more. (How do you manage to use the medium so as to let me know you are here?) I use her arm. some use the brain. some use both. (Do you take hold of her arm?) Yes, and sometimes it is necessary to use the brain. (Is life continuous?) with some they are like being unconscious. to you they are sleeping for awhile. they are not unconscious though. they need rest after a sad struggle with life in the body. (Word after 'with' cannot be made out.) sad struggle with life in the body. (What do you understand life is?) life is eternal. Eternal [written in large letters.] God * * [undec.] (I did not ask that.) [God underscored.] [scrawls ending in 'dles'.] endilles. [endless.] (Where is the medium when she appears to be in a state of trance?) She is not in a trance. (I know that.

Where is she when she is in a trance?) her soul is [apparently letter 't' or 'l' made and then erased.] between [apparently written 'feltwan'] heaven and earth, that is, it is nei— [new line begun.] is it * [undecipherable letter made and erased.] is neither here or there. (Are the hypnotic state and the trance state identical?) not tha [that] I know of. they do so many Silly [new line begun.] foolish things when they are Hyp ——— [word 'hypnotised' not finished. Letter begun and erased.] that no person ever d [Planchette drew a line through last part of 'ever', as if to erase it and erased the letter 'd' and wrote—] in a trance. [then went back and wrote 'did' above the letter 'd' erased.] (Do you as a spirit consciously desire to establish communication with this world?) I will when I have made her know me. (Does the world of spirits so desire?) Is that not doing so? [interrogation point inserted.] (Yes, somewhat. Are you all striving to accomplish this end?) not all. some try and cannot.

(Some unrecorded question was apparently asked here.) no cannot just tell. no. no. next week on Saturday evening, if you so desire. good night."

December 21st, 1901. 7.25 p. m. Planchette work. Present Mr. and Mrs. S.

"(All ready.) Yes, * * [Apparently the word 'night'.] yes. * * Henry hat [? pap— ?] Henry Russell, papa. (Tell me what you mean.) [Scrawls.] liked him best, my best friend. (What is it Cecil?) yes, when I live lived with you he was my friend. (What do you mean by referring to him?) liked him. (I am pretty tired tonight, Cecil, I think that I shall have to stop.) yes, but i have not come for a long time, papa. (Go on, Cecil. I will wait.) It is most time for Jesus birthday. I would like to give him a birthday present. (Perhaps Jesus will let you do so, Cecil.) Yes, I will find out. we used to buy them when I was with you. (Go on, dear.) Papa ndama [evidently abbreviated for 'and mama'.] I do love you. (Can you see us?) Yes, I can See you. yes kiss brother for me. papa, I love to tell you and my mama I love you. I wish I could buy Christmas presents, but we dent [don't] have to uke [like] you do there pa— [scrawls.] (Write what you wish. Have you any message for us?) Just I love you Brother. (I am very tired. I shall stop now, Cecil, I guess.) Don't go papa. (Is there anything that you want me to buy for anybody?) Yes, mama, willis, Ester, Rubie Ruth, George, * * (possibly an attempt at 'Cecil'.] Papa and my mama, Jesus [Here the planchette moved the pencil to where the word 'yes' at first of the sentence was written and wrote 'Jesus' after it, as if

to recognize that he should have been mentioned first, and then returned to the proper place and wrote—] and lots, papa. [Then the planchette moved back and wrote 'Cecil', not very distinctly, over the word marked 'undecipherable'.] (What does this mean?) I would like us all to have some Christmas like we use [used] to, papa. (I never bought presents for Maude, Rubie Ruth, Esther, and Willis. What do you mean by that.) but I am here now. papa. (What shall I do? I cannot give you a present.) why? (How can I?) you put it on my desk. (How can I give the rest a present?) I will tell them where you put it. y— (It will be very hard for me to do it, Cecil.) never mind, papa. (It is very hard for us this Christmas, Cecil.) It is hard for me to [too] papa. yes. (Will you let Maude write tonight, Cecil?) Yes, I would, only she is not here. (I guess we must stop, dear.) Good night. have a good time Christmas. we will come to see you and brother. we will play with little brother. mama, say Good night. [Small dots or circles drawn at each side of the sheet for kisses to Mr. and Mrs. S., and the planchette wrote—] kiss him for me."

"Henry Russell" was the name of Cecil's intimate friend. The other names are those of deceased and living children. Thus the sitting explains itself.

December 25th, 1901. Planchette used. Present Mr. and Mrs. S.

"(I said to George, 'Go to sleep'.) Tell brother George good night, papa. [The word 'Tell' was put at the beginning of the sentence after the rest of it was written, the planchette moving back to do this.] (All right. I have told him.) Mama is a good ma— ['mama' unfinished.] you love her papa. (I do, Cecil.) I have seen the pretty things, papa. (All right, Cleve. Did you see his engine and cars and track?) see brother's tr— (Yes.) brother's is better than mine, papa. (What do you mean, Cecil?) Mine did not go on the track. I saw him and we wcle [were] playing to [too] with him. (Did you see what was given Mama from Marion, the soft pillow?) yes, papa. (And the picture?) yes, I told you I saw the pretty things, papa. (Do you want to write about them?) I would like to talk like so you could hear me. (Have you anything to tell papa tonight?) Good night, papa. (We did not forget you, Cecil.) no. (God bless my boy.) yes, he does, papa. [Kisses drawn as usual on each side of sheet for the parents and then written—] hug little brother".

It is true that George's cars went on a track. Cecil's did not. Mrs. S. of course knew the facts.

December 26th, 1901. 7 p. m. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All ready.) Cleve [scrawls.] (Can't read it.) [Scrawls.] (Write your name, please.) Cleave, papa. (Mrs. S.: Hullo, Cleve.) hullo, my mama. ('Hullo, my mama?') Yes. (Write what you want to.) we * * to you. (What kind of a place is it up there where you are?) me * * heven [?] Smead. (Don't you want to write something?) * * when heven [?] (Cannot Maude write tonight?) Perhaps. (All right.) Get him his box. [Probably by Maude.] (Do you mean the box Mrs. S. put away?) mama put it there in the study. (Who wrote 'Get him his box?') Me Maude. (Do you want us to stop this and get it?) yes. [We got it and there was a break in the writing.] (Here it is. What shall we do with it?) [It seemed as if they were looking at it.] yes. (Tell us what you want.) stamps, papa. [Mr. S. probably read the word 'stamps' as lamps, though he has not kept a note of this, for the planchette wrote 'no' and moved the pencil upward and crossed the 't' in the word 'stamps'.] (Do you want me to get your stamp book?) yes. (There it is, Cecil.) Open it, mama. [Mrs. S. opened it, and took some time in showing him all his stamps.] (You can see them, Cecil. There they are.) [Scrawls.] the home are the best. [Meaning the U. S. stamps.] papa can give me some of his. (All right, I will. Do you want me to stick them in your book?) let mama. (Go on.) [Mrs. S. did not reply.] will she do it? (Yes, what do you want me to give you?) some I don't have. (You don't want me to take any out of my book.) it. (My new book? You mean for me to give you my duplicates?) Yes. (Go on, my dear.) it is most like talking, papa. (Papa will put some in it for you, dear.) mama do it. [I took the box to look at it.] give it to her, papa. [I gave it to Mrs. S.] (Papa is glad Cleve is here tonight. Go on.) I can talk easier when she has it, papa. [Apparently a question was asked as to the reading of the word 'talk' which was very indistinct, as the planchette wrote—] t a l k [and then drew the pencil upward and underscored the previous word for 'talk'.] (I understand.) Good little brother. get some like the one I * * [Only two letters that are possibly intended for 'like'.] bes to [intended evidently for 'best to', the one 't' serving for both words.] be pasted, papa. [Apparently a question as to reading 'bes to' was asked and not recorded, as the planchette wrote the word 'to' and a scrawl after it like 's', but apparently erased it.] (I understand.)

yes. (What else, Cecil?) my watch maude wants to see papa. (There it is.) [Mrs. S.'s hand shook and trembled with excitement.] That is a pretty one, Cecil. [Apparently written by Maude.] (That is registered. It is by Maude and Mrs. S. got it.) yes. (Go on.) Where is your book? [Apparently said by Maud to Cecil.] Cecil's book, papa. [Said apparently by Maude to Mr. S.] (Go on.) no, the other one, little one. ['i' dotted and the two 't's' crossed, probably in response to question as to reading the word 'little' which was not clear.] (Do you mean my stamp book?) no, little one. [Mrs. S. got the 'Daily Food' book.] (Do you mean that one?) Yes. [This book was wrapped in thin rubber cloth, carefully sewed, and no one had ever touched it since Cecil's death. She did not want to take it out of the covering.] see that. [Apparently said by either Maude or Cecil to the other.] yes. take it off. [The planchette moved over to Mrs. S., first as if wanting her to do it, and then when she hesitated it moved over to me, as if to urge me to do so. Mrs. S. took off the covering.]

(Go on.) Yes, it is pretty, Cecil, I like it too. [Apparently said by Maude to Cecil.] (Go on.) yes, we like to look at them. get some more. [Mrs. S. took a small package that she had not opened. She did not remember what was in it, and said:] (What is it? Cecil?) Pencil. [This was correct.] [Mrs. S. then took a small package that she could see what it was. It was a valentine. She said:] (That is a valentine. We won't open it, Cecil.) Show it to Maude. [We did so as far as we could.] hat [then 'd' superposed on 't' making the word 'had'.] at our Junior league, Maude, last time. [Apparently said by Cecil to Maude.] (Go on.) yes, yes [second 'yes' written on new sheet.] Maude, yes pretty like [planchette then went back and drew the pencil through the word 'Maude', and then wrote—] yes. [and drew a line through it.] (Go on.) Is brother happy? (Yes, I think so. Can I have your stamps, those which I have not?) yes. ['yes' erased.] no, Cecil. we played here some to make him [happy.] no, don't like it done. [words 'it done' doubtful. Apparently refers to the question of Mr. S.] (You want me to give you some?) no, [erased.] yes, more new [written 'mw', and then the planchette erased the last stroke of the 'm' leaving the 'e' out.] ones. (I will, Cecil. Mama shall put them in.) All right. Show maude my desk. just open it. [We did so.] (Go on.) take us over.

[We did so, taking the planchette with us. What was then written was written on his desk.] yes, [erased.] no. [These words not explained.] thank George for that po— [apparently some excitement and delay, as the position of the planchette was changed after it had stopped to write, and then when replaced it went back to the proper place and wrote—] c k e t book, papa. [A small pocket book that George had given him and he placed it on Cecil's desk.]

(I cannot read it very well.) thank George for my little pocket book, papa. Good night papa, mama, George."

The incidents in this sitting explain themselves. None are evidential, but there is one apparent case of supernormal acquisition, namely, the reference to the *pencil* sewed up in the package. But this can be easily explained by subliminal memory. The most interesting feature, however, is the dramatic play in it. This is quite as good, though not so plentiful as in the Piper case. The apparent way in which Cecil and Maude converse while their words are picked up and registered by Mrs. S. is a most interesting phenomenon for its reproduction of what appears in the Piper case to be transcendental. If we were assured that this case is spiritistic we might so explain it here, but this remains to be shown.

The box alluded to and which contains some pretty things of Cecil's, namely, his watch, his stamp book, his valentine, and his Daily Food book, was put in the study as indicated in the sitting. The valentine he got at the "Junior League" and the Daily Food book they use to read in the "Junior League" meetings. Of the "home" (American) stamps Mr. S. says: "He thought the most of them. He was quite a patriotic boy. He marched with me in the procession last Memorial Day."

December 28th, 1901. 7.30 p. m. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Sitting according to appointment with "unknown friend".

"(We are here waiting for you.) yes unknown. [last word not very clearly written. After it the planchette made a curved line and went back to the beginning and returned to where it began and then drew a straight line through the figure drawn which was somewhat the shape of a heart.]

(Is my friend here?) Yes. (Have you any message?) it is hard to write tonight. Good night. (Do the best you can. Please do not go.) it hurts us, yes. (Why? What is the matter?) there is some trouble. I cannot use her much. (What is the trouble?) I cannot [cannot] quite understand. (Things are all right now. I guess you imagine it.) no. (Will you try and answer questions?) it is very hard. (Let us stop now until half

past eight, when we will try again, if Mrs. S. is rested. Will that be all right?) Yes, yes, yes.

(We have resumed, my friend.) [Scrawls.] I have come. (Who?) her friend. (Will you explain the hypnotic state?) * * [possibly the first two letters are 'Cl'.] hers is not that. (I know that. I do not think that her condition is that of the hypnotic state. Go on.) * * * [whole page undecipherable.] (All right. Let that go. Go on with something else.) Yes, she is not as able, no, usable. [Evidently the word 'usable' was not read at first and a question was asked and the planchette wrote 'no', and then 'yes' and went back to the second writing of 'usable' and underscored it.] (I guess we must stop. I thank you for trying. Will you try and come again?) yes, when? (Wednesday at the same hour I shall be at liberty. Will you come then?) Yes. (All right. Good night. Thank you sir.) Yes."

December 29th, 1901 Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(We are all ready.) S. I. [?] Smead likes them. [Refers apparently to some musk tablets which we were eating. Mrs. S. placed some on the planchette.] Sylvester. (Is my brother Sylvester really here?) most likely B—— [Billy?] (Please tell me directly. Is Sylvester here?) Yes. (Write what you may wish.) no. (If I shall ask some questions will you answer them?) we don't like them. You —— we do not like them. [Repeated for reading.] You [letter made and erased.] people Expect Children to know as much and more than you do. (You are not a child.) no, but the little ones come here. (I never asked questions of the children.) you have Billy. (I mean not hard questions.) * * all that, all * * therefore billy [?] * * because you are always trying to trying to * * Maude. Yes, others billy * * Yes * * (Won't you answer some?) [No reply.]"

The writing now became so indistinct that we had to stop. This is the first time, so far as I can remember, that the writing started so well, and for some reason became so indistinct that we were obliged to stop. Mrs. S. was not specially tired, but I could not see any reason for this phenomenon.

[I am inclined to agree with Sylvester that Mr. S. did ask at times some rather absurd questions of these children. The reader will probably have observed this in the record. J. H. H.]

January 1st, 1902. 7 p. m., one-half hour before the time appointed for Mrs. S.'s unknown friend. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(Go on. Whoever is here may write.) M—— Sm * * *
 * * humlp [?] Mis * * Clemns humlp [?] here * * *
 (Cannot read it.) * * [undec.] ster Smead. Stella Cleamens.
 (Is that word 'Stella'?) Yes sir. Stella ['t' crossed.] no. ['t'
 in 'Stella' apparently crossed again with more emphasis.] Yes,
 Cleamens yes, [planchette then erased the letter 'a' in 'Cleamens'.
 (Clemens?) yes, don't you know me? (Where did you live?)
 near Hartford. (Please tell me more about yourself.) Yes, you
 came to see me. (Where?) at ['t' either crossed or erased.]
 Brother Frank's house. (What was 'Brother Frank's' name?)
 Filley. (Who was Frank Filley? Did I know him?) Yes, you
 used to come to get your money. (I remember getting my money
 at Mr. Filley's place, but what had Frank Filley to do with it?)
 You used to get it from Frank sometimes. [This is true.] (I re-
 member that Frank used to bring it to me sometimes.) yes, so
 did Arthur Clemens. [I cannot remember this.] (What disease
 did you die of?) Cancer. [Correct.] (I cannot remember what
 your name was, but I do not think it was Stella.)

No, Miss Clemens has to wait. She has made a mistake, so will
 try to get it right. (Who wrote that?) unknown. [It was 7.30,
 the time agreed upon for him to come.] (Was her name Stella?)
 no. (I suppose that you do not know.) Yes. [Probably means
 that she did not know.] (Do you know what her mistake was?)
 She said she had made one. (Will she come back tonight?) she
 is here. (Will you let her write a little while?) If you wish it.
 (Ask her to correct the mistake.)

My [possibly intended for 'Mary'.] M [?] Clemens. Mis
 * * Clara Clara Miss M Clamens ley. Mary Clemens Filley ['i'
 dotted.] (Who is here now?) Sister to Mary. (What relation
 to A. N. Filley?) his wife. (Is Mary C. Filley his wife?) yes.
 (What is your name?) * * Harriet M. Clemens. Harriet. [I
 think that this is correct.] (What message have you?) My Boys
 are to be told, if you will tell them, I came here. (Who are your
 boys?) Frank, Arther [Arthur.] (Anything special.) no.
 (Will my unknown friend resume the writing?) He has gone.
 (Will he write soon?) I do not know. He did not say. (Can you
 tell him I am ready for him?) no, do not know where he went.
 (I suppose that is all.) yes, no."

[For explanation see notes to the next sitting. J. H. H.]

January 1st, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.
[Hour not mentioned, but note says it was the second sitting.
J. H. H.]

I looked up the name of "Miss Clemens" and I found that it was Martha Clements rather than "Clemens", but I did not mention it to Mrs. S. Why was the name written Clemens and what had Stella to do with it? All this is a mystery. I cannot solve it.

"(I find that your name was 'Martha Clements'.) [Scrawls.] Guess you do not know me. (Who is it then?) Your Friend. (Is this Mrs. Smead's friend?) No, Hastings. [The planchette started to make the letter 'H', writing the first stroke and then made a scrawl, but ended by making 'H'.] (Is that word 'Hastings'?) [Scrawls.] yes, Yes. (What is the first name?) Chas. [period inserted.] no. [This is wrong for 'Hastings', but right for a later communicator who was apparently with M. Hastings.] (Tell me your full name.) Hastings, you know me. (I want to know your first name very much.) [Scrawls.] Why? (I do.) * * Char- lie Stanley [not distinct, resembles Stonle—] is here. (Will you tell me something so I can know it is the one I think it is?) Yes, mountain, Bolton. you came to see me and it rained very hard, when I came here Hastings.

[This is correct in the main. He lived in Bolton, Conn. on the mountain side. A mountain was near the house. I went to see him before he died, and was with him while he was dying. Whether it rained or not that day I have no knowledge.]

(Will you give me your name in full?) [Scrawls.] * * William Hastin— Hastings. [period inserted.] (Is that word 'William'?) Yes. (Go on then.) * * * [first two letters 'mo' are clear, but remainder doubtful.] (Write it again.) moris Hastings. [This is correct, except that the name should be spelled 'Morris'.] (Go on.) T * * [scrawls.] mores, Yes. all then * * * ['then' ?] were so * * (Will you write something to prove to me that you are a real spirit?) how? (Tell me the names of the doctors that attended you.) You know them. [This was a fact and would not do what I wanted.] no (What did you ask me to do for you before you died? Tell me, no matter if I do know.) Yes, ppreach to the yousst [all but 'yes' erased.] I wanted you to tell the young men I was sorry I did not give my heart to the Lord, and that I wanted them to [too] not to wait. [This is correct.]

(What else? Did I say anything to you?) You asked me if it hurt me much. [period inserted, but reading of 'me much' doubtful.] [Correct.] (What was your father's first name?) William H * * Har * * [rest undec.] (What is your father's first

name?) Harvey. [This is correct. I am not sure that his middle name is William. I knew him as Harvey W. Hastings.] "

Mr. S. knew a Martha Clements, but not a Stella Clements. Martha died in 1895 and was buried at B——, Conn. (some 12 or 15 miles from Hartford), by Mr. S. Mrs. S. knew this. She was a sister to the wife of A. N. Filley, mentioned by Mr. S. at the sitting. This Mr. Filley used to pay money to Mr. S. So also Frank Filley, according to the record. Of Arthur Filley and his paying money to Mr. S., the latter says: "It is probable he did, very probable. It is impossible to confirm it more. My memory strongly leads in that direction."

Harriet M. Filley was the name of the wife of Mr. A. N. Filley, her maiden name being Harriet May Clements. She was living at the time of the sitting. Frank and Arthur were the names of her two sons. "Clara" is probably a mistake for Martha. Martha Clements was Mrs. Filley's sister. Frank Filley was not Miss Clements's, Martha Clements's brother, but her brother-in-law's son, her nephew. It is interesting to remark that this Frank was once thus indicated as a brother and then a few moments later as a *son*, if 'My Boys' must be so interpreted. But if 'Boys' when referring to Frank and Arthur be interpreted as a mistake for 'Brothers' the consistency of the messages would be established. It would appear, of course, from the allusion to 'My Boys' that it is this Harriet M. Filley (née Clements) that is the "communicator". But this would be incorrect on any spiritistic theory, as she is still living. The allusion to 'sister to Mary' might mean that Martha Clements is the "communicator", and that she was trying to give the name of her sister Harriet whom she correctly says is the wife of A. N. Filley. To appreciate the possibility of these interpretations the reader must ignore the question of Mr. S., and suppose that they were misunderstood, as they evidently were on any theory, since Mrs. S. knew the facts and correct persons.

Of the other persons mentioned, Mr. S. says: "Morris Hastings was the name of a young man I was with when he died years ago. I asked him if he suffered any pain in dying. He said, no. Of course we talked of death and heaven and Christ, etc., and he wanted me to preach to the young men, and tell them that he

wished he had publicly professed religion. Charley Stanley was a young man in Harwinton, Conn., where I lived years ago. The parties were no relatives of each other, only I buried them all and they liked me very much personally."

Harvey W. Hastings was the father of Morris Hastings who is supposed to communicate. He was well known to Mr. S. and so far as the latter knows is now living.

The confusion in giving the name "Chas." as the first name of Mr. Hastings in answer to the question of Mr. S. is interesting, as it is spontaneously corrected in a moment by giving the name of "Charley Stanley", showing that the first question had not been understood. The remainder of the sitting explains itself. Mr. S. says that it is very difficult to tell how much of all these facts were known by Mrs. S. and how much not.

January 2nd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Nothing special to suggest the "communicator" Cecil.

"(Go on. We are all ready.) [Scrawls of a peculiarly systematic sort.] (Go on.) [The reply was the drawing of a bird on its nest and a human hand extending out from it with what is quite apparently a ring on the forefinger. The hand was drawn after the question 'What is that?' referring to the bird in the nest. Then the question was asked a second time.]

(What is that?) a bird in hand. (Explain.) baby hand. (Go on, please. Explain more.) no, when [you] get the baby put my ring on its finger, so that I can know it please, papa. (What has the bird to do with it. I don't see.) baby being hatched. (Who is writing?) Cecil. (I will do it, Cecil, for you.) we will see you, Cecil John Smead. (That was a good joke. I see it now.) a good joke on you, papa. (All right. Go on, Cecil.) I [scrawls. Then a line was drawn toward the right side of the sheet where it was pointed with an arrow head, and the pencil moved to the other side where some circles were drawn, as if giving the usual kisses to his parents, and then in large letters was written:—] do not forget the ring.

[Cecil then disappeared and there was an interval of about five minutes between the two sittings.]

The allusions in the record to a baby evidently relate to Mrs. S.'s expected confinement. The way Cecil expresses the incident

is interesting. The reader will understand the reference to the ring (p. 411).

(We are ready now. I hope my unknown friend will come tonight, so that we may make an appointment for some other time.) [Scrawls.] I subliminal [?] [So interpreted by Mr. S., but very indistinct and conjectural. Letters might be 'eclminil'.] (Please write your name.) my name, I have none. I am [lhm ?] your sh— [sheet changed.] Subliminal. (Will you explain.) no use. (I cannot understand that nonsense.) that is what you people call us. [large period inserted.] (What are first two words?) [Planchette went back and crossed the two 't's' in 'that', and then wrote:—] that is. (I have not taken that view of it.) Then what do you ask for whenever we come about whether we are spirits or not. (Cannot you or my brother try to write something so that I can know that he is a real spirit? Will you try to do so now? I may know all about it that you are spirits, but others do not, and I am trying to get some facts to prove it to them.)

Your brother does not try. he iscene [possibly a confusion of 'is' and 'seems'.] utterly tired out with so much nonsense. [Question as to reading of words above.] he is utterly tired out. (I did not know that spirits ever got tired.) no, when we try to write, and it is so hard it does not tire us as it does you, but some of the old feelings come back. (That is a pretty good answer, Sylvester.) I am not your brother. (Please who are you.) Your unknown. (The one here before?) Yes. (Ida's friend?) Yes. (Go on, then.) now do you believe me? (Yes, go on.) Yes, all right. he beleives us now. [Apparently said to some one on the "other side." Note way 'believe' is spelled.] (Who do you mean by 'he'? 'me'?) of course.

(I am glad that you are here. Try and give me some facts that I can find out are true and that I can use to make others know you are a spirit.) I o— [pause apparent.] have to wait for a long tr [?] [possibly 'ti'.] time now. (When will you come again?) cannot just tell. (Cannot you see how important it is for you to give me some facts that I can have to look up?) I will try when I come again.

(If you are what you say you are why do you try and dodge every time? Why not now give me the facts? Try and see if you cannot think of some now.) llst, llst. * * * [Mr. S. thought that the 'llst' might refer to the street on which the City Point church was situated.] (I see that you will not tell me anything. Why do you do so?) when She goes to Boston. ['She' begins new line.] (That is all bluff. You might as tell [as well have told] her when she went to New York. Tell us now.) [Scrawl.] Fred Childs. (Go on. That is what I am after.) Herbert M— ['M'

erased.] (What about him?) Ellers brother worked for Merrill. (Go on. That is what I want.) Yes, Ella Potter, Potter. (Ella Potter?) Yes, [Mrs. S. said that she did not know them.] Yes, she did know them. Merrill is here. (What Merrill was it?) Geo. [period inserted.] (Mrs. S.: Is it Merrill the milkman?) Yes, yes. (That is just what I want. Go on. Tell me some more.) — John lefft * * [Two letters that might be 'lef' or 'Cf' or 'lb'.] (How can we find out about all this?) [Scrawls in loop form.] Candlin. (Candlin?) Yes, he would remember G. Merrill. (Go on.) [Scrawl.] Get him to tell you, Candlin. (What Candlin?) he will remember. you know. (You mean the minister?) Yes. (I will see about it. It is time for us to stop now.) w—— (I shall be glad to have you come again.) Yes. (Try and tell me all you can next time.) Yes. (Good night. I am much obliged to you.)" Sitting closed. Mrs. S. not very weary.

The "communications" of this unknown friend have an unusual interest as they are so different from those of most of the "communicators". He shows some of the reluctance of Harrison Clarke to prove his identity. The writing was unusually clear and easy in all, or nearly all, his "messages". But it was certain spontaneous remarks by him that excited an interest to know how the subliminal of Mrs. S. could produce them. The allusion to the retention of our individuality after death (p. 443) suggested that either Mrs. S. had a very peculiar notion of what was meant by the "subliminal", unless she took the pantheistic view of things which I knew she was not likely to understand at all, or the references were not a natural expression of her supraliminal convictions and conceptions. Hence, long after the sitting, I wrote to her, without telling her what my object was, to know what her idea of the "subliminal" was. The following is her answer:

"I don't think much about it. I suppose it is what you (Mr. S.) and Mr. Xenos and Dr. Hyslop think is the unconscious mind; when the conscious mind is asleep the unconscious mind is active. But I don't believe it just the same. I suppose it means what you think it means. To me it is a piece of nonsense. Sometimes it is active in consciousness, but not very often. The two minds cannot act simultaneously in relation to the same subject. They may act so in relation to different subjects. I am inclined to think that the subliminal, with some persons, may have telepathic powers.

"I think that there is no unconscious part to a person in that sense at all. Whatever there is, it is something that we have heard or known before and in some way stored up in the brain, like the message in a phonograph cylinder, that whatever is written by me or Mrs. Piper automatically is from outside parties, not by our subliminals, only when something is written that it came from our stored up memories."

The reader will remark that there is a difference of view between the "communicator's" conception of the subliminal which is denied and that of Mrs. S.'s supraliminal consciousness, and no trace of the idea that the subliminal seems to deny individuality.

The statement by this "unknown communicator" that some use the arm and some the brain, and some both the brain and the arm (p. 451) coincides with statements in the Piper case, which Mrs. S. might have seen, as Dr. Hodgson's Report is in the library of Mr. S. The other statement just after it, however, to the effect that some persons after death "are like being unconscious. To you they are sleeping awhile, though they are not unconscious", is also quite identical with the representations of Imperator both through Stainton Moses and Mrs. Piper. I think it hardly probable that Mrs. S. has seen any of these, as she knows nothing of the work of Stainton Moses and I do not recall any similar statement in Dr. Hodgson's Report. It might be inferred, however, from the statements of George Pelham. Besides one may ask, does not this paradoxical reference to *sleep* not being unconscious reflect something of the confusion in Mrs. S.'s own conscious account of the subliminal above?

Fred Childs was a boy about 15 or 16 years of age when Mrs. Smead knew him at school. Ella Potter had only a speaking acquaintance with Mrs. Smead and was older than she. Herbert Ellers is not known. There was a Herbert Potter, Ella's brother, but it is not known whether he worked for Merrill, the milkman whom Mrs. Smead knew and who is dead. John is possibly a reference to John Taylor, a person still living and quite pertinent to be mentioned in this connection. He was known to the Smeads, as also the Rev. Candlin, whose name also is pertinent in this connection as in possession of the facts to be verified, or at least as one who ought to know them.

January 12th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Georgie. Georgie was sitting opposite Mrs. S., and the little table was between him and Mrs. S.

"(Go on. We are all ready now.) My good little brother. I can see him, papa. (I cannot see you, Cecil.) No, you will sometime. [Question asked as to reading.] you, will. (Go on, and write what you want to dear. I shall be glad to have you.) Can't write much, seems like you know what I say. (Go on, and try to tell me.) I think how much I want to love you all [scrawly.] and want to tell you, but you know it all don't y— [last three words very scrawly.] (I cannot sit as I have been sitting. My right hand pains me. I shall have to change my position.) O, Papa try my way. (What do you mean?) I can watch George. [I changed my position, but I could not make out the writing, and the sitting was soon brought to a close. I was so nervous that I had to break off the sitting.]

[As far as I can make out the writing was "The Darknes [?] your [?] * * papa, my brother." The writing was not clear in this sitting. J. H. H.]

January 16th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. George had just gone to bed and was awake in a room nearby. Planchette work.

"(All right. Go on.) O 1 * * C S I O. 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10, Papa. (What does that mean?) [Scrawl.] in Cecil Book, yes. (What do you mean. I do not see.) numbers, mama Goose Multiply. (Go on, dear. You got that mixed. It should have been 'Marmaduke Multiply', Cecil.) multiply is all rite [right] papa. (All right. Go ahead, Cecil. Why did you make those figures and that mistake?) funny [funny] papa. (All right. Go on.) Yes, I liked it cause it was funny. (Go on.) mother Goose is there too. [We did not notice this until he called our attention to it.] (You meant 'Marmaduke Multiply', didn't you, Cecil?) I guess I did. (Go on.) m [or scrawl.] [The planchette then made some circles on the right side of the sheet of paper for kisses as usual, and then it went to the bottom of the sheet and wrote:—] Good night little [ittle] Brover. [and then moved up to the left middle side of the sheet and made circles again for kisses to Mrs. S., and then to the top left corner and wrote:—] Yes, tell George, papa, before he goes to sleep. [Then the planchette moved the

pencil to the circles on the left side and then away from them and wrote:—] Good night little [ittle] George, yes. [We did as he wished.] [Cecil often called his brother 'brover'.]

(Go on, dear.) my Good mama is good papa to [too] [The word read 'is' might as well be read 'es', and so be an unfinished 'yes'.] yes, we love her. (You said a little while ago, 'Good night', Cecil. I don't understand how you are here now.) that was to little brother, papa. (I see. Go on.) my dear papa, tell me [?] [um ?] a tory [story] about Bill. [This is just as he would have said it if he had been in the body.] (Do you want me to tell you a Bill story, Cecil?) yes, papa. [I did so, and told him a story in the course of which I said: 'Bill didn't get a blessed fish, Cleve'.] no, don't say it, blessed fish, cause it is only a tory, papa. [story.]

[This is very much like him. I had always taught him not to say words that were not fit to use. I especially taught him not to say what he called bad words, and he had a deep sense of reverence for sacred things. I can see how what I thoughtlessly said when I said 'blessed fish' would have unfavorably impressed him and he would have corrected me for it.]

[I went on with the Bill story, told him that I would not say so again, and told him that some way all of Bill's fishes got out of the net and so Bill didn't get a single one after all.] * * to [too] bad wasn't it, papa. (I have told you a story, Cecil. Tell me something about the world where you are, please.) I can't papa. (Maude did, Cecil.) You couldn't un——" Some friend called and this at once put a stop to the sitting.

There is some interest in the incident of the "numbers mama Goose multiply", which is worth mention. Cecil had a book, as reported in the language of Mrs. S., that he thought much of. The title of it was "Marmaduke Multiply". It was sent him by his grandmother Nannie, and in it were sets of rhymes involving numbers, so that he learned many of them by the use of this book. It was in his desk at his death, and is now placed there with the rest of his books. NEXT TO THIS ONE, is a book called "Mother Goose Rhymes", that he liked almost as much. When the writing was going on the books were behind Mrs. S. and she had no thought of them. The confusion of the two in the expression "mama Goose multiply" is an interesting circumstance on any theory, natural on the spiritistic, if we take the Piper case as a standard, and instructive on the theory of secondary personality, in as much as it would show that agency capable of mistakes similar to those claimed for spirits.

January 20th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All right. We are all ready.) [Scrawls like the letter 'l' and made in three lines. These were followed by a perfect mesh of circular scrawls, and then:—] Yes. [made in very large letters.] (Go on.) Cincinnati Ohio. (Is that word Cincinnati?) Yes sir. (Go on. Who is it?) Sylvester and Calvin Smead. (Who are you? What has Cincinnati Ohio got to do with it?) Your uncles are we. (Uncles?) Yes. (What has Cincinnati Ohio got to do with it?) Calvin was west when he came here. he had at one time thought to live there. (Is that right? Have I read it correctly?) Yes. (Go on.) Yes, tell Laura Miller, Joseph's wife that Frank's father is here before Jenny does it that it may not hurt her. [one 'h' in 'hurt' superposed on the other.] [Questions as to reading followed by words:] no, is here, yes, Jenny does. (It was Mrs. Miller's father that died. What has all that got to do with my mother?) Yes, shock her if you do not these things easily (All right. I will do it. Still I don't think that it would shock her. Go on.) You have little idea of the many that would like to use this. [Planchette went back and crossed the two 't's' in the word 'little', probably in response to question.] (Go on. Cannot you tell me something that I want to know?)

My sister Mary wants to know if you have found her out yet? (Whom do you mean?) Matha. [In response to question of reading the planchette went back and crossed the 't', and then superposed upon it the letters 'rt', making the name 'Martha', and after this wrote:—] yes. (I cannot see who it is. Explain 'Martha'.) Your friends are so many that they do not get a chance for much. it is Martha Clemens.

[The name should be Martha Clements. I told Mrs. S. how it was spelled and she knew. Still it was spelled 'Clemens' as usual.]

(You are welcome Miss Clements.) did you ascertain the facts that to be true that I gave you. (Wait, let me read that.) no, it is so hard to get control that I got another to do it for me, so that I could take it up and go on. did you do what I said. John Taylor, he is here. (Who is he?) you know him. (May Taylor's father, the one that lives in B——?) Yes, exactly the same person, yes. (I have not had time to look up these cases, yet.) do so soon. (All right. Go on.) You may write to any one there except Brother Rockwell. he is here also. (Is Frank Rockwell here tonight?) no, he will come some time if you wish him to. (I shall be very glad to have him come. I always liked Frank W. Rockwell.) Yes, he will be glad to h ['h' erased.] know it. I will tell him. (Who is writing now?) Martha. (Will you tell me more of the B—— people that have passed into the other life?) I will have to come again. good night."

Calvin Smead was an uncle of Mr. S., and died in California many years ago. One brother says that this Calvin never lived in Cincinnati, never talked of living there and thinks that he never thought of doing so. But as he indicates that this brother traveled all over the West, a fact stated also by another brother, and admits having seldom heard from the brother Calvin, it might be true that the latter once thought of living in the city named. One brother, Mr. Smead's father, says that it would not be improbable that Calvin entertained this thought at one time. Mr. and Mrs. S. never knew whether such an incident occurred.

"Joseph's wife" refers to Mrs. Smead's mother and is an interesting way to refer to her, as it is the natural expression for the brother Calvin to use, though it is apparent that Sylvester is present who would naturally say *father*. It is not certain who the "communicator" is, though one expression, the allusion to Calvin in the third person, would imply that the "communicator" was Sylvester.

"Frank" refers to Mr. Frank Miller, a previous and frequent "communicator" in this record (pp. 291, 357). "Jenny" is the name of his wife, living, and Laura Miller a sister, wife of Mr. Joseph Smead and mother of Mr. S., also living. All the parties concerned knew of Mr. Frank Miller's father's death. Mrs. Jennie Miller's father had just died, she had intended to write to her sister-in-law to tell her of it.

The interruption of the "communications" by the appearance of "Martha Clements" is an interesting episode, as showing a resemblance, noticeable also in other instances between this and the Piper case in the matter of interruption and change of "communicators". The correction of the name "Martha Clements" can have no importance since Mr. S. had told Mrs. S. (p. 467) the correct name. But it is interesting still to see that, in spite of Mrs. S.'s knowledge of the correct spelling the original mistake is committed in regard to the name "Clements". It is also interesting to remark that the same apparent mistake regarding the identity of the "communicator" before is committed here. The reader may recall that in the previous sitting where this "communicator" appeared she seems to have represented herself as "Harriet M. Clemens", in reality the sister of the "communicator". The question "my sister Mary" "wants to know"

etc., apparently implies this. The "Brother Rockwell" alluded to as deceased was still living at the time of the sitting, but a friend reported that he "is at present quite sick, possibly dangerously so. He has not been to church since 1895 excepting once or twice."

January 23rd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All ready. Go on. Never mind our talking.) [Two flowers drawn.] (Are these flowers?) Yes. (Who is it?) I have no name. (Will you please explain.) * * Hill [very poorly written, except the 'H'.] St Hill (Go on please. I cannot yet see.) Hill, St Hill. (Go on. Explain what you mean by 'St Hill'.) [Sheet changed and planchette began by moving pencil diagonally across the page to the lower right hand corner, and back to the upper left hand corner and then down vertically to the left hand corner and back to the beginning point at the upper left hand corner, and wrote:] Hill Street. [directly on the line drawn upward from the right hand lower corner of the page.]

(What is it about Hill Street?) I lived on Hill St. [After writing the word 'on' the planchette moved the pencil upward to the lines, probably intended for a street, and wrote between the two extending from upper left to lower right hand corner, the words 'Hill St', moving the pencil in an awkward diagonal manner.]

(That is good. I can see that. What city or town?) Near Medford. (Is that word 'Medford'?) yes. (Go on. Tell me all you can.) * * [Scrawl.] J. cooper (Write that over again.) J. Cooper. (Is that your name?) no. (That name is 'J. Cooper', is it?) Yes. (What do you mean by 'J. Cooper'?) I knew him there. ['t' crossed in 'there'.] (Go on. Tell me your name please.) I lived near him accrossed [across] the Street. (Please tell me your name.) * * [Scrawls, possibly containing letter 'P'.] J. P. [?] No [?] Pratt. [clearly written.] [Then probably an unrecorded question as to reading, as the name is followed by the word 'no'.] (Is that name Pratt?) Yes, yes. (Will you take pains to tell me the rest of your name?) P [?] P [?] T T [written almost in a vertical line.] I am John. [It is possible to read 'I am' as a scrawly attempt at 'John'.] (I see. Is your name John Pratt?) why yes. (John Pratt?) why yes. (Where did you live?) I told you Medford, near it. Nearer the water Station. ['Station' begins new line.] (Do you mean the pumping station in West Medford?) [Question suggested by Mrs. S.] near it. (I understand that you lived near the pumping station in West

Medford?) Yes. (Go on. What message have you to give? Why are you here? What is your wish?) my only wish is to be side [apparently fusion of words 'be beside'.] them all that were my earth friends, yes (Go on. Tell me all you can.) I would like to have You ['You' begins new line.] to ['to' erased.] tell them wife and I are here, that their friends and neighbors still think of them. we come home to them one [some ?] times to know how they are thinking of us.

(How can I find out? Will you tell me some one that I can see or write to, so that I can tell your friends? If you will I will try and give your message.)

You might ask for the Austins. I cannot tell them all. then [?] the agent on * * [Letters apparently 'helhes'. Then erased.] the hill road to tell you where I lived."

[In response to explanatory questions the word 'yes' was written three times.]

"Here we were obliged to stop the sitting. Mrs. S. could not stand it any more. She was so tired and suffered with cramps. I was sorry that I had to stop until I had received more facts to help this matter of finding this party. Possibly we shall find him, but I fear that it will not be possible with the information at hand. Mrs. S. knows nothing about any of these parties, and I have no knowledge of them. I was never in West Medford, or in Medford in my life, only as I passed through there in the cars.

"Mrs. S. was in Medford when she was a young girl about 14 or 15 years of age. She went to the pumping station and looked at the machinery. They had two alligators there. She went there to see them and she was not there over an hour. She went from there to Arlington Heights and back (walked). She did not stop there, only went for a walk, and did not know anybody there. She did not know the man at the pumping station. She knew his son, his name was Bornes. She did not stop anywhere in West Medford; did not know anybody in West Medford except this son of Mr Bornes. She never heard of Hill St. in West Medford. She does not know whether there is a Hill St. near the pumping station. She says that she once knew a Clara Pratt that lived at Medford Hillside, but did not know her mother's or father's name or the street where they lived. She never knew that the street had any name. It was some 18 years ago that she knew Clara Pratt. She was some four or five years older than Mrs. S."

Medford Hillside is between College Hill and West Medford, not very far from the pumping station, perhaps a mile. Mrs. S.'s uncle lived at Medford Hillside, and this uncle is living there now. She has not been there to see him for some 18 years, and has not been in that vicinity since the time she went on the walk to Arlington Heights.

Personal inquiries made by myself at the place mentioned in this sitting resulted in the following facts which may throw some light on the "communications". I intersperse the account with incidents that may also throw light generally on both the human memory and the difficulty of verifying such facts as the record indicates.

I went to Medford and first called at the Police Station to make preliminary inquiries regarding the street and whether any Pratts lived in this place. I ascertained that a Sarah Pratt lived on Hillside Road, No. 21, and that the street was once called Hillside Street, having been changed to Hillside Road recently. I called on this Mrs. Sarah Pratt and found that her husband was still living, his name not being John Pratt. She did not know any other Pratts in the place, nor a Cooper, nor an Austen. But she had a vague recollection that some other family by the name of Pratt had once lived in the neighborhood, but they were no relatives of hers. She directed me, however, across the street to a neighbor, Mrs. Sinclair, who she said would know how to answer my inquiries.

Mrs. Sinclair knew that there had been a Pratt family in the place other than the one I had just called on, and also that there had been a Cooper, but did not know the first name of either. She also knew of the Austens in the same way. She gave me the names of persons, however, who would know. I at once called on one of them, a Mrs. Dennison. She knew of the Pratt family I was seeking, but mainly of the son Frank Pratt. She thought the father's name was Frank, but was not certain as she said it was her son, Mr. Frank B. Dennison, who knew the son Frank Pratt and was well acquainted with him. She also said that these Pratts lived opposite a Cooper family on Adams St., and that the father of Frank Pratt had died about fourteen years ago. But she directed me to a Mr. Robinson on Adams St. for further information.

I called on this Mr. Robinson and he said he knew this Mr. Pratt well. He said that his name was George Pratt, and that he had lived on the same street with himself a few houses distant and opposite a family by the name of Cooper. He thought the first name of this Cooper was William. He said that the Pumping Station had been removed about three years ago and pointed out the new one to me, situated only across the street from the old one. One of the workmen in the new station confirmed the fact about the time of removal. The old station is still standing.

Then I called on Mrs. Austen. She did not know any Pratts, but *thought* there had been a George and Clara Pratt living on Adams St. She said her own husband was dead and that she had been living at her present place (49 Quincy St., next to Adams St. Medford Hillside) for twelve or fifteen years.

I then called on Mr. Edward B. Dennison in Boston and found that he knew Clara and Frank Pratt, son and daughter of George Pratt, but he did not know Mr. Pratt's first name George. He did not know when this Mr. Pratt died, as he vaguely remembers that he was reported dead when he, Mr. Dennison, came to the place, Medford Hillside, in which he had lived since 1886, sixteen years ago. But he was quite sure that Mr. Pratt had died about that time or before, possibly as much as twenty years ago.

Mr. Robinson told me that Medford Hillside was a part of West Medford which he pointed out beyond the pumping station, this being about one-fourth of a mile distant in a flat between the two places. At the Police Station I ascertained that both West Medford and Medford Hillside were parts of Medford. Thus geographically Medford Hillside and West Medford are next to each other as well as parts of the town of Medford.

From an acquaintance of this Miss Pratt I learned her address and that she had been recently married. In answer to an inquiry I received from her the following statement:

"I received your letter of the 17th and will try to answer your questions. My father's name was George Franklin Pratt. He died May 25th, 1886. The name of the Cooper was William. I think the middle initial was F., but am not sure. My father did not know Mr. Austen. I was not sure if they lived there before

he died." This letter is signed Clarissa Pratt Greeley. I find also from a son of this Cooper that his father's name was William Fischley Cooper.

The most interesting result of this inquiry is the fact that I found the Clara (Clarissa) Pratt who was probably the very person that Mrs. S. knew and mentions in her notes on the incidents. It would seem very probable that she had actually heard of or even seen the Mr. Pratt involved in the "communications", and possibly not knowing his first name the subliminal had guessed it. What it was possible to have heard about the Coopers and Austens no one knows, but having found this one connecting link in the case it is easy to imagine how the rest may have originated, especially as we have seen so much positive proof of the influence of secondary personality in the phenomena described in this record.

I made further inquiries to know the extent of Mrs. Smead's acquaintance with Miss Clara Pratt and details of her association with her. The following is the reply to them, giving an account of the origin of the acquaintance with the lady and the most probable time at which Mrs. S. made her visit to the Pumping Station, so far as she can calculate it from the data of her memory. Mr. S. writes the account for her.

"She was introduced to Clara Pratt in the old Boston and Lowell Depot. She does not remember who introduced her about eighteen years ago. She used to pass her mornings when Mrs. S. went to work. She never had any conversation with her beyond casual greetings. She never wrote to her. The acquaintance lasted three or four years. She was never in any sense intimate with her. She knew nothing about her family, and never visited her home. Miss Pratt never visited Mrs. S. There was nothing but a passing acquaintance like dozens of others. Miss Clara Pratt did not go with Mrs. S. to the Pumping Station. Mrs. S. concludes from the best calculation now possible that it was in 1885 that she visited the Pumping Station. It is apparent, therefore, that the acquaintance was only a passing one."

It is evident from the facts in the case that it would be hard to prove that Mrs. S. had in any way ascertained the fact of the death of this Miss Pratt's father. We cannot say that she might

not have accidentally ascertained the fact, but the circumstances make it equally possible that she knew nothing about it, and it seems very unlikely that she had known or heard anything of the Cooper and Austens mentioned, especially as they seem to have played no part in the acquaintance of Mrs. S.

January 24th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

" (We are all ready.) Yes, sister will try [?] to be little * * [Scrawls like letter 'I'.] love God is the ll... way to have it easiest. (I cannot read it. Write it all over.) I can't do it. she was ten, will, yes, yes. she was ten. I do not know. [Some of this was apparently in answer to questions as to reading or meaning.]

(I cannot read it. If you want me to read it, you must write it over.) She was ten. (Did you write 'She was ten'?) Yes. (Who was ten?) Sister. (Who was sister?) Don't you rember [remember] (Tell me.) Maude. (What do you mean?) MeA [?] Maude is ten. (Who is writing?) me. (Who is me?) J Cleve, why papa don't you know your ow [own] Clevie John? (All right, Clevie. Go on.) Yes. [Then planchette drew a spot of circles on the left side of the sheet, and a line over to the right side. Then it made a circular swoop to the left side and half way back to the right and wrote 'George', and then went back to the left side and wrote 'brother' before the 'George'. Apparently the circles and lines were intended for the usual kisses.]

(Can I tell you something?) [Mr. S. records the answer 'yes' in his transcript, but it is not found in the original automatic writing.]

[Mrs. S. then told him (Cecil) that she wished that he would go to Mrs. Piper at Arlington Heights and communicate through Imperator, or [and] if that must be the way to find Imperator, and have him let Cecil send a message through Mrs. Piper to his mother. We had received a letter from Dr. Hodgson telling us to pray that this might be done by the permission of God and the kindness of Imperator.]

[When we suggested that he do this the writing stopped at once. Nothing was written for over ten minutes. We both got up from the table and rested for a while.]

(All right. We are ready now.) Let brother know I come, papa. (I will dear boy. Mama is not very well and she cannot stand much of this tonight, Cecil.) [Planchette made the usual circles for kisses on each side of the sheet and at the bottom for his father, mother and brother. Then it wrote:—] you see papa I will try to if God is willing. (All right, Cecil.) yes. (Go on.)

(Mrs. S.: Clevie, you remember you were here with Mama one day. You said that you would come back to mama in the daytime. Mrs. Piper has sittings in the daytime. You could go there in the daytime sometime.) Yes. (Mrs. S.: Mama is glad you are here.) I come sometimes when its day to [too] in the houses. I amt [am not] afraid of the dark like I was, mama. in the, yes. [Evidently the last were answers to questions.] (Mrs. S.: There was never anything to be afraid of Cecil. Jesus would take care of you.) Yes, but I would for get Sometimes. [Last word begins new line. Then the planchette drew the circles for kisses in the usual manner and wrote:—] Papa I love you. (Go on.) [Kisses again drawn, two each for Mr. and Mrs. S., and one for George, and then wrote:—] I love you all, Papa. (Go on.) Maude does to [too]. (Did you do that, Maude?) [Kisses drawn again in usual manner and written:]— yes, Papa. I saw Brother did at ['at' erased, though evidently intended for 'it', but this latter word was not written after the erasure.] (Won't there be any more Martian pictures, Maude?) not for a long time, Papa."

[The writing of this last sentence, according to the statement of Mr. S., was in the manner of Maude's earlier writing. I can also confirm this fact. The words were written under each other, so that there was only one word in a line, except 'a long' which were in the same line, the whole occupying only a corner of the sheet. J. H. H.] Sitting closed. Mrs. S. weary.

Of the incident regarding Cecil's fear of the dark Mr. S. says: "Cecil was afraid of the dark when living. He would sometimes be afraid a little while after going to bed and Mrs. S. had to go in and sit down and quiet him by talking to him. She often did this telling him that Jesus would take care of him. He would not go into the bath-room alone without George. Mrs. S. tried to shame him out of this, telling him he ought to be ashamed to be such a coward in the dark when his little brother George was so brave about it. But it was very difficult to break him of this fear. It was natural for Cecil to forget. He never used such a combination of words when living, but it would have been very characteristic of him to have said it. When he said, 'I would forget sometimes' he told it just as it happened several times. He did forget and was afraid again."

The following was an experience on the evening of January 25th, when Mr. and Mrs. S. tried to have a sitting. It was written out in Mrs. Smead's own hand and transcribed on the type-

writer by Mr. Smead. I quote the account as given me with signatures of Mr. and Mrs. S.

"In the early part of the evening, about 7 o'clock, we sat at a small table working with the planchette. Cecil seemed to be present and we were very glad. While Mr. S was trying to read what had been written, it was all I could do to keep myself here in the body as it seemed. I knew all that Mr. S. said, but was not able to answer. My jaws seemed to be locked and my eyelids held down. We did not try to continue the sitting.

"After perhaps an hour we retired for the night, and while talking a very strange feeling came over me. It was as follows as nearly as I can put it into words:

"While talking with Mr. S. I began to have a feeling of lightness come over me. It did not seem to come in any one part of the body, but over the entire body, and I spoke of it to Mr. S. at once. It seemed strange as I was perfectly well, and so I began to wonder what could be the cause. I began to lose the sense of weight, although I could feel anything I touched, yet if I lifted it it did not seem to have any weight. I reached over to Mr. S. and took his arm in my hand to see if the sensation would be confined to my own body alone, but found that it was not, and it was the same with everything I touched. I turned over, (I was lying on my right side) thinking the position I was in might have caused it, and told Mr. S. why I turned over. But it made no difference whatever. So I turned back, and after about fifteen minutes this sensation began to go away very gradually, and the last I knew until about 3 a. m. was when Mr. S. said: 'Will you be all right, do you think?' I told him I thought so, but it did not go away at once.

"When this sensation came over me I was perfectly conscious, and knew where I was. I had had similar experiences when a child once or twice a year. But when about 14 or 15 years old they left me and have never returned until last night.

"The sensation, as far as I can describe it, or liken to, would be 'the freedom of the soul after leaving the body', for I thought during this experience, 'if I could not have the knowledge of weight, how will it affect the sight?', and it seemed as though I could see through my brain or any part of the body. I could

see large veins and smaller ones. The whole interior of my head seemed filled with light of the brightness of a very bright star. I was conscious of being in the body and that my soul was looking through the brain.

"There was no pain in this experience, and it was very pleasant. I would have much enjoyed remaining in this condition, as I told Mr. S. at the time.

"To test this sensation I took hold of the bed clothes, bunched them up to see if the sensation of roughness was still to be noticed. I could notice this sensation of roughness a little, but the sensation of volume, *en masse*, as Mr. S. put it, was there without weight.

"The light I saw in my brain seemed to be alive or in motion, and it did not seem to make any difference whether my eyes were open or shut.

"Mr. S. took pains to see if my heart's action was all right. Also he noted the temperature of the body and could find nothing abnormal.

"A possible reason for this experience may have been because I have been thinking of late whether death was or would be painful, and possibly this experience was given me to show that it was without pain, for I could move any part of the body and not realize it. There was not the slightest pain in my singular experience.

"IDA M. SMEAD,
"W. M. SMEAD."

January 25th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. I (Mr. S.) put my hand on the planchette and Mrs. S. put her fingers on my hand. What follows was written.

"(Go on. All is ready.) Mamma [?] [letters resemble 'Muninu', followed by scrawls as if practising first making symbols like letter 'e', then 'm' or 'n', followed by signs like '1'.] S. Smead. Satellun [?] Smead. * * ['Seulenem' ?] Smead, Smead. J. [This ended the experiment. The usual way was then tried.]

[If the first word is 'Mamma' it is the first time that I have seen it written with the three 'm's' in this record. J. H. H.]

(Go on.) [Then an attempt to draw the musical staff followed with also a drawing of a cat, ending in the same stroke with the words:—] pretty kitty Cat. (Go on.) Yes, Tell George, good boy, sing pretty cat for me. (What do you mean? You mean pussy cat.) Pretty kat. I used to sing that a long time ago. aunt Edie told me. (Aunt Edie?) Yes.

[Mrs. S. then recognized what he meant and she sang it for him. Then she said, was that it?] Yes. (Go on, dear Cecil.) Tell it to little George so he can sing it to me, mama. [During most of this Mrs. S.'s hand was on the planchette alone.] (Shall I put my hand on now?) Yes. (Anything else dear?) Yes, papa, let mama Sing it sometime to you. I always liked to hear [here] her sing." [Sitting then closed.]

The incident of the song explains itself. The letter 'S' before Smead does not indicate what was meant, as the boy's name was 'John Cecil'.

The exact date of the following incident is not determinable, but it certainly occurred between the dates of January 25th and February 21st, as it occurred after the birth of the child Nettie and before sittings were resumed. I give it in the language of Mrs. S.

"I was lying on the lounge in the sitting-room at P——. I had my eyes shut resting when everything seemed dark and this word (Stilenburgen) seemed to come out of the darkness written, beginning at the floor and written upwards towards the ceiling, one letter at a time. I watched the letters form and I thought that some one was going to write a message, but Mr. S. walked in between and most of the letters went away. The letters were perfect and of a bright golden color. I was not able to tell what the completed word was until about a month afterwards in a dream. I saw four young men, and one was Mr. Stilenburgen. I was introduced to him in the dream."

Mr. and Mrs. S. can attach no meaning to this name. It recalls no memories and suggests nothing more to them than it would to any one having a similar experience.

February 21st, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Hands of both persons on the planchette. First sitting held since the confinement of Mrs. S. She seemed strong and in as good a nervous

condition as before her illness. While our hands were on the planchette Mrs. S. was reading a story. No writing while she read.

"(All ready. It has been nearly a month since we have had a sitting. Whoever is present may use the instrument if they wish.) [We hoped Cecil might write and tell us how much he liked his new sister.]

[Scrawls followed by letter 'h' made clearly *eight* times in succession. Then followed loop scrawls for four lines, the first line being somewhat like the letter 'l' in most of it and the other three like a series of constant 'm's' except for the loop. Then came some illegible letters followed by the letter 'h' made *five* times in succession. This was interrupted only by the remark "Go on", made by Mr. S. Then came:]

RllllRhhhhhh Rhhhhhhh, (R. H.?) yes. (You will be all right soon.) yes. lllllll ololobbbbbb Rh bbbRhhlolbh httttt. yyyyyyyyyy llll [scrawls] ssssstttt [scrawls, possibly intended for letter 'e'.] oooooooo... Rhrrrr ['r's' not clear.] hrrr ['r's' not clear.] rrrrr. Mrshhh Rhhhhhhh h [scrawls, possibly intended for letter 'e'.]

(I think I understand who you are.) yes, tell it to him, you know. (Who?) my son. (Write your password.) hyslop. (Will you not try to write your password?) [scrawls, followed by apparent attempt at some illegible words and letters.] Then:— hhhhhhhh * * [letters undec., but probably 'obetbort'.] hyslop remember. (Is that all? Have you written your password?) remember-mbem [scrawls.] [Sitting came to a close interrupted by a caller.]

This sitting is chiefly interesting as showing a strange apparent inability to write words though the letters are usually remarkably clear. Mrs. S., of course, knew the name of my father perfectly well and had written it before clearly enough. The use of the phrase "my son" is interesting as the one often used in the Piper communications, but it is possible that Mrs. S. may have noticed it either in magazine articles or my Report. But I can hardly suggest the same explanation for the word "remember" which is the word that has preceded father's reminder in the Piper case of his intention to give that password, and neither expression has ever been made public, though I may myself have indicated as much to Mrs. S. during her visit in New York last year. I have mentioned this word to several while leaving out

the password when telling the message that came through Mrs. Piper at that time. But I do not recall even mentioning so much to Mrs. S. as to the nature of the message, though I did at a later time mention it to Mr. S., without indicating anything about the password. It is interesting on any theory that this coincidence should occur.

March 3rd, 1902. Afternoon. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Hands of both on the planchette. We wish to hear from Cecil.

"(All right. Go on.) my ysvester * * (Write it plainer please.) mrs [?] mrslester [?] (I cannot tell yet. Write it for me again. Who is it?) Mrs. Fssves TeR... [scrawls.] (I didn't get that last name.) SYSVES. [period inserted.] TER. [period inserted.] (Will you excuse me. I cannot read it. Will you not try and print it for me?) Mrs. TYSVESTER. (Was it Mrs. Sylvester?) no. (Who is it then?) Rlll [?] [possibly 'Pill']. Mrs. Mrs. (I cannot understand it. Is it my brother Sylvester writing? It seems like Mrs. Sylvester.) no, he is not. [scrawls.] (Who is it. Please print it.) Mrs. TrsSIESIER [?] * * [Letter 'T' in several cases might possibly be 'P'.]

[I tried to get some clearer idea of who was meant by asking her to make the letters one by one, but she could not do much at it. I asked her to make the letter next to the letter that looks like 'F' in the corner of the sheet, and instead of doing as I asked the writer wrote 'S yes' and then went to the original letter and carefully made it over (superposing it upon the original). I then tried again to get her to print the letter 'r' in the corner of the sheet, and at each of the three trials wrote 'are', 'ar', and 'ah'. So I was sure that the last letter was meant for 'r' and dropped this method.]

(Is this name a German name? Were you a German? Did you live in Germany?) no. (I cannot make out anything with this name. Tell me about it please.) [scrawls.] (Go on. Write as you please.) nes al she ever did either. (I am very sorry, but I cannot understand it yet. I wish you would try to write so that I could understand it.) m [?] she ever did either. [This may be a possible reference to my asking if she ever lived in Germany.] Where * * yo... recall. (Will you write the word after 'where' again?) someother day. Good day all [?] [followed by letter 'l' or 's' made a number of times in succession, and then circular scrawls all over the sheet.] (Go on.) [scrawls over page.] (Go on.) [scrawls. These were written very rapidly and we could feel the force of the planchette operating. Finally the letters 'Mar' were distinctly written.] (Go on.) [more scrawls over page, con-

cluding with the name 'Mary' clearly written. The motions of the planchette were first reversed and then made to go up and down before the name was written.] (Go on.) [scrawls, and an unsuccessful attempt at a word. The letters might be 'Po'.] (Try and write the name plainly.) Pollard [or 'Ballard'.] (Write it again please.) [scrawls.] Bollard [or Ballard.] (You mean Pollard.) Yes. (Mary Pollard?) Yes. (Tell me all you can.) Somersworth, Connecticut. (Is that Connecticut?) Yes. (What is that word before Connecticut?) Soneres [erased, or Sonerd, probably intended for 'Somers'.] (Write it again.) no need, no need. (Please write over again.) read it. (You wrote 'no need', didn't you?) yes. (You mean Somersworth, Conn.) yes. (I do not think that there is any such place in Conn. as Somersworth.) yes sir. [I tried a telepathic test with Mrs. S. by mentally asking a question, uttering only the following words:] (Were you ——— or ——— which?) [No answer.] (Can you tell what my question was?) no. (Were you Miss or Mrs.?) The planchette then underlined the word 'no', and moved over to the incompletely written and uttered sentence and made what seems to be a period and came back and wrote:—] Miss. (Then it is Miss Mary Pollard?) yes. (Go on.) E. (Mary E. Pollard?) yes. (Miss Mary E. Pollard, Somersworth, Conn.?) yes. [then a line was drawn to the top of the sheet.] (What do you make that line for?) get your Geography. (Go on. Shall we stop now?) I taught School at one time. [I thought that the words 'at one time' stood for Andover, Conn. and I asked:—] (Was it Andover?) no, one time. (Go on.) you do not know it well yet [scrawls.] (Go on.) I am going now, you may find me, yes (Will you come again?) yes. (I will convey any message for you that you may desire.) Learn your LeSSon first. (All right.) Study it $\frac{3}{4}$ of an hour. (What was that last? I did not get it.) Three fourths of an hour. (All right. Go on. This is good, rich.) [No reply.] "

March 3rd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Hands of both on the planchette. We had no thoughts of the person who communicated this time. We had never received a communication from her more than to have her name written with other communicators. We both knew her very well and have often wondered why she never communicated since she had been dead a number of years. Still there were reasons that I cannot record here why she might not have wanted to communicate. The messages that follow explained to me why she had not written before. This reason I cannot see how I should have guessed.

[As "Miss Pollard" had communicated in the afternoon, I

wrote in the corner of the sheet we began with the sentence: "Miss Pollard, I looked up the place you referred to and there is no such place in Conn." I thought that probably Miss Pollard would remain to communicate more. I read this statement aloud and the planchette moved the pencil down the sheet to the left hand corner, then to the right hand corner and to the top right hand corner where it erased the sentence, and took the reverse course back to the upper left hand corner where it began the regular message.]

"She is not here, Willis. But your dear girl is. (Who is it, please?) [I said, It must be Rose.] you have guessed it. (All right. Go on, please.) It was Somers Ct. I knew her. (Did she give her name rightly as Mary E. Pollard?) She did. (She did?) yes. (Can you tell me something about her, Rose?) She was short, light brown hair, blue eyes. My mother knew her best. (Can you think of anything else about her, Rose?) her name is Pollard. (It is Pollard and not Bullard, is it?) yes. (Please tell me anything else you can, so that I can find it out.) Mr. Pollard I did not know. Mrs. Pollard I did not know. (Do you know their first names?) No. (Can you tell me anything about Miss Pollard?) No, She used to wear a grey dress.

[I said aloud: 'Now you can see, Ida, that this writing is by your subliminal, because you used to wear a grey dress and Rose knew that and you knew that Rose knew it, so now, when there is a message that pretends to be from Rose these facts are woven in about this dress by your subliminal.']

Miss Pollard wore one too, not like Ida's. [apostrophe inserted between 'a' and 's'.] (Go on. I think we saw Rose last when we were at B—— Conn.) Yes, I was there since you left B——. (Write what you please, Rose.) Mama is here. she is sorry [some] we had any misunderstanding, and so am I, are you? [interrogation point inserted.] (I do not understand it clearly. Won't you write it over?) She is sorry we had any misunderstanding and so am I, are you (Misunderstanding about what, Rose? What do you mean?) about several things. (What have I to do with it, Rose?) as much as Ida. (Is that Ida?) yes. (What do you mean, Rose?) no. (Go on, Rose. Explain.) I do not had too. [Last two words clearly 'had too', but possibly intended for 'have' or 'care to'.] If I say the [?] [erased.] about the time I came to visit you you'll know. (All right, Rose. I know now. What are you sorry about now?) I behaved so unl... [new line begun.] ladylike. (I forgive you Rose. You are not the only one who has done so.) But I knew better. (I knew what ailed you, Rose. I knew it all the time.) I thought I could not help it,

but I was honest in my thinking so.

[She had severe attacks of hysteria when on a visit to us in B—— Conn.]

(Do you want Ida to say something to you, Rose?) yes. (Mrs. S.: I have nothing to say. I do not know what to say.) [No reply.] (Do you wish to send some message, Rose?) yes, no. (Mrs. S.: Have you seen Mel. Covington since you died?) yes. (You may come again, Rose. I am very tired now. I must stop. Will you come again?) yes."

The name and incidents connected with this Miss "Mary E. Pollard" have some interest. There was some difficulty in ascertaining the existence of a lady by the name of Pollard answering to the facts mentioned, especially as there was no Somersworth in Connecticut. But as this was corrected finally to Somers there was a clue to suggest inquiries. Somers is some distance north of Bolton, Conn. On the ground of having once attended a ministers' association in Somers Mr. S. addressed a letter of inquiry to the minister in one of the churches there, though he had to assume both that there was a congregation of a certain sect there and was ignorant both of the name of the minister and as to the possible fact that there were other churches there. The inquiry brought the information which this minister transmits as follows: "I have made a number of inquiries and find the only Pollard family having ever lived here was a man and wife and a Miss Alice Pollard with them, a teacher. I cannot learn her whereabouts. Mrs. Ann Pollard, the wife, is in Southington, Ct."

Inquiry of this latter lady brought the following reply:

"Between ten and fifteen years ago, I was living in Somersville, Conn., and the description you give could very easily be applied to me, except that I was married, of course.

"I had charge of a graded school in the town and for a year or two (I think two years) my husband's sister, Mary Alice Pollard, taught in the primary room in the same school. The description you give would also fit her. I know of no Mary E. Pollard."

Mr. S. wrote to this lady again and explained that this alleged 'Mary E. Pollard' was known to the Rev. Candlin mentioned, referring also to Ruth Candlin without indicating the reason for

it, and asked, after indicating that 'Mary E.' might be a mistake for 'Mary A. Pollard', whether this latter was living or not. He received the following answer:

"Rev. Joseph Candlin is still in the New England Conference. At least he is preaching in Mass. yet, and was married last month.

"Miss M. Alice Pollard is evidently the person whom you seek. She was married, perhaps twelve years ago, to Albert Candlin, son of Rev. Joseph Candlin. Mrs. Ruth Candlin, the wife of the latter was one of our dear friends, and my sister and I visited her frequently before there was any marriage connection between us. Mr. Candlin is now teaching in Waltham, Mass., and Mrs. C. has two daughters. Rose Candlin died a good many years since. I am not sure of the date."

This lady then wrote to her sister and received from her the following reply which throws light upon one or two incidents. I quote only the relevant parts of the letter:

"The date of my marriage was Nov. 26th, 1891. I taught in Somerville (Mr. S. says Somerville and Somers are really the same town) from September '87 to May '88. I am sure of this date because the date in my engagement ring is Nov. 13, '87. Then the second time I taught in S. was from Sept., '90, to June, '91. I don't think I ever wore a gray dress there, tho I recall two browns, a garnet and a brighter red. You had at least one navy blue that I recall, a black and I think two gray ones. In that picture which we had taken with your pupils you had on that gray flannel that Flora Goss's cousin helped us to make in the spring of ninety."

In response to inquiries regarding the possible knowledge of Mrs. Smead regarding a Miss Pollard Mr. Smead says:

"Miss Rose Candlin visited us when we were in Bolton, Conn., some ten years ago. It is possible, though not certain, that at this time this brother, Albert Candlin, was courting this Miss Mary A. Pollard, and that this fact was known to Miss Rose Candlin and that she told Mrs. S. of it. In this way Mrs. S. might have heard about this Miss Pollard and that she was a teacher and that she lived at Somers. She has not the slightest recollection of anything like this. But it seems to me that I remember something of it. My remembrance of it may be due to what I have read in these letters (above) of Mrs. Pollard's. I

did not recall a thing until I heard from Mrs. Pollard. I am sure Mrs. S.'s memory is much better than mine. Still I state what seems to be possible."

It would appear from the record that the "communications" imply that 'Mary E. Pollard' is dead. If the reader will examine it closely, however, it will be apparent that this is not necessarily the case. It is rather the questions of Mr. S. that give this impression than the statements of the "communicator", except the answer 'yes' which might involve a misunderstanding of the question put. On any theory it is more probable that the "communicator" was trying to give the name of Mary A. Pollard with incidents connected with her. How far the "communications" were correct and how far false the reader can determine from the narrative. The possibility that Mrs. S. might have heard something of her prevents using the truth in the case as evidence of anything supernatural.

As to the 'dear girl incident' Mr. S. remarks: "This was one of her (Rose Candlin's) jokes. When I was away at school Mrs. S. and Rose were alone and just about the time I was expected home from the Seminary at the end of the week, she would say to Mrs. S.: 'Better hurry up and get your dress changed. Willis will be coming, and he'll want to see his dear girls looking nice.' She kept this up until Mrs. S. got so sick of it that she could not bear her around. She had the hysterics before she came to visit us. We did not know this when we invited her to visit us. The cause of them at our house was that she was nervously excited planning to take an examination to teach school at Bolton, Conn. She was worried, and the first we knew she was rattling off Latin verbs as fast as her tongue could form them, and the hysterics would follow. They continued for weeks and we had to employ a physician. Finally she left us and boarded elsewhere."

March 5th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used by both parties. Mrs. S. conscious but very liable to enter the unconscious condition. We wished to hear from our boy Cecil. Time of sitting 7 p. m.

"(All right. We are all ready now.) Cecil, Rubena, Maude, Ruth, Carie Smead. [I said mentally, 'What is Carrie'? I supposed that the word 'Calvin' was 'Carrie', when the intelligence went back and wrote:—'yes, Calvin', and then the planchette moved the pencil up to the word which I had read 'Carrie'.] (Who is Ruth?) Willis * * George Smead, George Lowrey, George D. Lowrey. (Is that letter 'D'?) D, yes. [The pencil in the planchette squeaked and I said that I was tired of the squeaking and tried several ways to fix it, but I did not succeed. I then said, I wonder what I can do with it.] yes sharpen it. [I did so.] (I have sharpened it. Go on.) yes, this is better * * more. [After writing the word 'better', the planchette moved the pencil upward and underlined the previously written words 'sharpen it' and went back to the original line and wrote the word 'more'.] (That is the best I can do with it. Go on.) It is all right now. * * * (It squeaks yet. I don't like this squeaking.) it is a good one, yes. [scrawls apparently to show that it would write easily.] (What is the matter with it?) When we push [?] your hand holds. I then changed the pencils. (Go on please. We will try this one.) Sister did it. Gertie * * [undec.] Gillett, Gillitt ['i' dotted and 't's' crossed] lest [?] [possibly 'best'.] (Go on.) Gertie Gillitte ['t's' crossed and last 'i' dotted.] (Gillette?) Yes. (Was that Gertie Gillett?) Yes, Jessie [Planchette here moved the pencil up and drew line through 'Gillitte'.] Gillett. ['t's' crossed and 'e' dotted for an 'i'.] yes. (Go on please.) I am your friend. You knew me once. (I don't remember you. Where did I know you and how about it. Tell please.) Gillettes ['t's' crossed and apparently the 'e' dotted for an 'i'.] of your first Charge Waterbury. (Go on, please. You are doing just what I want you to do.) we lived on the hill when you called. (I think I begin to recollect you. Was not your father a man that used to drink liquors? Am I not right?) he did as he pleased about it. (I remember about the hill. I think I recollect him. I cannot remember your sisters very well. Tell me more.) there were five of us and father and mother. Mabel to [too] Mabel. [planchette moved pencil as if to begin a new line and apparently made a period.] (All right. Who was Mabel?) sister. (Go on, please.) Father was poor in your worldly goods and some people [scrawls.] liked to tell o [erased.] us of it. I was proud and did not like it. (I remember that, yes, I recollect. Go on.) [I knew they were poor, but not that they were proud.] good, mama was sick most all the time, so was baby. you came when he was sick once. (What was the matter with him?) [This question was not recorded, but I remember that I asked it, I think mentally, but will not be sure.] Diphtheria. (You have made a mistake. I never called upon a case of diphtheria in Waterbury. The Board of Health would not allow it) most it. (Will you tell me baby's name?) Johnnie. (Johnnie?) yes.

(All right. Go on. Have you any message you wish to send?) no. Can you ever go there again? (Yes, sometime.) *To live.* [underlined several times.] (I cannot read it.) *To Live.* (Do you want to know if ever I will go there to live?) yes. (Probably not. I shall go there on a visit sometime.) Why not to live?

(I will tell you. I am now a member of the _____ and I shall not live again in Waterbury, Conn., because I shall not be appointed there as a pastor. I may go there by and by on a visit.)

Go when. (I do not know when. I will sometime, no doubt.) Let well enough alone. (What did you write? 'Let well enough alone?') yes. (Why did you write that?) She has gone. I wrote it. T. H. (Who wrote that last? What do the initials stand for?) T. H. ['H' erased.] H [clearly written.] Good night."

Mr. Smead made the following notes on this sitting at the time, dividing them into two sections, one pertaining to what Mrs. Smead knew and did not know, and the other his own knowledge of the case.

"It was possible that Mrs. S. knew that there was a Gillett family in Waterbury that were poor, and that I helped them one winter from the poor fund that I had at my disposal.

"She did not know that the father was a drinking man, and she never knew the names of the girls. She never called there. She never knew that their baby was sick. It was one of the many incidents that I met with in my pastoral visits in that city, and I am very sure that I did not mention this little detail to her, because I never did tell her such minor matters. I usually told her that I was going out calling and that I had made so and so many calls. That was about all I ever said to her about my pastoral calls. These Gilletts were people much below the average in mentality and social position. The father drank when he pleased, and I am sure that Mrs. S. was never interested in them. She did not even know where they lived in that city, just as she did not know where many other families lived that I used to call upon in my professional duties as minister in that city.

"She never knew that the disease which the baby was said to have had was diphtheria, because I never knew it and do not know it now. Still it might have had what the father and mother called diphtheria which would be a false form of the disease.

"As to myself, I knew that there was a Gillett family there.

I think I helped the father one winter. I remember his calling at the parsonage and my giving him an order on a grocer for supplies. Mrs. S. was not in the room. I was alone. I remember calling at their home. I remember the fact that the husband drank some. I recall that the family was peculiar, cranky about the church. I think they were on probation, that is, the father was. I cannot recall that any others of the family were. I may have known the names of these sisters. I cannot recall them. I think I remember calling once when the child was ill. I never knew that the disease was diphtheria, or that they thought so. I remember that there were some daughters. I may have known the name Mabel Gillette, at least possibly so."

The initials 'T. H.' represent an interesting incident in this sitting. The reader may recall that when "Sylvester" was asked who "Thomas Henry" was, and who had given the initials 'T. H.', replied "me", indicating that "Thomas Henry" was assumed to conceal his own identity. The circumstance that the initials appear in this sitting in the way that they do seems to indicate that "Sylvester" is playing the part of the trance personalities in the Piper case, and no surface indication of the fact appears.

March 6th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used by both parties. Mrs. S. conscious and very tired. Did not expect good results, but thought that possibly the Gillett girls might wish to supplement what they gave us at the previous sitting.

"(All right.) I am here now. (Who is it?) George Smead. (Who is George Smead?) * * * * my home is at his [?] mother's [?]

[An interruption was occasioned by the necessity of attention to the child by Mrs. S.]

(You may go on now.) * * * * (Go on.) Rebecca. (Who is Rebecca?) Stime [?] Stimes [?] Stiryes [?] Stimes. (Write it so I can read it.) Steimes, Steimes ['i' dotted.] (I get it as Rebecca Stimes. Is that right?) Stimes ['i' dotted, 't' crossed and word clearly written.] yes, yes, yes. (Who are you? We do not know you. We never knew you.) * * * * Stilliam [?] (I cannot read that. Write plainly please.) * * * *

Shums [?] leder Shimes [?] Elder Stillinn. [?] * * * (All I can read is 'Elder'. Write it plainly.) Yes, Elder Stilliams [?] Elder Stilliamess Chellerliubb [?] (I cannot read it yet. Try and tell me about yourself, please.) * * * Alehha Ikktkster [?] (I wish that you would write clearer. Perhaps you can make Hebrew letters.) Ahkalleheldlines. (All right. Please write more Jewish very carefully.) * * * (Well, what do you want to-night?) * * * Ahleld [?] Ahkhd [?] Ches [?] (Well, please write what you want. Cannot you write in Hebrew characters like these?) [I made a few from memory to let her see what I meant.] [Attempts at something like it, but nothing clear.] (There is no Hebrew to that, Rebecca.) [scrawls all over the sheet.] (Mrs. S.: The school Marm is back.) [She meant Miss Pollard by this.] My dear friends, I hope you are * * * (Some of it I cannot read. Write it for me.) * * * you better help [?] * * *

This sitting requires no notes, but explains itself. The personality represents no one in the memory of the sitters so far as recollection goes, and I think the advocate of any theory regarding it would say that it is probable that the name has not been gotten correctly. The amount of undecipherable matter apparently would indicate this fact.

April 24th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S., Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Smead, and Helen Smead. Planchette work. Mrs. S. fully conscious.

"(Go on. We are all ready.) [The planchette made some loops to the center of the sheet of paper whence it moved off the edge again and returned to the center making the loops, and continued to do this until it had a figure with what may be called a spider's web with nine "spokes" and a set of circles for the center.] (Go on. What do you mean?) [scrawls.] George where. (Please repeat what you did.) where is. (I don't understand it.) Where is George, Let [Get] George, George, papa. [Circular scrawls interpreted for kisses for George. Then letter 's' written a number of times and circular scrawls drawn again and interpreted for kisses for his grandmother, as a very scrawly 'Grammie' was written, the first two letters being quite clear.] Get George, papa. (Brother George is up-stairs asleep. I cannot wake him up.) Get him, papa. (I cannot get him. He is up-stairs asleep. Don't you understand?) Where? (Up-stairs

asleep.) He has to help us. (Cecil, George is in Helen's room asleep on her bed.) Why that is my place, papa.

[This is true. He used to sleep there always when we visited my father's. George used to sleep in our room on a lounge. This time he was put in Helen's room on the bed where Cecil used always to sleep.]

(All right. Go on.) Yes, papa, yes. (Go on.) I want George, papa. (You must not ask me to wake him up, Cecil.) [Circles drawn again to show that he wanted to kiss George.] (Go on.) [Page of scrawls.] Gla [Sla] Gramie Cl * * ra Gramie. [Circles for kisses.] Grannie. (Go on.) Grandpa, *ho* [underlined several times.] *ho*. [Circles for kisses.] me [?] me [?] not you * * papa. [Circles were then drawn at different points on the paper representing the various positions of the persons present and kisses for each. Then was written:—] Going to he brother. [Circles drawn. Then scrawls like attempt at letters terminated by circles again.] hunt [?] [possibly intended for 'want'.] Helen. [Evidently Cecil changed his mind, for he then wrote:—] Get George [circles drawn.] want brother. [Planchette then went to the spot where the circles had just been made and superposed more circles over the first set.]

(Go on.) Grandpa place. [Planchette then went back and drew circles before the word 'Grandpa'. Then it went down to the left hand corner of the sheet, drew circles and wrote 'Gramie', and drew circles again over the first set. Circles were drawn to indicate the position of each person present.]

[Mr. S. says: "My mother, 'Gramie' was sitting a little to one side of the table and as I saw that he meant for her to have a part in this I said something like this: 'Shall Gramie move up to the table?'".]

Yes, we must have Gramie a place here. (What did you write, a 'piece'?) no, place, yes.

[My mother then moved her chair up to the table. Cecil now made circles in the corner of the sheet to indicate that he wanted to kiss Gramie.]

Gramie place. [?] [possibly 'specs'.] (That is 'Grammie's place'?) [The planchette moved the pencil to a point above 'm' in 'Gramie' and apparently drew some circles, then moved down to the bottom of the sheet near the left hand corner and rewrote:—I Gramie's * * [possibly intended for 'specs'.] (Grammie's specs'?) Yes, put them here. [I got them and put them on the table.] on here. [Meaning on the planchette. We put them on it.] (Go on. All right Cecil.) *ho*, Grandpa. [Circles drawn over letters 'ra' in word 'Grandpa'. Then pencil moved to bottom of sheet and more circles drawn and words 'Gramie's place' written after them.] " Sitting then abruptly closed.

Mrs. S. reports the following incident as having taken place on the date of May 12th. Mr. S. verifies her account of it. The narrative, of course, followed the discovery of the facts which seem to make the coincidence.

'May 12th, 1902. Mr. Smead had gone to K—— with Mr. B. of this town (W——, N. H.). I was alone with the children George and Nettie. I was willing that George should go to the next house to play with the little boys and I told him to come home at 11.30 a. m. I was very busy so did not call him, thinking that he was all right and having a good time when I was very, very much surprised at about 12 n. to hear our little boy Cecil that had left us last August say to me: 'Mama, you had better have George come home from there. He'll be getting killed.' I was so surprised to find, after hearing his voice utter these words when I turned and did not find him in the room, that I thought I would go and call him home. He came in about three minutes afterwards saying, 'he guessed he would not go over to Paul's again'. I asked him what the trouble was and he told me that they were up in a buggy, that is, Paul, George and Oliver, when Oliver pushed him and tried to throw him out of the buggy, and that to keep himself from falling he had caught hold of the tree and when he was getting down from the buggy this boy pushed him under. I was very much shocked when I turned to look at him to see a black and blue spot about one and a half inches long and very much swollen over the right eye. The skin was broken in small places, and so to prevent it from breaking any more I used vaseline, and then told him that he could not go over there to play again unless I went with him. He wanted to know why, so I told him that Cecil had said he would get killed if he was not more careful. As soon as Mr. S. came home I told him of what had occurred."

May 15th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. *Pencil* used instead of planchette. Mrs. S. in a semi-conscious state. Very much force shown. Very marked evidence of personality present. Sitting began at 8.30 p. m.

The writing consists almost entirely of *wavy scrawls* precisely of the type which marked the sittings in New York (pp. 312-335).

when the same personality was present. There are fifteen pages of writing and scrawls. The only clearly evident names given are "Hyslop" given several times, "Robert" given once, possibly "James" once or twice, and apparently the words 'try', 'yes', and 'no'. It is probable that many of the wavy characters, if they had been decipherable would have turned out to be the names "Robert" and "Hyslop". Possibly other words were concealed in the same way.

"After I (Mr. S.) stopped the writing the hand kept on moving. Finally Mrs. S. came out of her condition all right. No pain or discomfort accompanied the writing and she felt all right the next morning. She expressed a willingness to enter the trance state provided a decent control could direct things. No suggestion was given Mrs. S. as to the possible communicator, and she did not know until I told her who attempted to communicate. Mrs. S. when she came out of the trance had the impression: 'Tell James I came here.'"

[It is a mere coincidence that I wrote a letter to Mr. S. from Ohio that evening about 9.30 p. m. Eastern time 10.30. J. H. H.]

May 16th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. *Pencil work.* No transcript made, as there were only a few scrawls of the wavy sort written. The first sheet contains a slightly wavy 'M', and an undecipherable word which might be an attempt at 'remember', then nothing but scrawls. The next sheet contains much more wavy lines, but more legible words. They are 'yes', 'you', and 'J. Hyslop'. These are followed by mere scrawls.

Mr. S. writes in his note: "I suggested that if the writing was very hard that the communicator stop and try to understand the medium better and then come next Wednesday week at 8.30. The communicator accepted my suggestion and after trying about five minutes the pencil dropped and Mrs. S. came to full consciousness. She had been about half conscious before."

May 21st, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. *Pencil work.* No transcript made either of the questions or record, as the latter

represents the same communicator as before with the same wavy style of writing. Apparently no questions were asked, as there is no indication of it.

[Scrawls in shape of letter 'm'.] Hyslop Robert, yes. [Then apparently 'yes' written a number of times on the next three sheets.] (Go on and write. You can.) [scrawls.] hard. [scrawls. and possibly an attempt at 'remember', as the word looks like 'remember' which has been written several times in the history of the case.] yes. (I will tell James.) my son. yes, he is my son. [evidently decipherable only by following the pencil at the time.] [scrawls.] (I will tell James.) yes, will remember me. [scrawls.] (Is there another spirit present besides Mr. Hyslop?) [No reply.]

May 24th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. *Pencil work.*
Mrs. S. in a condition to enter the trance and willing to do so.

[Wavy scrawls.] Robert Hyslop. [illegible scrawls.] (I can read the name.) good, Hyslop. [very scrawly.] [illegible scrawls on next three sheets and sitting closed.]

When I wrote the letter of the fifteenth of May I did not know that I would have an opportunity to visit the Smeads and have some experiments. But on my arrival home in New York I found that sittings had been arranged for me with Mrs. Piper and so I resolved to try Mrs. Smead first and see what might occur at the sittings of Mrs. Piper in consequence. I also learned in connection with the appointment for sittings with Mrs. Piper that Dr. Hodgson was to have a sitting himself with Mrs. Piper on May 28. Hence I wrote Mr. Smead that I would visit them for experiments and without indicating anything about my special object which was to try and repeat the experiments tried when Mrs. Smead was in New York (p. 335). I gave Dr. Hodgson no information whatever in regard to my whereabouts and plans. I simply disappeared from his knowledge, and also gave no hint to either Mr. or Mrs. Smead as to my plan farther than to prearrange for a sitting on May 28th between 10 a. m. and 12 m., and also to have an experiment the evening before, soon after my arrival in the place. At this first sitting nothing occurred that requires a

detailed account. There was not one clearly legible word in it. There were only the usual wavy scrawls which have always characterized the pencil writing when my father purported to be present. I therefore brought the sitting to a close in half an hour.

The next day, the 28th, we sat down at the appointed hour. Mr. S. had surmised the object of my sitting, but Mrs. S. knew nothing about it unless we suppose that she too had conjectured it and said nothing of her supposition. She soon went into a trance, as she had done the previous day.

The first sheet of attempted writing contained nothing but fine wavy scrawls. The second began with the same and ended with a fairly clear 'mary'. This was in response to the question, 'Who is here'? Scrawls continued until I asked if the communicator had tried before and 'yes' was written, but could be read only by watching the pencil and soon as it was written it was covered up with a wavy scrawling of the pencil. Noticing that there would probably be no clear writing from the alleged communicator, Mary, I asked if my father was there and could not read the reply. I repeated my question and received the answer 'yes' which was read only by watching the movement of the pencil. I then asked if he could take a message to the other "light", and received a fairly clear 'yes' for answer. I gave the two words that I wanted delivered, repeated the message, and said good-bye. The scrawling continued for some time amid requests to make the letters larger and statements that I could not read it, until I asked, 'What is the trouble'? and received the answer read clearly enough at the time, 'we are here'. This was followed by nothing but very confused scrawls, and I closed the sitting.

The writing was accompanied by constant trembling of the hand which gave the wavy lines. I noticed as Mrs. S. began to go into the trance her head trembled, but her right hand remained perfectly calm for some time, though her left hand shook slightly. After a while the right hand also began to tremble, and continued to do so during the whole sitting. As Mrs. S. came out of the trance she began to cry, but soon recovered her equanimity.

The sitting closed at about 10 minutes of 11, and in a few minutes Mr. S. and myself resolved to take a little walk. Mrs. S. had complained of feeling sleepy after coming out of the trance. I

told her that this would soon wear off, and Mr. S. and I started for our walk. This was about 5 minutes after 11. Mrs. S. still felt sleepy and her hand began to tremble. As we had gone out she sat down and took a pencil to try writing alone. The following is the results.

[Scrawls.] Biter Swst [?] [scrawls.] yes. [lines of 'yes' regular and clear. Wavy scrawls followed, then possibly an incomplete attempt at 'we here'.] yes. [scrawls.] * * B [?] * * [undec.] ts * * [scrawls.] we [?] will Hyslop [not clear.] Hyslop * * [nearly a page of wavy lines follow.] Hyslop, [scrawls.] yes. [scrawls.] Bitter Sweet. [Svat or Sveet.] * * * [followed by wavy lines and the writing stopped.] Mrs. S. felt no more sleepiness after this and her hand ceased to tremble. The writing occurred between 11.15 and 11.30.

The two words "Bitter Sweet" in connection with my father's name have considerable interest on any theory. I had been very careful not only not to tell Mrs. S. the object of my experiment, but also *not* to hint in the experiment that I wanted or expected a return message. The appearance of the words "Bitter Sweet" consequently shows possibly a conjecture either by the normal consciousness of Mrs. S. or by her subliminal that I expected a return message, and an apparent attempt to produce one subliminally. Mr. S. on his return recognized the pertinence of the words to J. G. Holland, but could not recall exactly what they referred to. Mrs. S. seemed not to know anything about them. If this is a fabrication of her secondary personality it is a most interesting result, especially as coming in connection with the name of my father, as I interpret the reference to Hyslop. I suppose my father never heard of the book "Bitter Sweet" by Mr. Holland, and he certainly never read it, as he never read any poetry in his life so far as I know. But it is possible for me to suppose that my father was trying to give his password, since there is a very remote resemblance between the words "Bitter Sweet" and the first two words of that pass sentence. This misunderstanding of the words might easily occur as the pass sentence is in a language that Mrs. S. does not know, and this fact has not been told her. But I cannot feel confident that any such attempt was made, as the evidence is too slight. I must concede the possibility that it is a subliminal result.

June 7th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Writing somewhat different from usual. Mrs. S. conscious.

"(Go on. All ready.) * * Get want [?] brother George papa where which we [?] [or 'me' ?] OA [?] (I cannot read it clearly.) yes, you can papa. (I cannot very well.) Get want * * [scrawl like old fashioned 's'.] George brother. (Did you write 'Get brother George', 'I want brother George'?) yes, papa. (Brother George is up-stairs asleep.) a dear good brother. I love little brother. (Go on, Clevie.) yes, tell little brother that I don't want him to fer... [line finished.] forget brother Cecil. (We will tell him Clevie. He won't forget you dear.) I love him just the same as [I] did. I can see him playing. [Circles drawn.] hug him for me papa. [Mrs. S. crying.] (I will Clevie. Go on.) We love him here. You love for me too, papa. (I will Clevie. Go on.) yes, he is a very good soul. do you know it papa. I will be glad when we can play together again.

(Well, Clevie, I want to make and keep him a good boy. He must mind me. If he don't I must punish him Clevie. Do you understand me, dear?) you don't have to hurt him. h [erased.] I didn't and he would mind me, papa, what I told him. [This was always so.] (I cannot read what you wrote after 'papa'.) what I told him. [Mrs. S. still in tears.] (Go on, dear. Cannot you say something to comfort mama. See her crying, Clevie.) yes."

June 13th, 1902. "I was very busy with matters at my desk. I had given my little boy George a small Jack knife to whittle with. He was sitting out in the kitchen whistling as he had done before several times. He had never been cut by his knife. It was not very sharp and was blunt on the end. He sat there whistling. Mrs. S. knew he was there and was not at all concerned about it. In fact, she told me where the knife was so that he might take it and whittle. Mrs. S. was in the parlor sitting on the lounge a little ways from the baby's crib, talking about some things that I was doing. What we were talking about had not the slightest connection with what was written or about the communicator Cecil. In fact, there was absolutely nothing to suggest the message or the communicator. While Mrs. S. was sitting there beside me she said: 'Look at my hand shake. I feel kind of funny'. I said, go at once and sit down at my desk and see if you will write anything. She laughed and said: 'There will not be anything written'. I said, never mind. Sit down and

see. She did so and the following was written. She used a pencil and was in a state of complete trance, knew nothing at all as to what was written until I told her when she awoke. The trance was of about five minutes' duration. She awoke all right and at once went about her household duties. I was not near her when she first entered the trance. I was at my desk at the other side of the room. Finally I thought that she had been there long enough and went over to see what was written, if anything. I found her completely entranced and the writing going on. I read it without difficulty and asked the questions given below."

[The writing was not distinct. It had the wavy appearance noticeable in the sittings in New York and when my father purported to be present. It began in mere wavy lines and scrawls. J. H. H.]

"[Wavy lines and scrawls, followed by an apparent attempt at a word which is illegible.] yes [scrawly.] we do not [?] want (Go on.) yes, what do you let brother have it for, papa?

[I knew that he meant the knife, so I went out into the kitchen and took the knife away. Then I went back.]

yes, [scrawls. interpreted as 'go' by Mr. S., but if this is correct it must have been read as traced by the pencil, as no evidence of the word exists in the original writing.] see brother. you mt [must] bee [be] careful of my little brother.

[Baby Nettie was crying. Mrs. S. was unconscious. I said: 'Let mother come to herself now, Cecil. She must take care of Nettie'.] not yet. (All right. Go on.) yes, we love her, little sister. come again, yes, Cecil John. [The last five words were written in a regular and clear manner without any of the wavy appearance of the previous writing, and especially the name 'Cecil John'. J. H. H.]

Mrs. S. reports the following apparition as occurring on June 18th (1902). I received the account on June 26th. J. H. H.

"I was sitting in the room getting Nettie to sleep when I saw a form of a little girl about three years old, blue eyes, very white skin, hair parted in the middle, tied with little light blue baby ribbons. She was dressed in a white dress. I at once thought of my husband's sister's little Ruth Smead, when the strains of the tune, 'Three cheers for the Red, White and Blue' came into my mind. I had not heard them since my visit to Hedding last summer with my children."

The incident in connection with which Mrs. S. had heard this

song of "Red, White and Blue" was a flag raising. Cecil was present on the occasion before his death. He helped sing the song with other children.

June 19th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Mrs. S. at first unconscious, but became conscious after a while.

"(Go on.) [scrawls, in which Mr. S. thought he detected the name 'Hyslop'.] [I talked a good deal while the writing was beginning.] Be still you trouble me. (All right, I will.) you understand me, do you. (Yes.) good. (Write your name.) not yet. (Go on.) [A few separate lines or scrawls as if trying to make separate letters. No more written.]

[Mrs. S. became conscious now and we got the planchette and used that to see if anything more would be written.]

[Scrawls.] You will me [?] Billy. . . . Smead meme [?] yes, doubt. (No, I do not doubt you Sylvester. Go on.) [Answer uncertain. Letters are evidently 'me doubt tis Billy', but probable meaning is either 'me doubt 'tis [?] Billy' or 'we doubt this Billy'. Then an uncertain word follows. The letters are 'Gethous' ending in scrawls for further letters.]

(Go on. I cannot see what you mean, Sylvester.) you doubt me it [?] you Billy. (I don't understand. Please explain.) your machine is no good. it is no good like [?] (It is the best one I have, Sylvester. I will try and make another one, so you can have it to work with.) no, we will try without without [?] it [?] (All right. Tell me all you can.) no."

[The writing with the pencil is a fine script and wavy. It began in illegible scrawls, a part of which Mr. S. deciphered as an attempt at the name 'Hyslop', and it might be an attempt at this, but it is better to regard it as illegible altogether. The writing with the planchette was not as good as it usually is with this instrument and also shows some variation from its usual form, but this may be due to the fact that the planchette was not the one that they had used before their removal to their present place of residence, the latter having been left at the home of Mr. Smead's father.]

The following sitting may have a coincidence worth noting. Some time after copying it I received the record in the Piper case for the years 1896 and 1897 in which the appearance of the Imperator group of trance personalities is marked by the mention of many persons of interest. This record marks the beginning of their control in this case. On Nov. 17th the name of Martin Luther is mentioned apparently as one of the group. It is in-

teresting in the present record to find the name Luther spelled out in capitals which is often the form of spelling proper names in the Piper case, and it is worth mention that no historic persons have hitherto had their names mentioned in the present case. It does not appear to be the result of suggestion in any respect.

June 25th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. 8.30 p. m. Mrs. S. conscious at first, but completely entranced at the end.

"(Go on.) [Wavy lines drawn across the sheet back and forth.] (There is no use of this.) yes. (Go on.) [Wavy lines continued and near bottom of sheet in second of described lines apparently the word 'remember' is written. Wavy lines continue until sheet is changed. Then:—] L U T H E R [written in capitals and though written with the pencil each letter is connected as when the writing was done with the planchette. Wavy line is then drawn to bottom of sheet and then upward and as the pencil started across to the right it apparently wrote 'yes' and passed into wavy scrawl, came back in a straight regular line and began an apparent attempt at some word or words which are illegible, and then passed into wavy lines again. The sheet was changed and the writing took the form of a more definite attempt to write words. The first is most probably 'PAPA', and then possibly 'your boy', followed by 'yes' and illegible attempts to make letters. The attempts are in heavy and wavy lines and show that the pencil could only be moved up and down. This continued for two pages and became a little less wavy toward the last and more like definite efforts to write legibly. Then on a third page it again degenerated into the double wavy lines with a possible attempt to write the name 'George', but this is too uncertain to entertain even the possibility without reluctance. The fourth page degenerated into a mere wavy line and the sitting closed.]

June 26th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil used. Mrs. S. fully conscious until just at the end when there was a brief period of total unconsciousness and then semi-consciousness. As soon as we were ready the hand began to tremble. Mrs. S. and I watched it work.

"Go on.) [Wavy scrawls for three lines.] (Go on.) you talk to f ['f' erased.] too fast. (All right, who are you?) why [?]

(I want to know. Go on.) [Wavy attempts at words that are illegible.] "

"Then the writing stopped and the pencil dropped from her hands. Mrs. S. came out of the trance and told me not to disturb her. She said she had the following vision.

"She saw a bright cross of the Greek form except that the arms were pointed. The cross was of yellow light and blue rays of light streamed from it like electric rays. Then it gradually changed into a bright star and soon disappeared. It appeared at an angle of about forty-five degrees and seemed to be at a great distance. No words were spoken, or forms seen with it."

The interesting incident of this vision is the fact that the cross is the symbol used by Imperator in the Piper sittings and it invariably stands for his personality when referred to. But I cannot attach any evidential importance to it here. Mrs. S. is aware of its use in the Piper phenomena and has been willing, perhaps more than willing, recently that this personality should take control. The only outside circumstance of interest is the fact that Imperator some time in April, I think near the first, indicated that it was his intention to examine this case for future mediumistic work if it were possible to develop this condition suitably for the purpose. It is also noteworthy that Sylvester in the sitting of June 19th apparently expresses the conviction, perhaps the regret that his brother, Mr. Smead, seems to doubt him. Whether anything but secondary personality will issue from this situation it will be interesting to observe.

June 27th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil Work. The usual trembling in the right hand was noticed, but in addition I noted that the left hand and her head also shook. I was a little alarmed at this and said: 'I think that if you cannot use her without this shaking, you had better stop and let her come out of the trance'. The reply was "no".

[I cannot find a certain trace of this "no" in the original record and hence must suppose that Mr. S. read it from the tracing of the pencil in the midst of what appears as mere scrawls. J. H. H.]

"[Scrawls.] yes. * * [evident attempt at some word or words, but the letters are too wavy to decipher.] w w are [?] we are. (Well, do not disturb her. Take it quietly.) we are we are. (All right. Go on.) [Wavy lines on the next four sheets except at close where they became regular, but without any tendency to represent letters.] (Try now to write.) [No reply.] (Drop pencil if done and let her come to now.) [No reply.]"

[Mrs. S. remarked after she came out of the trance that she felt as if Sylvester was present. Experiment lasted only about half an hour.]

June 28th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work for a part of the time at first when the planchette was tried and then dropped for the pencil. Sitting began at 8.30 p. m. Mrs. S. reading the *Cosmopolitan*.

"(We are all ready. You may write.) [Scrawls and evidently nothing but tapping of pencil on paper. Mr. S. says: 'I waited a long time, some fifteen minutes and then I got the planchette. Mrs. S. was conscious all this while'.]

(Go on.) Yes, put this away. [The planchette was then removed and the pencil resumed.] [All right. Go on.) Regular scrawls in the form of fine loops and curves ending in the following wavy words:—] we don't want it. (All right. That is good. I can read that.) [Regular scrawls again ending in a wavy attempt to write a word which might be "rember". Then scrawls and wavy letters again, but illegible and finally a wavy "yes" followed by some illegible word. This last Mr. S. interpreted as an assent to the removal of his hand from the paper which the movements of the pencil toward it seemed to deprecate.]

(Go on.) [Wavy line and then written in clear regular hand:—] Smead, Yes, Cecil John Smead, Yes, Papa, My mama, George. (All right. That is good. Go on.) [Hand trembled again and wrote only scrawls, which possibly might be "we let m . . ." Sitting then closed.]

Mrs. S. said that her hand seemed to be all light, as if a semi-circle of bright light surrounded it.

Mrs. Smead reports the following experience which may have some interest in the final interpretation of her case. The account was not sent to me until much later than the date of its occurrence. I received it on July 17th. This was after I had informed Mr. and Mrs. Smead that Imperator had expressed his intention

to experiment with Mrs. S. The experience, however, seems to have occurred before I gave this information and to have been written down afterward. The coincidence was not observed by Mr. and Mrs. S. until I told them of what was possible.

"June 29th, 1902. Mr. Smead after the meeting at our church did not come right home, but went to one of the other churches (Universalist), and so did not return until about 9 p. m., and I was writing. He wanted to know if I would not take the pencil and see if anything would [be] written. I told him I did not want to, for Imperator did not like to have Mrs. Piper write on Sunday, and if he was around would not like to have us do so, and I do not believe there would be anything written, and so we did not try.

"But after we had retired and Mr. S. was asleep I was praying and my prayer was in substance that if it was right that this work continue that I should know it and it seemed as if my soul was almost taken from my body, and I saw the faces of many people. Some were better looking than others, while some seemed very much hurt at being sent away. For while I watched them I was impressed with the idea that they were some that had or had tried to write through my hand, and then immediately upon their departure others came. I could not tell who they were, but was in some way made to know that there was to be a new control, and that it was in some way connected with Imperator, and was told that it was all right. 'It is all right. We will not hurt you'. After that I thanked God for his goodness and kindness to me, and said I was willing to do anything that God wanted that I should do to know and believe. In the morning I told Mr. S. of my experience of the night. He said it was all nonsense, that Imperator was not here. I still felt it was so, but said nothing more of it."

Mr. S. writes: "I certify that Mrs. S. related this experience to me the next morning and that Sunday night June 29th she referred to Imperator as not working on Sundays."

June 30th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil Work. Mrs. S. fully conscious at first. There was no intention to hold a sitting. Mrs. S. was intending to write a letter to her sister. I

said, 'keep still and see if you will write anything spiritistic'. She did so. In less than a minute the writing began. Mrs. S. was fully conscious and watched it with great interest. The record will indicate when she became entranced.

"(All right. You may write if you can. Mrs. S. will wait.) Yes, we are trying trying * * we cannot get it [?] when he want toys papa. [The word 'toy' was first written and the pencil went back to the left side of the sheet to begin another word, but returned to where it had left off and wrote the letter 's' after 'toy' making it 'toys'. Written in wavy style.] [Not a word had been said about toys.] (I cannot see what you mean, Cecil, repeat it, dear.) we do not [?] get toys. why don't you get [sheet changed] get them papa, please. [Written in wavy style.] (What do you mean?) [scrawl.] I told you. [writing clearer and more regular. Mrs. S. here became entranced.] (What?) toys papa. [wavy style again.] (What toys?) * * [some illegible word erased.] m... books to [?] [too] [scrawls.] (Books?) no [?] [only last two letters legible.] (What is it? Papa doesn't know.) No reply." Mrs. S. soon came to consciousness.

Mrs. S. became entranced in a very singular way. She was fully conscious, watching the writing and reading of the answers when at once she shivered and became totally entranced. She never did so before. I cannot convey how this was. Let me say that one minute she was watching the writing, the next she was completely unconscious. Mrs. S. says that it seemed to her as if she had taken hold of a battery which sent cold chills through her.

July 2nd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Head and left hand shook, Mrs. S. herself calling attention to it. Then the right began to shake. Her eyelids worked slowly.

A wavy line marked the beginning of the writing and then some illegible word was attempted, followed by a scrawl and the sitting closed.

July 3rd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil used. Practically two sittings with an interval of a few minutes between

them. Mrs. S. was not unconscious in the first sitting. She seemed to be under the influence of an anæsthetic as she described it. She had no knowledge of what was written. Her head was turned away from it.

Before the sitting we received a letter from Dr. Hyslop stating that Emperor was trying experiments with Mrs. S. Mrs. S. was much pleased and somewhat excited. We got Cecil's box and placed it on the table opposite Mrs. S. Mrs. S. was greatly impressed by the news that Emperor was trying to use her.

"(All ready now. We are glad that 'Emperor' has been trying experiments with Mrs. S. We are glad to welcome him. We feel and know that we can trust him.) [Mrs. S. opened Cecil's box and took out several of his things and placed them on the table. I did not touch them.] (All right.)

[Mrs. S. was very nervous. She saw a small face on the table spread. Her hand began to shake. My impressions were that she would not be able to write she was so nervous and impressed. She appeared to be in the trance state. I thought her unconscious, but she was not wholly so, but in a state of numbness, hands and feet numb. Both hands and head shook some, but not violently.]

[Wavy line first drawn.] dear [?] papa we come. we wellcome us [?] [scrawl.] (Was it 'papa, we come'?) [scrawl.] yes. [scrawl.] (Was it 'we will leave'?) no. [Probably read by tracing the pencil, but not legible now.] (What was it then?) [No reply but scrawl.] (Go on. Write what you want to.) we are getting controll. [Wavy style and very indistinct. Must have been read by tracing pencil. Interpretation recognizable after once made.]

(Is it 'we are trying'?) getting. [fairly clear but wavy.] (Is that word 'control'?) yes. [scrawly.] [Hand shook violently and whole body shook for five minutes.] (Go on.) Yes. [scrawl, but apparent attempt at word.] (Do not keep her too long tonight. We will try tomorrow night.) [No reply.] (Are we going to stop now?) [No reply. Mrs. S. became normal.]

[When Mrs. S. came out of this semi-trance she said that she was not at any time wholly unconscious, but felt as if she had been taking an anæsthetic. Her hands, feet and whole body were numb. She said that she could not move her arm or her head. Yet the control gently lifted her head up a little and rolled her arm out from under her head. I saw this and wondered at it. The head was raised a little and the arm on which her head was resting was rolled from under her head. She was soon normal after this.]

There was an interval of about five minutes during which Mrs.

S. was talking with me about what was written. I noticed that her hand began to tremble. She said that she felt queerly. I put the pencil in her hand and told her to rest her head on her pillow again. She did so. At once the writing began.

(All right.) when youu [last word apparently erased.] when you write Hyslop mrs [possibly 'mr'.] a going to do it. Hyslop.

(I think that she ought to rest now. We will sit tomorrow night. Drop the pencil if you are through.) [The pencil dropped and Mrs. S. gradually came to full consciousness and was not in the least disturbed by her experiences.]

July 4th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. 8.30 p. m. During period of first attempt Mrs. S. apparently became entranced. No writing accomplished. But Mr. S. makes the following notes.

"Fireworks disturbed Mrs. S. slightly. Writing begins at 8.40. No trembling of the hand, but very slow and deliberate. Writing seems to stop, hand shakes a little and then writing begins again. Then stops and I fix pencil. It dropped to its old position and the writing stopped again. Mrs. S. twitched a little and was quiet. Her breathing was regular. She then opened her eyes and said some one was crying. She said she had been asleep and this was apparently the fact. She became conscious at 8.45. After a brief rest another trial was made but with no results."

July 5th, 1902. Mrs. S. reports the following experience on this date which has much interest as a subliminal phenomenon. It illustrates very clearly the connection which has to be established between the subliminal and supraliminal in order to secure the emergence of any influences that may enter the subliminal or arise from it. For this reason it has some importance in the study of spiritistic messages. Written out July 6th.

"Saturday a. m. 9.30. I had just finished making the bread, had covered the pan, and started to place it on the stove to rise. When I was about to go from the pantry into the kitchen it seemed almost as though some one repeated this verse to me: 'If the salt hath lost its savor wherewithal shall it be salted',

when instantly I remembered that I had forgotten the salt. I wondered what I should do, when it seemed as if some one said: 'Willis would tell you to let it alone and no one would know the difference. You said nothing about it'. But I knew I could not eat it. So I mixed the salt in and then set it to rise, and I think it was about the best bread I ever made. I thought I would tell Mr. S. of it, just to see what he would say. He thought it a good case of the way the unconscious mind could work and wanted me to write it out."

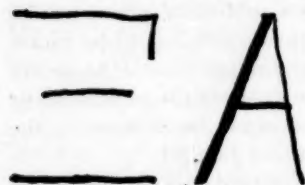
July 7th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Writing very scrawly and only a little of it legible. Most of that which is not legible is simply wavy lines. Apparently there was too much talking at the beginning as the first message indicates. There were two séances.

"[Scrawls.] you talk too much. [scrawls.] * * [wavy lines.] (I cannot read it.) you will. [wavy letters.]"

There is nothing whatever legible in the second experiment. But as Mrs. S. came out of the trance she reported seeing a cross again with a halo of light around it at a great distance. The light was blue all around it. It seemed to be a light blue cross set in the sky at night time. She also saw a large letter 'A' and also another letter, but could not tell what the latter was.

I made inquiries of Mrs. Smead regarding the appearance of the letter which she could not recognize and the following is her reply:

"The letter 'A' that I saw in my vision was like this, the left side being the heavier. The other letter was either an 'E' in the English language or 'X' in the Greek. I could not see the whole letter. The letter 'A' was made first, beginning with the last line. I took the Hebrew and Greek grammar and looked to see if the letter I saw was like any letter in either alphabet. These letters were about ten inches in height."



Sittings were also held on the dates of July 9th, 10th and 12th,

but nothing was written. Mrs. S., however, reports the following experiences for the 10th and 11th.

" July 10th, 1902. We had retired and I was just asleep when I awoke with a start supposing some one had shot me through the heart. I told Mr. S. about it at once, as he had not yet gone to sleep. I could not sleep for quite a while."

July 11th, 1902. I woke at 3 a. m., or somewhere near that time, to find my body very cold and I was unable to move for several minutes. I could not speak. Yet I was conscious and gradually became able to move, although it was very painful for a few minutes."

The sitting on July 16th developed no results except some scrawls. It was much the same on July 18th save that there were not even scrawls. On the 19th there were some scrawls. The planchette was tried, but no result came of it. The report for July 25th, the next sitting, has more interest, though the result was nothing but illegible scrawls, followed by a vision.

July 25th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. 8.30 p. m. There is nothing that can be read in the writing, but the evidence of power of some sort was stronger than at any previous sitting, not excepting those in which Harrison Clarke was present. During the whole of the sitting Mrs. S. was in a state bordering upon the unconscious. She was semi-conscious. Fifteen minutes of waiting occurred when her hand began to shake and then her whole body shook violently. The writing then began in a very fine script of the wavy style, and I said, 'make larger letters if you please'. The shaking then increased and the attempt to do as I wished was very apparent. Part of the time the right hand was shaking and the left hand executing a corresponding motion. Then soon the right hand became still and the left which was holding the head up for Mrs. S. insisted (for some reason I cannot find out) upon resting the head upon it and began to make a motion upon the head as if playing the piano. This went on for some time, about five minutes, when the right hand began to shake and the attempt to write communications went on. But it is illegible. I said as I noticed the continuous motion of her left hand, 'Let her hand rest'. The answer was 'yes'. I thought

that the fingers were possibly scratching the scalp and to show me that this was not the case they slowly arose so that I could see them just touching the hair, when the motion began again. I said, 'All right. Go on'. The attempt at writing continued, but is nothing but illegible scrawls from beginning to end of sitting. After it was over Mrs. S. reported the following experiences. [I report them in the language of Mr. S.—J. H. H.]

"After Mrs. S. came to her senses as far as I could see, she suddenly closed her eyes. I thought that she had enough that night and so I spoke to her to bring her to herself. She bade me let her alone. I did so and she raised her hand and with her index finger made three letters in the air, and asked me to make them on paper as she made them for me in outline and as she saw them. I tried to do so and the following is their form as I understood them. Then her hand fell and she

JHL

began to cry. Soon she was all right and said that she did not know what she cried

for. She said that these letters were like a blue lightning flash. They were four or five inches long.

"Mrs. S. also told me that she was thinking of the letters which she had seen previously, the letter 'A' and the incomplete letter (p. 506) and she said to herself while in the semi-trance, 'if possible let me see that other letter I did not get the other time, and if Imperator did it, that I might know it. I saw the word Jesus or Jesu written upside down with a peculiar J'.

"When the first part of the sitting was over I could not hear a sound. While my head was shaking the impression was as if something was saying 1-2-3-4: 1-2-3-4, then 1-2-3: 1-2-3, with the emphasis on 1 each time. Just before the writing stopped I had the impression of a face lying on a pillow. The face was flushed and had the impression of being in a state of fever. The hair was red. I thought it to be that of my sister Sadie. The description would fit her. But somebody told me "No, Jennie". This was the name as I understood it.

"The strange part of this is that the very next day (at 3 a. m. in the morning) my boy George was taken suddenly ill with a high fever. His temperature was 103 to 104. His face was very much flushed. He has red hair. It is possible that the

word 'Jennie' was a mistake of her subliminal for 'Georgie'. How probable this is I do not know."

On July 25th I wrote out the following from the Piper records of 1896 or 1897, purporting to be the advice of Imperator regarding mediums and sitters, with only the alteration in one or two instances of a sentence involving the transformation of a question by Dr. Hodgson assented to by the trance personality into an assertion, and sent the copy to Mr. Smead, asking him to read it to Mrs. Smead and return to me. He received it on the next day, July 26th, at 5 p. m., and did as I requested. The following is the text which it may interest the reader to know when studying subsequent records of this case.

"First consult with the person possessing the light, otherwise permission to sit might be debarred. First gain the confidence of the medium. Secondly sit as often as possible, bringing only harmonious persons. Ask as few questions as possible at first, but wait for information. Be prepared to accept what comes. This is the very best way to get good results later on. Say, 'tell us anything you wish,' etc. Otherwise the controlling spirit may become confused and lose his or her identity altogether. Ask such questions as:

"'How are you? I trust you are happy. I am delighted to meet you here. I do not exactly know you, but I shall be pleased to know you, and at any time you may choose to tell me who you are I shall be pleased to know. In the meantime I shall be glad to hear anything you have to say.'

"Such conversations as I mention are necessary for development, no matter how general the conversation may be at first, say for the first three months.

"[Advice to the medium.]

"Eat light nourishing food, walk briskly in open air each day, retire early with rest undisturbed by clamor of any kind. Bathe the body freely, live more or less as a nun. Dress simply, loosely, and read good books. This I think is about as complete as I could give it. Accept a little more pleasure than a nun. The spirit has it here. Live a simple, pure, chaste life in every way, devoted to the best there is in life. I mean by this to trust in God, enjoy his birds, trees, flowers, animals, the sunlight, and a few shadows. The beautiful walks through nature's paths seek-

ing to unravel the mysterious threads that hold them thus. In other words look into them with interest and thought. Should all of his children do this there would be a vast amount of pleasure in your world."

It was several days after the receipt and reading of this document before any sittings were held. But the experiments began with the following date and record.

August 1st, 1902. Present, Rev. C. J. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. Smead, and Mr. Joseph Smead, brother of Mr. Smead. Sitting at 8.30 p. m. Pencil work.

Mrs. S. used the pencil of Mr. Hollis in response to a mere feeling that she was moved to ask for it.

At first the hand shook as usual, but after three minutes began to write. Not much of the writing is legible, but it was better than usual lately. It is possible that it was all subliminal.

"(We are all ready now.) [scrawl.] where * * [undecipherable scrawl, and two lines drawn across the page toward Mr. Hollis.]

[This action by the pencil was interpreted as meaning that Mr. Hollis should come nearer. He did so and stood [leaning] over the table looking on. Another line was drawn toward him which was interpreted as referring to him and then was written:—]

Sit. (What do you want him to do? Do you want him to sit where I am sitting?) no. (All right. Go on.) tell him . . . [line drawn down the page.] (Do you want Mr. Hollis to sit here?) [wavy scrawl.] yes, [wavy scrawl.] yes. [wavy scrawl.]

[At this point a cry from the baby interrupted the sitting for some minutes and it was resumed at eight minutes before nine.]

[Before Mrs. S. became conscious she wrote:—] 'you . . . good bye'. [The sitting was resumed with the following question.]

(All right now. Go on.) * * hen [when] you come. [These three words written in inverted mirror writing and are not wavy in lines as the previous writing was. By *inverted mirror* writing is meant that the sheet has to be turned upside down and then read with a mirror.]

(Go on.) bring a better pencil [inverted mirror writing.] * * when you come [normal writing, but very wavy.] * * * * [Shows much trembling of hand.] (Go on.) again. do you know what I say. [wavy normal writing.] (What do you mean?) a better . . . a better. (What is it please?) [scrawl.] no. [scrawl.] no. [scrawl.] (Go on. Explain please.)

[While we were trying to read the mirror writing Mrs. S. came out of her semi-trance state, and in a moment felt the impulse to

write. The pencil was given her and she wrote in normal style, but rather wavy form:—] when you come bring a better pencil. (Why? What is the matter with it?) to [too] heavy. (All right. Go on.) [scrawl.] no. (Well, shall we stop now?) monday, better pen— [pencil.] (Monday evening? Shall we meet then?) yes."

"Mrs. S. soon became conscious, and said she saw a dark woman lying on a couch. She looked very sick or hurt, her hair disheveled. She looked something like my sister Annie, whom we knew to be living and who we knew had had great trouble over the serious illness of her daughter Ruth. Mrs. S. also said she saw the cross that we associate with Imperator.

"I may be wrong, but the whole message looks so much like those that Harrison Clarke used to produce that I think it subliminal. Mrs. S. had the same opinion and said so soon after the sitting."

August 4th, 1902. Present, Rev. C. J. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Sitting held according to appointment at 8.15 p. m. Pencil used brought by Mr. Hollis, a light black one.

Mrs. S. said that she felt a sensation as if an electric current passed through both ears and down through her arm to her pencil. Soon the hand began to shake, then the other hand and head, and she entered a semi-trance state, remaining apparently partly conscious for some time.

"(All right.) [scrawl.] we are glad [scrawly line.] to see you. [scrawly wavy line.] [Writing fine and trembly.]

(Yes, all right. Go on.) [scrawls.] you [?] we. (Go on. You are welcome, whoever you are.) welcome. (Go on.) welcome friends [?] (Please write the word after 'welcome'.) friend. (I understand. Go on.) yes. (Go on.) your friends will be glad to come. (Very good. Go on. We are patient.) * * * * [wavy letters endings in scrawls.] (Go on, friends.) we cannot [doubtful reading.] (Write if you can.) [scrawls.] very bad [?]

[Mrs. S. now became fully entranced, so that her hand began to show signs of lack of muscular power, her head began to drop forward. I saw this and at once placed pillows under her head to support it. I placed her head so that she was facing the writing.]

(Perhaps you can work better now.) when you . . . wrong . . . her head. (Is her head all right?) no. (What shall I do?) turn [?]

[I then turned her head so that her face was away from the writing.] (All right now. Go on.) [no reply.] (Go on when you can.) * * (Go on.) [scrawls.] we want you to be more patient [last word a mere scrawl.] (All right. I will try. Go on.) Uncle William. ['William' doubtful. Letters are 'W' or 'H' * * llam'.] (All right. Will you write your name please?) [no reply.]

[The hand was seen to tremble as if her subliminal was excited at the presence of a new communicator and I was a little alarmed at this evidence of agitation when she was in the deep trance, so I said: 'perhaps you had better let her come to herself. It may be too great a strain for her. We do not want to hurt her.']

nor do we. [I took time to read this and while I was reading it these words were written.] you get that? (Yes, I did. It is all right. I understand. Go on.) she must have . . . (Is it 'she must have?') yes. (All right.) loser [?] [looser] [possibly 'easier'] garments. [Referring possibly to the corset waist and skirt and waist she wore, possibly to the neck band.]

(I will fix that for next time. I did loosen the neckband. Do you understand?) yes. (All right. Would it not be best for her to stop now?) soon. (All right. Was Imperator or Rector, Prudens or Doctor present?) it matters not friend. (All right. Shall we meet Wednesday evening?) no, Friday.

[The capital letter 'F' is made in a way not usual with Mrs. S. It undoubtedly resembles the way this letter is made in the Piper case. Usually with Mrs. S. the top begins with a loop and then a curve for the rest. Here this loop is omitted and the top made like that in the Piper case. So also the stroke for the line distinguishing the letter from 'T'.]

(Then I understand that we will meet Friday evening?) yes. (All right. We shall say good night now.) uncle William came tonight. he will try again." [written clearly and without trembling.]

"Pencil dropped and Mrs. S. came slowly to full consciousness without any unpleasant features. When she became fully conscious she said that she saw the pillow that I had used to fix her head with and said: 'What is this pillow here for?' I then asked: 'What did you see when in your trance?'

The reply was: "A while ago I saw a man who looked like Mr. McKinley, but as he came nearer the table I saw that it was not he. He walked up to the table very fast. He stopped between you and Mr. Hollis. He had a long coat on. It was

opened and was loose. It was black or brown and looked like a dressing gown. This man came in rapidly through the door. He seemed to want to control. I did not hear anything that was said. I saw a lot of other people. I cannot describe them all. But I saw the cross, the blue one. It was more like the one that appeared the first time I saw it (p. 500). Light was around my hand as before.

"At one time I seemed to be in a peculiar room, all mixed up in disorder. I noticed an old-fashioned lamp with a white globe. The globe was small and the chimney was long. I saw a girl in this room. I could see that she had a light complexion. But this is all that I remember. The room was so mixed up and things were so confused."

It is probable that all the incidents in this sitting explain themselves. The reference to looser garments is probably to the thought mentioned in the passage sent by myself to Mr. S. and read to Mrs. S. July 26th (cf. p. 509).

August 8th, 1902. Present, Rev. C. J. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Mrs. S. at first conscious, then semi-conscious and finally completely entranced. Sitting began at 8.30.

"Before the sitting Mr. Hollis spoke of the serious condition of his oldest boy. He said he was much worried about him, etc. This made a deep impression upon Mrs. S.'s mind because she remembered that Cecil was so ill and that he was delirious as Mr. Hollis said his boy was at about midnight for two or three nights past. I think that this recital of his had its effect upon Mrs. S.'s subliminal and it is possibly an explanation of the message that was received by Mr. Hollis this night. Still it may be that the trance personalities gave him this message. It sounds like those Emperor gave in the Piper record. Cecil's box was on the table."

"(All right, friends, we are all ready now.) [Conversation was about Emperor. Nothing special said. Hand begins to shake at 8.45. No reply to my question. I fix the pillow. Mrs. S. moved her hand across her face and covered her eyes and said: 'Don't touch me'.]

(All right. Go on.) [Mrs. S. awoke and said she felt she was dying. I fixed her head on a pillow at 8.55.] (All right. Go on if you wish.) [No reply.] [Writing began at 9. No trembling of the hand. Pencil seemed to drop from her hand. Her face was flushed. The breathing became deep and she became unconscious.]

(All right friends.) [Breathing became easier and Mrs. S. came to full consciousness, saying that she had seen the star and cross again, that the star had faded into the cross, that they were blue in color, with a yellow blending, and that they were accompanied by a phosphorescent glow. She then composed herself again and soon the hand shook a little and she again went into a deep trance and the following message was written without suggestion.]

We welcome you here friends. [probably meant for Mr. Hollis.] (We read it all right. Thank you. Go on.) we will care for you little one. don't be alarmed. we will watch him and let God's Will be done in Heaven and on Earth. [written in clear script without any trembling.] (Mr. Hollis is satisfied, friend.) Yes, yes, we will try to help you keep your little one with you. [slight wavy appearance in some words.] (Do you want me to read it?) let him if he wishes. [slight trembling in letters.] [Mr. Hollis read it.] yes, did you get that? we want to know. [very wavy and trembly.] (Did you want to know if we got that?) we want to know. (We got that all right.) yes.

(Go on, friend. Write what you wish.) [Hand shook a little.] (I am glad to greet you, whoever you are that is communicating. We are interested in each other.)

[The left hand slowly arose, made the sign of the cross, remained in that position a minute, and then slowly dropped.]

(If Imperator is here raise the hand again please.) [scrawl, ending apparently in a very clear capital 'H', followed by rapid writing in a very wavy style that is wholly illegible. Then the left hand arose again, remained as before, and then slowly fell.]

(All right, friend. I understand. Go on.) [line of scrawls and then apparently an attempt at intelligent writing, but too wavy to be deciphered. This was distributed over four sheets, but with only one or two lines on each.]

(Is uncle William present? Can he communicate?) not this time. to [too] much trouble. (All right. Go on.) you must be quieter. [Lines drawn as if erasing something.] trouble. [Lines drawn as before and sitting closed.] [Last writing clear and regular and resembles that of the planchette.] "

"Mrs. S. woke without being able to move her head, or arms, or feet. By and by she had the usual control of them. But for some time her neck was stiff. She said that her feet had become crossed in some way. Next sitting appointed for Monday night."

Aug. 9th, 1902. No results whatever. It is interesting to remark that the attempt was made on Saturday evening previous to the Monday appointment mentioned in record of day before.

August 11th, 1902. Present Mr. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. 9 p. m.

"(We are all ready, friends.) [Pupils of eyes somewhat dilated.] (I have fixed her now.) [Went into trance without shaking.]

no her mother. [very small letters and almost illegible.] (All right friends.) mama, yes my nannie. [Name for Cecil's grandmother on his mother's side. He always called her 'Nannie'.] (Go on. I don't know you yet.) [No reply.] (Go on. Who is trying to write?) we cannot. (Go on.) [Pencil dropped from hand. Soon entranced again.]

(Go on, friends.) [Mrs. S. woke up, startled by hideous faces, and refused to go into trance.] "

After the sitting Mrs. S. said: "I saw my mother when I came out of the trance. I saw her but for an instant, because a woman stepped right in front of her. My mother is living and this woman that I thought was my mother must have been some one else. I do not know who it was. She may have been my aunt Laura, my mother's sister, who looks like her. I saw her only for a moment when, as I said, this other lady stepped right in front of her.

"Cecil was there. He was playing near the building which I told Mrs. S. before was being built and near which Cecil was playing before.

"I also saw a man that looked something like Rev. Mr. Hollis (short, dark hair, spare build, light skin) only this man that I saw had whiskers all down his face and they seemed to come to a point.

"I also saw lots of people. I do now [not] know who they were."

Then Mrs. S. went into the trance again and suddenly awoke and said: "I saw some ugly looking faces. I thought that they might want to control me or to write through me and I would

not let them, so I came back at once to full consciousness." At this point Mrs. S. was a little faint.

August 13th, 1902. Present Rev. C. J. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. Hollis referred to the fact that his wife was not well. First part pencil work and planchette tried later.

"(All ready now, friends. We trust that conditions are all right, friends. They are as far as we know on this side.) [Hand shakes at 8.44 p. m. Head and hands shake, eyes close, head dropped.] [Writing undecipherable, possibly because it is very fine. Perhaps letters 'we geoo ou' are the best possible reading, but it can only convey to the reader the shape of the lines which suggest such a reading.]

(Go on friend.) [scrawls.] [Deep breathing.] (Go on.) [Mrs S. gave a start. Hand raised and fell, then shook violently.] [scrawls resembling the letter 'm'.]

(Go on friend.) [wavy line across the page and then in wavy letters was written:—] Hyslop . . . [wavy line across the page and back and apparent attempt to make some letter when pencil returned to beginning and wrote above the first wavy line a word which looks like 'will', as if to mean 'Hyslop will'. Apparently message not completed.] [Cf. earlier message 'Hyslop rember' p. 479.]

(Go on friend. We shall be glad to have you write.) [Hand shakes.] (Do you want me to fix Mrs. S.?) [scrawls.] [Interpreted at time by Mr. S. as 'we can'.] (Try and write plainly.) [illegible scrawls.]

[At this point the pencil dropped from her hand and one finger was raised. I said, 'if you want to write I will put the pencil in her hand. If you undersand me drop the finger.' The finger dropped, 9.15 p. m. This closed our attempt at trance writing with the pencil.]

[Simply for the experiment we got the planchette to see what would take place. To our great surprise it at once began to make scrawls. We watched it with great interest.]

[These scrawls show no wavy appearance or trembling. They are apparently practising work and at times might be interpreted as individual letters. J. H. H.]

(What is that scrawl?) L. H. [scrawl.] (L. M.?) L. H. (Who is L. H.?) Luther H. [period inserted.]

[Mrs. S. was cramped and I fixed her.] all right. [spontaneously written.] (What is the name that begins with H.?) H. (All right. Go on if you please. Tell me what you wish.) Be-

side you here is a little boy. good to all was he. yes, he came and tried but will come again.

[We were in doubt as to the reading of the words of this message after the word 'boy', but did not express our thought, but asked 'who is the little boy'? when the next reply was given.]

and good to all w—— [?] [scrawl.] Cecil. (All right Cecil. Go on.) Papa, yes, George, get him please. (George is upstairs asleep, Cecil.) Bring him to me, yes. (I cannot do it, Cecil.) This time I want him papa. (I cannot do it. I cannot wake up George to bring him here.) o dear, I would like to kiss my dear little brother. Get him. (All right. You can go up to his bed room and kiss him.) going to get him. good night papa. (You ought to know better than that. I cannot do it, Cecil.) [No reply.] "

The mention of the name Luther H. rather suggests that the earlier allusion to Luther (p. 499) might have no reference to the possibility there indicated, but might be a product of the subliminal. J. H. H.

August 18th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. The usual questions were asked at first, but nothing was readable for some time.

" [Scrawls, some apparently wavy attempt at words, for several pages. Many are very regular and pretty.]

S. I. C. [scrawl and apparently 'yes'.] [I thought it was H. C., and so asked.] no. (Who is it?) S. I. C. (Is that Sylvester I. Smead?) yes. (Write please.) S. I. C." [The letter C is the initial of the real name.]

" [The waking of the baby put an end to the sitting and Mrs. S. was allowed to come out of the trance. The making of the initials was the same as in life of my brother whom it purported to be.] "

Mrs. S. made the following statement after she came out of the trance:

"When I went into the trance I saw the cross. I was restless and nervous, but after I saw the cross I was so calm, as if the water was calmed when it was rough. The cross seemed to have a halo of light yellow. It was light, with blue and yellow

blending. When I first went into the trance the cross was on the left side. When I came out it was on the right side. I do not know who the possible communicator was."

On an undated day of this same month, August, Mrs. S. records the following vision, suggested by a conversation between her and Mr. S. on the condition of the soul after death. It was a vision of a body of water with two ships on it and barren rocks on a shore. Mrs. S. drew a representation of the scene, and described it.

"The water was very calm and I was very much surprised when I saw it dash against the rocks. The scene looked very pretty, but it was dreadful to see the soul which I could descry suffer upon those rocks. The white foam dashed very high on the rocks when the water was thrown against them. The rocks were very barren. No life was visible except the poor lonely soul that was beginning to realize its loneliness and crying for help which it expects to get from the ships. The sky was greyish blue with pink tints in the clouds. The water was a greenish blue with pink reflection of the clouds in it."

September 15th, 1902. Present Rev. C. J. Hollis, Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Went into trance at 8.35.

"(Go on friends.) [No reply.] (Go on. Write what you wish. Shall I fix her hand?) no. (All right.) [Hand shakes.] you may please. [evidently decipherable by Mr. S. at the time only by watching the pencil.]

("Please"? That was right was it not?) [Reply illegible.] (Kindly make your letters larger.) you do not know us yet. [Only first and last words legible. Evidently deciphered by watching the pencil.]

(I shall be glad to know you. Go on, friend.) she sees us sometimes. yes, she saw me, Rosa G. Pano— [?] (Go on, please, whoever you are.) we [?] B tried [?] (Go on.) [Lines and the word 'yes'.] (Go on please, if you can.) [No reply, and Mrs. S. came out of the trance.]"

Mrs. S. described the following vision after she came out of the trance. Mr. S. records the fact that she asked him: "Was

Cyrus Corliss buried in the West P—— cemetery?" But he does not say whether this was during the trance or before it.

"I saw a woman up by a cemetery. The grave stones went the same way as the road. It seemed to be the road to West P——. The woman seemed to look like Mrs. Harriman. Her back was toward me. I saw a lot of people, but did not know who they were. I saw a woman in a chair. It seemed like a throne. She had a fine face, a crown on her head, and I seemed to be everywhere and to go from one place to another as fast as I could. I saw my grandfather John W. Robertson. During the time I was unconscious to the world I was elsewhere, seeing this and that and I was active all the time."

The following dream on the night of September 18th is narrated by Mrs. S. It seems to have been written out the next day and apparently verified in some of its incidents on September 22nd.

"September 18th, 1902. We retired about 9.30 p. m. and I went to sleep almost as soon as I got into bed, for I was very tired. We had been calling all the afternoon and I awakened very suddenly having dreamed or seen, in a vision, that a very heavy wagon, drawn by two large horses, one black and the other a dapple grey, black and white mixed, came up the street and about in front of our side window. The children were playing. I knew them all. They were the three Prentice children, the two Hollis children, and my own little boy George. As this team came up the children ran in different directions to get out of its way. When the driver called to the horses to go on, George in some way was struck by the dapple grey horse and I was so shocked that it was impossible for me to speak or move, and I shut my eyes to keep out what I knew must be the result of the kick which that horse had given George. But in a few seconds I opened my eyes and saw the little body trampled almost beyond recognition. The driver did not wait to see what was the result of his driving, but went right along, and after he passed I went and brought the little body into the house. I then woke up with a shiver to find a little dark object about as large as a humming bird flying in the room. It seemed to come out from the side wall and ceiling, and flew about five feet to the corner of the room. I expected to see it enter the hall, but in-

stead it went right into the corner and out of sight. It seemed to fly in this way, striking the ceiling five times and made a little buzzing noise. The light was burning in the room, so that I could watch the object. I was unable to get to sleep again for about two hours. I was wondering what this dream or vision could mean and what the little bird could signify.

The next morning, Friday, September 19th, I told Mr. S. about this dream or vision, and he wished me to write it out. I was very much troubled about it and intended to tell George to be very careful on his way to school, but forgot it. So I told him, when he went to play, that evening after school, of the dream and to be careful about the road. This was Friday, September 19th, 1902."

The following narrative of incidents representing apparently a partial fulfillment of the dream has a date of September 18th at the head of it, but the narrative shows that the incidents took place on Saturday, September 20th, and in his certification of the facts Mr. S. writes the date September 22nd, as if the account were written out on that date.

"Saturday morning Mr. S. had just started for the postoffice when the little girl next door came running along crying. Mr. S. asked what the trouble was and she said that Paul was hurt, that the horse kicked him. So Mr. S. went over and found that the little boy had been kicked in the face and possibly in the bowels. This latter fact is not yet known, although Paul complains of it hurting him there.

"Saturday afternoon the children were all playing, as I have said, out in the side yard. Paul was in his mother's lap watching them, when George called and said that a big team was coming with wood. It was quite near when I turned and saw the very team that I saw in my dream. The grey horse was on the side nearest the walk. I called all the children up on the walk to the veranda and watched them very carefully for fear my dream or vision would be further realized. I told Mrs. Prentice of my dream and she was much surprised and moved by it and said: 'And to think it was Paul instead of George'.

"A stranger fact in connection with it is that Mr. S. had not told me that he had not [?] ordered any wood, and so I was surprised to know that this team was coming directly to our house."

The difficulties in supposing any verification of the dream in these incidents are apparent to the student. The record has not been as carefully made as is necessary, especially as to dates, and we are not told exactly whether this Paul was among the children seen in the dream, though it is probable that he was one of the three Prentice children, mentioned above. There are various features of the incidents that suggest probable errors of judgment and interpretation.

September 22nd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Mrs. S. in trance. Mrs. S. felt the presence of "controls" in the afternoon. Her hand shook and she was very confident that an influence was at work.

"In the evening just before she sat down to the experiment she heard a buzzing noise, like that which a telephone wire will sometimes make when a message is going over it. I also heard this noise and when she spoke about it I said that I heard it also. Sitting began at 8 p. m."

"(We are all ready friends. We are trying to follow your directions.) [Mrs. S.: I want to thank whoever it was for the warning given us in connection with George and the wagon.] [8.20, going into trance. Hand shakes, and writing begins at 8.25. Hand and head shake.]

[Scrawls.] (Try and write plainly, friends.) [Hand and head shake. Very singular actions of the hand on her head. She was resting her head on her hand. This hand kept moving on her forehead in a circular way, then the motion changed to one like that of kneading bread. There was great agitation in the hand writing and the body. It shook the table, and I was a little alarmed, but did not give expression to it.]

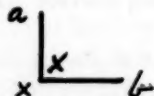
(I know that you are trying hard to get control. Try to write plainly for me if you can.) yes. [scrawls.] (Go on, please.) [The hand dropped over her eyes and for a long time her eyes were thus kept covered.] [scrawls.] (Do not keep her in that position. It will cramp her arm and neck. Shall I not change it?) no. (Go on friend.) [No reply.] (Go on.) [Motions of the head and arm. The writing hand is still and limp. The pencil dropped. I replaced it in her hand. Both hands now shake and head also. Her face is much flushed. The hand that is over her eyes comes away about an inch from the eyes. Her head raises a little. Her

hand drops and her head falls upon the pillow, and the pencil is grasped again.]

(Go on please.) [No reply.] [Mrs. S. groaned a little, came apparently to slight consciousness, and said she was all right. 9 p. m. Pencil again dropped and she came into her normal consciousness.] "

The following is what Mrs. S. said after coming out of the trance, indicating the experience of another vision.

"I saw the cross at a distance, with all the rays of light, just as it came the first time, only I did not see the star that I saw first. I saw a large building which was built as the following diagram will indicate.



"On the part X was the cross. The building was all light and the light was yellowish. The top of the cross seemed to form the spire of this building and it seemed to be a two-story building with a slant roof. Each side of the building was about 200 feet, that is, ax was 200 feet and bx 200 feet. It was full of windows, two rows being on each side. The whole structure seemed to be one mass of yellow light.

"It seemed that everywhere I turned to look I saw the cross as a part of this building. The light of the cross was yellow instead of blue as before.

"I think I saw Cecil. He turned around and looked at me and smiled. The people that I saw seemed like passing visions. There was nothing permanent tonight.

"I also saw just one spot in a cemetery, as if in a corner alone, with a flat stone over the top of it and a curved one at the head. The cross that I saw on the building seemed to leave it and rested on this grave, as if the cross stood over the grave. It left after awhile.

"My hand was at first prickly and hot as if electricity was going through it from the elbow down. When Mr. S. got up to fix my head my writing hand became as dead. It felt as if ice water was poured upon it. Afterwards it felt warm again."

The following additional note is of the same date and apparently refers to some period during the trance:

"I was praying. I had my head bowed. I asked God if there was anything in this and it was his will for me to have anything to do with it, that my soul was his, that he could do as he pleased with it, that I was willing that he should do as he pleased with my soul to take it from the body if he wished. In less than five minutes I saw the cross with all those streams of light coming from it. That made me feel that it was his will that I should go on with it, and that I should know that it was right for me to submit myself to trance personalities. After this the sitting went on.

"I. M. SMEAD."

September 26th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. No results except lines and scrawls.

The results were the same for September 27th and October 1st.

October 2nd. Forenoon. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. No record of questions, if any, except one.

"Scrawls.] I remember we * * [scrawls. Then a picture of a woman drawn wearing a sort of Napoleon hat. After it the word "you", clearly written.] (Who did it?) we did it. [scrawls.] * * well. no, we do not [line drawn downward and then back to starting point.] well. [Clicking of planchette like a telegraph.] wellcome friend wellcome fen— Here we are now. * * [scrawls.] we will come there ow [now?] * * you for old thoughts. for old— [scrawls and great agitation in the hand and writing which was very wavy.] yes, we wellcome friends, yes, we * * Hello * * " Writing then abruptly ceased and the sitting ended.

In the evening of the same date another attempt was made but there were no results.

October 6th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer was

offered by myself (Mr. S.). I also sang 'Trusting in Jesus, that is all'. In my prayer I made vocal reference to the desired presence of Imperator, if it was in harmony with the will of God. Sitting began at 7.15 p. m. Pencil work.

Mrs. S. was very nervous. She put the pencil down and rested her head and arms on the pillow, the pencil resting on the paper. In all our work I never knew her to do this before. Her act was independent of any suggestion of mine. Her face was at first turned towards me. This condition lasted about seven minutes. She then gradually lifted her head from the pillow and rested it on both hands (7.57 p. m.) and her breathing became deep and even. At 8 p. m. her hand on her head began to shake and increased for a time, shaking perceptibly. Increasing at 8.03 and violent at 8.05, when the hand began a sort of rotary motion and her breathing a little irregular.

"(Friend, cannot she rest now?) [No reply. Shaking continues.] (Do not shake her any more than is necessary, friend.) [No reply. Shaking less violent.] (Will you not let her rest now friend?) [No reply. Agitation subsiding, 8.10.] (I await your pleasure, friend.)

[Hand rises from her head and is gradually detached from the other hand which still remains on her head, and slowly with stiffened fingers descends to the pillow. I give it the pencil; the set fingers relax, and the pencil is taken all right at 8.15, one hour having passed in coming to this condition.]

(Shall she rest her head?) [Hand shaking slightly, breathing normal, and face slightly flushed. Writing begins.] no.

(Do not shake her any more than you can help, friend.) [scrawls, and word 'no' written with great effort.] (All right.) [Attempt at legible writing but not successful.]

(Let her head rest, friend.) * * * [undec.] (Shall I fix her head, friend?) * * * [undec. Agitation in hand and finally word 'no' written.]

(All right, friend. Go on.) [Hand shut up, gradually withdrawn from the head and again placed over the eyes, 8.24 p. m.]

(I will be very glad to hear from you tonight, friend, if you will communicate.) [Great efforts to write and finally words written that were interpreted to be either 'trance commencing' or 'trance communicators'. Not legible now.] "

[Pencil dropped at 8.25. Breathing became normal, hand still over her eyes, breathing long, no agitation, face natural and without flushing, several long breaths and the head dropped on the arm used for writing. Mrs. S. now became fully conscious for a brief time,

8.30, and voluntarily rested her head on the pillow, and I placed the pencil in her writing hand. She appeared to be simply asleep, and finally after a long sigh she became fully conscious at 8.31 p. m.]

Mrs. S. narrates the following incidents connected with the sitting in which she was apparently entranced:

"I was not fully unconscious any of the time during the sitting. I was helpless to move hand or foot. I came very near dying, the nearest I ever knew to it. I could feel my heart beats getting fainter and fainter. [This was not actually the fact, because the action of her heart was as strong as ever. Mr. S.] Even my jaws shook and my teeth continually hit together. I had the sensation of pitch darkness. There was no light or sign of light. This darkness was many times blacker than the blackest midnight. Midnight darkness was nothing compared to the darkness that I experienced. This lasted until my hand went down to write. [There was a very brilliant lamp on the table. The light from it was directly in Mrs. S.'s face.—Mr. S.] When I came out of this condition, both feet were numb. There was no feeling in them until I was wholly awake.

"I saw the cross, yellowish light. It seemed as if a whole regiment were shaking my head. I was a little sick at the stomach when I came out of the semi-trance."

October 16th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All right.) * * (What is that from?) Cecil. (Go on.) * * (I cannot read it.) [Scrawls in small loop form.] her hello, hello hello. [Then the planchette moved the pencil about a point until it had made a large round black spot like the kisses in previous sittings, wrote the name 'George', made another spot like the first, wrote 'Yes', repeated the black spot and then last wrote the word 'mama'.]

(Hullo, Cecil. You told Mama about the bird in the nest. We think that baby looks that way lots of times. Go on, Cleve dear.) Yes, Yes, papa she did. [Scrawls.] (Please help my son to write friends.) he is gone. (Who is now here?) [Scrawls.] (Please try hard to write plainly.) Yes [word written thirteen times in succession, and in a slightly wavy manner, followed by circular

scrawls.] (Cannot you write something, friends?) Yes * * yes, yes, one [?] * * (Try and write.) * * [Letters very wavy.]”

On October 26th Mrs. S. had a vision of a boy. “He was taller than Cecil was. I thought it was Cecil, but this boy was afraid of me. Some way I thought this fact very strange. I saw him standing beside my bed, and he had on a white gown. As I watched him I was going to speak to him when he went up over George’s bed right straight out of sight. There was left a black thing about the size of a humming bird. This remained about five minutes and then vanished.”

A sitting was held October 27th in the usual way, but nothing special occurred. The writing began in unintelligible scrawls and soon took the very wavy form of letters still illegible. Finally it became more regular and the letter H was written twice and then repeated twice again with some undecipherable letters. Before the sitting Mrs. S. had made a reference to Harrison Clarke saying that he might still be found in the records of the *Herald* Office. After the capital H had been written Mrs. S. asked if it was Harrison Clarke, but the writing in reply is not legible and hardly suggests any name at all. Finally after considerable illegible matter was written the name J. S. Smead was written twice and the Smead again, some illegible letters and the word ‘Hello’, when the sitting closed.

October 28th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting held in the morning.

“ * * * [not clear. apparently ‘W. Cewens’, the last three letters being quite clear.] Hester S. Hester Stevens. (Why is all this confusion and scrawls? Mrs. S. used to write all right. I don’t understand it.) H * * * [loop like scrawls.] S * * * [scrawls.] No * * * S * * * S S S S * * * She was willing to let every every one. we [?] don’t * * * write [?] * * * write and we do not let them now. (Who is controlling her?) no. (Go on.) * * * [possibly an attempt at ‘Sylvester’, the letters are ‘I Sislsler’.] S. I. Smead. (Who is it?) Brother. (Is it my brother S.?) he comes here sometimes. (Do you let my boy, Cecil, come?) we have told Cecil yes. (What is

the word after 'have'?) no, you cannot * * [possibly 'have'.]
(You did not answer me plainly.) We do not have Cecil with
* * * * [scrawls.] (Go on.) * * [Letters resemble 'sonohe
ngg'.] (Why is it that you cannot do anything with her?) You
must wait and see. [scrawls.] yes, it is no use. no * * [undec.]
[scrawls.] "

This is a curious sitting. There is the appearance of a change of personality, though an apparent attempt at Sylvester at the same time. It seems to represent the effort of the subliminal to reproduce another than the usual personality possibly under the stimulus created by the desire for the appearance of the Imperator group in the Piper case.

On October 28th another sitting in the evening developed very little writing and much of it was illegible. It began with evident difficulty and in small scrawls. Then followed something like 'Sm' and the planchette went back and wrote the capital letter 'J' and then 'ad', evidently the whole being intended for "J. Smead". Then 'S R' two or three times and lastly 'no, no'. Nothing more occurred and the experiment came to a close.

November 6th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All right.) we are here now. we will come again. ('We will come again'?). Yes. (I cannot understand.) * * and are here every time. * * (The mental confusion is over. Go on please.) no. (Would it not be well friend for you to let me know who is here?) no we welcome [last three words doubtful reading.] no * * [resembles 'warewe'.] * * her [?] (Explain.) George will come here * * we are here * * (Go on.) * * (Go on.) George will come here. (Do you mean 'welcome'?) no, come here. we like him, yes near [?] (Do you mean you want George here when you come?) we [?] did. (Clevie wrote it for George?) Yes. (Go on.) Every time he must come, best for him Here [new line begun.] we can come. (Who is here?) we are. (Go on.) George Hullo, See him, See him, yes."

November 15th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"TueSday, yes tou [?] * * * * twogether [?] * *

* * (We cannot read it. Will you write it again?) Yesterday were coming you did not * * [The baby was crying and I said 'never mind baby'.] not [?] good to [?] yes. (Go on friends.) * * * * (I cannot read it.) * * away with it * * * * mother is sick, yes, come home at once. mother is sick. (Whose mother is sick?) Ida's. (Who is writing?) * * Nettie, Nettie, yes, yes. (Nettie is living. Who gave us that message?) [Nettie is the name of the baby.] aunt [?] nettie [?'mttie'] said she was. Aunt nettie said she was. (I see. Go on. Who is writing?) * * Maude and bena [Bena.] (I am glad Maude is here again.) * * (I cannot read it.) no, mother is sad [?] you [?] go to her at once. (What is the word after 'is'?) [Planchette went back and wrote the word 'sick' under the word interpreted as 'sad'.] (What is the trouble with mother?) [Scrawls.] She is choking [choking] no, no, go at once. (Is that word 'choaking'?) Yes, go at once. (Is mother going to die very soon?) [No reply.] (Mrs. S.: What is making mother choking?) * * now [?] go see. See to her at once, yes at once. (If mother is sick, Nettie will telegraph. We cannot go unless we get a telegraph.) mother is sick at and go * * [scrawls.] (If mother is sick, Nettie will telegraph.) * * (If mother is so sick, go to Nettie and have her telegraph.) * * Ida go * * do it * * (Ida does not believe that this is true.) [Scrawl.] "

No inquiries seem to have been made regarding the alleged illness of the mother of Mrs. S.

November 21st, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

" (All right. Go on.) [Lines drawn and some circular scrawls with the word 'yes' written in the upper right and the lower left hand corners of the sheet.]

(Go on, friend.) Letters are home, yes. (What do you mean?) yes to [two] were there. (What do you mean?) yes, they were both for Mama [very scrawly, almost illegible.] (What word after 'for'?) Mama. (Is word 'mama'?) yes. (Whom do you mean? Ida's mama?) no, my mama. (Tell me who is writing?) me Maude. (Go on, Maude.) mama [?] my * * Maude. (Write it again.) * * Maude saw. [large period inserted.] my [?] sister [scrawls.] George, yes, papa. m sister [scrawls.] my sister [?'estister'.] * * * * come now, yes, now good night. Maude * * ['bella' ?] yes, get away, soon * * papa. (Yes, go on.) * * * * yes we are trying. you was

too soon. (Go on.) You mesh ['must' ?] stop. (Go on, friend. Have you any message?) Bitter ['Bitt' written first and 'er' (?) below it.] wee [?] come so tonight. Bitter Swtt, yes, Sweet, yes. (Go on. Who is 'Bitter Sweet'?) you light may * * * * (I cannot read it. Who is 'Bitter Sweet'?) no, no * * Mr. Sylvester Smead [?] yes * * yes, Ida [?] * * you did. * * Yes sir * *

It is apparent that Mr. S. did not recognize the significance of "Bitter Sweet". [Cf. p. 495). It was seemingly an attempt at a previous sitting of my own to spontaneously return a message for me in response to one that I had tried to send to Dr. Hodgson. It is an evident action of the subliminal here without any evident appreciation of its origin or meaning.

Some time previous to the date of the record to follow, Dr. Hodgson made an appointment for Mrs. S. to have a sitting with Mrs. Piper. This arrangement was made on Dr. Hodgson's part in pursuance of my wish last year that some such experiment be tried. It was apparently promised by the Imperator group in April last. Finally before the date set for the sitting the Imperator group cancelled the engagement. Correspondence with Dr. Hodgson shows that it was quite possible that the original arrangement was not intended for Mrs. S., but for another "light". It is possible that there was some misunderstanding between Dr. Hodgson and Imperator. At least this is Dr. Hodgson's opinion expressed in a letter to me. With this explanation the following experience will explain itself. It is given in Mrs. S.'s own narrative of it. The date was November 24th, 4 a. m.

"I awoke or partially awoke to find myself lying on my back with my hands locked together so that I was obliged to force them apart. While doing this my attention was drawn to the spot where Georgie's crib was and where I saw the outline of two strangers from the other side (the room was lighted by a very small lamp and these persons looked dark). I had an impression that one of these parties was Imperator. But I could not see them clearly. The one that I thought was Imperator had a letter in his hand and was about to give it to me when I became conscious and they withdrew with the letter. I was very much disappointed because I wanted to know the contents of the letter but could not then, and so in the morning I intended to tell Mr.

S. When I got up first to light a larger lamp I stepped out on the floor and only took two steps, my left hip hurt me so that I could hardly walk, and in that way it passed from my mind for the time.

"All through the day and night and the next day I suffered and while Mr. S. was out Tuesday afternoon the pain became so intense that I had to lie down, when he came in with a letter from Dr. Hodgson and I at once said, 'they do not want us to come to Mrs. Piper's'. Mr. S. was very much surprised and said, 'Why, what makes you say that?' I told him that I had felt all day as though something was to happen and that we were not to go, or that they did not want us. He said, 'Tell me what makes you think so. There must be some reason for your feelings'. And so I told him what I have written here, and then he wanted to know why I did not tell it him before. I told him that I had intended to do it, but because of the pain I suffered I had forgotten to until I saw the envelope which he said was from Dr. Hodgson, which brought it all to my mind. Then he read me the letter. I felt as if I could not endure any more, although I was prepared for it. I could not help feeling hurt, but I knew that there must be some good reason which I think has been made very plain. I refer to the recent storm that would have positively prevented my going to Boston with my little child. I also received a letter from Mr. S.'s aunt telling me that it would not be possible for her to accommodate us. I also got a letter from my sister at Malden telling me that they had no coal and that it would not be safe to bring the children to Malden, so I was completely prevented from going to Boston to see Mrs. Piper. No doubt all this was known to Imperator."

November 25th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"[Scrawls] here very soon. you do not need too to be discouraged * * [scrawls.] (Do you want to put her into a trance?) no. (All right. Go on.) * * * yes * * (I cannot read it.) mama you are a making [scrawly and indistinct.] Maude (What word after 'are'?) making. (Go on.) [Baby was crying and Mrs. S. had to go to her.] (Why did you not keep

word with us for the sitting with Mrs. Piper?) Maude * * may * * (Go on. Who does all that?) May, Cecil Maude * * Willis, yes, yes to [?] feel to too much like weeping. we do. mama is making Maude and Cecil and Willis — yes, are you. (Why did they not keep their agreement?) They are papa. (How is it that they do not keep their agreement with me?) will go and ask them. (Will you come back and tell us?) no. (What will you tell me?) [No reply.] (We will continue to sit. Go on, please.) * * [evidently intended for 'tomorrow'.] Tomorrow night [night] no, light, yes, night NiGht. (Is the word 'light'?) no, night. (What is to be tomorrow night?) * * [apparently 'Something'.]

November 26th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting held in the afternoon.

Mr. S. says: "I had heard that it was not to be allowed for us to have the expected sitting with Mrs. Piper and naturally felt very strange about it. Mrs. S. felt very much hurt."

"(Go on friends. We are all ready.) * * yes we [?] kow [know] * * (We cannot read it yet.) yes * * yes. (We cannot read it.) husler [hustler] is here, yes. (What do you mean?) husler is here, yes. (Write it over so that I can tell, please.) husler, no no hereler. no, no, hersler, hastler. no, yes, no, hustler, no, yes, yes.

[Is is apparent that Mr. S. had asked questions here regarding the interpretation of the writing, but, if so, they have not been recorded. J. H. H.]

(Explain.) Yes, you know [not clear.] know. (Explain the word 'hustler'.) Yes, [scrawls.] (What do you mean? I do not know.) yes, you said [not clear.] it papa. yes. (Who is 'hustler'?) sa * * me Cecil John

[This is a fine point. I used to call him 'hustler' and tell him to 'hustle'.]

(Is Cecil here?) yes, no. (Is he writing?) me? [?] [scrawl.] you [?] * * (Who is writing?) me, me, me. (What makes you act so, friend?) wait.

(It looks to me as if you were ashamed of yourselves and would not tell who you are. Do you think that you are doing right?) Yes, we do * * [undec.] you don't understand. (Did you not make an appointment for Dec. 10?) Yes. (I want the explanation. I am entitled to it.) * * you shall get it soon from Light * * (Did you say 'Light'?) yes, yes, yes. (What do you mean?) one [?] one. (Do you mean this lady here?) no.

(Then you mean Mrs. Piper?) on Light. not [?] her [?] ('Not her') no. (Is Mrs. Piper the Light that you mean?) * * (Give me the worldly name of the light.) You do not need it. (It must be Mrs. Piper.) So let it be. So let it be. (I think that you ought to tell me.) we cannot as we would like to here. mama, you * * Cecil is here. (I cannot see why you cannot tell me when you can write what you do.) we are a [to] get * * more light. (I hope that I shall be satisfied with the explanation.) Yes. (You ought to have known when you made the appointment.) * * * [undec.] all right, yes, yes, * * * (Mrs. S. feels hurt and grieved.) no, I want her to be above it all. (How can she when she was treated so.) She will, yes. (Mrs. S. will not consent to be used if she is to be treated this way.) yes, yes. (We like to get these reasons from ourselves, not from Mrs. Piper.) Yes, yes, get them here. (Tell me then the reason. She feels very badly about it.) Let her wait a little longer. (Our patience is pretty well exhausted, friend.) no. (She says 'nobody is here'.) [Mrs. S. made this remark as she watched what was being written.] no one is here. you are here. we are here. (Friend, that shook her somewhat. She believes that you are here.) * * [resembles 'Elebert'.] Hyslop. she kanoot [cannot] ask most [?] * * (You may write, friends.) [scrawls.] Good night ngho He [Planchette made a line downward and drew a period like figure and repeated the act twice after and ceased the writing.] "

December 2nd, 1902. Sitting held by Mrs. S. alone. The little baby was at the table. George was out of doors playing. I (Mr. S.) was down street. Mrs. S. felt her hand shake and she thought that it was perhaps the desire of the invisibles to communicate and so she sat alone.

" (If there is any one here he can have the privilege of writing through me.) Hyslop, yes we know. [Mr. S. came in at this point and suggested this the best time.] yes, we know. you come. this is the best time. which is the best. when, when, where, when — yes, why, why, — yes time.

[He reports also that he was talking rapidly about several things related to the general matter of communications and the next message came.]

You must not talk so fast, fast, yes. (Did you say that I must not talk so fast?) Yes fast. will you rem— remember hereafter. (I do not quite get it.) will you remember hereafter. (Yes, I will try. I get what you wrote.) Good, we will try again, again, yes. (Yes, I know.) you will sometime again. ll Hyslop. (Go on, please.) ll Hyslop."

December 10th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work the first part of the sitting, pencil the latter. Mrs. S. in a peculiar condition, not completely unconscious but unable to resist the influence.

We did not offer prayer as we have often done, but said:—

"(All right, friends.) Better ask a blessing. (We did so. I prayed for Mrs. S. and for Mrs. Piper, that all might be done in harmony with the will of God.) * * * (I cannot read it.) you see it better be so. [Period inserted.] [Some questions not recorded, but a note says that they pertained to the reading of the writing.] better be so. no, be so. be. so. [After each of the last two words the period was inserted in an emphatic manner.] so, yes, yes. (What do you mean?) we told you. (I think I now understand you. Go on friends.) [Pencil here substituted for planchette, but the writing is noticeably indistinct and scrawly.]

* * * (Go on.) * * (Go on.) * * (Go on.) wait.

(I will go on.) wellcome, send H word. (I cannot read it.) send H a word quick. (What shall it be?) as you like it, yes. (Do you mean for me to send Dr. Hyslop word?) no. (To whom shall I send it?) never mind. (Go on.) we have taken it. (Do you mean that you have taken word to Dr. Hodgson?) yes. (Go on.) When you write to father, Willis, tell him I am here. (Who is writing?) Don't you know. (No, I do not.) Sylvester. (I am delighted to have you here, Sylvester. Go on.) Yes, Cecil. (Go on. Do you wish to talk to me, Sylvester?) more faith in us faith [word 'faith' in last instance written more plainly and letter 'i' dotted and 't' crossed.] (I will try to have it, Sylvester.) a SHIP.

[Mr. S. learned at the end of the sitting that at this point Mrs. S. saw a sentence of perhaps a dozen words, but all she could get of it was the word 'ship'. She did not will to print this, but it seemed as if some one took hold of her hand and wrote it.]

[Mr. S. had to leave the room to see after the baby and brought her in with him and said:—] (I have brought little Nettie in.) my dear good sister I love her too and George, Hullo. [Just at this moment George came in.] (Mr. S.: George, say hullo to Cecil.) [George did so.] yes. (Go on friends, write what you please. I shall not try to dictate.) will you come day after next, friends. (Do you mean at Mrs. Piper's?) here. (Do you mean Friday?) yes yes. (At the same hour.) Yes. (We will friends.) Thanks be to God for his goodness to me. (Will you tell me who is controlling things here?) [No reply.] [The pencil moved off the paper.] "

Mrs. S. reported the following experience during the sitting and it shows that she was not in a deep trance:

"I saw Cecil's name printed in blue and gold letters, the same colors that were in the cross when I saw it. The name was printed just as he used to print it.

"I could not become unconscious. I knew everything that was written. My right temple snapped. When I was released it seemed as if they left me way up high. My body was numb. My right hand seemed to be normal at first. I did not see any words, and did not see the cross as before."

I need hardly comment on this sitting, as the same characteristics will appear in later instances where the Emperor group of alleged personalities are supposed. There is here no evidence of their presence, but rather distinct suspicions of their absence and of simulation.

[Further experience in the development of mediumship leads me to alter the statement made in this last paragraph. While there is not evidence in the record by itself that the Emperor group are working, the experience that I have had in the development of Mrs. Chenoweth, indicating at times that a personality may be exercising an influence when other personalities that are present may not know it, leads me to reverse the suspicion mentioned here. J. H. H. August 15th, 1916.]

December 12th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil work. Little writing at this sitting, and this indistinct as usual with the pencil. Sitting held at 10.45 a. m.

"(We are all ready, friends.) cannot get. try to so do not worry. [Very indistinct.] (I shall not worry.) [Writing illegible and first part resembles inverted mirror writing. Finally it began to be legible and normal, but the first words are doubtful.] It will only take time. [The next question is not recorded.] It is hard for us to get here [?] controll [?] (Write as plainly as possible.) * * * we are trying. (Go on, friends.) [Scrawls as if trying to make certain definite letters resembling those of a foreign language possibly.] "

Mrs. S. narrates the following as having occurred during the

sitting. At the point at which Mr. S. said he would not worry the hand moved up and down and the body shook. The vision seems to have occurred at the close of the sitting.

"I saw a madonna and child. The woman was veiled in white and a circle was around her head. She was draped at each side of her head with a long cape. The child was in her arms and the madonna was about as tall and fleshy as myself. Her skin was grayish white and the woman was following me with the child in her right arm. Just after I saw her I saw the cross. The cross was very brilliant and of a whitish color rather than blue and yellow as before. In connection with it I saw letters or characters like the following: J I) C What their meaning is I do not know."

"Before the writing began everything seemed to be like waves of light, as if rolling in cloud like forms."

What may have suggested the vision of the madonna and child is not known, but it is not necessary to know this to understand the natural association which might suggest the cross to follow and the letters following this which may have been due to a latent or subliminal connection with the Hebrew characters said to have been nailed on the cross of Christ. The religious belief and temperament of Mrs. S. would account for this easily.

December 16th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Pencil tried at first, and then planchette, owing to failure of pencil to bring any results.

"(All right friends.) [Lines drawn followed by an undecipherable word though some of the letters are clear.] Good may come of all * * * * Good — [Scrawls.] (I cannot read it.) * * (Go on, please.) [No reply.] [Planchette substituted.]

[Immediately a face was drawn with spectacles and a mustache.] (Who is here?) Yes, South side. (Explain.) Sea rs paen. (I cannot see into this. Please tell us so that we will know.) no, you surely are very anxious, very. (Please let in all the light you can. That is so.) ha! ha! (I see it is a good joke.) no, good of you. (All right. I would like to [know] more about it.) so you are a good one to ask questions of us, yet you ask to [too] many, you should better be satisfied with what you get. were [apparently

erased.] we are hear [here], but you do not always know us. we wish we could mak [make] you always understand.

(Go on please. Tell us what you wish to.) I like to have you retire while with us. (I do not see what this means. Go on, tell us.) like to have her retire awhile with us. (What do you wish to have me do?) nothing. (Tell me what do you want her to do?) retire. (What do you mean?) alone. (Alone?) yes. (Do you want me to go out of the room?) no. (Mrs. S. wants to know where you want her to go.) go alone. (Do you want her to go into the trance?) Eleanor. [The letters 'ea' in this word or name are not clear and are perhaps conjectural. The rest are distinct.]

[Mr. S., I think rightly, conjectures that the reference here may be to the name of Mrs. Piper which is "Eleanora", and this is known to Mrs. S. The possible meaning of the message is that Mrs. S. is to go alone to a sitting with Mrs. Piper, while the previous engagement broken off was, I think, to include Mr. S. with his wife. J. H. H.]

(She is willing and so am I. Go ahead.) Tomorrow come here and we will try to help you more. (Yes, I will. Who has been writing?) We have, friend. (You are known at Mrs. Piper's as Doctor, Rector, Prudens and Imperator. Will you tell me who is writing here?) yes, yes, sometime we will take her away and you will know. (Please tell me who is directing things with her.) Patience. [Written in large script.]

["Mrs. S. thinks that this means that some spirit by that name is doing it all. I think that it means that I am to have patience. —Mr. S.]

(All right. Have you anything else?) Yes, much. but enough for now."

December 17th, 1902. Present. Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(We are all ready, friends. You may write.) W. M. S. [initials of Mr. Smead.] (W. M. S.?) Yes. (Go on.) Get out. (What do you mean?) no, ye, no, we are not ready. (Well, all right. I did not know but that you wanted me to get out of the room.) no. (All right.) * * [Same word repeated twice, the second time the letters are quite clear, but word without known meaning. First time written it appears to be 'urmeanues', the second time, 'urmineam'. Next page, 'urmeanma' and either 'urmenian' or 'armenian'.]

(I cannot read it. Go on.) never never * * [evident attempt to repeat the above word that was written so often, but is not clear. It is either 'mmaneur' or 'armaneur' with a doubt about the

last three letters.] never we cannot * * yet. not yet, not yet. (Is it 'not yet'?) yes, yes. (You spoke about her retiring with you. She is all ready.) we [?] she hre her [?] * * * * we will com [come] for her * * [scrawl.] (All right.) you must let us try. [not clear.] (question asked with reference to reading and reply was.) you must let us try. (Question as to reading repeated.) Let us try. [written in larger letters, but still scrawly.] (Go on.) * * * * [Pencil changed for planchette.] (Go on.) no, * * she needs attending to * * * * (Do you want me to fix her head on the pillow?) not that. (What is the matter with her?) look and see.^h [Evidently something more was said or done, as the word 'no' was written in a very indistinct way.]

Mr. S. says: "I did look and could see nothing wrong and she was awakened. After she came to consciousness I found that one leg was cramped in the chair. I did not know it and could not see what was the matter, and found out only after she awakened."

The handwriting with the pencil was very fine and showed no clear resemblance to that with the planchette, though it was distinctly like the normal handwriting of Mrs. S.

December 18th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Sitting was begun with no special thought of a message. I asked to use the planchette for the fun of it. Mrs. S. was willing. We did not have the slightest seriousness and Mrs. S. was specially cheerful and frivolous. 8.30 p. m.

"(Go on.) [Scrawls. First apparently inverted writing, not mirror.] no, * * Yes. * * (Mrs. S.: This is all nonsense.) no, no, one are two. (Mrs. S.: I guess this is George's subliminal. It has come down-stairs and written that line.) no, no [?] two plus two are four. (Go on, friend.) Yes, we are. when we can your friends. (Who is writing?) no one you would at this time know. (Never mind that. Will you write your name?) * * [Not clear. Might be either 'Elmar Chas.' or 'Charle has', though the symbol after 'C' is not a clear 'h'.] Marshall. no. [I thought it was Elmer Chas. Marshall.] (Please write it again.) Westerly. (Westerly?) Yes. (What state?) Mass. no. (Did you not make a mistake in the state?) no, Western Was [?] [erased.] (Please write your name again.) Westerly Marston. (Please write the whole of your name.) Marston melburn mary. (I understand that your name is Mary Marston.) Yes. (Where did

you live when you lived on earth?) do not know. (Will you try and tell me how many years you have been in the spirit world?) do not no [know.] (Never mind. Write for me what you wish.) [Scrawl, supposed by Mr. S. to be an attempt at drawing of a flower.] mary Marston. Grandpa is coming. (Go on.) here soon. (Go on.) no, they must tell him, so he may know. (Whom do you mean?) Elisha Marston. (Elisha Marston?) it is he. [not clear.] (Write it again.) it is he. (I understand that all right. Were you married when on earth?) not that only little. (Little?) yes. (You were a little child when you were on the earth, were you?) yes, tell him I must be going. tell him. (I cannot do that. I cannot tell him. It will not do for me to do so. I cannot and will not do it.) you can and you must. (I cannot tell him.) you must. (I cannot do it. And I shall not unless you tell me how I can do it. If you will try to do this I will try to do as you wish.) Mary. written vertically. your ——— no, [scrawls.] "

In the evening after a nap Mrs. S. had a vision of some roses. There were five of them and they appeared in the form of a bunch of light.

This sitting has some interest. It must be taken, however, in connection with the second experiment on December 22nd, which completes it.

On December 19th at noon Mr. S. got a *Boston Herald* of that date and chanced to see in it an obituary notice of the death of a George H. Marston whom he had known and whom Mrs. S. had met once for perhaps five minutes. The dispatch to the *Herald* was dated December 18th and was sent from Lowell, Mass., where this man had lived and died. His home proper was in Centralville, a part of Lowell, though situated on the opposite bank of the Merrimac River. It lies northerly, not westerly, from Lowell.

A full notice of this Mr. Marston's life and death appears in the *Lowell Morning Citizen* of December 19th. He was an officer, according to the account in the paper, of the same denominational church to which Mr. S. belongs as well as known slightly to the latter. His father, Elisha Marston, died last September two days after his 101st birthday. Mary Marston may be the name of the little girl of Mr. George H. Marston's brother. All that Mr. and Mrs. S. know at present is that a little girl of this brother's is deceased. [Inquiry, however, shows that

her name was Grace. J. H. H.] Mrs. S. gives the following statement:—

"All I know of the Marston family is that Mrs. Dr. Marston, of Center Sandwich, lost a little girl. He is the brother of George H. Marston. I did not know her name or age. I do not remember calling there but a few times, not over four times while in the town two years. I knew nothing of their family affairs whatever. This George H. Marston that died I met at a reception to his father on his 97th birthday and only spoke to him in a general way about the weather and how pleasant it was that his father enjoyed such good health at his age. The reception was one where the people passed in and out, speaking a few words to the old gentleman and wishing him many happy returns of the day, etc. There were no private talks or chances for it. Neither Mr. S. nor myself ever had any correspondence with these parties at all.

"I do not know anything about Mary Heard except that she died a few months after Cecil. This I found out from the *Manchester Union*, which stated that she died in the hospital somewhere near Boston. About her home life I knew nothing, as I made only two calls at their home, one while she was sick in bed and the other when she was just recovering and was able to sit up a little. In neither case did I remain long enough to ask anything about private affairs, had I been inclined to do it."

December 21st, 1902. This record does not represent a regular experiment after the manner of previous instances. Mr. S. had gone out on some business and came back at about 11 a. m. to find Mrs. S. in a semi-conscious state at automatic writing. The pencil was used. It first began with very fine script, but became heavier in the second line. It is characterized all the way through, except the last word, by the wavy style of making the letters, showing great difficulty in the writing. Much of it is undecipherable, and none of it shows systematic connection of sentences. No questions are recorded, or indication that questions were even asked. I shall transcribe it as best I can, though I have to depend upon the reading of Mr. S. in many instances, as he is usually better at reading it than I am.

"Hyslop, yes we know * * * * yes we know. we will say [?] * * this is the best time * * which is the best.

[An interesting circumstance is the fact that the words "which is the best" were written in clear style without the wavy appearance and in a form much more decidedly resembling the normal handwriting of Mrs. S. J. H. H.]

when when when when yes * * * * yes time. * * * * [very scrawly.] you must not talk so fast [scrawls] fast, yes, [sheet changed.] yes, fast * * * * remember hereafter, will you remember hereafter. good we will try again again, yes. you will sometime again [scrawl.] Hyslop H. Hyslop." [Mrs. S. became conscious.]

The period was inserted after the capital "H". The chief interest in the writing at the close of the sitting is the fact that the name "Hyslop" as first written was in the wavy style, and the capital "H" was also very wavy. But the last time the name was written it was in a perfectly clear style and reproduces in a somewhat backhand style the normal writing of Mrs. S. But in all cases except the two indicated the writing was not only wavy, but is identical in style with what occurs whenever my father purports to communicate. There is no evidence that any such real person is communicating, and hence the unity of the personality is an interesting circumstance and shows the consistency of secondary personality when it is assumed to account for such phenomena.

December 22nd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 11 a. m.

"(We are all ready. You may go on please.) Robert Hyslop. (Robert Hyslop? Is it he? Do you hear me?) Hislop Robert, what. (I said, do you hear me, Robert Hyslop?) that is me, sir. (Go on. What do you want. Free your mind.) we we [planchette moved across the sheet and then back.] we want to hear you plainer. you [?] (I am glad to have you come. Did you hear that?) yes, yes. (All right now, Mr. Hyslop.) yes, good. (All right. Go on, and tell me what you want to.) we must not let my son think he is to get well. it is impossible. he will be a little better away from the City, but James can never get well, never get well i say [the letter 'i' was dotted after writing the word 'say', as if in that way to make it a capital.]

(Let me fix the little baby, please. I can read that all right. I will be back in a moment.) Yes, [scrawls.] Go.

(All right now, Mr. Hyslop. Go on.) What I say is to son James. (You do not want me to tell James this do you?) Yes, yes, James must know. (I got that all right. Tell me anything else for son James you may wish. I will tell him for you.) Good. [Marks on the paper show some movement of the pencil in the planchette. Mr. S. remarks in a note that there was a very marked illustration of telegraph clicking at this point. Compare pp. 317, 320, 523.]

(All right. Go on, please.) * * (Go on.) Yes. as [?]
(Do you want to write anything more?) * *

[Intermission of about five minutes. Mrs. S. got up and fixed the baby. We took our places at the end of this time and I said to Mrs. S. that I was sure they would go on and write more. She said they are gone and that no more would be written. I took out a ten cent silver piece from my pocket and said to her that I would give it to her if there were not more writing. The following was the reply of the planchette.]

No that is not the way to do, friend. (I was rebuked and put the ten cent piece in my pocket and spoke about it. The planchette moved over to me so as to hear and wrote.) to [too] fast. (I have put it up. I will not do it again. Go on and write what you wish.) Yes * * (I cannot read that.) no. (All right. I will tell your son what you wish me to. Go on if you please.) Thanks, good day. (Who is going away now?) Hyslop. (Good day Mr. Hyslop. Come again any time you want.) Yes i will [Letter 'i' dotted after writing the word 'will'.]

"Mrs. S. was fully conscious all through this sitting. She said that her hand seemed transparent while the writing was going on and that she could see the writing on the table cloth before it was written on the paper by the planchette. This was a new phenomenon."

I had a short time before given up my position in Columbia University on account of the danger of renewing the tuberculosis and many friends who did not know the exact facts thought that I was in a more serious condition than was the fact. This sitting is the echo of this impression in Mrs. S.'s mind.

December 22nd, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 8 p. m.

"(We are all ready now. Go on please.) Yes, yes. [period inserted.] * * grey. (I do not understand that. Who is it please?) Mary H——d (Is it Mary Heard?) H——d. [A long line was drawn after writing the 'H' and before the 'd' was written.] (I am not sure. Please write that last name.) [The planchette went back to the proper place and inserted the letters 'ear' between the original letters 'H——d', making it clearly read 'Heard'.] yes. To you a merry Christmas. So you are afraid to take my message. (Do you mean that word is 'message'?) Yes. (What do you mean?) You remember grandpa, and we want him to believe. (I see. I shall tell Mrs. Marston and she can tell Elisha Marston.) for her little one who loves them. (Go on. I will do it for you.) Yes, he may believe it and be so much better for him when he comes into life. (All right. Who is Mary Heard?) [The planchette moved over and erased the name 'Mary Heard' which I had written on the corner of the sheet on which I was recording the question.] (You said the last time that your name was Mary Marston. Now you call it Mary Heard, and I do not understand it at all.)

[I said this to the spirit, but personally I thought that this spirit was her—Mrs. S.'s subliminal—and playing the Harrison Clarke game on me.]

no, no Marston Mary [last name written in larger script.] (But Mary Heard was written tonight. Who is Mary Heard?) me, no. (Please explain this to me.) needs none. (What?) m [erased.] needs none. (I do not understand it at all.)

[It seemed all the more to me that it was a game like Harrison Clarke's.]

Mr. Smead, I am Mary Heard of Centre Sandwich. marston's little Girl wants them to help Grandpa. You know the rest why we came. (What is the word after 'know'?) the rest. (I see it all now, Mrs. Heard. I am glad to have you here tonight. I will write to Mrs. Dr. Marston and tell her what the little girl wishes. Have you anything that you wish to tell me? I shall be glad to receive it.) Yes, much, want more had [erased.] time. (All right. Go on please.) [Scrawl.] we were a little Surprised [last word began a new line.] last time so came to you. [Evidently a question was asked here as to reading of the word time, as the planchette, after completing the sentence, went back and crossed the letter 't' in 'time'.]

(I do not understand what you refer to.) George Came. (George Marston?) Yes. (All right, go on Mrs. Heard.) Little William, my only baby —— Cecil is here. (Mrs. Heard, William is a pretty boy, so bright. I liked him and Cecil did also.) * * * and we go and see him, but he does not know us now. (Go on.) no moooooooooo [lines drawn.] good night. (Mrs. Heard, tell Cecil I love him as I used to do, and so does his mama.) no need, he

knows it. (Have you any other mesasge to write, Mrs. Heard?) not now. (Good night, Mrs. Heard. God bless you and Cecil in that other life.) my baby."

Mr. S. adds in a note: "I think this sitting is one of the best I ever had through Mrs. S. It is in every way characteristic of Mrs. William Heard, whom I used to know in Center Sandwich, N. H."

The interest in this sitting, on any theory whatever, is found in the following facts, known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead.

We have seen from the sitting of Dec. 18th and the newspaper accounts that George H. Marston had just died. This Mrs. Mary Heard was in life the neighbor and intimate friend of Mrs. Dr. Marston, the wife of this gentleman's brother, and still living. Elisha Marston was the father of this George H. Marston, and still living, as indicated in a previous note (p. 538). He was known not to be a believer in a future life. The little girl, here alleged to be his granddaughter, probably refers to the Mary Marston, mentioned December 18th. But the "communications" represent her as interested in telling this grandfather of his approaching death and the need of believing. But psychologically the most interesting fact is the indirect manner in which the information is conveyed, and the medium through which it is conveyed, so close to the death of George H. Marston. It is done through the deceased friend of his brother's living wife.

December 25th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. 7 p. m. to 8.30 p. m.

"(All right. You may go on. We are all ready.) Be sure and do as you are told. (What do you mean?) To tell our earth friends. (That is not clear to me. Tell me what you mean.) Sylvester. (Sylvester?) Yes. (What have you got to do about telling our earth friends?) G George. (What do you want me to tell?) H. marston. (Is George H. Marston here?) No, sent a message. (Does George H. Marston wish to send me a message?) he wishes it. (I understand. Who is writing, please?) Your friend, Brother Sylvester. (All right Sylvester. I am glad you are here tonight. I gave the message that you gave me for father. Have you anything else to say?) Strange it is so hard for him to

believe, Billy. hes ['s' erased.] knows I am all right. will continue his doubting. why does he do it, Billy.

[The planchette moved over to me to hear what I would say in reply.] (I can only say, Sylvester, that he will reason in a circle and if he is convinced once you will have to do it all over again. You know how it is with him. Go on, tell me all that you want.)

Merry Christmas papa and mama, George. (I wish you many merry Christmases, Cecil.) Many papa. you tell little Brover for me. (I will, dear. Go on, Clevie.) Tell him we liked his tree and best of all that we saw him good to baby sister. (Go on) Tell him Cecil knows he was thinking about him. I love dear good little Brover. (Are you happy where you are?) why papa do you ask me. (Don't you sometimes feel bad, Cecil?) No, papa I as ['as' erased.] know will come bye & bye. we do not have things like you. lots of people come I know. (Don't you know that we feel very sad often, Clevie?) Yes, but you must love me lots, so you won't have to papa. (I feel sorry Cecil because I cannot see you or hear you speak to me.) I sometimes do and you answer me papa." Sitting broke off here. Baby sick and vomiting.

December 27th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"[Scrawls.] (I guess Clarke is back again.) no [or 'me'] (Please write the way we usually do.) Yes, better not say too much. [Interruption.] [scrawl.] er rest. let us talk. [resembles 'lallc'] (What is the word after 'us'?) talk. (All right.) * * this is * * (You are welcome.) llllbcccccccc. (I cannot make it out.) ererest. ['t' crossed.] (Free your mind. Go on.) we cannot here [hear] you so. [I spoke very slowly.] (Go on. Free your mind.) better let it go now. (Shall we stop this?) It is better so. (Who is writing?) Good night Sylvester. (When shall we sit again?) Second day of the coming week. (Shall it be in the morning or evening?) light. (Light?) yes. (Do you mean daylight?) as you call it."

December 29th, 1902. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 11 a. m. The sitting was held in accordance with an appointment of Sylvester, who refused to allow a sitting on Saturday evening last and suggested this Monday morning. The sitting was begun with prayer.

One interesting coincidence in connection with the sittings

in most cases recently is the fact that the baby is quiet during the hour of the experiment.

" (All right. You may do what you please with the light. She is willing.) [Scrawls.] yes, yes. (Go on, friend.) Sylvester. (Thank you.) you are welcome. (Go on, Sylvester.) Yes, I am glad to met [meet] you here again, Brother and know you relize [realize] ——— [pause.]

[We both noticed the spelling of this word 'realize' and laughed about it. Sylvester evidently noticed that we were doing something and at once wrote after a brief pause.]

What is the trouble? [Interrogation point inserted.] (There is no trouble Sylvester. I was pleased with the way that you spelled that word. That is all.) realise, realize. (All right, go on.) that we are able to come to you. (I understand. Go on and tell all that you can.) Yes. (Shall I ask questions?) No, not yet.

[At this point I spoke of the fact that the baby was so good when she had been so fretful before and needed so much attention.]

(All right, go on.) you need not be surprised. we know how better than you do, brother. (All right.) How to take. ['take' undecipherable but for its occurrence in the next sentence.] (All right.) How to take care of the little ones best.

[Mr. S. spoke of the fact that the baby was always quiet when the sitting was held. The form of the statement is not preserved, and hence the answer is not wholly intelligible.]

So do I. [Mrs. S. noticing the way the capital 'I' was made said:—] (That is a G clef.) Yes. [Then the planchette moved up to the proper place and made a capital 'I' just after the one resembling G clef.] (Go on. All right.) [A musical staff with the clef was then made and the word 'one' written under it.]

(All right. Go on.) no, They are not at present. They are to [too] soon.

[We did not say anything to suggest this and were both much surprised to read it and did not understand it.]

(I do not understand. Please explain.) next year. (I do not see. What do you mean?) Have them there. [After writing the last word, 'there', the planchette moved up and crossed the 't' in 'them' and then down again and crossed the 't' in 'there'.] (I do not understand.) Yes, down there. (What do you mean by 'down there'?) more light. you no [know]. (Listen to me. I cannot understand this at all, Sylvester.) Good. (Please explain.) Good one. you know so well and say you do not. (I do not know what you mean.) Yes, where there is more light uou [you] know. (Do you mean at Mrs. Piper's?) where there is more light, next year.

(Sylvester, listen to me. Do you mean at Mrs. Piper's at Ar-

lington, Mass., where Imperator, Rector, Doctor and Prudens and Dr. Hyslop and Dr. Hodgson have?) Yes, that is the place.

(All right. I do not yet quite see what you mean.) Read what I have said. (I have; still do not quite understand what you mean.) none meetings there at present. do you understand * * ['it' ?] now? [interrogation point inserted.]

(What do you intend to do there for me next year?) I cannot. I am here. (Are you kept with us?) with other Friends. (What friends are these?) wait and see.

(Sylvester, I have just received a letter from father. Shall I read it to you?) we know its contents already [already]. no need. was there when he composed its contents. (All right. Go on.) Yes, you do not know him as well over on your side as we do here. he is a good man Billy. (I have nothing against him, Sylvester.) no, I know that. [first 't' crossed.]

(Sylvester, I sent the last message that you gave me for father. Will you please send some word to father again.)

[There was a pause and for some time the planchette was occupied in drawing two oval shaped figures like spectacle glasses, and then wrote:—]

My bottles he did not save as I left them and many at first I could have gone to use untill I got my bearings better over here, you get it do you?

(I did not get the word after 'to'.) use until. ['t' crossed.] (I got that all right. But I do not see why you wanted to go to your bottles after you died.) better wait until another time for that.

[Mr. S. says: "At this point I went out of the room and looked at the fire. I was gone but a moment. During my absence the word 'well' and the 'I' of Ida were written and on my return the rest of the following.]

Well Ida you see we are about you. You remember our walks and Ham and Bacon. (Mrs. S. remembers it well, Sylvester.) (Mrs. S.: I presume that you have met her over there?) ['Her' referred to a Miss Rose Candlin, cf. pp. 482-485.] Yes. and poor Billy [Mr. S.] you remember him do you not? (Yes she does. She is laughing Vet.) ['Vet' was a name for Sylvester while living.] how about Billy?

(I am delighted to have you come, Sylvester, to Ida and write through her. It is all right with me Vet. I am all right.) "

In regard to the incidents of this sitting Mr. S. records the following facts:—

"My brother Sylvester before his death by accident (p. 90) had a lot of bottles of which he thought much. He had just finished the collection of them for experimental purposes a little while before his tragic death. These bottles with other chemical

apparatus were taken in charge by his father. What he did with them I do not now know. Mrs. S. knew that he had a collection of bottles, but that is all."

The incident about "Ham and Bacon" was this. One evening Sylvester came in time to accompany some young friends home from a meeting. Some one asked him if he had read *Bacon's Essays*, and his reply was that he did not like bacon but that he preferred ham. This occurred at a time when there was a little rivalry between him and his brother, Mr. S., about Mrs. S. before their marriage. This accounts for the question about "poor Billy" (cf. p. 304). Miss Rose Candlin was a friend of Sylvester's. All the facts of course were known to Mrs. S.

Mrs. S. reported after the sitting that her hand seemed to be all light while the writing was going on. It seemed as if a light was inside her hand and that it shone in all directions.

January 9th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 11 a. m. I arranged the room so as to shut out all the light that prevented my reading the writing and also shut the door leading into the kitchen, thinking that it might be well to have the room in which we were sitting as private as possible. Mrs. S. referred to this as a whim of mine and as nothing else.

"(All ready friends.) No. (What did I say that demanded the answer 'No'?) Yes, we will when the mind is at rest. (Do you mean what I said about its being a whim?) no we are not talking to you Brother. (I got that all right. What do you mean by it?) You cannot yet. very e [erased.] you may know and be able to understand, but ['t' crossed.] at present be willing to wait. you must let us work for you. see it takes time or perhaps it would be [erased.] be better to say that patience in our work is most needed brother; read it for me please.

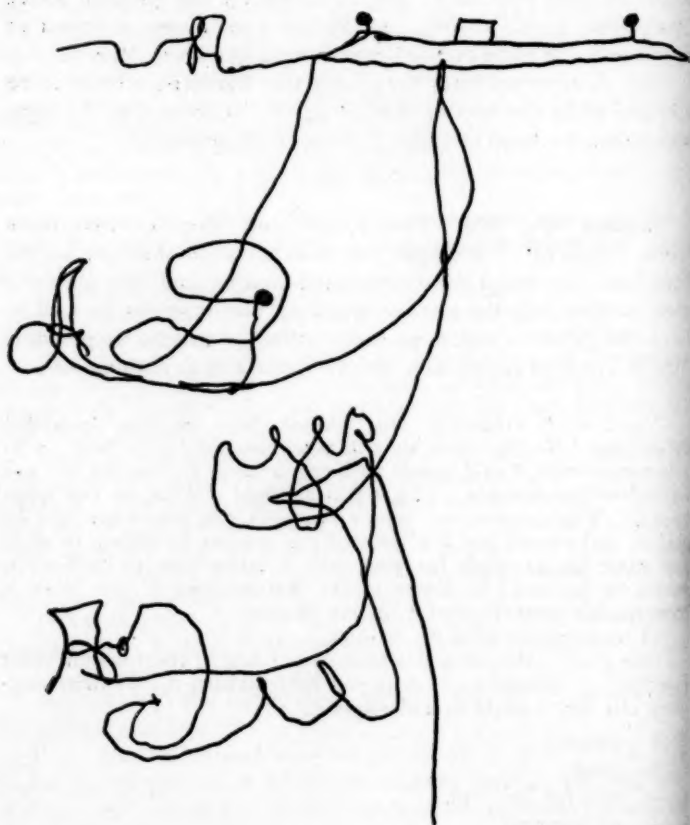
(I have read it all right. Go on.) very good. Do you understand what I said? [interrogation point inserted.] (I understand it as you have written it. Is there anything else that I ought to understand?)

1. patience.
2. quiet.
3. rest for the Soul.
4. of the mind.

5. faith in God's power to do what no mortal man can do.
6. faith in us.
7. Pray that God's will may be done always. enough for now. we will come again the second day of the coming week. good bye until then.

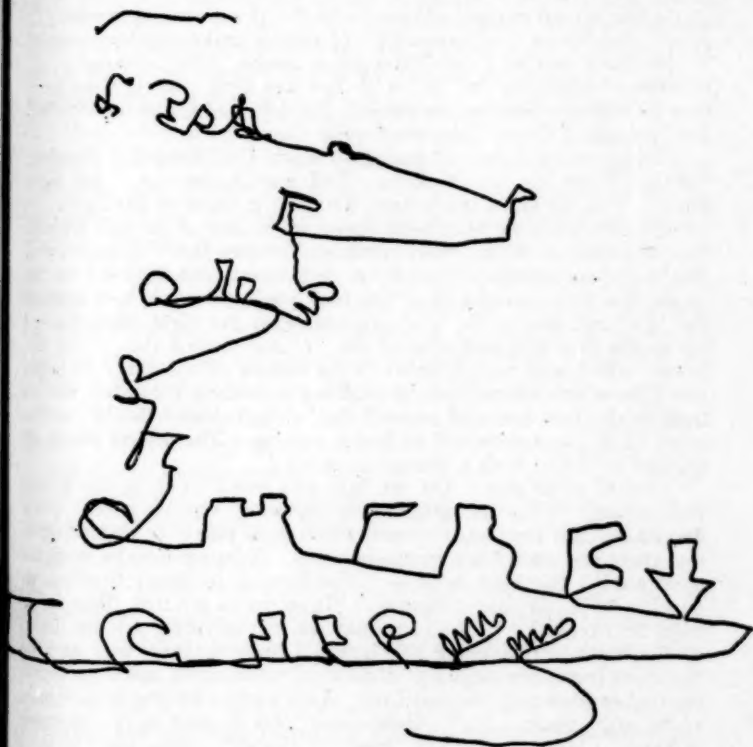
(Shall we rest awhile?) [I thought that if we waited about five minutes or so the writing would go on as before.]

until ['i' dotted.] the second day of the coming week. (Please tell me who has been writing.) do as you are told. (Please tell me who you are.) [No reply.] "



January 10th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Recurrence of Martian symbols.

"(All right. Go on.) [Sheet filled with Martian symbols.] (Let me know what you wrote.) Smead Boys. Yes, You cannot expect unless you do as you are told. (Tell me what this means.) not Expect much unless you mind mind. ['i' dotted in second instance of 'mind'.] (Whom am I to mind?) us [?] (Who are



you. Tell me whom I am to mind.) no. (Why ought I not to know?) You were told no. (Tell me some reason why.) Billy ['i' dotted.] we want you to stop now. I told you when [referring to time I was to have the next sitting.] (Why shall I stop?) Have you no common sense. (What harm does this do?) You should

rest ['t' crossed.] as I tod [told] ['t' crossed.] you. (Should Ida rest?) Both ['t' crossed.] (Have you anything that you wish to write?) no, Sylvester ['t' crossed.] "

January 14th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

" (We are all ready. Go on.) * * ['wesser' ?] werea [?] Jester, narallstone ['t' crossed.] (I cannot make anything out of it Be more careful.) mellumn soma anetto ['t's' crossed. 'e' in 'Soma' might be 'a' or 'u'.] we are here. werer [we are] here Sheeldon. Sheldon essssssssC Sheldon, Coi Close to to Jceld [or 'I c told'] Chom. [last word quite clear.]

(Please write your full names.) Ruth ['t' crossed.] Sheldon. (Wait till she can fix the baby. Tell me all you can. All right now.) Yes, we know it bit [but] we think it better in the light.

[At this point the planchette began at the end of the last written line consisting of the last three words and crossed the 't's' and dotted the 'i's', proceeding to the left, in each word, and then moved up to the line above consisting of the four previous words and crossed the 't's' and dotted the 'i's' proceeding to the right, then moved up to the first line and crossed the 't' and dotted the 'i' in the word 'with', and moved down to the middle of the sheet to begin new "communications", but as recalling something forgotten, moved back to the first line and crossed the 't' and dotted the 'i' in the word 'but', and returned to begin writing. The letters were all crossed or dotted with a strange accuracy.]

(Never mind that. Do the best you can.) Let us do it our way, please. (The sitting that you appointed was no good. How do you account for that?) too tired on your side. (I should think that there was some hitch in this business. When is it to be straightened out?) the light is t—— The light is to [too] tired to us [use]. it should have a change. (It seems to me that there is always an excuse.) * * (I cannot see that anything ails the light, or this light.) [Meaning the lamp.] Have it your way and be Satisfied [new line begun.] Billy. (I want some spirit to prove his or her identity.) we will try. (All right Go on, if it is safe to do so.) Sister * * [resembles 'Mer C west is'.] Margret is here. (Margaret who?) hogg. (Hogg?) Yes. [or 'it is'.] (Go on.) is here. Tell her that little [new line begun.] sister Robbie flowers— tell her that brother is over here all right, that we will so love her, that we have watched her— yes pooor [poor] (Whom do you want this message to reach?) little sister Marget Marget ret ['t' crossed.] * * g ——— She ——— [scrawls.] (Write the name, please.) * * [undec. apparently 'Little']

H e S S S S * * (We did not get it.) James hogg. Yes George, many thanks, aand [and] good night Billy. (Who is James Hogg?) hogg was hide * * Mar (Where did he live?) Hide park Park. [The planchette after writing 'Park' went back and wrote the letter 'y' over the 'i' in 'Hide' making it 'Hyde'.] (Will you tell me how I shall find this out?) It does not need it [five words not clear.] write Ellen. She'll know. (When shall we sit again?) Suit her, yes. (Anything else?) no."

I happened to be at the home of Mr. Smead when I first saw the original automatic writing and record in this sitting and when I saw the name "Chom" I asked him if he knew what it meant. He replied that he did not, but that he had so read it at the time. He asked me if I understood it and I replied that I thought I did. I then asked him if either he or Mrs. Smead had ever read the "Spirit Teachings" of Stainton Moses, or any of his writings, or any of the records in the *Proceedings* of the Society for Psychical Research, and he replied that they had never seen them in any form or shape. I then remarked that I thought he or Mrs. Smead, or both, had seen the allusion to that name in Mrs. Barker's letter criticising my Report of the Piper case, in the *Journal* for Psychical Research (Vol. X, p. 175), to which I had replied in the April number of the same year (p. 212). Mr. Smead replied that he had never seen either Mrs. Barker's letter or my reply. He had moved to his present place before those numbers were sent to him and they were never forwarded to his present postoffice address. I remembered then that he had told me soon after his removal, when I mentioned the letters, that he must send for them to be forwarded. But he says he never did so, and had never seen the letters. Mrs. Barker in her letter alluded to excuses that the Emperor group gave for not succeeding in certain experiments and quoted from Stainton Moses the phrase "abortive attempt on the part of Chom to make a light". I had of course supposed that Mrs. Smead had seen this sentence and name and that its reproduction here was due to subliminal memory, but the evidence is not in favor of this origin of the name.

January 15th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Anniversary of Mr. Smead's birthday.

" (All ready.) Line drawn toward Mr. S. as if to greet him. (Good morning Sylvester. I am glad you are here.) Good ['G' printed in capital.] morning ['i' dotted.] my friend ['i' dotted.] (Is Sylvester writing?) orin orin Robbin. (Write it again.) * * Brother we will need a patient watcher. (What do you mean?) you must not expect to have it always your (way) you need it ours sometime. (All right. Do what you wish.) Even yours truly Billy. (Go on Sylvester. Let her head rest on her arm.) you may please [Planchette wrote 'pea' and then moved upward over the letter 'e' and wrote 'l' and then finished the word.] him [possibly 'hern' or 'her' with 'n' after it.] You may please me. You must ot [not] ['t' crossed.] [Curved line after 't' in 'must' may be intended for 'n'.] forget to do it what is right. (What do you mean?) we told you. (Tell me about the old farm, something we only knew.) letters to hattie [Hattie] yes you know Her don't you Brother. (Yes, but I did not write her any letters.) Yes you did, Billy. [Mr. S. adds note: 'I doubt this'.] (No, tell me about it.) She did not and we dd [did] and well [will ?] not will [well ?] You are * * well. [Mrs. S. suffering from severe headache.]

(Go on.) no, we were so many times out to see her. we used to come home from there and she used to sing you into [sheet changed.] into loving her. how is that Billy? (Please write that last again.) you into loving her."

January 16th, 1903. Present Rev. G. M. C., Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Morning sitting.

"Mother comes * * no when. [After writing 'no' the planchette moved up to the top of the sheet and wrote this word 'when' above the first message, and then returned to the bottom of the sheet and wrote 'we'.]

(Please try and write it again.) Yes, we come ['we' not clear.] * * mother comes * * mother mother comes. (What word after 'mother'?) mother comes, mother goes, we [?] shuld [?] [should] we like, no. (Go on.) George, son [?] why . . . [scrawl.] why don't you preach. it is best for you George. (Shall I read it?) mother says no, let George. we are glad to see him. he knows we live hear near him, no. (Write it again for us.) Live near him, yes. (Mr. C.: Go on. Who is writing?) Sylvester [very scrawly.] For mother my son for [?] mother [?] yes. (Mr. C.: Who is present?) she is not my mother, but your Friend's. ds * * (Go on.) C—— [gentleman's name.] some one sick. a lady, yes, we do not get her name. the room. have left her there alone and her bed is to the south aslan [sheet

changed.] island [interpreted 'lamp'] near the left [Planchette moved to left to begin a new line and then returned and wrote 'is' above 'left'.] grec [grey] hair and table. She is very sick. she better [or 'the letter'] a yellow one * * Sorry tha [that or they] leave her so on [?] (Must you leave Mrs. S. now?) Yes. (Come this afternoon.) will try, yes."

Mr. C.'s name is George. The advice to preach, he says, would be what his mother would say to him, she being deceased. He told me personally that he had ceased preaching because of difficulties with his throat, but that he had been seriously thinking of returning to it, and that he had not told any one of these thoughts, least of all Mr. and Mrs. S. He does not live in the same place, Mrs. S. had only met him a short time before, as he was in the town on church business connected with a conference.

January 16th, 1903. Present Rev. G. M. C., Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Afternoon sitting.

"(All right. We are here.) Welcome Friends. Be sure to to do it. your Duty is to preach. you should not Live [new line begun.] this way. there do u [you] understand that. you you must tell your friend—yes—no, no, from mother to your friend. (Mr. C.: What should I do?) always she likes you to, why she says, preach. (Mr. C.: Why should I preach tonight when I have a sore throat and have preached six times this week so far.) not tonight. She says to always and stay at home. (What is meant by staying at home?) not live all around. we like you to preach to one people, one church, don't you understand now. you understand, yes. (Mr. C.: Yes, I understand. I wish you would tell me where to preach. I don't know.) Lawrence. (Why Lawrence? Why not some other place?) go back. (The same place?) better so. (Tell me what to do. I don't know.) go preach. (Would it not be better for me to go to W——— or K———?) no, go where we think best. we can help you much [words 'you much' erased.] you best . . . [scrawl.] the work we want you to. Billy, be patient. [I was a little nervous. Mr. S.] finish the work. [Apparently not read at the time.] Finish the work, yes, yes * * * good by. Come soon soon again, yes, yes. * * she will."

The reference to preaching explains itself after the allusion in the previous sitting already explained. It seems that Mr. C. had

had a pastorate in Lawrence and gave it up for the reason mentioned. He was now travelling about on other church business, but thought seriously of returning to a pastor's duties. Mr. and Mrs. S. did not know this. It is not specifically mentioned, but the manner of referring to preaching is consistent with this state of mind, though we have seen in previous "communications" to Mr. S. himself that he was counselled to continue preaching and both he and Mrs. S. knew that Mr. C. was a minister, so that the coincidence might be a casual one. The manner of conducting the "communications", however, has a most interesting psychological character.

January 17th, 1903. Present Mr. C——, Mrs. S. and J. H. Hyslop, Mr. S. being out of the room much of the time. Planchette work. 11 a. m.

I had gone to pay the Smeads a visit and called the night before. An appointment was made for the next day at the hour named.

I engaged in a few words of conversation with Mr. C—— on automatic writing, with which he was not at all familiar, and talked about the conditions under which it generally occurs and of communications purporting to be such.

"yes, * * yes, no [?] (Yes, word after 'yes'.) * * (What is the word?) * * y yes. (Please write that word again.) * * (Is that your name?) no. (I can't read it.) [Pause.] (Who is writing this?) me Sylvester. (Sylvester?) yes. (All right Sylvester. Go on.) where [probably attempt to say 'we are here'.] wait, get the rest. [not clear.] (Please to write that word again.) get the rest, rest (All right.)

[I thought that this meant that Mr. S. should be called in and asked him to come.]

yes, get the rest head. (All right. Wait a moment.) [I here saw that the statement was probably meant for a head rest, as was usual in my sittings in the past. I indicated this and pillows were brought and placed under the head. Writing then proceeded.]

* * (All right, Sylvester.) [Long pause.] come brother [?] we are glad to yes see you * * Billy. [The writing here was very wavy and indistinct and showed difficulty in being effected.] no, get him (Mr. S.: I am here.) it is hard alone for her. others (Mr. S.: All right. Let me help him. Let her be as quiet as pos-

sible.) come. [Mr. S. then removed the necktie of Mrs. S., thinking that it might be too tight.]

Yes, his trouble is like mine. (Who said that?) his father. (Yes, father let me be sure that this is you. You remember what you are to say.) B I — (Wait a moment. Try again.) * * (What are you trying to do, father?) tell him Beter not * * (Can't read it. Tell me what you are trying to do without doing it. Don't write it, but tell me in general what you are trying to do.) * * [has some resemblance to 'quite' or 'butter'.] (Is that word 'bitter'.) no. * * what is the trouble Billy. (Mr. S.: I do not know that there is any trouble, Sylvester.) you do not get what is sa said to you [?] I do not hear you. (What is father trying to do, Sylvester?) tell you something (yes) private. (All right.) she cannot make it clear now. I will help more next time. (All right.) Firs [first] Time week, not now. this new way is not so easy for me. Good by till Monday. will try to do better for him [?] ”.

There is nothing of importance in this record. I had hoped to be able to get the pass sentence which my father gave in the Piper case. Mr. and Mrs. S. knew that I had such a pass word. There are some evident allusions to it in the reference to “something private”. The pass sentence is in a language which Mrs. S. does not know and she does not know what language this is. I have always been careful to conceal this. If I could decipher clearly one word I might say that its sound resembles the first word of that sentence, but it is too dubious for any conjectures.

There are certain dramatic features of the sitting that have a psychological interest. They are exactly what we should expect in an attempt to get a message from a communicator to be delivered through a control. The reader can see this for himself. The represented difficulties are exactly what I should expect on the spiritistic theory, but the evidence is entirely absent to suggest that we are dealing with that sort of phenomenon.

A most interesting circumstance is the wavy appearance of the automatic writing at first, as it has always appeared when the representation of my father's presence is made. This feature disappeared, however, before the close of the sitting.

When I asked whether a certain word was 'bitter' I had in mind the incident which occurred at an earlier sitting (p. 495) and supposed that this was a subliminal memory of that occasion. The statement that “his trouble is like mine”, apparently re-

ferring to my pulmonary difficulty and throat trouble, is quite pertinent. Mrs. S., of course, was perfectly aware of my tuberculosis and possibly knew that I had given up my work at Columbia because of throat trouble which threatened the return of the primary affection. I had explained to Mr. S. in an earlier letter why I had to leave and indicated that the indications of my condition from the mere fact of resignation were not what most people would conjecture.

January 17th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. 3 p. m. [I had left the place on the 3 p. m. train. J. H. H.]

" (Go on, please. Let us have no trance.) HYSLOP R. [This name was written in capitals as in the Piper case usually, except that they appeared vertically on the sheet one at a time. In the Piper case they are written horizontally.]

(What is that?) R. (Is Robert Hyslop here?) yes. (Who is writing for him?) Bro. S. yes. (Bro. Sylvester?) yes. (All right. Do not put her into the trance. Let him give you whatever he pleases.) as you Like it. [After writing last two words the planchette moved the pencil around below the word 'it' dotted the 'i', crossed the 't' and then went back and dotted the 'i' in 'like'. (All right, Sylvester.) [Unintelligible figures and lines drawn, though a few words and letters are clear. The letters 'A D' are clear, but they were written in the reverse order, 'D' having been written first and 'A' afterward.]

(I see what you are doing.) yes. (What is it?) * * * *
(Tell me what it means.) * * Smead. (I want to know what this means.) Buller [not clear.] Buller * * [undec. 'S11111' or 'S w e e'] no. (Go on, please.) Bitter w [?] (Go on.) S w ——— a a a [scrawl.] (Go on.) Bitter S w e [word ending in scrawls.] Bitter (Who is Buller?) Sweet Bitter. (Go on.) * * [Letters 'B', 's', 'y' and 'B' clear.]

(What is meant by 'Buller'? We are alone now Sylvester. Tell me.) [Alluding to a visitor that had come and gone.] Billy this ['t' crossed and 'i' dotted.] is all out of tune ['t' crossed. It was after writing 'tune' and crossing the 't' in it that the planchette went back and crossed the 't' and dotted the 'i' in 'this.'](Tune?) yes. (What do you mean?) Let Hyslop R. H. (R. H.?) Yes. (What do you mean by it being out of tune?) This way of talking. it need [needs] rearranging. (I do not understand.) ging. (Rearranging?) yes. (Go on. Tell me more about it.) It will take to too long. needs resting. (Who does?)

Ida. (Did you not plan for a sitting next Monday?) Cannot must wait until I rearrange the tone ['t' crossed.] (What is that last word?) Tone. (What do you mean?) so hard to hear you. (Did you say that you must arrange the tone?) Yes, THAT IS IT. (Is there anything the matter with Ida?) I cannot just tell. but we cannot hear you over here very well. it must be retuned. (What must be tuned?) She must stop for now. (When can we sit again?) I will let her know. (Anything more?) Belle [?] Hervey Hyslop."

There is nothing significant in this sitting. The words "Bitter Sweet" are a repetition of previous "communications" already explained, as apparently attempts either to give a pass word as previously explained or to invent a message in reply to one sent through the same "communicator" before. (Cf. p. 555.) It is noticeable, however, that there is no wavy writing such as has so generally characterized the "communications" of the personality purporting to be my father.

January 26th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting begun with prayer.

"(All ready now. Mrs. S. said: 'It is hard to write'.) * * * * Yes, yes, yes yes, (Go on.) Yet it is not sufficient [sufficient] [Planchette here moved the pencil back under the word 'sufficient' and then through it to dot the 'i', down through it again and under the rest of the line, beginning with 'is', and then up to the word 'it' in the line above and dotted the 'i'.]

(What do you mean?) yet it is not sufficient. [I repeated the message and then asked, 'Is that it'? The answer was:] yes.

[After writing the word 'sufficient' the planchette went back in the same manner as before, dotted the 'i' in it, and then dotted the 'i's' and crossed the 't's' in 'it', 'is' and 'not', and then wrote the word yes in answer to the question asked about the reading.]

(What do you mean?) you do not know. (Please explain.) I came the other [Planchette then crossed the 't's' in 'the' and 'other'.] day Billy ['i' dotted.] and you did not let me tell him. ['t' crossed and then 'i' dotted.] I came to help him and not to hurt him, yet it is not sufficient. I thought he would like to know about [letter 'b' first made and the planchette moved back and made 'a' before it and then went on to write from the letter 'o' in the right place.] them, so that he would not make that mistake another

time. (I do not understand what you refer to, Sylvester.) Yes, yes. He does ta [erased.] take so long a time to understand me. (Whom do you mean?) Father. ['t' crossed.] (Father wants you to explain it to him, Sylvester.) I think ['i' dotted and then 't' crossed.] I have Billy. (Can you hear me?) yes, better ['t's' crossed.] than before [planchette crosses 't' in 'than'.] the rest. [planchette crosses 't' in 'rest' and then 't' in 'the'.]

[The allusion to 'rest' had reference to what was said about Mrs. S. in a previous sitting (p. 550) regarding the need of rest.]

[Mr. S. then told Sylvester what his father said in explaining the incident regarding what he said about moving the bottles. The answer was:]

not that way mna— (please go on with the explanation of that matter.) [At this point an interruption of the sitting by callers took place and it was fifteen minutes before it was resumed.]

(Please go on now.) [Figure drawn whose meaning is not intelligible? It has no shape to even suggest a possible meaning.] (What is that?) like it. (Like what?) that picture. (What picture. that. (That picture is like what, Sylvester?) that is not me sir. (Who is writing?) [no reply.] (Go on. Do what you please.) me. [Then scrawls representing short vertical lines close together and after them large circular and curved scrawls.] (Go on, friend, paper is cheap.) Friend, You said [planchette first wrote 'sa' with the 'a' like 'u' or 'o' and then corrected it by writing a plainer 'a' over it and then finished the word.] well when you called me Friend. (Write what you please.) A S t s t A (Tell me who you are.) A S t. T [?] [or S] (Write your name please.) T T S A [written vertically, then in response to questions as to what these letters were:] no, T yes. (All right, Write your name.) L [?] luther [writing not so distinct or regular.] (Can you do it?) * * * * (I cannot read it.) L U T H E R. (You are welcome. We got that all right.) good." [Writing stopped and sitting closed.]

The writing in this sitting was remarkably clear and regular until the personality of "Luther" appeared, when it was not exactly of the same definiteness and regularity. But previously the letters were written apparently without difficulty and the curves both in the letters and in the movement of the pencil in the planchette over the paper were very graceful. The possible meaning of the letters "A S T", etc., will appear in the next sitting. For the significance of the name Luther compare pp. 499, 517, where it occurred previous to this sitting.

Mrs. S. said after the sitting that when that word, apparently

referring to the name Luther, was finally made plain something snapped in her head.

January 27th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. The following note explains itself in this connection.

[Remembering that there had been some coincidences in the Piper case connected with prayers directed to Imperator I wrote a letter to Mr. S. asking him to pray for the interposition of Imperator without any knowledge of his act on the part of Mrs. S. J. H. H.]

Mr. S. says: "I prayed as requested by Dr. H. as per letter of Jan. 26th, never seen by Mrs. S. and also having no knowledge of my prayer since I went away alone. She has not seen this sitting. I read to her what Sylvester said to his father, but no more of it. I had her tell me all that she saw or thought at the close of this sitting and it is annexed to this record."

"(All ready. Go on.) Luther. (You are welcome. Go on.) yes, where? (I mean for you to keep on talking.) St Augustine. [not clear. the 'A' is made like the small letter 'b', but the remainder is fairly legible, but seems not to have been read at the time.] (I cannot understand that.) AUGUSTINE [the capital 'I' dotted.] (See it make that 'E'.) yes. (Austine?) no.

[Several questions were asked as to what the various letters were and the answers were 'yes' and 'no' until understood. Then finally was written, as if asking what had been written:]

no, what is it, see. [The planchette then moved back to the top of the sheet and inserted in the right place and in capitals the letters "G U" making the name "AUGUSTINE". The letters were printed as in the Piper case.]

(I do not get it. Go on.) Tell me what I said. (I said, you said Austine.) no, next time. (You said, 'what is it, see'. What I want to know is if Austine is right?) no. (Will you please write it again?)

[Almost as soon as I had asked this I was moved to look again at the letters and then I saw what Mrs. S. did not see, although it was right before her, that the word was really AUGUSTINE. I then said aloud:]

(I understand it now, brother. She does not know it and I do not want her to know, so you need not write it again.)

what here wer— (She is all right, friend.) yes, Luher. [There is a letter like 'i' after 'h', so that it is possible that it was

intended for 't' and by mistake placed after instead of before 'h'.]

(All right. You are welcome.) he ha— [?] have it read it. (Try and write plainly.) Ertherance. (Keep on trying. The word I get seems like Luther.) Elonane Yeslvester. (Is Sylvester here?)

I am here Billy. (Do you know who it was?) Luther. (Yes, Who else? Who was that other spirit?) I was not here. (Do you know who it was?) yes. (Please tell me.) Augustine. (All right. Tell me all you can about him.) why? (I want to know. Please tell me, Sylvester.) when he comes I will tell [?] him. (Do you know anything about his earth life?) [No reply.]

(All right. Free your mind, Sylvester.) yes, for father. tell him that I did not like [sheet changed] not that m—— that it was that Joie slept there. mother put other bottles there and took mine, some of mine. [sheet changed] mine. I made it so confusing to me, you understand. (I understand it all. Go on.) that is all. I do not blame father. he did not know bett—— [erased.] I only told him so that he might not [not clear] forget for the others, do you understand. (Yes, I will tell him. Go on.) when will he feel * * [pencil moved off the paper and sheet was changed.] will he feel better. (I do not know. Tell him something that will make him believe that it is really [you]. This will make him feel better.) [No reply.] [Pause.] [I felt that he had gone and so I said, as if to a new spirit.]

(Go on, friend.) Yes, St. Augustine and * * [undec.] [Two letters 'St.' are clear, but apparently there is a capital 'E' before them, and something like capital 'M' after them.] (Please continue, friend.) [Scrawls.] [Begun with lines that Mrs. S. conjectures in a question that they *might* represent an attempt to make the cross. The continuous motion of the pencil with the planchette makes it impossible to determine this. It is probably accidental in its appearance.] "

Mrs. S. was suffering somewhat at this stage of the experiment and so it was terminated at this point. She gave the following facts of her experience during the sitting, after she came to consciousness:

"I saw no cross or crown, but I saw Greek letters, long words in Greek in sentences, and words with ten or twelve letters in them, and also short words. The letters were both capitals and small letters.

"I did not hear or see anybody. I think a person who gave his name as Austine was here, and Luther was given when I was conscious. I felt that Sylvester was here, talking to his father

about his bottles. I do not know that this is so, but I feel that it is.

"I do not remember any explanation of the name Austine that was given. It might have meant Augusta. There are lots of them in the Robertson family, and Augustus also occurs frequently in our family."

The name Luther explains itself, after the note on the previous sitting. But the name of St. Augustine has considerable interest. There has been no hint of the name previously, and I do not know any reason for its appearance here in this connection, unless it has a possible explanation in the following facts.

Some time before I met the Smeads I was talking with a friend in New York about Emperor and the date to which he must be ascribed, if he is to be treated as a spirit. I remarked that he was at least fifteen hundred years old. If that is the case, said my friend, he must be St. Augustine. Since then I have two or three times, when mentioning the fact of his probable date supposing him a spirit, laughingly said he might be St. Augustine. I do not remember doing this in the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Smead. But I do remember in his house when he and Prof. Xenos and another friend were present, referring to the possible date of Emperor, according to the Stainton Moses records, and I may have alluded to St. Augustine at the time. I cannot recall that I did so. Nor can I recall certainly whether Mrs. Smead was present in the room at the time. But I think she was. Also, since I paid that visit somewhat near the time when my friend made his remark about St. Augustine, it is possible that I may have made the reference. It would certainly have been quite natural for me to do so. But it is strange that it should be so late in turning up in connection with what purports to be the influence of the Emperor group in this case. It is especially all the more interesting and curious when we recall the fact that Mrs. Smead has thought that Emperor is Alfred the Great (Cf. p. 422). I do not know whether St. Augustine has been mentioned in the Piper "communications" or not. I do not recall seeing it in the records of 1896 and 1897 which I read last summer (1902). But I did see in them the name of Martin Luther in connection with the Emperor matter. Mrs. S. knew and knows nothing of this fact.

[Later reading of the records mentioned, sittings with Mrs. Piper in 1896 and 1897, shows that the name of St. Augustine is given there apparently for Imperator. There is thus a double coincidence, one with the records of Mrs. Piper and the other with Mr. Smead's prayer. J. H. H. July, 1916.]



January 28th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Sitting held at 11 a. m.

There was nothing said to suggest the style of the communication or to suggest the picture with which it began, as if a new personality intended to introduce himself.

"(All ready. Go on.) [Picture drawn, representing the bust of a man with hat on his head.] (Who is that?) Chesterfield. (Whom do you mean by Chesterfield?) I am. (I am glad to wel-

come you here. Tell me more about yourself.) Yes Chesterfield; how will you know me. (I can find your life in the encyclopædias; or possibly I should have said 'histories'.) histories ['i's' dotted and 't' crossed.] yes, well [?] [will ?] soul * * [possibly 'answer'.] to. Get mine.

[An interruption occurred here by the call of a visitor. The sitting was resumed immediately.]

(Go on.) histories ['t' crossed.] (Can you hear me?) Yes. (Tell me what you first name was.) Chesterfield. (What were you called?) S * [undec.] [scrawls.] S * * S. [interpreted by Mr. S. as 'S T A G S' and as meaning St. Augustine, but at the time he thought Chesterfield was still the "communicator" and said:] (Well, do you want me to get the history now?) no. (All right. Go on.) yes, [scrawl.] not yet to wait all here tune [time ?] * * (Go on. I cannot read it.) Yes. * * [scrawls.] (I cannot read it.) S A (Mr. S.: I understand. Go on. Write what you please. Mrs. S.: It must be Sarah Augusta, a relative.) S A I [Mrs. S. recognized at this point what was intended and said so with much surprise.] N T. (All right. Go on, please.) augustine moses. (Pretty good. Bring them along. I think that this is a joke of Sylvester's.) Stanton. (Stanton?) Yes. (Go on. All right.) S S S S S... [written fourteen times.] (Shall we stop now?) Yes, * * [scrawls.] "

"Mrs. S. was suffering from a severe pain in the neck and side. She was not in good condition, and had no knowledge of your letter to me."

Mr. S. further says, with reference to Chesterfield, in his introductory note to the sitting: "We had never spoken of this person. Mrs. S. did not know that he ever lived. I knew of him only as I read about him in the encyclopædia and had no interest in him. I never thought of him as in any connection with the Piper case, and do not know whether he has any such connection, or with Stainton Moses referred to later in this singular sitting. Why should her subliminal pick him up and draw his picture for him and introduce him as a new communicator? I should think that it had already material and personalities enough without this new fraudulent invention of this Chesterfield, of whom she never had any knowledge that he had ever existed. She thought that the name Chester was meant for Chester Fletcher, a boy that we know as living, thinking that possibly he might be dead."

January 30th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Baby's birthday. Sitting held with the hope that Cecil would communicate.

"(All ready.) [Scrawl.] brother. (Brother?) yes. (All right. Go on.) Friend, M. yes mann mama [?] (All right.) Yes, mmananan mama mana mana (Go on.) mama, my mama. (Mrs. S.: Hullo, Clevie, mama is glad to have you come and see her. It seems a long time.) no, not a long time. (Go on.) hallo papa. (Hullo Clevie.) I am here much papa. (We are glad you are. Do you want to tell us anything?) what papa. (I did not know but what you would want to say something to papa about your new life.) how about it. it is all right. (Go on. Tell me anything that you want to, dear.) we are very busy papa. when you come you will be surprised papa. (What do you do?) seclsets papa. [Tickets?] no, seclsets. (What is it?) seclsets

[This is his old word for 'secrets'. He used it with George and Mama, and I did not see what it meant until it had been written these several times.]

(I see, dear, 'seclsets' is it.) [scrawls.] we reed [read] and we have lots to do, lots of fun papa. (What do you play with?) [scrawls.] lots. (Do you know that Nettie is one year old today?) Baby Sister. (Yes, baby sister. Her name is Nettie Russell Smead.) Henry. (Yes, I named her after Henry Russell.) Henry, we did not get our base ball team. did Henry care. (I don't know what you mean, Clevie.) Henry does. (Clevie, you tell papa.) yes, ask him [scrawl.] I gave him the names papa na [erased.] names. (What names?) John Ross Walter Adams. [These names are all pertinent.] (Did you tell Henry that you would get up a ball team?) he has my papers about it papa. (Do you mean that Henry has your papers with names written on them?) yes, ask him if he cares papa. (I will ask him sometime. He liked you, Cecil.) yes, Loie to [too] [Refers to Lewis Russell, brother of Henry, and called Louis by the boys.] (I know whom you mean. Louis who fell from a horse, Cecil.) yes, we do not feel it here like you do when you get sick. it is not the same. we come and help make your body better. (Go on, dear.) I come and help little brother, yes. (Can you hear little sister?) yes, play with her too papa. [planchette started to write 'er after 'with' as if intending to make the one 'h' do for both words and then went back and wrote the second 'h'.]

(Cecil, who is Imperator?) ask uncle vester. he can tell it best. I can't papa. (All right. Is Vester here?) yes, why papa he comes most all the time. (Never mind. Come when you can.) She is here too, Maude. (We are glad to have you here, Maude. Cecil, ask Maude if she will tell us more about the planet Mars.)

Mars? (Yes.) not now. (All right. Mama is getting tired. Come tomorrow forenoon.) No, not then. sometime, Yes, my desk. I like it that way, yes. [Possible reference to the way we had placed his desk in our sitting room with all his things in it.]

(We will take good care of it.) why don't you open it like I did. it looks better. (We will sometimes, Cecil.) yes, thank you papa. (Cecil, what do you think of my stamp business?) O! that's all right. (Mama must rest now.) we love her all of us. (Cecil, kiss her, dear.) Love all, yes. (Good bye. Come again.) yes."

Mr. Smead questioned his little son George about the incident of the baseball team and learned facts which neither he nor Mrs. Smead seem to have known. Mr. Smead asked George about the incident the day of the sitting. The following is the story told by the boy:

"There were a lot of other boys talking about it only a little while before he (Cecil) died, and Mr. Russell would not let Henry go with them. Some boys big like Walter Adams and Walter Avery, Louis and Henry were out on the veranda. Cecil and I were in the house playing with Henry and Louis. These boys rapped at the door and Henry and Louis went to the door, opening out from the back veranda. The boys wanted Henry and Louis to have a ball team. They were talking about making money. Cecil and I were in the kitchen looking out of the window when the boys were talking and so we heard them talking. Mr. Russell would not let them go."

February 9th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"Chesterfield Manse (Manse?) yes (Go on.) mannerell [or manurell.] (Was that word 'Manse'?) yes, maneuecell [?] (I cannot read that last word.) manuerell. (Is it 'mannerell'?) no. (Please correct it then.) manoo [last two letters erased.] mannerell.

[Several questions unrecorded were asked here with reference to the reading of this word. The planchette wrote 'n' and then moved upward and wrote 'nn' under the two letters intended for these in the word 'mannerell'. Then apparently in response to questions wrote 'yes' three times.]

(Does that word 'Mannerell' go with 'Manse'?) no. (What does it mean?) Manners, well, That is it, yes. (I understand. Go on, tell me anything more you can about yourself.) no more. (Tell me what you please. Free your mind.) no, another. [Pause.]

(All right, proceed.) no more yet. wait awhile here. (Do you want me to stop this sitting?) No. (Shall we wait here?) Yes, wait, and be quiet, ready to receive. (All right, we will.) [Waited about three minutes.]

Chesterfield Manse. (Very good.) yes, mara— Mar a n e e l l going [goeeg] to leave. (What did you write last?) going to leave, yes. (You are welcome to stay if you wish.) her now and * * * * [Conjectured at time as 'little ones'.] (All right. Do whatever you wish.) wait here. (Yes, we will.) wait. We will try T R Y. (All right.) [Pause. Hand and head shook.] T T A U S o n [or Y T A N S o n] * * ['it is' or 'was'] here. Salute thy Friend. (All right. You are welcome.) Earth, Earthy. (Will my friend tell me who he is?) Eather [or 'Earhy'] (I got the word 'earthy'. I asked if you would tell me who you are?) [Apparently a letter inserted in the last word and its meaning conjectured to be 'Eastern'.] you do [?] not understand. (I do not understand.) Estern. (Easter or Ester?) no, Eastern (I see. 'Eastern'.) Country. (Thanks, I understand. Go on.) Episcopalian. [very scrawly.] no E P I S C O P S L E P L (Episcopalian?) yes. (I got the word 'Episcopalian' all right.) Better wait. (All right.) Be wait here. (Do you want me to stop sitting?) not just yet. (All right. I will wait.) S T V T [large dot made below letters.] * * * * Arunn [?] meslson [?] (Must I stop now?) wait. (Is Imperator here?) [A loud clear rap on the bench near the table.] * * [interpreted as either 'Luther' or 'Preacher'.] [Sign of the cross made.] "

Mrs. S. reported the following vision on recovery of consciousness: "I saw the cross just before I came to myself. I was not wholly unconscious, very near to it. I saw nothing but the cross."

February 10th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(All is ready.) * * Hellop (What is that?) Hislop. (Is that word 'Hislop'? Please write it again.) Hislop * * hislop [not distinct.] (All right.) * * had one * * eyes wait * * Had [?] get * * (Is she, Mrs. S. all right?) yes, you

are willing now. no, you are willing now. (Yes, I am.) dear f
Sun— * * [scrawls.] (What is the matter?) * * * *
(Better release her.) not yet, Friend. (All right.) [scrawl.]
Brother. (Do you want to stop now?) wait here. (All right. I
will.) [Possibly attempt at 'Episcopalian'. yes.] St * * "

Mrs. S. reports the following vision, as she came to consciousness: "I saw an old prairie wagon drawn by a white horse. The wagon had a white round top. There was a man sitting in front and I could not see him very plainly.

"I also saw a chair, an old-fashioned square seat, sitting on a platform. The chair was a large arm chair. I saw a letter of peculiar shape. I had the impression that it was Hebrew. I saw the word Stickney or Strickly. I could not tell which. Then the word "Hyslop" was written. One word was underneath the other. There was a V also."

February 11th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(All ready. We await your pleasure.) * * * * [undec.]
(I cannot read that.) * * (Go on.) Chesterfield. (All right.)
I am here * * (Write that again, please.) [scrawl.] am [?] a
goang [going] * * (What word after 'going'?) wait. (All
right. I will.) [Delay of three minutes. Baby required attention.]
(We are all ready now, friends.) European ['E' made like
number 3.] Hyslop. (What do you mean?) * * [apparent-
ly 'Slaoname'.] (I don't understand.) well all right. * *
[apparently 'manners Chest.']

[At this point Mrs. S. and I had a little discussion about her letting her hand move, as she might have an impulse. She was very unwilling to do so, and said that if she allowed that she would think that she possibly did the writing and that others would have the same idea, and so she would not allow it at all. I finally said that perhaps the best way was to be patient and let things take their usual course.]

BETTER SO FRIEND, understand. (Yes, I understand.) LUTHER GREETS THEE. (Is it Luther?) yes. (With no levity of heart does thy earth friend greet thee, illustrious spirit.) EVER So. (Proceed. I would fain know thee better.) amen. (It is well. I am content, friend. Speak to thy earth friend at thy pleasure.) [Scrawl.] [Mrs. S. remarked: "They are gone, because all lights went away."]

When Mr. S. at the interruption went out to look after the baby Mrs. S. saw a cross with the letters S A P, one at the left, one at the right, and one at the lower arm of it.

February 12th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(All ready now.) [Scrawls] B B B B (Go on, friend.) (Mrs. S.: Is it you Cecil?) [Lines drawn.] (Who is it?) [Planchette moved over toward Mrs. S.] (Mrs. S.: We are glad to welcome you. Who is here?) Thank You Friend. (Mrs. S.: I am glad to see you.) Better So FRiends. (Mrs. S.: Have you something to say to me today?) Better so. you hear me friend. (Yes, I hear you, friend.) Better stay. (Did you write 'Better stay'?) we did. (What do you mean by that?) FRiend. [probably completion of previous words 'better stay'.]

[Mental wish by Mrs. S. She was thinking whether it would be possible to get Imperator and bring him here.]

Yes. (Will you please tell me what you mean.) To wait. (To wait here? That is it?) To wait her. THAT IS IT. (What do you mean?) understandest thou never what we say to thee Friend. (I understand the words, but I do not know what they refer to.) TO WAIT HERE. (Do you mean that I ought not to go to the Normal School at P——) You do not understand us yet. (Please excuse me if I do not. I do not.) Just wait here. (All right. I will understand now.) Time. [Read 'Tune'] (Tune?) [Planchette then dotted the 'i'.] (All right. Go ahead.) not this time, but he will in good season. (What do you mean?) come to her. (Who will come?) HE WHOM SHE ASKETH FOR. (Please write his name.) Friend. (Who is here today?) yes, a friend. I have told you before. (Please write your name here.) Luther. (Who is Chesterfield?) a friend. (Tell me more about him.) your. (I greet thee, and salute thee, Luther.) yes, better eleven [?] (Write it again.) eleven. (What do you mean?) not that. (Explain it please.) not that. (What do you mean by 'eleven'?) [scrawls.] no, good morning FRiend. (Shall we sit tomorrow at eleven?) not That. (What shall we do?) Rest. (When shall we sit again?) [No reply.]"

February 16th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Prayer that Luther might be present. Mrs. S. not in good condition.

"(Go on.) mm bring you good m Luther. (What word after 'good'?) Luther. (What word between 'good' and 'Luther'?) none. (I salute thee. It will be my pleasure to receive whatever word thou mayest have for thy earth friend.) 3piscopalian P [or R.] [period inserted and the planchette moved up to the word just written and wrote capital 'E' before the symbol '3' and erased the symbol, making the word clearly 'Episcopalian'.]

(Go on.) yes, yes. [Responses to brief questions about 'Episcopalian'.] wait here Friend. (Yes, I will.) yes, * * * * * Hislop is here. (Who is meant by 'Hislop'?) Friend Robert. (Very well. Let him give his pass word.) * * [No resemblance to pass word.] we are all [?] here. welcome Friend. (Welcome friend. I greet thee.) yes, * * [interpreted 'James'] * * not well at present.

[This is correct. I had used a vaporizer on the 13th and was abed all day the 14th and only recuperating the 16th. I attach no importance, however, to the coincidence as it is too general and Mrs. S. knew that in a general way I was not a well man.]

(I cannot read that.) go some time. not at present. (Write it plainly, please.) * * (Please write it plainly.) TH is is not [?] what [?] welcome. (I do not know who you are.) yes. (Who is it?) H A L C or H H C me L S L S yes. [response to question if it was letter 'S'.] H H C L S [Letters written in vertical line. They were conjectured to be intended for the initials of the names Hyslop, Luther and Sylvester.]

(Please explain.) L S Chesterfield, Hyslop Friend. no, yes. [apparently in answer to some unrecorded question.] Sylvester, Hyslop. (Write what you please.) Luther Eremanium * * (Fare thee well until tomorrow.) [scrawls.] "

February 17th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Prayer that Luther might be present.

"(All is well, friends.) St. and [?] Augtine Aurelius— [scrawl.] (What is that word beginning with 'A'?) Chesterfield. (The word beginning with 'A'?) Chesterfield. (What is that word beginning with 'A'?) Chesterfield. (What is that word beginning with 'A'? You do not understand me.) P B S yes, Chesterfield., yes, it is he. (Go on.) Augustinus [?] Aurelius, yes. (Write that word again, please.) Aurelius. (Who is Aurelius?) [Mrs. S. said she knew Augustine, having seen the name in the encyclopædia.]

we are here. (I do not mean for you to leave, but to continue writing.) [scrawls.] [Mrs. S. put both hands on the planchette.] Chesterfield here is the better light [sheet changed.] light. (Pro-

ceed, please.) Better wait, Luther. (We will wait. I greet thee, my friend, and shall be glad to receive your word to me.) So may you receive the light. (Please repeat it. I cannot read it.) so may you receive the light. (Thanks, friend Luther.) welcome. (I welcome you, friend, also. We desire to know that there is a life after death. Can you aid us?) the desire is a worthy one friend. (Will you aid us, friend?) it is our purpose. (Luther, my friend, will you give me Emperor's name?) [scrawl.] you must not be over anxious, for there are other things which we are desirous of doing for the friends of earth. at present be content with what we may do. (I am willing. Shall I try to read this now?) no need. (All right.) Martin Martin welcome.

(I know of your earth life. When a boy I was interested in it. I remember reading of your singing at the cottage of your friend. I recall the tragic death of your friend Alexis. I admired your brave stand at Worms before the Emperor.)

so God was willing. (Go on.) * * Chesterfield [scrawls.] Sheffield. (Was that word Sheffield?) no (What was it?) Chesterfield. (All right do you want to say anything?) have tried. will try again. (Glad to have you. Please do so.) Episcopalian better light. yes, yes. [response to questions as to what the words were.]”

February 18th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

“(All ready.) We are Ches— [interruption of five minutes to attend to the baby.] (All right now. Go on.) Bio [?] * * mumamy mammy [?] (Who is writing?) a Friend. (Who wrote ‘mama my mama’?) not that sir. (What did you write?) * * mummy [planchette then moved the pencil back and wrote the letter ‘m’ over the word and between ‘m’ and ‘a’ making the word ‘mummy’.] better so yes. (What does ‘mummy’ mean?) Chesterfield. (Mummy?) no (Mummy?) we do not understand you. (What does mummy mean?) Better so. we did not get that other. (Other what? Never mind, let that go.) we did not get that other. (All right. Let it go. Please go on.) There is two lights here. (What is the word after ‘is’?) There are little lights here, lights that call papa, mama, aunt Ida, uncle w, aunt Ida, uncle Willis, aunt Ida, uncle Willis [‘i’s’ dotted.] you would better speak to them. (They do not hear us.) you do not know what we say to the thee Friend. (Yes. ‘you would better speak to them’.) no, before that. (Write it again, so that I can.) and aunt Ida and uncle Willis (I understand now. Who are these lights?) never mind that, speak. (I am glad you are here little ones.

Will you say something to me?) we come to tell * * aunt Sadie papa will get better. (Did you say that Aunt Sadie will get better?) Yes. (Is Cecil trying to write?) yes, we come with Bena, papa. (Is little Bena here?) going back to aunt Sadie can't stay. (Sadie will get better.) They have grone friend. (Who has charge here?) no, 3piscopalian. (You got your 'E' wrong.) never mind that. (What do you mean by Episcopalian?) not yet. (Proceed.) [Parallel lines drawn on the sheet and then a large capital M across the lines.] (Luther will come next.) Luther is busy. (Go on.) Better stop Friend. C. (When shall we sit again?) Eleven. (All right.)"

Eleven o'clock in the morning has been the usual hour for the sittings recently, this time having been chosen for various reasons.

February 19th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 11.30 a. m.

"(We are here today. We shall be glad if we can meet Sylvester.) [I had received a letter from my father which I wished to read to Sylvester and ask his advice or opinion at least.]

* * * * * all well a well. ('All will be well'. Is that it?) yes. all. (Explain, please.) you did not ask for His blessing. Friend. then how can you expect it. neither did you ask h ['h' erased and line drawn so that a capital 'H' was made by using the 'h' for a part of it.] His presence friend. d friend. (I will pray. I will remember after this.) [I prayed.] Gustavus. Bitter Sweet. friend, welcome here friends. (Welcome, friends, welcome.) * * ustavase. (Was that 'Gustavus'?) yes, friend. (All right. Go on.) [Figure drawn. Mr. S. thought it looked like a coat of mail. I see no resemblance whatever to this.] GUST [?] [Pause.] (Is Gustavus here?) no. (Proceed, please.) * * Stop friend. (You wish me to stop this sitting?) yes."

Mr. Smead writes: "There was absolutely nothing to suggest the name of Gustavus. Mrs. S. does not know who he was and has no idea of its appropriateness in connection with that of Luther."

There is a curious confusion for secondary personality in the allusion to "Bitter Sweet" in connection with the name Gus-

tavus, evidently referring to Gustavus Adolphus. As these words were previously (p. 359) associated with the name of my father, secondary personality half as shrewd as that of Mrs. S. must be supposed to be should not be guilty of this transparent error, though in the vision of Harrison Clarke (p. 359) it did commit an inexcusable mistake which may explain this one.

February 25th, 1903. After copying the above record of February 19th I wrote to Mr. S. inquiring whether Mrs. S. had read the transcript copy of the record which I had sent him according to his request to show to a friend. He had asked for the chapter on Harrison Clarke and for the material connected with his son Cecil. I sent him the Harrison Clarke Chapter and all the record containing the "communications" from Cecil, his son. In this latter was contained the reference to Luther and my comments thereon both the first and second times that the name was given. Thinking that Mrs. S. might have read the transcript record and my comments and that her knowledge of them might have affected the reappearance of that name and associates I wrote to ascertain whether she had read the record. The following is his reply to my letter, dated February 24th:—

"Yours at hand. I will reply to it as fully as I can. Mrs. S. says that she did not read the copy that you sent me, but only a part of the Harrison Clarke record and only a very little of that. I told her to read it all she wished, but she would not do so, thinking that you would be sure to ask a lot of questions about it, and so she considered it to be the best way not to read it. I read to her some of the record about Cecil, but not very much of that and nothing whatever about Luther. I remember telling her that you thought that Luther had something to do with the Piper case, this is all."

As I sent my transcript copy to Mr. S. somewhere between the 15th and 22nd of December last (1902) and it was returned to me personally January 17th, there was a chance that the reading of my comments about Luther might have influenced the later "communications" purporting to come from him. Though it appears that she did not see them, it is apparent that the remark to her by Mr. S. about Luther, in connection with the assumed

Imperator matter in her sittings, may explain the persistence and frequent mention of that name and so the association with it finally of the name of Gustavus Adolphus. In regard to this latter Mr. S. reports as follows:

"February 24th, 1903. Written by W. M. Smead, Tuesday a. m., at 8.40. What is to be recorded was told him by Mrs. Smead at 9 o'clock Monday evening. There was no sitting Monday morning as usual, because Mrs. Smead had a very severe cold and on the whole did not wish to sit.

"Mrs. Smead was washing the dishes at about half past one (1.30 p. m.) Monday afternoon and was not thinking of Gustavus when suddenly the name Adolphus flashed into her mind; she wondered what Adolphus meant when the name Gustavus Adolphus at once came to her.

"I desire to say that never was the slightest hint given Mrs. Smead that the name was Gustavus Adolphus. I kept it from her with the utmost care. She opened no book and in no way, unless telepathically or spiritistically, could she have gotten this last name Adolphus. She never heard of Gustavus Adolphus, has now no knowledge whatever of him, does not know what was his nationality. I have examined her as to all these points with the greatest care and caution, so as not to give her the slightest clew to him or his life."

Of course no one knows what Mrs. Smead may have seen some time in her life associated with the name of Luther. Almost every general school history is likely to have the name of Gustavus Adolphus associated with that of Luther and the history of the Reformation. That possibility suffices to account for the present incident.

February 24th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Nothing whatever said to suggest the communicators. The suggestion was rather in a different direction. We had been thinking of Gustavus Adolphus, Luther, and Cecil. Mrs. S. had gone upstairs only a few moments before the sitting and she had seen some of Cecil's clothing, so that her thoughts were centered upon him. All this was told me before the sitting began.

"(All is well, friend.) [scrawls and apparently the word "has" written, though it might be read either as 'lhas' or 'llias', or 'elias'.] (Go on.) [scrawl.] llsa, yes. (Was it U. S. A.?) no. (what was it?) Elisa t [?] [scrawl.] (Elisa?) yes. (All right, go on.) Elisa, Elisabeth. [We said.] (It is nicely written: looks like Chesterfield.) yes. (Go on, please: use the light all you can.) So we are. (All right.) Ebenousten ['t' crossed.] (Please write that again.) Ebenousten. ['t' crossed.] (Is it 'EBENOUS-TON'?) no, O U S T E N. [printed.] (Is it Eben Houston?) ousten ['ous' was underscored and then the remainder of the name completed in the right manner and place.] no, [planchette moved pencil up and drew line through 'ou' and wrote 'no' a second time and 'yess, yes, no, ousten', which a note of Mrs. S. says was in answer to his false pronunciation of the name.]

(What does that mean? Ebenousten?) Ebenousten. (Is it the name of a man?) It is here. he came, yes. (Where did we know him?) No friend, thou never didst [apostrophe inserted and 'i' dotted.] know me, never did, Eben (Why did you come to me? What have you to say?) Elisabeth D. [?] Williams. (Elisabeth D. Williams?) yes, yes. (Where did I know you?) Eliza beth [last syllable written under first.] D. Williams, bolton. (Bolton?) yes. (Bolton, Conn?) yes. (Is it Miss or Mrs.?) Miss. (Tell me more about yourself, Miss Williams.) It is you friend. her sister Mary knew you.

[I began to imagine who it might be and said.] (I think I recognize you.) [scrawls.] mother knew you best. (Did you write 'not her'?) mother. [written above first 'mother'.] (Please tell me something else so that I can remember you.) How are we to know, there are so many Elisabeths. (What was your brother's name? I used to know him, I think.)

[I had in mind at this time two men by the name of Williams and I did not and do not know which one is really the brother meant by the communicator in the answer.]

chas (Charles?) no. (Go on. Tell me all that you can.) it cost a lots to buy them. yes, he could not afford to, so sold them. (What do you refer to?) houses. (Houses?) yes. (Is that word 'horses'?) no. (Houses then?) yes. (Sold all the houses?) sold them all. (Where were those houses?) FARM house mother's to in the village [planchette then moved pencil up and wrote 'in' above the first instance of it.] (Mother's house in the village?) yes. (You say that your brother sold the farm house and your mother's house in the village. Is that it?) [Pause.] Elisabeth has made a mistake. it was groceries he sold. William (Do you mean that Will Williams sold groceries?) Hastings.

[It is a fact that Will Williams sold groceries at Bolton and that he sold the store to Hastings, H. W. Hastings. Of course we both knew this fact because we used to live there.]

(You mean to tell me that Hastings bought Williams out?) yes. (Who was it that wrote 'Elisabeth had made a mistake'?) A Friend. (I did not know that William Williams was related to Elisabeth. Was he?) He was. another time. good morning Friend, Thanks. (Shall we sit tomorrow at eleven o'clock?) as you like it. (Will you bring this friend?) [No reply.] "

February 28th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

" (All right now. Go on.) Iooys [?] oooo [scrawls] Elsoo [?] (Keep on. We are in no hurry.) and and and Q. [?] [period inserted.] 3 [made very distinctly with special effort to have it clear, the lines being strongly shaded. Figure also made alone and word written in next line.]

Episcopalian. (What do you mean by 'Episcopalian'?) Episcopalian. (I know that, but what is the meaning of this word. It has been given several times.) Episcopalian Moses. (What Moses?) Rector. (Is Rector here?) Lt. [?] [could as well be 'St.'] oes. [possibly intended for 'yes'.] (You are welcome, Rector. I do not understand.) me [?] [possibly 'no'.] (Please tell me.) Episcopalian Rector y. [yes] (Do you mean that Moses was an Episcopalian Rector?) That Was it.

[I thought the matter was a joke of Mrs. S.'s subliminal and being disposed to treat it so asked the next question.]

(Do you mean that old Moses was an Episcopalian Rector?) DID not say So. (What Moses is it?) FRiend. (Is it friend Moses? Stanton. (How was your name spelled?) Stand-ton. Got [?] * * (Is Stanton Moses here?) Stanton. (Is Stanton Moses here?) This is not your * * [scrawl.] Btt [?] BETTER STOP, yes."

Mr. S. made the following note at the time: "I find on closely questioning her (Mrs. S.) that she *did* know how his (Stainton Moses's) name was pronounced. She says she heard you pronounce it Stainton, and noticed then that you pronounced it differently from myself. I always called it Stanton, although I knew it was spelled 'Stainton'."

As I was not certain how Mr. S. meant to distinguish my pronunciation from his by the spelling 'Stainton' I wrote to him to know, being very careful not to indicate how I pronounced it, but asking him to say whether he meant to pronounce it 'Stane-ton' when spelled 'Stainton'. His reply was as follows:—

"I asked Mrs. S. about it and she said that the name 'Stainton', pronounced as it is spelled, long 'a' with the 't' sound in its proper place, was given to her at the time of the sitting when the word Chom was written. You can find out the date by reference to your records. The pronunciation was as if it was spelled Staneton, but with the letter 't' connected with the first syllable.

"She supposed that it had no possible connection with any one or anything. She knew that the name of Moses was pronounced Stanton. I always so pronounced it in her presence, but I knew that it was spelled Stainton. So she supposed that this word Stane-ton which she kept hearing at that sitting was of no significance, so said nothing about it.

"I always supposed that the name Stainton was pronounced Stane-ton, that is, if it was pronounced correctly, but I assumed that usually the pronunciation was Stanton. Mrs. S. supposed as she recollected things, when I wrote my idea of it, that she had received this pronunciation Stainton (Staneton) from you, but she now remembers that this word was given at that sitting in which the word Chom was written.

"I see no reason for doubting her statements; but I wish that she had told me this at the time of that sitting."

On referring to the record I find that this name Chom was written on January 14th, but the name Stanton was not given on that date. It appeared for the first time on January 28th in connection with the name of Augustine (p. 563), and was written Stanton. The reader will remark a mistake in the memory of Mrs. S. I myself have always pronounced the name Stanton and never Stane-ton. As there is no evidence that Mrs. S. had seen the name in print, the writing of Stanton is a phonetic reproduction of what she or her subliminal imagined the spelling to be, whatever interpretation we choose to give of the incident of the auditory experience reported as occurring at an earlier sitting.

March 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. in good condition. Hour not noted, but contents show sitting precedes the next.

I should state that I was a little out of sorts at the beginning of this sitting and that the mental oneness was not as marked as

in previous sittings. This was my fault. Mrs. S. was patient and interested and sympathetic and wished that we might have a good sitting. Such was the condition of affairs when I was told 'let us pray'. I state these facts that the reason for the prayer may be evident. It was no doubt intended for my benefit. I am certain that I need all the prayers I can be fortunate enough to receive.

"(All ready. Go on.) * * * * (Go on, please.) * * * * Chesterfield. (You may go on.) * * (Go on. I will wait for you.) [Lines drawn across the sheet.] let us pray. Our Father in heaven, We ask that Light be given these Thy Children that They may belevé believe and harmonize their lives in accordance with Thy Will. Our Father bless this Home that we may Come to it and bring Thy Light and Truth To all of mankind through Thy [erased.] The life of Thy Son we ask it, amen. (Shall I pray that prayer with you?) yes, it would be well, yes. [I did so.] (So let it be. I have prayed with you.) it is well. (You may go on.) Have we and it should ever be now. [period inserted.] (What is the word after 'we'?) [Planchette moved pencil up and drew a vertical line between 'we' and 'and' and then made some scrawls.] (Never mind. Go on.) * * Emma (Emma?) yes, Philbrick. (Emma Philbrick?) Philbrick. (Will you tell me more about yourself.) Chesterfield, Chesterfield. (I am waiting Chesterfield.) A friend is here. (Who is it?) Philbrick. (Is this Emma Philbrick?) no, a friend. He does not want Father to worry so. he would like you to tell him ha [sheet changed.] that money is no object here; that when he comes he will not have to worry as to how they will care for him. those that are left will do right about that ['t' crossed.] and although they are anxious about that we say now they will be very sorry they took it. mother is happy now. good by [bye] Willis F. Philbrick. (I will tell him when I get a chance.) Chesterfield and he has gone. (Thanks, Chesterfield.) Chesterfield. (What have you to tell me, Chesterfield?) Chesterfield, Good morning Friend. (Good morning, Chesterfield.) [No reply.]"

Mr. S. notes the following facts: "Mrs. S. knew that there was a Mrs. Philbrick who was dead and she might have guessed that her first name was Emma. But she did not know the communicator's full name. She knew that his name was Willis Philbrick; she did not know that it was Willis F. Philbrick. She did not know a thing about this money matter spoken of here. I did and it is a fact that the old man was troubled about this and no

doubt is now, if he is living, which I think is a fact. Mrs. S. does not know whether the name Emma as applied to the Philbrick's has any pertinence or not. I am not sure that I do, but I think that it has pertinence to Willis Philbrick's wife now living, or to the daughter of Harrison Philbrick now living. Harrison Philbrick is the name of the father alluded to in the communications. I attended the funeral of Willis F. Philbrick. He was a member of my church at P—— and of my Sunday school class and a good friend of mine. I can testify that this message is characteristic of him."

March 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. No transcript made of record but the questions were recorded on the original sheets with the automatic writing and in their proper place. All that is lacking is that there is no note regarding the sitting, except that nothing of importance occurred. The sitting was introduced by prayer. Sitting at 11 a. m.

"(All is ready, friends.) * * [apparently 'Benistenaion'] (Go on. I could not read that.) chestenamenn [?] (You will excuse me, but I cannot read it.) [Scrawls.] (Go on, please.) * * * (Please write that over again.) nestarman [?] noman-anananan [?] Chesterfield. (You are welcome Chesterfield.) Remember. (What shall I remember?) * * (I do not understand.) Cisco [?] * * (I do not understand it.) Better * * [undec.] wait. (All right.) She will wait. (Yes, I will wait.) * * (What do you mean?) aaanaaaaaa wait. (I will wait your pleasure. Wait?) yes. (We will.) Chesterfield. no when we can better controll well [we'll] do so. (Complete it.) Do so. (All right.) Chesterfield better wait Episcopalian. (Is Stainton Moses here?) Friend, better wait another day. (I shall be away tomorrow. Shall we set day after tomorrow?) Better wait. (Do you understand me?) Yes. (Shall we sit day after tomorrow?) Chesterfield. well [we'll] come tomorrow. (Shall Mrs. S. sit alone?) She may. (Good bye, friend, we will stop.)"

The next sitting is dated March 4th, but as Mrs. S. sat alone and the sitting is apparently the one arranged for as indicated above on March 2nd the date on the record was probably put there by Mr. S. the following day after his return. The plan-

chette was used. Mrs. S. records on the original sheet that she did not ask any question to suggest the beginning of the writing.

March 4th, 1903. Mrs. S. alone. Planchette used.

"Friend, wait here. mama may we come mama 2 [to] you. [The writing after the word "here" seems to be slightly different from the first three words, being slightly backhanded, and the figure '2' is excellently made with double lines.] when we can. HE IS HERE (Who is here?) MAMA. (I then asked if it was Cecil and if it was if he would ask Imperator if he would come here next Monday. There was no answer for at least five minutes, when what follows was written.) WE WILL TRY. [scrawls.] yes, we do no no. we will come.

[A word that is apparently "mnamms" was written in very fine letters though perfectly steady form, and then a hand with four fingers and thumb with the wrist drawn spontaneously and a ring on the first finger. The ring was drawn first and then the knuckles and the ring a second time the lines almost overlapping and then the finger and the wrist lastly, and immediately the name Chesterfield in very clear steady script.]

Do not get so easily discouraged * * Chesterfield. HOPE, PRAY, BELIEVE. [Mrs. S. changed the sheet.] Yes, that it will come to you. hope, pray, believe that light may come too [?] 'to' y [?] [planchette then went back and wrote 'ou' superposing them over the 'oy' of the first effort, making the words "to you".] Yes [scrawl.] Chesterfield. [Then was drawn a figure and lines which are not interpretable, and the sitting came to an end.]

March 11th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.

"(All is well, friends.) Yes. (Proceed.) * * [apparently 'Sumerinemt'.] (I cannot read that.) Sumerenemis. (Please write it again.) Episcopalian. (I got that all right. Go on.) Yes, Chesterfield. (Go on, Chesterfield. Do what you wish.) Yes, [sheet changed.] yes, he has come over. (Whom do you mean?) doctor. (What is doctor?) Huck. [erased.] H. .. get him. (Do you mean that you will get him?) we will try. (I understand. Go on.) Let brotherly love continue, Friend. (Thank you friend.) Yes, the doctor will try some t ['t' crossed.] other to [erased.] day. he does not feel equal to the task [scrawl.] yet. (Please tell me who this is.) a friend of the Children's [new line begun with word 'children's.]. I will let him when he is ready. (Will you ask him a question for me?) Yes when can we [?]

[erased] [Then planchette went back and inserted apparently the letter 'I' between words 'when and 'can'.]

(Is the doctor here now? My question was, 'Is his name Stainton'?) no, no, he has only come [scrawl.] recently. (Wasn't it Dr. Huckins? Go on please.) He was a good friend. yes, we have told him you know him. (Good, thank you.) Yes, he says might have been very much better brother. (I would have liked to have known him better.) not that. much better man. [Mrs. S.'s head and hands began to shake.] (That is true. Dr. Huckins was his own worst enemy.) Glad to come. it is good. boy is all right. [This Dr. Huckins was with Cecil, son of Mr. and Mrs. S., when the boy died.] (I have not worried about him.) all right. good to come and see you here. (Can you tell me when you died.) live. (You know what I mean.) only a very little while. seems as if I just [sust] came. (Thank you. Tell me when you left the body.) can't. we [?] are [?] all right over here. every one has trouble there. tell wife you can comfort her. She is most alone, not me. (Tell me anything you wish.) not now. Thank you brother. (Have you met Capt. Colby there?) [No reply.]

(We will still wait here, friends.) Chesterfield. (Chesterfield, did the doctor talk awhile?) Yes. (I wish to talk to you, Chesterfield. Will you come over to me? Anything else?) Yes, as it pleaseth the [thee]. (I plan to sit Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday A. M. at 11 o'clock. Is that agreeable to you?) will answer another time. (Chesterfield, I shall sit tomorrow at 11 o'clock.) as you like. (Anything else today?) that is enough for this day. (Thanks, Chesterfield. Kindly greetings. Good morning. Give my regards to Dr. Huckins and tell him he is welcome to come again.) it is well said, Friend. good day."

"Mrs. S. thinks Dr. Huckins died last night. As a matter of fact he is not yet dead, April 4th. The reason that this message was given was that Mrs. S.'s subliminal made it up. She received, March 10th, a letter from a friend at P—, written March 8th, saying that Dr. Huckins was very sick and was not expected to live but a few hours, that he was failing fast. This was enough for her subliminal and this sitting is the result. This is the only way I can explain it.

"It is barely possible that while the doctor was so very ill that his soul did leave the body at that time and did actually come to me at W— through Mrs. S., but this is very improbable. It may be so, however. But the best way to treat this sitting is to class it as subliminal, a fiction of Mrs. S.'s mind acting unconsciously."

March 12th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting opened with prayer. 11 a. m.

Mr. S. remarks: "I had gone to see my physician about a chronic trouble that I never considered of any account and in no sense a source of danger to me. This physician tried to operate upon it and relieve me temporarily. When he tried to do this he failed to give me relief. He became alarmed. He thought the trouble might be of the nature of chronic hernia or of a cancerous cast, and earnestly advised me to *at once* be examined by a specialist at K—. I was much moved by what he attempted to do in the way of an operation and his failure and what he said to me. I went home and told all to Mrs. S. She was as much moved and surprised as I was. I finally made up my mind that if I was really in so dangerous a condition I would go at once to Boston and consult a specialist in hernia whom I knew. I had planned to do this and both Mrs. S. and I were in this condition of mental anxiety when we had this sitting. No questions were asked to suggest the words that were given to us by something, a spirit or her wonderful subliminal."

[The use of the expression "the knife" is interesting as put in the mouth of Chesterfield. J. H. H.]

"(We are all ready friends.) Friends of earth, go on in thy way of doing good. do not worry. thy trouble is but slight. we do not think you need to [sheet changed.] to [erased.] be so [scrawl: apparently a word begun and erased.] much concerned about so slight a matter. do you hear us.

(Yes, I hear all right. Thank you my unknown friend.) unknown you say. not so. (Who is it?) Chesterfield. (Chesterfield gives me this advice.) we do. (Will it be well for me to see Dr. Farrar in Boston?) we cannot tell. we do not know him, but we cannot see as it would do any harm to see him. but we should say, be cautious or perhaps you could understand if you were told [scrawl] to be very careful. (What shall I be careful about?) the knife, the knife. (What is my trouble?) thou knowest. (All right. Anything about it, please.) use your very best judgment with much careful thought. do not go off in a hurry. yes you understand what we mean. (Yes, I understand.) Hurry not friend about your going there. we would advise you to wait [scrawl and erased.] until we may tell the [thee] better. (About what do you wish to tell me better?) what thou had'st been asking our council just a few moments since. (Do you refer to the Dr. Farrar I spoke

of?) that is it. (Is there any doubt as to what ails me?) I cannot [letter written and erased.] just tell yet, but will try and have a friend tell the [thee] better soon. (Do you mean today?) no [erased.] no. (I am getting tired, friend. Perhaps we shall have to stop now.) thou will do well to consider it carefully. good morning, Friend."

March 12th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Afternoon sitting. 3 p. m. Mrs. S. sleepy. This fact was taken as indication of desire to communicate.

"(All ready.) yes, we will. do not go there. we do not see the need w [?] [erased.] thou can'st do as well for thyself. If thou would'st not worry. yes thou art in no danger. (What is my trouble? Do you know now friend?) the trouble is healing of itself, but thy mental worrying will do the [thee] harm, so try to quiet thyself. (Anything else?) no serious difficulty friend. (Write that again please.) no S E R i o u s difficulty ['t' crossed.] friend. (I do not quite understand that, friend.) Yes, no. (Would it hurt me if a certain simple operation were performed?) I would say, let it alone.

(Is Dr. Huckins here? Who is here? Please give me your name.) no, no name this time is needed. (Is this Chesterfield?) no need. you worry over to [too] small matters. we think thou Should'st know us by this time, friend. (I really do not think it is Chesterfield.) Chesterfield. [Mrs. S. was unconscious and I said:] (Release her, friend. I am not able to stand any more today. Thank you, friend.) she will come all right."

March 13th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting opened with prayer as usual.

"(All is ready, friends.) Yes, we will try friend. (All right.) Yes. (Go on, please.) what will we say for thee This day. (I am feeling better, friend, thanks to thy counsel.) It was thy mental anxiety that as [erased.] was all. (Thanks. I would be glad to have you tell me how you use this light.) Talk to the soul. Chesterfield. (Thanks: have you anything else to tell me about that?) no, not at this time. (Let some of my friends come to me if you can. I should be glad to meet Dr. Huckins again.) at a more convenient time. (At a more convenient time?) Yes. (Very well.) You do not understand yet. [I had said to Mrs. S., 'Your soul is your subliminal'.] (What is it that I do not understand?) the Soul of man.

[This answer was written in a very strange manner. The words "Soul o" were first written and the planchette went back and wrote "the" before the word "Soul" and then returned and wrote "f" after the "o" and then the word "man". Thus "Soul o—the f man".]

(I admit that I do not know anything.) Episcopalian. you must not say it so, friend, but thou can'st learn and be taught much yet. (That was good. It was a royal answer. Please teach me in my blindness.) no [scrawls.] we would say that to speak to the soul would be as though we were again in the body, as [erased.] no, as if two souls were in one body talking one to the other. [Mrs. S. says that she never conceived things in this way.]

(We shall have to stop to take care of the baby. Do you hear us?) we do. [Pause in sitting.]

[Sitting resumed.] (Mrs. S. through Mr. S.: Can you bring Imperator to me?) Chesterfield, Chesterfield is sorry to tell the [thee] that the friend cannot come to thee this day. (Do you mean Imperator?) yes. (Has he ever been here?) Has been, yes. * * [scrawls.] (You do not answer my question plainly.) has been, yes. [scrawls.] (Please give me a definite answer.) answer, we have given thee. He has been, Friend. [Words 'He' and 'Friend' begin lines.] (That is all right. Are you still here Chesterfield?) Friend. (Chesterfield, what is Mrs. S.'s subliminal?) Sylvester, yes. [Cf. pp. 292, 304.] (What do you mean to say?) her subliminal [a letter or two written after 'subl' was erased and 'minal' written above.] is Sylvester. (That answer helps us a lot.) yes, you must let it rest brother. (You spirits are a puzzle to me.) we expect to be, Billy, for awhile yet. (Why don't you talk as you used to Sylvester?) do not hurry us. we are doing better." [A circle was drawn around this last sentence and the sitting closed.]

April 1st, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer as usual opened the experiment.

"(All is ready friends from our side.) * * * * This day we begin our [scrawls] begin our work. * * [undec. apparently 'Coronna.'] Have all things ready at this time as thou art guided. (I do not know what you wish. Shall I get the pillows and get her ready for the trance?) at this season it is not of any great importance. we will tell you when we wish any changes. (I understand. Go on, friend, as you wish.) * * * * [Apparently 'some best we tell' is part of it.] (I did not get that. Please write it over again.) Yes we are [?] to [?] try friend. you have decided to keep on in thy way of doing good. it is wel well. (All

right. Go on, please.) * * Good * * ['onot' ?] we [?] understand * * try too [to] * * tell you best. (Please write plainly what you wish to say to me, friend.) Come to try to test her to find out more than anything [scrawl.] anything [scrawl.] else.

[I thought that what was written referred to a very disagreeable experience that Mrs. S. had twice when alone, indicating the presence of an evil spirit and so I said what appears next.]

(I think that was a contemptible performance.) we say not so friend. say [evidently repeated for reading.] (I do not want any more such experiments with her. I resent them.) Why. (Because it referred to matters that neither you nor her ought to consider. I want no more of it. She does not need any such tests.) we do not mean in your way of thinking.

(That is the way that she thought it, as I have told you. She considers it an insult and so do I, and if that will have to go on I will drop the whole matter.) no, you do not understand me. (Explain it please.) I came here at this time to see how I could best use the light for this that is needed to mak [pencil ran off edge of paper, and sheet was then changed.] make it plainer to those of earth that we are here on this side. (What do you mean.) your earth.

[I again referred to what I had discussed with this spirit and alluded to the very disagreeable experiences that Mrs. S. had had and blamed this spirit very severely, and said that if an evil spirit was allowed to be present that I would object to any more work and said that I wished to plan things so that evil spirits would not be allowed to come at any time.]

I do not know what you are talking about. [I went over the ground very carefully and asked the spirit if he understood me.] I do, but know who would [?] (Were you interested in it?) I do not know what you refere [refer] to ['tto' or 'oo'.]

(We do not say that you are evil spirits, but I do say that I do not want any evil spirits present and I will not have them. I will drop the whole matter if that is to be.) * * * *

"[Mrs. S. was unconscious and there was hard work to waken her from the trance. The heart action was slower than normal, and it was the first time that I ever noticed it to be in the least affected by the trance. Finally she became herself all right.]"

April 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer as usual.

"(All is ready, friends.) Friends, we her [here] were * * [apparently 'Thuterimll'.] (I cannot read what you wrote after

'friends'.) Friends, we here were here Thursday Thrumball. [No one by the name of "Trumball" known to Mr. S.]

(Make it plainer, please.) here where were you Friends. [Mr. S. adds a note: "I see now what they mean. I was away fishing Thursday when I ought to have had a sitting.]"

(I was away fishing and you must excuse me for it.) yes, Friend, weo— [long pause.]

(Go on friend.) Chesterfield, understand. (Yes, get Martin Luther, if you can please.) Better [scrawl.] wait wait wat. (Go on please.) w [?] wait. (All right.) Chesterfield waits thy pleasure. (I would like you to bring some earth friend to me.) Cannot bring earth friends. (I did not mean what you thought. Let some spirit like Cecil or Sylvester come to me.) another time they shall come, friend. we are getting ready now this light and do not wish it used only as advised by us. (Very well, Chesterfield. Will you answer questions I may ask?) I have already done this for thee, friend. [There was an interruption at this point, the baby requiring attention.] [Scrawls.] must [?] wait.

(Go on, friend. All is ready now.) MARTIN LUTHER. (I am glad to greet you, my friend.) so you called for FRIEND LUTHER. (I wanted to greet you again, friend Luther. I am a minister. Can you tell me facts in theology. You remember that you were in the earth life a doctor of divinity.) TO FAST my F [erased.] my friend, to fast, to fast. [I then spoke more slowly.] (I would like you to answer theological points for me please.) not best ['t' crossed.] it is not time for that. (All right. Tell me anything you please, friend.) Yes later. (Is Imperator here?) is [or 'es' followed by the sign of the cross made distinctly three times.]

(I cannot understand. Is Imperator here?) a St ['t' crossed.] yes. (Hail, Imperator. Thou art welcome here.) [Mrs. S. was completely unconscious and had been for some time.] Stainton This day shall continue the work of God throug [through] friends of earth. the work must be sloly [slowly] done. (Imperator, tell us what to do. We want to know.) be slowly. (I understand. All right. Go on.) I am trying this to do. understand think you? (I think so.) very well. (All right. Go on.) very well. thir third fourth ['fourth' crossed out or erased.] no fs (I do not get it. Please write it over.) fourth, fifth, sixth days elaventh [eleventh] until the twelvth hour. (I understand.) very good. (I see what you mean. I will do it.) until told to do differently. (I must be away from April 15th to April 23rd, Imperator.) very well, the rest will do the light much good. (Anything more, Imperator?) you may leave her with me. [I did not understand and so he said again.] with me wi [sheet changed.] with me. (Go on.) go out. (Do you want me to go out of the room?) yes. (All

right.) [I did so and came back in a few minutes.] [scrawls.]"
[Writing had been a little scrawly for some time.]

"Mrs. S. came out of her trance easily and naturally, and said that she felt rested as she always did when Imperator was present. She saw his cross and by this knew that he was there before she became totally unconscious. While in her unconscious condition, she saw Cecil. He seemed to be lying down on something."

Mr. S. adds in a note; "I can see that all this sitting can be classed as subliminal, and so it must be for scientific consideration. But it is a most wonderful subliminal that will fabricate characters like this one of Imperator. It is very difficult for me to accept this subliminal idea. Yet at times I feel forced to by the logic of some of these sittings. When a so-called spirit communicates, gives all the characteristics of himself, so that I think that he is there and afterwards I find that he is alive, I must call such a communication as that subliminal, and if that one is there it must be other than this. I do not deny such a view, but it is all so strange and unthinkable to try to conceive what sort of a personality a secondary self is that will fabricate in such shape as Mrs. S.'s will."

April 4th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Experiment with the Ouija board. Sitting held in afternoon.

The Ouija board was an extemporised one and made out of a lap board by writing the letters on it. It had been tried once before (cf. p. 398). In this previous instance the hand of Mrs. S. insisted on going through the process of writing. But on the present occasion the hand at first pointed to the letters in the usual way with the Ouija board, but soon began to make writing motions and the words had to be deciphered by watching the movements of the hand.

"(We are very glad to have you come, Cecil. This is a Ouija board. Here are the letters: you used to know them. Will you try and use them?)

A big, big B, little a, big B, little b. [This was the way that George, Cecil's brother, used to say his letters, and Cecil always

said that it was very interesting to hear him say "big A, little a", etc.]

(Cecil, will you not try and use this Ouija board? You have seen one, I think.) Cecil RemBeRS remem aunt jennie had one of these. (All right. Go on and use it please.) Cecil was surprised [surprised] when he came here, was you papa? (Do you mean that you were surprised when you found that we were at Winchester?), over here. (Papa was much surprised when he knew that you were dead, Cecil.) Cecil aint dead, papa. (I know that, dear. But I spoke as people here speak.) [I then took out my watch and showed it to him and said, 'I have your watch, dear. I sold mine and now I wear yours, Cecil'. I then put it on the table. The ouija board pointer went all around the watch as if looking at it.]

not Cecil's chain, papa. [This was true George had Cecil's chain and my own chain was on his watch.]

(Cecil, I gave the chain to George.) I like him to keep it from brother Cecil for Christmas present. (Cecil, do you know whether I shall go to P—— again?) To preach papa? (No, to take up work in the —— school. Do you know about that, Cecil?) Mr. Xenos will know papa. Ask him. his little boy comes to see his mama, but she don't seem to know him. must g...

[The remainder was as if it was written. Mrs. S. could tell what was meant by watching the motions of the Ouija board pointer.]

we do not like this. it takes too much pushing. it tires us. Good by, George. I love him, my little brother. tell him to be good to every one. yes, mama, we like little sister, Maude and me. we like to see her. we like to see George, papa. we like you. Good by. from your little Cecil. Maude, lots of us."

There is one fact of interest in this sitting. Mrs. S. knew very well why Mr. S. was contemplating going to P—— and it was not to preach. The whole matter had been talked over and discussed and I also knew what was contemplated. Besides the fact is mentioned right here in the sitting by Mr. S. Cecil, of course, could not be supposed to know anything about it. It is singular that the subliminal should try to play this game which is just shrewd enough to simulate the spiritistic, but not intelligent enough to detect its own limitations and errors. "Mr. Xenos" was also known to Mrs. S. as "Prof. Xenos", and was most probably called "Mr." by Cecil when living. But there is no assurance on this point. J. H. H.

Imperator group in the Piper case. There is no distinct evidence that they are operating as yet in this instance and I know nothing to justify the supposition that my wife would either send the words 'Bitter Sweet' to me for any purpose or give the word 'Vivi' for any known purpose.

The following incident took place some time in February or March, but was not reported to me until the date of May 26th. It was not written down until that time. The only importance attaching to the incident, however, is the fact that the experience took place before the sitting at which my wife purported to communicate and gave the word "V I V I" apparently as a watchword. With this fact in mind the present incident will explain itself. The sitting at which "V I V I" was given was April 8th. It was not thought at the earlier date that the experience was of any special value, and besides Mrs. S. is so busy with her domestic affairs that she cannot write down all her fugitive impressions and visions, and it was only after the sitting of April 8th that the importance of the experience here narrated was impressed upon her mind, as she saw clearly that the sitting and its incidents were probably a subliminal reflection of this earlier experience.

But some time in February or March Mrs. S. in a dream vision saw a lady in a large room or hall like a reading room which appeared to be 30 or 40 feet square. She got the impression that the lady was my wife, but did not know how she herself, Mrs. S., had gotten into the room. But she seemed to stand about 7 feet from my wife. The latter sat at a table in the middle of the room, about 3 by 5 feet, with her back to Mrs. S. and reading. In the center of the table was a green felt cloth with bevelled edges all around. My wife did not move or notice the presence of Mrs. S. and was apparently indifferent to sound. The light seemed like an electric light, but much softer, and there was a green dome-shaped shade on the lamp. She wore a dark gray dress fitted very closely; her hair was of a light brown shade and her eyes blue. Her shoulders were broad and complexion fair. Her face seemed small as compared with her shoulders and her waist average. There was a wavy appearance for about two inches of the hair and the face was round, but not specially full. The chair in which she was sitting was like Mrs. S.'s chair, a study chair.

"I spoke to her several times but she did not notice me until a voice said: 'A friend speaketh to thee'. At that she turned her face sideways and saw me standing there. I told her what I had come for. She sat erect and stiff as if nettled by being disturbed. I told her to send some word to her husband as he was very anxious for it. She refused at first. I begged her to and she finally said, 'Tell him vivi amaverim [?] amare'. I asked her to say it slowly that I might remember it and she did. I said it over two or three times, when I awoke. I could not recall any of it then, but it came to me later."

The word "vivi" was pronounced "veevee" and the others were so indistinct that they are partly the result of guessing, especially the second.

April 29th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Sitting opened with prayer. There was a rest of three weeks on account of matters connected with church affairs.

"(All ready, friends.) Chesterfield. (Go on.) Chest the little ones love to come so much. (They are welcome to go on.) mama, yes, we love mama [planchette drew pencil across the sheet twice and then wrote:] we brother. (Go on, whoever is trying.) Yes, papa. (All right.) Stainton is going to * * write * * She was all * *

[At this point Mrs. S. appeared faint and the sitting was stopped until she was restored.]

(All right now.) Chesterfield is sorry to have any trouble Friends. (That is all right. She is all right now. What made her faint?) cushions here next time. (All right. I will have them.) you understand how we wish things. (Yes, I do.) very well. (It is too late to get pillows for this sitting.) we will try them next time. (Have you anything else to tell me?) let her * * ['go out' ?] of doors mornings. [Question as to reading evidently not recorded.] yes, out. yes, yes."

April 30th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. 11 a. m. Opened with prayer. Planchette used.

"(All right, go on.) * * [First letter like the reversed capital 'E' seen before in the attempts to write the word 'Episco-

palian' and made like figure 3. Some letters suggest the same attempt here.] (I cannot read it.) * * [letters apparently 'merlhina'.] (Was that word 'nothing'?) [No reply.] (All right, go on.) Episcopal [very scrawly and made like figure 3.] * * (All right. Go on, friend.) Chesterfield, Chesterfield. (Good morning, Chesterfield. We are all ready.) Chesterfield is ready. (All right. Go on then.) Episcopalian Friend. ['E' in 'Episcopalian' like figure 3.] (All right, Chesterfield. Go on then.) How is [?]. * * (You are welcome friend. We shall be glad if you can use the light.) How is [?] Episcopalian [very scrawly.] (Write it again.) * * me [?] Chesterfield [?] Jeso [?] (It is well friend. She will quietly rest.) When Chanfield [evidently intended for 'Chesterfield'.] * * (I cannot read it.) Mathman [?] How is it. mathenam [or 'mathmam'] mathehick ... mathematical. (Is the word mathematical?) Yes. (I got it. Go on, she is resting finely.) Yes, * * nothing [?] (All right. What do you mean by 'mathematical'?) * * (Write what you wish.) Chesterfield will come * * * * [Pencil given but no writing followed and the planchette was resumed.] Chesterfield. [very scrawly.] Chesterfield. * * [undec. apparently 'chesfd'.] (Go on.) Luther. [not distinct.] (Is Luther here?) mes, yes. (Go on.) * * * * (What is the matter today, friend Luther?) Episcopalian Friend is [?] ssssss is h... * * (Go on.) Episcopalian. [capital 'E' made correctly.] "

"I stopped the sitting as something seemed to be the matter. I do not know what."

Mrs. S. saw the cross several times at this sitting. It went from yellow to blue and passed into a white cloud. The arms were not like the usual cross at the ends but terminated in a leaf-like shape.

May 1st, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. 11 a. m.

"(All right, friends.) [scrawls.] Friends. * * ['mesimeresness'] mess [scrawls.] Robert Hyslop. (I thought it you.) Clifford the h ['h' erased.] manee [last 'e' erased.] well what * * ['well' ?] * * ['mesan has' ?] Especially, yes. (Who is Clifford?) Chesterfield was here not was not here. Could now ... [scrawl.] came now. (Is Chesterfield here now?) * * better have * * yes. (Who is Clifford?) Friend we kn.. know not. (Will you tell me who Clifford is?) we know not. (Is that what you said, 'we know not'?) Yes. (All right. Write what

you wish.) Get brother. (Whom do you mean?) George. (George is here by my side. Go on.) Let him try. (His hand is on the machine.) George, say something. (George said, 'Who is he papa'?) Hello George, don't us [?] [erased.] you know me, Cecil. (Let George take his hand off.) no, papa. (George said: 'Hullo Cecie'.) George be Good. Love [?] Love * * good o good play with sister now go yes * * (All right. Go on, dear.) Chesterfield. (Did you let the little boy Cecil write?) yes. (Go on.) Chester [?] Mary [?] [I said: 'We cannot help it', but do not recall what I meant by it.] * * * * (Go on.) Chester * * [undec.] Chesterfield. (Please do something.) Chester * * "

May 1st, 1903, p. m. Planchette used. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. Smead introduces the transcript with the following remarks:

"This sitting was held in the afternoon. That of the forenoon was very unsatisfactory and both Mrs. S. and I were depressed, thinking that it was a great waste of time to spend in these experiments. Nothing seemed to come from them. We proposed to drop the sittings in the forenoon and plan to have them in the evening and let whoever wished to control as in the old régime. These were our feelings. I finally as an experiment asked Mrs. S. if she would be willing to sit this afternoon and said that we should do as we pleased; that we would not pray; that we would not have anything published, that no report of the sitting should reach Dr. Hyslop. She agreed and after I had helped her finish the house work the sitting was commenced. She was rested. Her mind was easy. All the work was done. We were in harmony in every sense. She agreed to take an interest in what was written and to see if that attitude of mind would make any difference. We were willing that even Harrison Clarke should communicate, if he wished to do so."

"(If any spirits are here they can use this machine.) Chesterfield. [We were surprised to see that 'Chesterfield' was here.] (All right, go on.) Friends you would do well to pray often for light.

[I prayed after this and took pains to tell God what no doubt He knew, that the reason I did not pray was that I did not wish to *have* to pray, but wished to do so willingly.]

(We have prayed Chesterfield.) Chesterfield: nothing lacking. ask that greater light be given thee. (Shall I pray again?) not at this time, but before thou goest to thy evening rest ask that as [‘s’ erased.] a greater blessing be given thee and thine. (All right, Chesterfield: allow me to express my satisfaction and pleasure with what you have written. I shall do so.) always and ever after do not forget thy Creator. (I will remember. I perceive that you are an exalted spirit.) Chesterfield desires naught but thy good. (All right. Thanks. Will you tell me who you were on the earth?) a prudent man. (That is good, Chesterfield. Will you tell me anything more?) Enough of that. (All right. I submit. Go on as you wish. One question any way. Are not you the Prudens in Mrs. Piper’s case with Imperator Doctor, Rector, etc.?) Yes, the same as thou hast Said [new line begun with ‘said’.] (All right, go on.) I am Chesterfield here. [This was written ‘Chesterfield here’ when the planchette went back and wrote ‘I am’ over ‘Chesterfield’.] (All right, Chesterfield. I will call you Chesterfield here.) Yes. (Do you stay here with this light most of the time?) Oh no, not always [scrawl.] it would not do [apparently the ‘t’ in ‘not’ was erased, but possibly the intention was to cross it.] (Is this planchette best to use?) at present, yes, later no. [Question as to reading evidently not recorded.] yes, later no. (Chesterfield, I do not see how Mrs. S. can go out doors mornings. It must be in the afternoons.) we will think about that. (All right, go on.) Chesterfield, The hihght [light] a getting weary in well doing. (Please write it over.) Goodday [‘good day’] (All right.) Chesterfield, Good day, Friends.”

May 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. 8 p. m. Mrs. S. was willing that I try the experiment with the Ouija board. She was in fair condition. Prayer as usual.

“(If any spirit is present you may go on.) no we do not want this, [no written as if using the planchette.] (Shall we put it up and take the planchette?) Yes, yes.

[I fixed the planchette with a plain pointer in the place of the usual pencil and placed this on the Ouija board to see what would take place. I said ‘Suppose you try planchette improved.’ The instrument went up to the sign of the cross that I had made on the Ouija board to indicate when Imperator wished to communicate.]

(Do you wish planchette fixed as usual?) We don’t like this. [pointer went to the cross. The Ouija board was laid aside and the planchette used in its proper condition and Mrs. S.’s hand alone on it.]

(All right, Imperator.) Thank you Friend, you will do well

to let us do that part at our pleasure. (We do not quite understand. Will you explain who is present and writing?) Experimenting. (Thank you. I understand. All right. Who is using the light?) WE are caring for it. we do not want thee to do it unless advised by us."

"We stopped at this point, seeing that they did not wish us to experiment only as they planned."

May 7th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer as usual. Mrs. S.'s hand alone on the planchette.

"(All ready now.) [Hand, head and body tremble.] [Scrawls.] (All right.) [I put my hand on planchette.] * * * * * Ches ... (Go on.) Better wait. (All right, I will.) we not [?] * * * (All right.) it very sis [erased.] still. (Yes.) sTILL sTILL. (I do not understand.) Still. (Yes.) Emeromdn * * (I cannot understand.) * * [apparently 'ssGtC', or 'ss G H.'] yes, no, yes no * * (Try to write plainly.) Better * * [undec. 'Chesn' or 'Chem' followed by scrawls.] (Who is here today?) wait. (Yes.) thanks. (All right.) * * no. [scrawls.] Epscopalian Rector. (Are you Rector?) Episcopalian. (Can I do anything to help you?) [scrawl, and apparently the word 'so'.] Gone."

May 8th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All ready friends.) Chesterfield, Yes. Here welcome Friends of earth. (We were a little late today. We could not help it. We are glad to greet you, Chesterfield. Go on.) Chesterfield means to do well, yes, * * (Go on.) well [not clear.] yes. (Go on.) Chesterfield William [?] (Willing?) no. (What is the word?) William, ifive b b b b b. (Go on. I do not understand it.) How shall we do it if you make so much * * talk.

[At this point a most interesting phenomenon occurred. My Sloyd table which is about two inches thick, fastened so as not to move, and blocked very carefully so as not to rest unevenly upon the floor, sounded as if two loud raps were made upon it. They made Mrs. S. jump. We both heard them. They were not cracks or snappings due to settling of the house, as may be supposed. I noted the two very clear sounds. After the sitting I took pains to very carefully test the bench to see if it was possible for me to make

it rap by any pressure at any point on its surface, or by trying to produce the raps by shaking the bench, as it must have shaken if there had been an earthquake, or a settling of the house. Nothing in any way like the clear raps could be made by any effort that I could make. I think that the raps were made to emphasise the fact that they wished me to obey and to keep quiet and not talk so much. They had advised me in this direction several times before and probably they thought that if I had some physical demonstration of their presence I would pay more attention to what they might request.]

(I will be quiet.) How both do t it * * * * (I was a little nettled at their command to keep still and said: 'Will your Royal Highness allow me to say that I cannot read what you wrote'?)

at the present we are not trying to write we are busy about other matters. we want it still for this purpose, Friend. So do not be offended at what may be said to thee concerning thy much speaking. (All right. Tell me when you wish me to speak.) When we ask if thou understandest th ['th' erased.] what we say. (All right.) Chesterfield * * me body harm * * if it is to go. not that. well in time [?] yes, we very much desire it so. * * Charm bit ['bit' erased.] but it is a necessity, Chesterfield. thanks you Friend, so Good morning. (Shall we have our sitting as usual?) yes, it would be it ['it' erased.] be well. (Will you tell me what you are really doing with Mrs. S.,) not at this time."

May 14th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All right, friends.) Here is thy Friend. (Please write who it is?) thou shouldst know by this time, Chesterfield. Should know by this time that we let no others try. (Thanks, greetings, Chesterfield, you are welcome.) Chesterfield gree [erased.] greets thee [last 'e' erased.] friend of earth. (The reason why we did not sit yesterday was that I was so busy that I forgot about it, Chesterfield.) Greets and welcomes. When you cam [come] we will let you try. you must wait awhile, friend. (Mrs. S.: Don't you feel the power in the planchette?) [We sat in silence.] Yes, Chesterfield. [Still sat in silence.] I s R [?] I s + [sign of the cross made.] (Chesterfield, be sure to do it so that no harm may be done the light.) keep still. (Yes.) please. [Mrs. S. laughed.] no. (All is well.) So with us. She will in time overcome that, yes. Martin Luther greets thee, Friend. (I greet thee friend Luther.) It is well that thou follow thy master in all thy ways. (Thanks.) So let it be henceforth. (I will try, Luther.) Friend. Yes, tomorrow at eleven, good day, Luther, Chesterfield. (Shall we stop?) it is better so."

Mrs. S. remarked after she came out of the trance: "I feel a swaying motion. It seems as if some one was sick. I saw no cross." Apparently the initials of "Imperator Servus" are given with 'R' instead of 'D'.

May 20th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S.'s eye was very much inflamed. The light was bright in the room, when we commenced.

"(All right, friends. We are ready.) Get light softened, Friend. [I did so.] Thanks. It is better so. They need rest. (What do you refer to, please.) Eyes. (Go on.) * * * * * Episcopalian Rector is to tell them for me that I would like mamma [written 'mama' 'a' erased, and 'ma' written in its place.] to come soon. (Who sent that message? Who is that?) little light. (Tell me the name, please.) [scrawls.] H no. H C J. [period inserted, then something erased.] [circular scrawls and some capital letter written in center of them. Might be 'J'.] (All right. Go on.) Chesterfield Greets thee, Friend. (Good morning, Chesterfield. When is it going to rain?) [It had not rained for a long time and it occurred to ask the question.] Elmo [?] Friend, thou must of thy Father * * [undec.] For He pleases Him. (I cannot read it.) Thou must ask of thy Father. that which pleaseth Him that will He do. (Thanks Chesterfield. b Here come those that wish to try. (All right. Let them try.) Chesterfield greets the Friends [screends] (Yes, go on.) then * * * * * [scrawls.] Chesterfield waits. try to wait a little later, Friend. ("Try to write a little later"?) no. Try to wait later. (All right.) be better if you will, Friend. (Yes, yes. I will wait.) Just wait here. (All right.) Friend, we wish to try it next time without thee and so please remember Chesterfield. (Do you wish for me not to be in the room?) no. (Do you wish my hand off from the machine?) that is it."

The meaning of the message referring to the wish that "mamma should come soon" is conjectured to be an allusion to domestic conditions in the family of Mrs. S.'s parents, and hence possibly as a message from Mrs. S.'s deceased brother, John Houston Robertson. The only clue to this is the initials of his name given in a confused manner,

May 21st, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"I was instructed at the previous sitting not to put my hand on the planchette. I obey and results are much better."

"(All right friend. I remember what you said.) I will ask it Friend. Father wilt thou. Father wilt Thou Send Thy special blessing to this Thy Child that she may be ever willing to do Thy Will here For the uplifting of all mankind, That they may beleive [believe] in the Fullness of [scrawl.] Thy Love For them. This we ask This day amen. (All right.) + [cross made.] I am glad of thy submission, Friend. it will be well For [new line begun.] thee. BETTER SO ALWAYS HEREAFTER. (Go on as you please. Do as you wish.) Chesterfield welcomes thee, Friend. Welcome (Good morning Chesterfield. Welcome Chesterfield. You are welcome.

[Mrs. S. asked the following mental question: "If I go to Boston, will Chesterfield arrange it so that I could see Mrs. Piper?]

WE DONOT WISH IT. (All right, Chesterfield.) Yes, we may. not now, Mary. (All right, go on.)

Luther greets Thee, friend. He will not try This [new line begun.] day to talk to thee, but Greets thee. (Greetings, friend Luther. I am glad to have you present.) Rector likewise, Friend. (You are welcome Rector.) Thanks friend. (May I ask you a question Rector?) If it pleaseth thee. (Do I understand that you were Stainton Moses when living on this earth?) Episcopalian Rector. (I understand Stainton Moses is the Episcopalian Rector. Am I right?) Episcopalian Rector. Eupro [erased.] European friend. (All right.) Thanks, Stainton S Moses, yes, Episcopalian Rector, Friend. (All right.) WE ARE GLAD YOU ARE TRYING TO HARMONIZING YOUR LIVES WITH THEE [THE] FATHER. IT IS WELL. Chesterfield. Good morning Friends."

May 22nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer as usual. Planchette work. Mr. S.'s hand not on the planchette.

welcome, Friend. (Good morning, friend. Welcome. Everything is harmonious.) Chesterfield. (That is nicely done.) we come friend. [read aloud.] yes. (All right.) how many Friends. [read aloud.] Luther comes friend, welcome. [Mrs. S. semi-conscious. Body shakes.] (You are welcome, friend Luther. Write what you wish to me. I shall be glad to have you.) when we can we will. yet it is hard. [hand shaking.] (I read the message over and said: 'I have that.') yes, she one [?] (Let me fix her head.) no. [I fix her head.] no. (I cannot read that.) w w when you

pray ask that her soul may be moved very easily from thee [the] body. (I will do so.) Good morning, Friend."

Just as she was going into the trance Mrs. S. had a vision of a face which she was impressed to think was that of Charles Dickens. It was accompanied by the vision of an old-fashioned house with a gabled roof and a window in the gable, small window panes and green shades or shutters. Mrs. S. seemed to be in the kitchen and saw an old-fashioned settee in the next room, a fire place and a three-legged stool near the latter, without any paint on it about five inches across the top and nine inches high. The face taken as that of Charles Dickens showed gray side whiskers and full beard. It soon vanished. After the sitting was over Mrs. S. examined the picture of Charles Dickens to see if it resembled what she saw and found that it did not. But the picture of Longfellow was found to tally with it quite closely.

May 27th, 1903. Mrs. S. *alone*. Planchette used. She asked her own questions and hence remained conscious during the writing. The record of the questions was made afterward.

"(If any one is present he may write.) M A... [at this point a florist called and Mrs. S. had to answer the call. When she returned the planchette completed the word:] R Y, Chesterfield, yes. (Will you kindly tell Cecil that I am going to send the flowers to P—— for him and will you tell me, if possible, who will place them on the grave?) I will tell him for thee, Friend. yes tell him. we'll tell [?] yes. pretty flowers. we have them mama.

[The writing then proceeded without further questions for some minutes.] [lines across the sheet with dots or periods at end of two of them.] * * mama. yes, we know who [wavy writing.] mamma [?] yes, we know who. what it is we know. we will tell what when. (What does this mean?) yes, what does it mean to live. I ask you the same. (Tell me what this means.) when he comes to live. we live. we live. Yes, to live live. that is live. yes, not now friend.

[I told them why Mr. S. was not present and said to them that I would like them to come tomorrow. After this I asked no further question until the word 'ring' was written.]

It is better so friend. ring mine mine * * [undec. resembles 'urammum'] (What does it mean?) mine mine

mine. where * * (I would ask that Imperator may come tomorrow.) Chesterfield will ask, Friend. so let it be amen."

Mrs. S. did not think what the reference to "ring" could mean until after the sitting. She knew the name of my wife and observing that this name was given at the beginning of the experiment she recalled that my housekeeper, when Mrs. S. was in New York, toward the close of her stay there, had told her of the incident in connection with the finger ring of my wife as she was dying with the remark that she "did not see how I could do such a thing". I had carefully told my housekeeper not to tell any one of the fact and wrote out an account of it and locked it away. My housekeeper was present when the incident occurred and it was necessary to counsel her on secrecy. But it appears here that she betrayed me and did not keep the matter quiet as she should have done, and Mrs. S. was of all persons in the world the one from whom the fact should have been religiously kept secret. The reader will perceive what a fine piece of evidence the reference is of secondary personality, and the manner and conjunction in which it occurs, Mrs. S. knowing that I was coming for an experiment, are enough, with the failure to get other messages, to suggest the limitations of the whole case to secondary personality.

May 28th, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop and Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Sitting opened with prayer by Mr. S. in which he prayed for light in the work and aid in the removal of Mrs. S.'s soul.

[I had written some time before that I was expecting to come for a few sittings and the first one was held at the hour 11 a. m., which seems to be the time arranged for regularly by the trance personalities. It was some minutes before the planchette began to move, longer than usual according to the statement of Mr. S. J. H. H.]

"(All ready.) [After some minutes this was repeated by Mr. S. and I suggested patience, saying that we would let them take their own course. In a few minutes the writing began in a fairly clear style.]

we greet thee friend. [I read this over aloud and it was repeated as if I had asked for it again. Mr. S. remarked: 'friend of earth'] yes, w [we] greet thee friend [a letter or two after last word not legible.] (You are welcome.) WHAT DID YOU SAY FRIEND. (Yes, I ... [sheet changed.] Hyslop we cannot hear thee. (I greeted you, that was all.) [Spoken louder and more clearly.] Yes, greetings. (Very good. Wait a moment.) [Sheet changed.] [Pause.]

WE ("We.. We" is the word you wrote.) WE ARE NOT READY FOR FOR THEE (Is that word 'ready'?) AT THIS TIME. (Very well. Very well, I understand.) [wavy scrawls across the page.] (What is the trouble?) WE WE [lines slightly wavy.] we must n [not] do much more yet U D, H. (Should we stop now?) not just yet, present we will just wait. MARY [followed by scrawl.] STOP NOW, FRIEND. (All right.) [Pause.] (Shall I come tomorrow?) YOU MAY come THS [this] NIGHT. [Pause.] going. (All right. Good bye for the present.)"

Mrs. S. was clearly in a deep trance. When she came out, which was easily and quickly, she did not know that she had arranged for a sitting for the evening, but supposed that it would be at the regular time tomorrow. She remarked that she saw the cross when she closed her eyes and that her head snapped at the same time. This is the second time that she has had this experience (cf. pp. 559, 620). The trance lasted 40 minutes.

May 28th, 1903. Evening session. Present Mr. J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

I counselled silence at this experiment and the policy of allowing the "communications" to take their own course. After some minutes the arm and hand began to tremble slightly and continued this for some minutes. At a certain stage of this I held my hand over that of Mrs. S. and the planchette immediately began to write.

"Friend + thou y [?] [Pause.] (You have written 'friend cross thou'.) [Planchette moved back.] [Pause.] Yes. It will not yet. [not read at first.] (Please write that again.) * * IT WILL NOT YET. (Very well friend, take your time.) Yes. [Pause.] you did well, yes, mustry [must try] again. (Very well. Very well.) yes, H [Pause.]

[The writing stopped and in a moment Mrs. S. became somewhat flaccid and the head began to fall over from her hand on which it had been leaning. Mr. S. caught her and in a few moments she came to consciousness and out of the trance. She remained in this condition perfectly conscious for some minutes. The pillows were rearranged and she soon began again to go into the trance. As she did so her hand and arm began to tremble slightly.]

Yes [?] we came came [last not clear.] remember * * [might be either 'bitter' or 'better', or even at attempt at 'Robert'.] (What is that word?) What is the last word? I got the word remember.) Yes, * * might be an attempt at 'remember' writing wavy.] yes, so, yes, god [good] [Pause.] we come. we are glad [scrawl.] we are * * Stop. (Shall we stop tonight?) no. glad to greet you. ('Glad to greet you?') yes * * * * [undec.] [writing very wavy.] yes, so glad glad * * yes, so glad * * so good to come here James [not clear.] yes [scrawl.] you [?] here. .what good night. (Good night. Are you going?) Friends will come again. Chester d [Chesterfield ?] "

May 29th, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. 11 a. m. Planchette used. No oral prayer offered. Silent prayer by myself and Mrs. S. for "light". Hand began to write in a few minutes.

"we come friend H. (Good morning, friends. I am glad to see you.) welcome here once again James. [I read this aloud.] Father. (This is you, father is it?) yes, wait. [writing wavy and hand showing excitement.] [I held my hand on that of Mrs. S.] [Pause.] [I held my hand over that of Mrs. S.] you must be [read aloud.] [excitement] yes, patient (Yes.) with us here. [writing very wavy.] [Pause.] [scrawl.] Bitter SWEET. (Is it 'Bitter Sweet?') yes, yes, yes. you can get it soon. do not say it yet, not yet. (Wait a moment.) [writing was too fast and scrawly to read.] * * * * do not SAY IT YET. (I read this over mentally, as if to indicate that I got it.) yes, you must must remember [letter 'r' of this last word written on next sheet.] you [scrawl.] yes, James. she C A M E we... oh it is hard yet, ('Oh it is hard?') yes, yet. (All right. I shall be patient.) but as it is yet, but in a little while it is getting better, Chesterfield. (Very well. I shall be glad for you to write Chesterfield.) [Pause.] [I then found the pencil had been pushed down in the planchette so that it would not write. I fixed it.] we we ... what do * * (Last word?) mean, we do not like this. [The pencil was pushed down again and I fixed it.] it troubles us exceedingly Friend.

(What is the word before exceedingly?) it troubles us. [To write this the planchette moved upward to space above the words not read and repeated the message as indicated.]

[The table cloth had given trouble by causing the planchette wheel to turn up the edge of the paper and made the writing difficult. We removed it when the next message was spontaneously written.]

you did well. [this read aloud.] yes, when + comes. [Pause.] (Who comes?) + [The sign of the cross was made in both cases.] This day thou did'st not ask for light Friend. [Cf. note at beginning of sitting.]

+ [cross made.] FATH [Father] LET THY light come here more abundantly, for there is great need [erased apparently because not clearly written.] need of it. we ask this this day, amen. + [cross made and followed by a possible attempt to write the word "imperator". Lines suggest 'im', while 'p' is clearly written and the letter 't' is crossed. There was a long pause after it was written.]

we wish thou would make the light. (Wait a moment.) [not room on sheet to write. It was changed.] more ea... easy. [We endeavored to fix Mrs. S.'s head easier.] no it will not do. we must [must] wait. come again. (Shall we stop?) + [?] yes. (Shall we sit tomorrow?) try once Friend. can you make the light easy. we will try * * can you make it easy on the morrow. [read aloud.] yes. then we will try for the [thee] again, Father H.

go now. His BLESSIN [pencil ran off sheet.] go with THEE, James. (Very well.) R. H. U D. U. D. [I did not read the first 'U D' and so it was spontaneously repeated.] going. [very indistinct.] "

When Mrs. S. came out of the trance she had a severe pain in the neck. She does not rest easily in the position which it is necessary to assume for support during the trance. But we have since this sitting made a head rest which we will try at the next experiment in response to the virtual promise to "make it easy for the light".

The appearance of the symbol "U D" in this sitting has much interest. I had noticed in previous records that the word "understand" was often written in psychological situations like those of the Piper case and apparently by the same trance personalities. The use of this word suggested them. But the symbol "U D", which I had expected to see before this date, was not used until I was present, and it is certainly a remarkably apt use

of it on the theory of secondary personality. Mr. S. knows of its use in my Report on the Piper case, but Mrs. Smead is not familiar with that Report as a note above (p. 131) indicates, though she may know from conversation with Mr. S. that this abbreviated symbol is used in the Piper records for "understand". The point of psychological interest, however, is that it should not be employed until I was present, though Mrs. S. has known all along that the records were for me. Secondary personality would have to imitate spiritistic matter with remarkable success to anticipate so interesting a coincidence.

May 30th, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. 11 a. m. Prayer for "light" by Mr. S. Planchette used. Writing began promptly and immediately after prayer, as if there had been no difficulty in starting or as if all the initial necessities on "the other side" had been attended to before we sat down. The first words represent a direct response to the prayer offered.

"amen, Friend. That is better. [apparently alluding to the improved condition of the "light" for whose head we had prepared a better rest.]

Bitter S.... [sheet changed.] [Line drawn.] S... [Pause.] * * [possibly an attempt at "sweet", apparently with sign of cross preceding it, but uncertain.] [Pause.] now ('now'?) we came [?'cannot'?] but we [Pause and trembling.] * * [Pause.] [scrawls.] [I had placed my hand on Mrs. S.'s hand to calm the trembling and excitement.] [scrawl, possibly an attempt at the cross and letter 'I' after it, but doubtful.] [Then a pause.] (Is there any special trouble?) not on your side, Friend. Better [?] * * ('not on your side friend'?) yes. we are not all. [?] here. [Pause.] H. [Pause.] do you remember James. (Yes, James remembers.) [Said to indicate that it was read.] you would * * * * (Wait it is not clear.) yes we know it now [writing very wavy.] [Here we had to remove the pencil from the planchette and insert another.] where is George (All right. What George do you mean?) where [?] ['when'?] James. Our [?] George. you will know [indistinct.] (What George?) who my son son, my George [scrawl.] James. [scrawl.] (Slowly, all right.) my George. (What do you wish to say about George?) [scrawls and great excitement with long pause.] * * * * get it James. [Great confusion and excitement.] * * (Have you seen George lately?) yes * * George needs [Excitement and trembling.]

care [?] * * yes is getting clearer James. you will not get it yet: be patient. (I cannot read much of it.) [scrawls.] yes. [Pencil went through the paper and Mr. S. had to arrange the planchette and paper to let the writing go on.] yes, why doo [do] you trouble us so much. [I had read this "why do you * * [undec.] remember", and hence said:] (I remember well enough perhaps, but I cannot read all the writing.) do [?] you [?] hear [?] * * us. did you here [hear] (Yes, I heard the last words, that is all.) hear me say here is my son. (I heard the last 'hear my son'.) no, where is my son. (I have not heard from your son George for some time, father.) you must care for him. he [?] needs [?] * * [Pause.] * * * (Keep calm, father.) * * you say be calm when we want [?] so much to get * * * quick [sheet changed.] quickly, yes, George most needs us. [Pause.] yes [?]

we cannot do more this day (Very well. We can stop.) Chesterfield, he says, good by [bye] come soon again. be patient. (Yes, I shall try to do so.) B. Sw."

This is the most interesting sitting that I have had in this case. Although his name is not given, it is apparent that the "communicator" purports to be my father, according to the promise of the previous day. The whole attempt on his part is to say something about my brother George. When the name appeared I saw the possibility of the interpretation that the reference was to Mrs. S.'s little boy George, as he has frequently been mentioned in the records, though it was not natural for any such reference to be made in the personality of my father. Hence I asked what George was meant. It became clear in the answer, on any theory, that the reference was to my brother whose name Mrs. S. *might* have known from my Report on the Piper case, though she has not read any of it, according to her statements, not being sufficiently interested in the Piper case to read it. I have talked to her, however, about my brother George and Report. The apparent significance of the reference to my brother George will be found in what was said by my father on May 19th through Mrs. Piper in a sitting by Dr. Hodgson on my behalf. The statement there made makes the evident solicitude about my brother in this sitting quite intelligible, especially the reference to his need of care. Whether the statements made in the Piper case on the date mentioned ever turn out true or not the same incidents are apparently in mind.

The group of sittings which this one closes has considerable interest on any theory. The psychological evidence is strong for the action of the Emperor group of personalities, even if we have only to suppose secondary personality as doing it all. The simulation of the Piper "controls" is perfect, even in the language employed, and is especially so in certain mechanical features of the writing. I observed throughout yesterday and the day before the same indifference to intervention in the messages that goes on at the Piper sittings. There was also very evident the same kind of "psychological moments" in the transitions from "communicator" to "communicator", which it is impossible for any one to discover in the records and without a personal experience in each case. The type of phenomenon is the same in each case: allusions and explanations are the same, and various features that must make us admire secondary personality for its powers of imitation and reproduction where it is not familiar with the facts which have to be supposed to make the action intelligible. I cannot resist the impression that the evidence is strong for the same personalities in this case as those that manifest themselves in the Piper case, even though spurious in both.

It is interesting to remark that Mrs. S. had a severe headache when she sat down to go into the trance and when she had come out of it the headache had disappeared.

I suppose that the "B. S." or "B. Sw." at the end of the sitting stands for the words "Bitter Sweet", which are apparently the pass words adopted by the "communicator" so that I may know who he is on any special occasion by these words rather than his name.

June 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mr. Smead's hand not on the planchette. Prayer as usual. 11 a. m.

"(All right.) Chesterfield. (Yes, yes.) wait [apparently said because I did not wait until Chesterfield had finished his sentence.] amen. what, what, wha— [Pause. Agitation.] (Be calm.) yes. [scrawl.] he'll [?] try. (Who is trying to write?) * * Conjectured by Mr. S. to be an attempt at 'Bitter Sweet'.] (Bitter Sweet?) yes. (Go on.) [Great agitation in the hand.] * *

[possibly 'couldn't' ?] my son [?] my son, my James [?] Ja * * (Who is writing?) Robert Hyslop. (Go on, I got that.) Yes, James my son * * [scrawl.] (What do you wish?) why so soon I wanted to tell. [I took pains to tell your father that you had gone to meet a man at W—— today and so could not be here.] * * [possibly 'what'.] to day, but I was getting nearer to him.

[I think that at this point the control or communicator changed. I noticed a singular swaying motion of the body. I had never seen anything like it before. I cannot describe it. It would continue for a minute or so and then stop, then begin again and stop. This was done five or six times.]

(Go on.) [scrawl.] THE * * martin Luther [very scrawly.] greets thee Friend. [word 'Friend' conjectured.] (Is that word 'Fruits'?) no. (I cannot tell what you have written. You must write more slowly.) martin Luther greets thee Friend * * (I got that all right, friends. Go on, please.) we are glad to come. (We are glad to have you.) yes, glad to see and know you are doing much for the welfare of thy [excitement and scrawls.] fellow creatures. you have much. [Pause.]

(Go on.) myes My * * W [?] h [?] myes. what (Write slowly.) yes, Myers came. yes, myers came, yes. (Write slowly.) what. (You must write slowly. I cannot read it.) yes, what we say is, yes, Myers came, yes. (Write slowly.) yes, and much interested. (Tell him I was glad to see him. I shall be glad to have him come again.) yes, will come. (Write slowly.) where w ... when w [?] (Go on.) * * (Who wrote that?) myers Fr [?] * * [scrawl.] G. (Write slowly.) going now, Friend. Chesterfield. [very scrawly and indistinct, fading as in the Piper case.] ”

“Mrs. S. was completely unconscious during the sitting, and knows nothing of the contents of the record.”

The following is a vision which Mrs. S. recalls at the end of the trance: “A man with a long black coat, Prince Albert. Average size, stout, little taller than Mr. S., soft felt hat, not like Hyslop's and not worn as Hyslop's, but mashed in at the sides and crease in the middle. Sandy whiskers, turn down collar, features quite regular. He was just in the act of stepping on the end of a cot. His whiskers came down about two or three inches to a point.”

June 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Afternoon sitting.

Mrs. S.'s eyes seemed to close and by this she thought that she ought to hold a sitting. Mrs. S. was wholly unconscious during the sitting. My hand was not on the planchette.

"(We are all ready.) Myers Hyslop * * glad to see, yes * * * * (You must write plainly) wait. (Go on.) talk slowly. we cannhere [cannot hear ?] you * * what we would [scrawls.] yours my good Friend. (I cannot get it all.) good by [bye] Friend. M * * * [mere scrawls.] Myers, Chesterfi [pencil ran off sheet.] Chesterfield. (Can I ask a question Chesterfield?) yes, [followed by scrawls.] yes, [followed by scrawls. (What shall I do about sittings this summer?) we we cannot yet tell thee Friend we must ['we must' very scrawly] know more yet."

June 4th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used with only Mrs. S.'s hand upon it. Prayer as usual.

"(All ready friends.) [Mrs. S. referred to the fact as stated by Dr. Hyslop at his last visit that the writing in Mrs. Piper's sittings was not always clear.]

esterfield greets thee friend. (Good morning Chesterfield.) good morrow Friend. (Thanks.) yes.

(May I ask you a question, Chesterfield? The writing is hard to read. The hand jerks. How can I help it, Chesterfield? Will you tell me what to do to help it?) only be patient. we will soon know your methods and will k [erased.] then understand the [thee] better

(I repeated what was written and said: Is that right?) [scrawl.] we cannot carry thy long messages well. thou must speak shorter that we may understand better. (Yes, I read that.) yes. (May I ask another question friend?) I shall be glad to do thee [the] best I can for the [thee] friend. (I find that the spirit 'Robert Hyslop' makes hard work writing. Will you try to help him?) I will do so when he comes sga again [after writing 'sga' the planchette went back and wrote 'aga' over it and finished the word in the proper line.]

(Thanks. I read that. Would it be well, Chesterfield, to give up using the planchette?) The what? (The planchette; this machine.) when we so advise. not until then, Friend, would it be well.

(Mrs. Piper will not sit this summer. Shall this light sit this summer? I got what you said all right.) it will be liike [like] the machine, only as we advise. you must wait untill we tell thee.

(I got that all right. Thank you. I have no more questions to ask. Do what you please.) [Pause.]

WHAT DOES FATHER SAY NOW BILLY [Billy.] [I did not read it at first, so did not see who was communicating. I made no reply and the control and style of writing changed.]

Thy brother wants to know what thy father thinks, now, Friend, does he believe Now. (I think he does.) it will be well for him to know that it is not all of the earth earthy, but There are also heavenly beings that love to do the Will of Our Father ['r' not made as pencil ran off the edge of the sheet.] above and when it is his [scrawly.] Will we come unto these [corrected to 'those' by writing 'o' on 'e'.] of Earth to help. How can most [not clear.] not believe aught but evil exists after what you call death comes to them. We are not evil but good as it pleaseth Our Father to let us come thither, so we always do to help thy fellow beings. teach them this from your side of life, For this is pleasing to Our Father in Heaven.

(I would like to tell my father who wrote this. Will you tell me?) Martin Luth [pencil ran off sheet.] (Yes, I got it.) all right, we [?] * * when you will learn soon that it is much needed in your world, Light I mean. when they learn it, much suffering will be abated and more love to God and man will follow. (I believe it, my friend.) so may it be. It is enough for this day, Chesterfield. (Chesterfield, will you not pray to God for me and mine?) we will. (I will stop if you wish.) [No reply.] "

This sitting requires no special comment. It has all the internal evidence of the Emperor group's intervention, as any one familiar with it in the Piper case will at once observe. The change of personalities and the interpolated question of Sylvester have the right psychological character for spiritistic matter.

June 5th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used, with only the hand of Mrs. S. on it. Mrs. S. was not in good condition, having worried about the baby who was sick. Besides Mrs. S. fell and struck her head which caused vomiting a little while before the sitting. I was also myself not in good condition, as I was suffering from a hard cold.

" (All right.) [Long pause.] her [?] [possibly for 'here'.] Mary Hyslop. [great agitation: writing wavy.] (Yes.) what is it. (I repeated the word 'yes'.) yes, yes. (Write what you wish.)

vivi amaren [amarem] amis [?] amarem [not clear.] (Yes.) amarem [?] ('Amarem?') yes. (Yes.) what. (I said 'yes'.) [scrawls.] (Do you want me to tell James anything.) yes, that I am Mary Hyslop. [writing wavy, except the words 'am' and 'Hyslop' which are smooth and clear.] (Go on.) yes, they [?] are ever dear * * (Do not hurry. M * * [possibly 'ary here'.])

[Apparent change of communicator, as the hand writing changes.] * * [undec.] (Do not hurry, my friend.) was [?] young * * [possibly 'woman'.] (Go on.) I know why he wanted to know about it over here better now as we all * * [possibly 'desire'.] to [?] live. W. H. H. [the 'W' may be intended for 'M' as the first two strokes are the same for this letter. If so, it would be the letters given at another time for those of 'Mary Hall Hyslop' (p. 414).] [Handwriting changes.] She has gone. (Yes, who is here now?) M. Hyslop Friend. she could not stand more * * [undec. apparently 'hefili'. 'fili' erased.] it was too much for her. will let her try aga— [again] [pencil ran off the sheet.]

+ [sign of the cross.] (Welcome Imperator.) FRIEND Good morrow FRIEND of earth. (Hail Imperator, hail.) [Pause.] U D. we are of the same mind that the light will be better after a rest. we will not come the next week after the coming Sabath [Sabbath], but the same after the next. (Do you mean that I shall wait a week?) it is better so. (No sitting this coming week?) yes. (Week after next?) yes. (May I tell you my earth name?) we already have it from the little light. we like the name, Friend. (Why do you not call me by my earth name?) it is easier to say friend. (All right.)

Chesterfield bids the [thee] good morrow. Friend. (Good morning, Chesterfield.) C. H. It is well that we leave thee now. (Chesterfield, will you tell my brother something?) YES. (Tell him that I shall see father Monday.) I shall see Father monday. (Yes.) yes, I will tell him. Chesterfield."

The reference to the "little light" is possibly to Cecil, Mr. and Mrs. S.'s deceased child.

Mrs. S. said after she came out of the trance that she saw the cross at the beginning and the end of the sitting. Beneath the cross she saw three letters, the middle one not being recognised, but the other two were S and T. She heard nothing.

June 17th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer. Mrs. S. had received news from home in regard to her

sister Bertha which seems to have greatly troubled her with mental anxiety. Besides she was suffering from neuralgic pain, which had bothered her for two days.

Received from Dr. Hyslop a letter asking for sittings for himself on certain dates and for two sittings for a stranger, if possible to arrange for them. This letter was read to Mrs. S. for her consent.

" (All right, friends.) [scrawls.] welcome Friend. (Welcome.) yes. (Who is writing?) welcome. (Yes, you are welcome.) Chesterfield. [wavy letters.] (Yes.) yes, the trouble hurts the light. it is more difficult this time. [writing very wavy.] (Can you hear me?) yes [very scrawly.] * * what said ['said' very scrawly.] (I want to have Dr. Hyslop come here for a sitting. Did you hear me?) [scrawl.] yes. (Can he come the fifth, sixth and seventh days after this day?) we will try for him then. [written in larger script.] (I mean James H. Hyslop. Do you understand?) we do U D. (I want to ask you another question, Chesterfield.) not at present. it is enough [enough] we must wait. (Yes.) [scrawls, with clicking and agitation.] (Write plainly, please, friend.) [scrawl.] let us try our way. (All right.) [clicking and agitation again with pencil moving backward and forward, followed by a scrawly and wavy line across the sheet.] speak friend. (Can Dr. James H. Hyslop have the first sitting alone with you, Chesterfield?) why me alone. (I do not know. That is what he asked me to ask you. I suppose that he wants to talk to you Chesterfield.) [clicking and agitation with scrawls between, making a word or words undecipherable, possibly an attempt at 'we wish'] [scrawls.] we wish to work here this day and will answer thee for Friend H. on the morrow. [message read over.] (May I ask you any more questions?) [clicking.] what. [scrawly.] (Will you ask Robert Hyslop to wait until the second sitting with his son James? Do you get my question?) [scrawls.] yes, we will ask [?] friend to so do * * and [? only letter 'd' clear.] we are [?] [scrawls and agitation.] (Hadh't we better stop friend?) no, we are taking her soul up higher, so be very still. [writing plain and legible but not distinct.] [The body swayed to and fro while there was agitation of a singular sort not easily described. I waited in awe and asked no questions.] enough this day, Chesterfield."

Mr. S. makes a note of the fact that Mrs. S. on June 14th read a comparison between John Wesley and Martin Luther in *The Christian Work and Evangelist* of June 13th. It has no significance for this sitting, but should be on record for future emergencies.

As she returned to consciousness from the trance Mrs. S. saw a vision of a bed with some one in it. It was probably the effect of the news about her sister Bertha. She also saw the cross apparently underneath her. It was of a blue color at first, but it became a yellowish color as the surroundings became light. Finally, just as she emerged from the trance, the cross became a yellowish white.

June 18th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer by Mr. S.

" (All ready friends.) we we welcome. (Welcome.) we will do for friend H. what we can, yes. [writing wavy.] (This answer was repeated.) we will try. (I wish to ask you a question. May I ask it Chesterfield?) not yet friend. (All right.) [Everything about Mrs. S. remained still. There was a pause of about five minutes with no visible shaking. The handwriting changed from the wavy into a smooth and easily legible style.]

Our Father if it is pleasing to thee Thee u [erased.] let us [erased.] Thy Light come unto this Thy ine ['Thy' written and then 'ine' a little above it in line.] handmaiden that she may do good here on this [scrawls.] day. we ask it ['ask it' very scrawly.] we ask it this da— [pencil ran off the sheet.] day, Amen.

[Clicking followed the prayer, with scrawls. Then the writing became wavy again.] when * * [possibly 'we come'.] yes.... what. (Can I ask my question now?) yes. [very scrawly.] (Will you ask Robert Hyslop to wait until his second sitting with his son James?) we will ask him. (Thank you. Can I ask another question?) will wait, Hyslop. (Good: all right.) yes. (Who is writing now?) * * [undec. pause and evident agitation.] Chesterfield. [written clearly and without trembling.] welcome friend. [last two words wavy.] (Welcome Chesterfield.) [scrawls.] (What is the trouble Chesterfield?) [evident confusion and difficulty in the writing before beginning the answer.] when he cam can. (What is the trouble?) [scrawls.] yes, it will come all right sometime. [scrawls.] yes. [clicking and scrawls with evident excitement.] we cannot answer you this day, friend Chesterfield. (All right, do as you wish.) thank you. cannot as yet. no. [scrawly.] "

It is probable that Mrs. S. was not in a deep trance at this experiment, as she reports the following visions which she says occurred during the sitting. It is probable that she had them

either at the beginning or end of the trance condition, and could not define the time of their occurrence any more than we can our dreams. I report them in her own language as taken down by Mr. S. The first was as she was going into the trance, as reported.

"I saw a woman with her hair in a net. The hair was dark. Her eyes were also dark. Her dress was light brown or golden brown. She seemed to come into sight from the skirt first. The dress was made with a full skirt and the waist was tight fitting. The hat was a cream colored straw trimmed with flowers and black velvet ribbons. There were two short ends at the back. I should say that she was a lady that lived about fifty years ago from the style of the dress. She had a large hoop skirt, etc., and looked very old fashioned. By her appearance I should judge that her age was about 25 or 30 years.

"After this lady had gone I saw a light. It seemed to come down over me in streaming rays and in the center of it was a crown with some ten or twelve points in it."

The next vision occurred, according to report, just as Mrs. S. was becoming unconscious.

"I saw an ocean vessel. It was very large and it seemed to be coming towards me at first, with the sails set square, until it passed toward the left. I did not see it pass me, but when it was nearer me I had to turn toward the left and part of the sails were down. I cannot imagine what the meaning of it was, but it came from the east.

"I did not see anything after this until nearly conscious, when I saw the face of Christ sitting by a window. His head was leaning toward the right and he seemed very sorrowful. The cross was just over his head. His hair was in curls to the shoulders. His face was, as we call it, with full beard. His eyebrows were square and his robe was light grey."

This vision of Christ, the reader will remark, represents the current pictures and character of that person. It indicates one of those little incidents which show how subliminal associations and visions may weave themselves together into the main stream of the "communications".

June 19th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Prayer. Mrs. S. in better condition than in previous sittings.

"(All right, friends.) [scrawl.] * * [scrawl.] Chesterfield. [writing wavy.] (Good morning, Chesterfield.) good morning, friend. (Write what you wish.) [scrawl.] yes [very scrawly. agitation and scrawls.] yes [scrawl.] * * friend Hyslop. (Did you say anything for me?) yes. yes * * for R. Hyslop. (James will be here tomorrow night.) * * night [?] (Go on. Talk plainly, please. Yes tomorrow night.) we * * [scrawls and great agitation.] (I cannot read it. Speak plainly.) we desire to bring light to earth the second, third, forth [fourth] days of the coming week. furthermore if the light lasts for himl [him.] [Question put as to sitting for a friend of Dr. Hyslop's.] That is all we can tell thee. (Very well.) thee [? the] light is not clear this day. wait here. (Yes, I will.) [Pause. Mrs. S. very still. I thought a prayer for her.]"

June 22nd, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work. Prayer by Mr. S.

This is the first of the series of sittings arranged for and mentioned by Mr. S. at previous sittings of June 17th, 18th and 19th.

"(Mr. S.: Everything is ready, friends, now.) [Pause of 8 minutes before the hand began to shake slightly and then 2 minutes before it began to write. When it began it moved very slowly and ran upward and paused again.] yes. [scrawls.] [pause.] (We are ready.) [clicking of planchette from shaking of the hand.] * * * (Cannot read it.) [scrawls, and pause.] (Mr. S.: All right, friend.) friend (Mr. S.: Yes, go on.) Hyslop. (Welcome.) yes, welcome. (Tell me when to speak.) [pause.] we do not very well hear thee. [sentence to me illegible, but read thus by Mr. S.] [Hand then moved toward me with the planchette, as if to have me repeat the message more clearly. I repeated my statement.] (Tell me when to speak.) [Hand remained still, and I repeated the statement again.] (Tell me when to speak.) when to speak Hyslop now.

(I have some experiments to perform on the third day. It is meant to show that you are spirits in order [excitement.] to help me in this work. Will it be possible to send a message through this light to the other light? Will it be possible on the third day?) will try to do * * [reading doubtful.] (Did you hear all I said?) yes. [written excitedly and followed by illegible and excited

scrawls.] yes, yes, [scrawls.] yes, Martin Luther will carry it for thee. (Very well. I shall remember it when the time comes. Remember that it will be on the third day.) (Mr. S.: All right, friend.) yes, it will be well (All right, you understand what my purpose is.) [scrawl.] will help thee * * ['friend'?] Hyslop. [We tried to read the word before 'Hyslop' and could not make it out. It was then spontaneously written.] friend. [Pause. Hand remained perfectly still for a few moments, and showed by the handwriting when it began, which was free and easy, but light, that there was a change of control.]

yes. [Here a remarkable phenomenon occurred. There was a slight pause, and the hand arose from the planchette slightly and went back to it, repeating this motion up and down, as if experimenting with it, for some moments. Then the hand moved sideways backward and forward a few times, and then touching the planchette moved it backward and forward, as if trying it, and then moved the fingers over it. Finally the hand began to rise slowly and was held in the air about six inches above the planchette with perfect stillness. I expected the sign of the cross to be made, but after remaining in an apparent position of prayer it again moved down to the planchette and wrote:] amen. [line drawn.] you [line drawn.] U D. (Yes, I U D.) good. All will be well for thee. [very wavy.] (Cannot read it.) * * * [part of the writing very rapid and scrawly.] [Pause, and hand trembling.] * * friend. [pause.] we will get it all. [very indistinct.] [Long pause.] (Mr. S.: All right.) (Do you hear our messages well now?) [Pause and quiet. The body began to sway slightly backward and forward and then the hand to shake slightly, but quieted again and there was a pause. Then the arm began to shake and the body to sway slightly again, pulling the planchette with it slightly. Then the planchette was pushed forward a little, the hand trembled and soon began to write.] * * [Pause.] (Is the trouble on our side or on your side?) [No reply, but pause and quiet for some moments. Mrs. S. then began to sigh slightly and apparently to begin to come out of the trance. She coughed several times, and then said "hurts me to breathe". Her head arose from its rest and rested on her hand which had been holding the head support. Mr. S. held her head a few moments and talked to her, but no answer came. In a few moments she came to consciousness, but remembered nothing that she had said a few minutes before. She remarked after recovering consciousness that she felt as if choked and remained sleepy for some time.] "

She stated after coming out of the trance that, as she entered it, she saw the name of "Robert Hyslop" upside down in printed letters before her, and to be read from right to left.

The phenomenon which my note describes and which relates to the conduct of the hand when an apparent prayer was made is a *fac simile* of what has occurred in the Piper case under the control of the Imperator group, early in the history of its régime there, and told me by Dr. Hodgson, but I do not recall whether it was published in his report or not. It is not mentioned in mine. It had all the semblance of an attempt to improve the conditions for communication after the previous disappointing efforts. The whole conduct of the hand was alive with intelligence in the apparent attempt to experiment with it and to ascertain the conditions which interfered with clear "communications". The writing of the words "yes" and "amen" was calm and distinct and there was no trembling of the hand as in the usual script.

June 23rd, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer by Mr. S. Mrs. S. reported that last night she was suddenly awakened and saw two forms in the room which at first in her half sleepy condition she took for burglars. But on second thought she noticed them as clothed in robes fastened about the neck and tucked slightly at the waist. They had dark hair. She could not see the faces plainly. The narrative of this experience was told, however, before we sat down to experiment.

Prayer. Three minutes elapsed before the hand began to tremble and six minutes before it began to write. When it began it moved the pencil upward and after writing the first letter 'w' it ran off the sheet. The planchette was then replaced in right position and there was a pause again, and soon the hand began to tremble.

"(All right, go on. It is all right.) [Said by Mr. S.] [Started to write but paused, the hand trembling all the while. Soon it showed some excitement and wrote:] welcome. Hyslop. (You are welcome, friend.) [pause.] * * [pause.] (What was the word after the name 'Hyslop'?) [pause.] wait * * here. [pause.] [Planchette moved up the page and the sheet was changed.] [pause.] * * (Are you here, Chesterfield?) [pause of ten minutes.] [Hand stopped shaking and remained perfectly

still for a few minutes and then began to tremble slightly, and stopped again.] (We are waiting.) [slight pause and then began writing slowly.] * * yes, wait. * * [pause.] will yes [?] [very wavy and scrawly.] * * (Who is writing?) wait [?] here [?] (Are you here, father?) [Hand trembled.] we cannot * * you did not stay when this light * * ['was gone' ?] this time [?] * * good C [?] (Was that written by ... spoken by you Chesterfield?) [pause.] [scrawl, possibly 'yes'] me. [pause.] [Hand remained still for eight minutes before it began to shake again and to write.] when * * [pause.] [Hand still again some minutes. Mrs. S. began to sigh and changed her head as if coming out of the trance, seemed to return into it for a few moments, sighed again and then remained quiet. I had removed the hand from the planchette expecting the trance to end, but on suspicion that it was returning I replaced it on the planchette and after a few moments it began to write again.]

yes * * the morrow James. (All right, father.) yes. (Can you bring—) yes. [written with a little increased excitement.] (the man who came with you before and after I had gone?) I will try to have him * * * * good by [bye] * * (All right, father, we shall meet an hour earlier tomorrow.) yes, well. we will come too. [pause.] [The hand became still and soon Mrs. S. sighed and came out of the trance.] ”

After Mrs. S. recovered consciousness, which was in a few minutes, she said that when she sat down and was going into the trance she saw the word MYERS in large letters. At first she thought it was Hyslop, but it turned into MYERS. She saw the two letters 'HY' and then they changed into 'MYERS'. The letters were about two inches in length.

This sitting was practically an entire failure. Nothing occurred even to suggest that the Emperor group was there. What the difficulty was cannot be imagined, especially when we compare results with previous sittings.

The possible significance of this apparent presence of Myers is the fact that he was profoundly interested in this experiment which I had arranged for, when he was living, and had tried it through Mrs. Piper and a medium in England in 1896 or 1897. The reader will also recall (p. 606), after I had left, that Myers appeared to be one of the communicators and it was said that he was much interested. It would have been natural for him to be present looking over the ground in preparation for the experiment arranged for the morrow. I, of course, have no express

evidence that he was so present, but the fact that Mrs. S. did not know of the communication in his name after I left May 30th and does not know that he has ever appeared to communicate, as well also not knowing that he was interested in life in this kind of experiment, makes the coincidence an interesting one on any theory.

June 24th, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer. Planchette used. 10 a. m. Meeting arranged for at this hour to coincide with that in Boston with Mrs. Piper by Dr. Hodgson. The usual hour for the sitting here has been 11 a. m. The arrangement for the coincidence had been agreed upon between Dr. Hodgson and myself.

Two minutes after the prayer the hand began to shake, in four minutes the shaking increased and in five minutes the writing began.

"Chesterfield. (You are welcome Chesterfield.) welcome Friend, H. (Good, 'welcome friend H.') yes. (Tell me when you are ready for Martin Luther's message to the other light.) yes, very soon. (All right.) [pause. Hand still a moment, then began shaking.] yes. [pause.] now, yes. (Are you ready for the message?) [pause, and quiet.] wait * * [pause.] yes. (The message consists of three words. They are 'Hyslop pertinent Luther'.)" [Time 10.15] [I repeated the message two or three times spelling out the word pertinent, and asking them to repeat it to me if they got it. This was done.] hyslop Pertinent Pertinent Luther. (All right, go ahead.) [pause.] (Now is father here? Robert Hyslop?) Martin Luther greets thee, Friend Hyslop. (I greet thee Martin Luther.) (I repeat my message: "Hyslop pertinent Luther". Deliver this to Dr. Hodgson at the other light, Mrs. Piper.) Pertinent Hyslop Luther, yes. (That's right.) [scrawls.] yes [written in excitement.] [pause.] Hodgson. (Yes, Hodgson, that's right.) wants [not read at time.] (Repeat that last word.) wants. (Can't read it yet.) [pause.] (Is it 'wait'?) (Hodgson wants?) yes, Bitter [or 'Buter'] [I read it 'Bitter'.] [scrawl and pause.] (All right, wait a moment.) BUTTER CHEEs, Robert Hyslop. (Can't get that word before Robert Hyslop.) BUTTER (Bitter?) no. (Butter?) yes, what Hodgson wants [?] * * (Wait a moment.) [pause and quiet.] yes, * * * * (Write slowly.) [pause and quiet.] what Hodgson wants thee to get * * Cheese [scrawl.] ('Cheese'?) yes, [10.30] (All right, 'But-

ter and Cheese'.) Hodgson * * [pause.] (Is Myers here?) [pause and scrawls.] do not worry so much * * [undec.] [not read by me, but by Mr. S. a little later.] [Pencil changed] [scrawls.] (All right, I shall not worry.) My [pause and scrawl] * * friend [?] do you know him [fairly clear writing and without trembling.] H [?] yes, * * (Is this Myers?) yes, you know the European friend. (All right. Can you take a message to Hodgson?) * * [undec. apparently 'no'.] [not read at time.] (I will give it to you now.) not yet. (All right.) [pause.] Myers (Good, Myers was written out.) you here [hear] it. ['hear' not read by me at the time, but read 'have' by Mr. S.] hear [pause.] hear. ('hear'. I have it. Tell me when you are ready for the message.) what (All right: 'Help me God; love me man'.) [10.50] [Repeated several times.] [pause.] yes, [pause.] (Shall I repeat?) speak Hyslop, no. (Can Myers take —) Myers yes. Help me God; love me man Hyslop. [10.53] (That is right. Go ahead when you wish.) [pause and trembling.] got it [pause.] Hyslop. (All right.) love me man. (Yes, 'love me man'.) yes. (Yes, all right I got it.) yes we are with you Here. [read 'yes we love you'.] not that. we are with you here. [pause and scrawl.] you must not get nervous, yes [?] and it troubles us. [read by Mr. S. after I failed to read it. I then read it aloud and asked:] (Is that right?) * * (All right. I shall try to keep calm.) what now. Enough no [now] [pencil ran off sheet.] (You close the meeting when you think best.) wait here. (All right.) yes. [pause of three minutes.] good bye now. (Shall we meet tomorrow or not?) [pause.] (Shall we meet tomorrow or not.) [pause and quiet.] "

In a few moments Mrs. S. sighed and moved her head and remarked: "It seems as if the blood in my body stops." Then she said she felt sleepy all over, and remarked that she had a headache through the temples. After five minutes she seemed to go into the trance again. I replaced her hand on the planchette, which she had taken off. It was a little stiff, but soon became flexible. She remained quiet a few minutes and came to consciousness again and mentioned her headache again. The sitting then closed, as it was apparent that the trance would not be resumed. It was 11.15 a. m.

June 24th, 1903. 7 p. m. I called on the Smeads this evening and ascertained from Mrs. Smead that after we had abandoned the sitting today at 11.30 she still felt as if she should go into

the trance. This feeling continued for some time and was so strong that she finally lay down and went to sleep and had a dream that Mr. Myers was present. It should be remembered in connection with this fact that she had not been told at any time that Myers had apparently tried to communicate through her and hence she was entirely ignorant of what had occurred in the past and also today. I told her, however, after the narration of this experience that Myers had purported to communicate through her, and also the general nature of the experiment performed today. I told none of the details, and neither has Mr. S. told her of them.

June 25th, 1903. Just before the sitting today Mrs. S. narrated to me the fact that last night she went to sleep very quickly, just as if she dropped into sleep as soon as she touched the pillow, but was awakened in a short time very suddenly, feeling her hand shaking. She turned over to the other side of the bed and then noticed that her hand was writing. The following is the record of the sitting today.

June 25th, 1903. Present J. H. Hyslop, Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer. Planchette used. 11 a. m.

[In three minutes the hand began to shake slightly and increased gradually until it began in nine minutes to write.]

Chesterfield. (Welcome Chesterfield.) welcome [pause] * * R [pause.] (I get only the letter 'R'.) [pause.] * * (Larger letters.) [pause.] * * [pause.] Myers. (Myers. That's all right. I got the word 'Myers'.) [pause and trembling of hand.] (Wait a moment.) [Sheet changed. Pause and hand quiet.] * * (Writing too fine.) [pause.] * * * * (You are superposing.) yes * * yes * * ['yes'?] (Not clear. Wait a moment.) [Sheet changed.] [pause.] (Put it in capital letters.) [Long pause. Left side and arm shook while the right remained comparatively still. Apparently a few sudden jerks in hand.] * * [I took the last word to be 'mary' at the time, though doubtful, and in order to test it quietly put a pair of arm shields from a dress of my wife on the table to 'hold her' if there.] [pause and no response.] * * (Who is trying to speak now?) [pause.] what [?] [pause.] (Who is trying to speak now?) we can not, we cannot work this day. [Some difficulty on our part in deciphering, but read by Mr. S.] (Had we better give it up today

and not have any more meetings at present?) cam [cann] yes. (Shall we give it up this day?) Better So Friend. (All right Chesterfield. You can bring her back.) [pause.] yes, yes. [Planchette then moved to the other side of the table by the headrest and remained still a few moments when it resumed writing.]

we are very much exhausted * * [probably 'exhausted', repeated.] (All right.) [pause.] [I then read the last sentence aloud and said: 'I understand.'] yes, myers. [pause.] Myers. [pause and trembling.] (Thank you Mr. Myers.) [pause.] (We did good work yesterday. We can be patient until another time.) [pause and trembling.] (We shall not meet tomorrow.) [pause.] very well. [Hand then became quiet and in a few moments Mrs. S. came to consciousness at 11.45, when she remarked that her head snapped as she went into the trance and that she also saw the cross.]

The object which I had in performing these experiments was to test the identity of the trance personalities with those of the Piper case. The appearance of that identity is very marked in the use of language, psychological situation, dramatic play, and various characteristics which any one can remark who studies the case adequately. This appearance was so marked that it was incumbent upon me to settle once for all whether it was real or simulated. There was no objective evidence of their presence or that it was anything more than secondary personality. But the internal evidence suggested the Emperor group, in spite of various doubts involved in the personality of Chesterfield and the silence maintained in the Piper sittings, that it was necessary to make a final test of the case and settle whether it was all subliminal or at least a part of it supernormal. The experiments were arranged with this purpose in view. The result was only to prove beyond question that the whole simulation of the Emperor group was subliminal.

When I saw Dr. Hodgson after the experiment it turned out that he neither received nor sent any message whatever, and the trance personalities apparently knew nothing whatever of what I was doing. This shows that all the psychological machinery involved in the actions of Chesterfield and Martin Luther, and the receiving and returning of a message were secondary personality pure and simple. This is apparent to the reader without comment.

As additional evidence of this I may remark several facts.

The return message about "butter and cheese" coincides with the fact that Mr. Smead had on that morning, June 24th, bought some butter and cheese and the fact was perfectly well known to Mrs. Smead. As soon as the message was delivered, Mr. Smead remarked his scepticism of its genuineness and said that he had gotten it that morning.

Again the reference to Mrs. Smead as "handmaiden" in the prayer by the trance personality in the sitting of June 18th has a significance in the fact that at one of my sittings in May Mr. Smead in his prayer opening the experiment used the word "handmaiden" in reference to her, and Dr. Hodgson tells me that Imperator *never* has so referred to Mrs. Piper in his prayers for her. The same is true in the reference to Christ as the son of God, which is Mrs. Smead's belief.

It is apparent now what meaning is to be given originally to the words "Bitter Sweet" in the sitting where I had tried a similar experiment, though these words were later used for apparently very different objects, namely, as pass words instead of the name.

It will have some interest in this connection if I transcribe what transpired at the sitting with Mrs. Piper by Dr. Hodgson on the same date as mine, namely, June 24th. I give that part of the record which refers to me and my experiments.

"(Have you or any of the group been communicating through any other light?) I rector. This is an interrogation.

(Yes.) No friend not any of our special group. Who saith this.

(Hyslop specially asks this, and he also wishes to know if you have any advice for him about his experiments. Do you know anything about his experiments?)

We often see him with a lady who hath [has h ?] some light.

('Who hath some light?') Yes.

we also see him with one or more young men. but the lady. we do see hath light. but it is undeveloped and at times leaves her entirely. When she gets information from other sources. Yes this we have seen her do.

(Have you tried to communicate through her?)

Oh yes many times long ago or some time ago.

(Do you mean not recently?)

No not recently. had we we would tell thee.

(Yes.)

his father tried to send a message there but whether he was successful or not we do not yet U. D.

(Is there any way by which you could assure me which lady this is?)

She is the lady with whom we saw him soon after he met us here some time ago. and the only one to whom we have ever been attracted near him.

(Very good. That is all about that.)

We have sought diligently [diligently] for another light. . . diligently [diligently] . . . for a long time but we have found none to whom we can communicate or through whom we can communicate clearly.

(Yes.) "

The contradiction between this and the appearance of the record in the Smead case is clear on any theory whatsoever. There is no evidence whatever on Rector's part that he knew what I was trying to do at the time, though the readiness with which he responded to intimation in my first attempt of the kind over two years ago (p. 80) and the calm way in which he assumed to know at the distance of Boston from New York might lead us to expect on any theory that a similar omniscience would be exhibited. But nothing of the kind is indicated and there is apparently entire ignorance of what I was doing at the time, though vague intimations that he knew what I had been doing. The answer to Dr. Hodgson's question as to the identity of the lady is not perfectly clear. If it refers to the time of my previous experiment more than two years ago to communicate with him in Boston it was more than a year after my sittings with Mrs. Piper. The statement that he has seen this lady getting information from other sources is rather oracular. It may have four interpretations: (1) From conscious fraud; (2) From her subliminal not involving conscious fraud; (3) From telepathic sources; (4) From other discarnate spirits. We have no means of deciding which was meant, and it would not make much difference, as his opinion would be worthless in any case.

When the reader remarks that I had not suggested the bringing of any return message in my arrangement with Chesterfield he will remark the most interesting feature of the secondary personality involved. The subliminal had interpreted my object at once, as it might well do from Mrs. Smead's normal knowledge

that I had tried the experiment of communication with Dr. Hodgson once before.

As soon as Mrs. S. heard of the result of the experiments she resolved never to have anything more to do with the subject. She felt keenly the disappointment at such apparent deception going on in attempts which she was so much in earnest about. But on reflection with her husband and seeing that the meaning of such phenomena ought to be known to science she finally yielded to entreaties on his part and consented to renew experiment for the purpose of at least ascertaining what the source of these pretensions is. The consequence was that the sittings were renewed a few days afterward and continued at distant intervals as follows:

June 29th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mrs. S. insisted on my putting my hand on the machine (planchette) and absolutely refused to become unconscious. Sitting 3.30 p. m.

"(All right: we must work under these adverse conditions.) Friends why trouble ye about so small a matter. (Mrs. S.: I think it is a pretty big matter. I am disgusted with it.) She must not weary in well-doing. we will still prove to you that we are here. do not believe that we are not truth S [After writing the letter 'S' the planchette moved back and inserted the word 'not' and above before 'truth'.] (What does Rector mean when he says that none of the Emperor group have been here? What does he mean friends?) it means that They did not remember well. their own memories have been shaken. They have met light they did not know existed and are amazed at it. that is all friend, that is all. (Do you mean to say that the Emperor group have been here?) I certainly do. (Who is writing * * ['Lauronice' ?] ('Lawrence'?) no, * * ['Laniui' ?] (Who is writing? Tell me.) [scrawls.] many memories forbid it. (Is this a new spirit?) no. (Have you been here before?) I have Sir and intend to stay till I see this out. do you U D. that. (I understand. Will you tell what name I shall know you by?) that will do now U. D. [periods inserted.] (What may I call you?) you may know me by that sign U D yes. (That is absurd. You are her secondary personality.) no [?] we are not [not] your * * come here * * (Please write it over.) no, that is not worth troubling about. we will remain around somewhere near thee, friend, that we may tell thee more when they again return to earth. Thy friends are —

thy friends shall and will stay by thee, never fear. (Do you think Rector a lying spirit?) who is Rector, why does he conceal his [?] his name, his name from you if he has one why does he not give it then. [period inserted.] that is what we want to know. we know no reason for this friend. (Rector is supposed to be one of the Emperor group and I suppose that he conceals his name for the same reason that you do.) I do not, only that when I gave it y—ou [written with the 'y' on left and 'ou' on right side of page.] will not— did not and do not believe me when I told you and now please answer that, Sir. (I cannot tell whom you refer to. I do not remember you.) there were so many of us that it would indeed be hard to tell us apart. (That is so. Please help me to remember you. Who are you?) It would do no good (I would like to know you and to remember you.) Surely. (Yes, I would.) yes, yes, what would the good be, friend. (It would help me to know you.) Thou ['To' written first and then 'h' superposed upon it.] didst not believe thy friend Chesterfield. how can you ask for more. (I did believe him. I have had no reason not to believe him. I never said I did not believe him.) very well continue doing good. (Please give me your name.) Chesterfield (Chesterfield, do you know Emperor?) I do. (Do you say he has been here?) I did not. (As far as you know has he been here?) It is another question. (Has Emperor been here?) I would say yes. (How do you know he has?) That little blackeyed man has been almost everywhere. (Who is the little blackeyed man?) you asked me. (Do you mean by your little blackeyed man Emperor?) yes. (You said, Chesterfield, that you were Prudens with Mrs. Piper.) no, Chesterfield here, Prudens there [cf. p. 593.] The same as thou hast said. (Then you are Prudens in the Emperor group?) no, I did not say it so. (What did you mean by Prudens?) same Character. (Have you ever visited Mrs. Piper?) how wo— [sheet changed.] how will that help you. (Go on.) Thy friend Moses has Been here. (Moses? Who?) S Moses. (Is he here now?) no. (Is Chesterfield here now?) yes. (Will you please describe Emperor?) no. (When shall we have another sitting?) when you would like. I shall not go far away, so will know when needed. (Who were you in earth life?) Chesterfield. (Were you called Lord Chesterfield?) yes, Sir. (Can you not give me facts to prove that you were Lord Chesterfield?) did I not do that? (No.) Yes I told you how I looked and where I lived. (Chesterfield, I want a set of facts to prove that you were really Lord Chesterfield on earth. Will you try and give them to me?) you would not know me any better at [erased.] whatever I said until you came here for yourself to know. (Try and give me a set of facts as I have asked.) yes, no good our * * you do not see they will not believe not believe. (Shall we sit tomorrow at 3 p. m.) Chesterfield is suited, yes."

July 1st, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.
Prayer. Mr. S. did not hold his hand on planchette at this sitting.

"(All ready.) Yes. (Mrs. S.: I dare them to use it.) Chesterfield, Chesterfield. little lights Grow, yes. Chesterfield is not affected by it, no. affected. (Mrs. S.: I am.) Chesterfield, Che——. (Chesterfield, you know the difficulty we are in.) Chemistry. (Mrs. S.: What does that mean?) Martin Luther, yes. (What does 'chemistry' mean? Greetings, Luther.) Chesterfield, I heard that said [scrawls.] (We did not say or think it.) that is good. (Go on please. Is Martin Luther here now?) Get him. Chesterfield Could not persuade him to come. he is away elsewhere. (Is Martin Luther here now?) no. (Mr. S., alluding to Mrs. S.: It writes contrary to your will. You would never do that, Ida) no, she does not. (I want a lot of facts to prove that you are Lord Chesterfield.) get * * soon. Chesterfield. going, good day."

July 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. 4 p. m. I had my hand on the planchette and said in a careless way: 'probably the stimulus to move this comes from me. Perhaps I am like the plates of the battery.'

"(All ready friends.) Friend, yes, yes. Friend from us, us us. (I understand.) Chesterfield. (Why was not the message from Dr. Hyslop to Dr. Hodgson delivered? You are welcome Chesterfield.)

[An interruption by callers for some minutes.]

Chesterfield. (We are very sorry for the interruption. Please tell me if you are Chesterfield.) yes. (Is this Chesterfield?) yes. (All right will you now tell me why that message of Dr. Hyslop's was not delivered?) he was to get it. I know not. (That is all right, Chesterfield. How do you know Dr. Hodgson was to get it?) Friend Luther was to carry it. (Did Luther do so?) He said it so bro [?] [erased.] so (Do you know if he did carry it?) Luther said it so here. (I know that, but do you know?) no. (Have you and Luther talked about it?) Chesterfield will talk about it later. (I want to know now.) I will ask friend Luther then will tell you later. (When will Luther come again?) Later. (Is Luther one of the Emperor group with Mrs. Piper?) I do not know it that way. (That is not satisfactory. Tell me about it.) Ches-

terfield cannot answer for friend Luther. (That is so. Have you any advice to give me?) no, be careful of all things pertaining to thy heavenly interests. (What is that word after 'things'?) pertaining. (Chesterfield do you not think it strange that there is so much pious talk and so many singular statements back and forth?) we are here to help it if we can. (I will give you time.) our time has been a very short one here. (That is so, Chesterfield. Will you tell me something to prove to me that you are not Mrs. S.'s unconscious mind. If you will do this, you will help me greatly.) Friend Chesterfield has made statements that if you * * you looked you would have found. (I do not recall them. Please repeat one of them.) Chesterfield, This is a manorell, my home was such a place. (Did you ever give me any other statements?) Yes, my dress and hat were not like yours. If I lived now and wore it your people would laugh at such an old fashioned Rig. (That is good. That is just what I want. Tell me another fact.) we had better not now." Sitting closed. Mrs. S. was faint.

July 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Hand of Mr. S. on the instrument.

" (All ready now friend.) * * (What is that word?) * * Robert Hyslop. (Is Robert Hyslop here?) wrathey wrathey. (I do not understand it. Explain it please.) Chesterfield cannot do their work. (Good morning, Chesterfield. I am glad to meet you. All right.) No we will later answer. (I did not get it. Write again, please.) Chesterfield said when ie [?] (What was the word after 'said'?) no, no, that he was to come later. (Go on.) we will not say more now. (Who is 'he'?) word 'we' misread.] me me. (Who is coming later, Chesterfield?) I will go away now and will come back later. (Shall we wait here?) no. (What are you going away for, Chesterfield?) Find Friend Luther (When shall we sit again?) I cannot tell thee Friend. (May I ask you some questions before you go away?) [No reply.]

[I thought I would see what might take place if I opened up the matter to any other intelligence who might wish to write as in the old régime. This was done for experiment. We had no one in mind.]

(Any other intelligent and honest spirit may write.) H * * Shalle (Write plainly.) [scrawls.] * * [apparently 'Thee teller'.] Let 'it good. (I do not understand. Write and tell me who you are?) [scrawls.] That is what I am trying to do. (Who are you?) * * (Please tell me who you are?) Hopkins. (Hopkins?) Hopkins. [I see no reason for this name.] (Please tell me your first name.) * * Charles, Charles,

Charles. (All right. I got it that. Where did you live?) * *
(Where did you live?) Charles. (You did not get it. What
place? Where did you live on earth?) Charlie, Charlie. (All
right. Tell me where you lived?) place. (Yes, what place?)
Methuen ass [Mass]

[There is such a place as Methuen, Mass., but we do not recog-
nise any man by the name of Charles Hopkins that used to live
there.]

(Write the name of the place again.) [scrawls.] (I cannot get
it. Will you tell me what you wish.) Charlie is here, Charlie is
here, Charlie is here. (I know that. I got that all right. Tell me
something else.) cannot [cannot] here hear should know Hop-
kins. (What Hopkins is it?) [scrawls.] (What Hopkins is it?)
[scrawls.] ere [?] that we came. (I don't understand.) Hopkins,
yes, here. (Yes, go on.) How. (I mean keep on writing.)
[scrawls.] Best say it so. (Tell me all you can.) * * * *
O H B T R * * *

July 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette work.
We thought that Chesterfield might be ready to talk and that
possibly he would bring Luther with him so that we could talk
about the experiments and why they failed. I wanted to see
what sort of a defence her subliminal would make. I was sur-
prised beyond measure to find that Sylvester was present. 3.30
p. m.

"(All ready, friends.) [Curious lines or figures drawn.]
(What do you call that?) S Smead. [Not read at first.] (I do
not understand it.) S s s s s s s S S S S S C [scrawls.] (What
does all this mean?) Sleep on a bed (What?) bed. (What
do you suppose I sleep on? Did you ever see me sleep on the
floor?) Yes when a boy. (Did you ever sleep on the floor?)
Yes with you. (Who is this? Is this Sylvester writing?) no.
(Who is trying to write?) billy. [This is one of his jokes. cf.
p. 304.] (Good for you. I know who it is. This is Sylvester.)
Sylvester. [written with remarkable clearness.] (Sylvester, do you
know anything about our experiments lately?) I do not know much
of it, truly billy. (Tell me what you do know about them.) no I
will go away if you do not care for anything but that. (Of course
I care, Sylvester. I am very glad to have you today. Tell me more
about our childhood.) from that better take a lesson. (What les-
son? What do you mean, Sylvester?) life is hard but we did not
realise it, so made the best of it: you see the floor was hard. Hard
things are not to be taken as defeats always billy. (I am delighted

with that. Thank you my brother. Good for you. Do you remember father's old Goddard buggy?) Grimes, good old hundred.

[Mr. S. adds this note: "This is a good point. It is not evidential, because Mrs. S. knew that the old horse which Sylvester called Grimes and Old Hundred was called that name by me. She did not know what Sylvester chiefly called him. It was Old Hundred chiefly. This horse was a character in the horse line; the most stubborn, lazy, and balky brute that any man ever owned. My father used to have a Goddard buggy and he tried to drive this beast with it. He paid over \$200 for him originally and so hated to give him up as a bad job and a dead loss, so he was determined to drive him at all costs. The scenes with that old horse on the farm and at my father's hands, if displayed on the stage, would draw the biggest houses in the theatrical business".]

(That was the old horse Vet. Write something about his old Goddard buggy.) it is too mean [?] he has made us laugh until we cried trying to get him to it [True. Mrs. S. did not know this.] do you know billy how he would start to town and old hundred would get a little way and want to lay down.

[This is true. Mrs. S. knew he balked. I told her so, but that is all she knew about his habits. He did try several times to fall over on the shafts so as not to have to go. It was a way he had of finishing up a balk. Sylvester knew this well. So did I, but I had not thought of it for over fifteen years. He (Sylvester) has been dead twelve years. I never mentioned to Mrs. S. the fact of the horse trying to fall down on the shafts. I had not thought of it until Sylvester mentioned it today. It is positively true. I can prove all these statements by my father and by my sister Annie and brother Joseph now living.]

(Yes, I remember. I suppose the old horse is dead.) [I thought that he might be. I did not know that he was.] we placed him in the meadow acrossed the road with *dew* [due] [underscored.] ceremony, yes.

[If you knew the horse and our scenes with him and how Sylvester hated him you would appreciate more than you can now this fine joke.

The facts about this are that Sylvester here made a mistake. but such a mistake as he might easily have made. Sylvester and I buried another horse in a sort of pasture across the road. This horse that we buried was a fair one, but no special good. I mean his disposition was fairly good. This horse we buried.]

(You have mixed that up. We buried another horse. What horse did we bury? The one Jim Cameron sold to father?) that was what father did with the old Can. [period inserted.] Cow. [I do not know whether this is so or not. Shall write father and Joseph.] (Do you recall that old horse that Jim Cameron sold father with the farm?) at the time that we went there to live.

(Yes.) Let me think. I do not just now. I was so much taken with old h— that I was forgetting everything else. (Tell me something more about the old farm. Tell me something that Ida does not know about.) at one time you remember little Joie used to want to go where we did not think it best for him and would buy him off with gunny bread. (Yes, I know. Go on.) but it was not some that mother had given us. (I don't remember that. Where did we get it?) in the pantry. [This was true. We did help ourselves to it. Mrs. S. never knew this.] (I remember that as if it was but yesterday.) [Interruption by a visitor.]

(Tell me something more that Ida does not know.) S [scrawls.] Let me remember. (Please write a little plainer.) Sister Annie Said it was mean [not to let Joie go] and we said we would give it to her if she told on us.

[This is a fact and I am positive Ida never knew it. I cannot conceive of my telling her. I had not thought of it for fifteen years. It was a small incident and never occurred to me until he stated it. I think my sister Annie will recall it.]

(That is so. I remember it well. Tell me more about Joie.) not now. (I was home lately and saw father. Do you want me to tell what father said?) I know. you do not kneed [need] ['k' erased.] take the trouble. (Please tell me what he said.) it would take too long. [This is true. He said a good many things.] (That is so, Sylvester, do you know this Chesterfield?) he has gone now. (Do you know him?) some. (What kind of a spirit is he?) all right. (Anything else Sylvester?) Cecil is growing nicely and will come another time. (Tell Cecil we all love him just the same as ever.) yes. (Anything else?) glad to come (I am glad to have you come.) yes, good bye (Good bye, Sylvester.) yes."

Mr. Smead made inquiries at home in regard to the incidents of this sitting and reports corroboration of them in the following statements based on the confirmation of his father, mother, brother and sister.

"All about the old horse Grimes is correct. The gunny bread incident is all correct. In regard to the cow being buried as Sylvester says, my father says that it is so. There were two cows. One Sylvester helped bury there on that side and more than this he helped bury a red horse that he used to drive in a milk wagon. The horse ran away with him, and so he remembered a horse and burying him in the meadow and possibly mixed this up with old Grimes. None of the facts, with the exception of what is indicated above, were ever known to Mrs. S. or my-

self. I was in C—— at the time and had no interest in such things."

July 13th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer. 9.30 p. m.

"(All ready friend.) (Mrs. S.: Sit still and say nothing and see what it will do.) [Hand shook and writing very wavy and illegible.] (I do not want her to go into the trance tonight.) yes, Myers [?] (I think it is Myers.) Myers [written clearly.] (Very good: you are welcome.) [scrawls.] (I do not want her unconscious in this experiment.) no. [Mrs. S. very tired. I placed my hand on the planchette to help.] (All right.) * * (Go on.) * * (I would like to have Mr. Myers come.) Myers, Myers, Myers, Myers. (Go on.) * * mother, mollie, mollie, mollie, brother's wife. (Tell me more. What brother?) Chum, Chum, mother Chum. (Please explain.) Mother, Brother wife, mollie, Chums, Chums together. (How have I anything to do with it?) Chums together * * mother's friend, yes. (Whose mother is it?) George. (Who is George?) George, George, George, George, George, Chums, Chums with mother, yes, mollie ['i' dotted.] mothe— * * [apparently an attempt at 'mollie']. * * "

July 17th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer. My hand on the planchette until asked to remove it.

"(All ready spirit friend.) When we will some do not like it. (I am very willing. You may come.) some. ('When we will, some do not like it'?) yes. (What do you mean, friend.) come, what Chesterfield (Good morning, Chesterfield.) welcome friend S. [friends] (Thank you Chesterfield. I want to ask you a question.) me [?] welcome [?] not at present. (Go on.) Chesterfield does not wish them now, please wait until I tell thee, welcome and greetings Chesterfield, yes. (All right, Chesterfield. Go on as you wish.) we do not want thee asking all spirits to give thee advice now. it does not help thee [second 'e' erased.] light to be used by every one that may chance this way. Can you understand our meaning, friend. (Yes, I can. Do you wish my hand on the machine?) It may come off. (I have taken it off, Chesterfield. Go on, please.) WE WILL TRY TO DEVELOP THIS LIGHT MORE SO when we say we do not want others it is because it needs renewing. yes and then you do not wish earthly

spirits those that have not tried to develop their own light to come in contact with it. they use it so rapidly and does not help to do good but only satisfies their own pleasure. we are trying to help this and so do not want or wish any to come that we do not ask for the present.

(I do not object. Mrs. S. does not object.) I would advise thee to let it all be for the present and we will come to thee later, and I would ask thee [written 'the' at end of first line and the second letter 'e' added at beginning of next line.] to pray every day for light to come here that it may help souls to believe more in the fullness of God and that we may receive * * [undec.] more of the needed light for this work. we may understand the wanted light for your side as you for our side. pray for it daily.

(I will pray daily, friend.) it would be well to let the moon full twice again before we come to thee. [Evidently a question unrecorded as to reading the word 'moon' was asked here, as that word is not clear, and the following was written in explanation.] no moon. (That is, not to have any sittings until the moon is full twice.) that is it. (Who writes this?) Chesterfield wishes it. (I will do so.) It would be well that way.

(All right. Go on.) we will go to thee as thou wishest and will do what we can to help the [thee] recover quickly it being God's will. (What is that word after 'help'?) thee recover. (Thank you, Chesterfield. I am not afraid to die. I wish to live for my children.) no death. life is everywhere. there is no death. (You know what I mean, Chesterfield.) why do those on your side say death? there is none. we live and shall live. many are not as far advanced when they come here, but they were not over there. Else how could they be expected to go any further than the earth when they come here.

(Do you remember that you used to speak of death, Chesterfield.) but it should have been outgrown by now. (People do not know much here now, Chesterfield.) there is no end to knowledge there neither here. we are always learning lessons of and from life eternal.

(Chesterfield, do you remember your work in Ireland?) I do not want them now. (Please answer that question.) I did not ask for it. (Please let me ask the question. I await your answer.) it has also been a long time to recall all of my earth life, yet I thought enough had been given thee to know that it was I who talketh to thee was Chesterfield of old. (Do you remember your earth life in Ireland?) much could be said but it is not prudent for one to sound his own praises. (I understand that, Chesterfield. Give me the name of the city in Ireland where you used to live.) we would be glad, but it is better that we go now. (Please do this.) it is too much work." [Mrs. S.'s hand was so cramped that it pained her greatly.]

After the above records there were no further sittings until the following, in the fall, when it will be seen that there is no reference to the failure in the June sittings.

September 19th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S., Mr. S.'s oldest sister, and Mrs. Annie L. T——. Planchette used. Hand of Mr. S. not on the instrument.

"(All is ready, friends.) [Picture of a man drawn, apparently with a long mustach but with two points on head like ears of a cat.] (Is that a picture of a cat?) no. (What is it then?) A [scrawls that are possibly attempt to write name 'Annie'.] Smead. Irving Smead Sylvester. (I understand.) Joseph Smea— Monday. (Yes I got that: go on.) night [might] tell Sister [scrawl.] Annie will ['i' dotted.] come. (Go on.) good bye. (Shall we have a sitting Monday night.) I wil— [doubtful.] (Write smaller, friend.) Billy, I was speaking to ANNIE LAURIE. (Will you be here Monday night?) Smead, yes, little sister I will come. (Go on.) my brother, good night. my dear sister, good night. I welcome, little Annie with us. (What was written after 'little'?) A N— yes, Billy. (She wants to say something to you.) not now".

September 25th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mrs. A. L. T., a sister of Mrs. S. Our minds on Sylvester expecting him to "communicate". But a man who was not at all known to Mrs. S. and who had once before "communicated" came much to our surprise. 9 a. m.

"(All right friends.) Bitter Sweet Cle— [followed by letters or symbols that are not certainly decipherable.] [We supposed the communicator to be Robert Hyslop and Mrs. S. said so, this being the apparent watch word for that personality in earlier experiments. p. 495.]

(Go on. Tell us what you mean.) Yes, Bitter with the sweet. Smead. H. K. S. [?] P. [?] ['S' read as 'P']. (What do you mean by H. K. P.?) F * * P [?] mama nana not * * many were [scrawls.]

(Tell us something we may understand, Chesterfield. Where are you?) [No reply.] (Go on.) Yes, aunt annie [inverted writing, that is, has to be read upside down, and was not clear.] Yes Aunt Annie [mirror writing, that is, must be read by a mirror.] (Go on. We get it 'Yes, Aunt Annie'.) [Scrawls.] (Go on.)

* * * [possibly mirror or inverted mirror writing.] (Go on.) Yes, will go. yes, we will go. [This written in *inverted mirror writing*.] (Who is writing?) a friend brother, yes. [inverted mirror writing.] (Yes.) Perkins. [inverted mirror writing.] [Mrs. S. did not know who was communicating.]

(All right. Go on. I am glad you are here.) Yes. [inverted mirror writing.] H. [normal writing.] [scrawls.] (Please tell me something, Perkins.) well, what about her. you have forgotten us almost. you will recall Dr. S. you know I was much interested in his daughter. (How did you find things over there, Perkins?) Lost Souls redeemed by Grace.

[Mrs. S. was educated a Wesleyan and this answer represents a Calvinistic doctrine.]

(I asked Mrs. S. if she knew who was writing and she said she did not. I then said: 'What a joke. She does not know who it is yet'.)

Let her believe in knowledge of the Proper kind. it is better that women keep silence, Smead. (All right. Go on.) better not care about the Studying. if you Love her It is all right.

(Do you remember about 'hoeing' out your room? And my sharpening your razor? Do you recall your severe sickness in the Seminary?) yes, but it came out all right, Smead. (Perkins, I am a D. D., a doctor of divinity. Only think of that for me, Perkins.) Is it hard to carry around. (It is hard for me to carry around?) is it. (It is kind of heavy, Perkins, I will confess.) [No reply.] (Shall we stop?) no, Smead. am doing missionary work still. Cannot come often. helping to bring souls nearer to God. sometime will come again. Going for now. Good by bye F. J. [?] P. [?]

Mr. S. remarks that the messages were characteristic of this Mr. Perkins, but that he cannot believe that they were the effect of his own hand on the planchette, one hand being there with that of Mrs. S. Mrs. S. seems not to have known anything about the man, according to the statement of Mr. S. Of the Dr. S. referred to, Mr. S. says that this Rev. F. J. Perkins was either married or at one time engaged to the daughter of Dr. S——, but does not clearly remember which, as he himself, Mr. S., has known nothing of Mr. Perkins for fifteen years or since his death.

The experiments have not been so frequent since the failure of my sittings last spring. The records practically explain this

and the irregularity of them. I need not indulge in superfluous comments on this matter.

October 17th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer as usual. Mrs. S. conscious and semi-conscious at times. Planchette used. My hand not on it at first, but placed on it later as the writing seemed so difficult. The writing at once seemed easier apparently showing that I was an aid to the work in some way unknown. I had no knowledge of what was being written until I had read it.

"(All ready friends.) many thanks [scrawls.] (I got that all right.) we will try [?] (Go on. All right.) mary (Mary? Who is Mary?) * * * * (I cannot read it very well. Try to write plainly.) We will, father is willing now mary m [?] yes. [scrawls.] (I got that. Be careful of the writing. Write plainly.) Gretchen is all right. (I got that all right. Who is writing.) yes sir, Mary. (Write the last name, please.) [pause and scrawl.] mary [?] mary, yes, yes, yes, mary. [scrawls.] [Hand drawn with fingers and at once the two words.] no more. [Hand placed on planchette.]

(I will put my hand on now.) Sarah, you must have her bathed in warm alcohol. it will strengthen her, Mother Lowery. [Writing smooth and clear. Previously it was wavy and irregular.] (Who gave that message?) Mary Lowery. (Who is to be bathed?) the little girl Bertha. (All right, anything else?) her home is a sad one, sad as she needs our care so much. She would better think and know we will be with her as she has soon to come here. (Anything else? What can we do to help little Bertha?) She is so now that there is not much can be done on Earth, but pray for her that she may be as easy as God can let us help it be. (Yes, anything else?) the little boy worries over her. (What do you mean?) yours, yes, he loves her much. (Tell my little boy not to worry. God can care for little Bertha.) he knows that and he loves her is why it troubles him. you will understand better what I mean. Sometime I do not make it plain to you.

(Anything else you want to write?) Cecil is here papa. he loves you too. (I guess I love my son. Good evening Cecil, good evening my boy.) I will come to you like I said I would. (Papa is glad to have you come, Cecil.) Cecil is a good boy. he is trying to be patient. (I believe it, Cecil. It is very hard for us.) and so is George, papa. i want him to learn much for Cleve, papa. yes, so hard papa, so much to say. It makes me feel tired, yes. (Papa and mama love you, dear.) i came to see mama. did she know. (Yes she did. She saw you Cecil and heard you speak to her. You said 'Mummie'.) i wanted to keep her, but she went back so

quick. (What do you mean, Cecil?) yes, the baby cried to her. (Mama heard you call her. Mama understands better, Cecil.) yes, I wanted her to stay with me. (Mrs. S.: Come to mama again, Cecil, won't you? Talk to mama some more.) yes, my dear good mama. (Mrs. S.: Mama would like to get her arms around you, Cecil.) yes, mama, I do it lots of times, lots papa. (Mama thinks she knows when you come, Cecil.) yes, other little ones come and say, 'love them too' papa. we love you much. (I love all my little ones. Of course I knew Cecil best.) yes, we must go, papa. (Good night all, my dear.) you and mama kiss little George for Cecil. good night papa and mama. (Cecil, come Saturday evening, please.) if I can, papa."

Inquiry in regard to the possible incidents of this sitting brings the following facts from Mr. Smead:

"Bertha is Mrs. Smead's sick sister. She has been an invalid for many years. She has had some trouble with her spine. She is deformed, a dwarf and has not developed much beyond the child stage of development, although 25 years of age. She has been very, very sick. Bertha is a granddaughter of the Mary Lowery mentioned. Mary Lowery is Mrs. Smead's mother's mother. Mrs. Smead went to Malden to the bedside of this little sister the Monday after New Year. Bertha was then very ill. Her life was despaired of and Mrs. Smead was sent for so as to see her before she died. She was summoned by telegraph. Bertha recovered partially, so as to resume her former constant chronic condition contrary to all expectation.

"Now please to notice carefully these facts. When we received the message about her and the suggestion to use alcohol she was as well as usual so far as we knew, but she was sick at the time. From October 19th to the second or third Sunday after New Year she did not have her clothes on. She had to be carried up- and down-stairs and lay on the lounge down-stairs, and up-stairs on the bed. Mrs. Smead and I did not know any of these facts until Mrs. Smead went down there after New Year and after the message was given. I now remember that I sent the message as soon as I got it to Bertha's sister Nettie, thinking that they ought to know the contents of so important a message.

"My opinion is and it is the opinion of Dr. Lobdell that the alcohol treatment would be of much benefit to Bertha, but being

under the care of a specialist, it was not used. I am sorry that it has not been tried.

"I have just read this over to Mrs. Smead and she says that I am wrong about the alcohol treatment. The facts are that her father would not allow it used warm, being afraid to have it heated. Mrs. Smead told them how to warm it safely and now it is used with perceptible benefit, the little girl remarking 'that she feels better after her bath'."

In response to further inquiries about this incident Mr. Smead replies:

"Bertha had been ill for many years, but nearly all the time she has been able to be about and play as other children do. Her illness, due to scarlet fever, caused an arrested development, a curvature of the spine and some bladder troubles. We did not know at the time of the sitting that she was any sicker than she had been for years. We supposed that her condition was the same chronic one that it had been and had no knowledge of any critical turn as explained in a previous letter.

The Sarah mentioned in this connection is Mrs. Smead's mother, still living, and a daughter of the Mary Lowrey who apparently communicates."

The following letter is from Mrs. Smead's sister, apparently in response to Mr. Smead's information of the "message".

"Malden, Dec. 28th, 1903.

"Dear Ida:

"I am sure I hope you all had a very pleasant Christmas and I suppose you think it strange that none of us have written to tell the truth: no one had either the time or the heart to write.

"Bertha is very sick. Two months ago today she was taken sick and she has suffered every single minute of the time since. I have been out of the office all I possibly could and she seemed to get better for a few days and then all of a sudden she would be worse again.

"Last Sunday (the 20th) she felt fine and we thought she was getting better, but on the 24th she was taken sick again and now she is suffering dreadfully.

"The doctor said yesterday that it is wonderful the way she holds on, but she is really sinking very fast. She can't remember

anything about Christmas, though we fixed up a very pretty tree for her and she received many Christmas gifts. She wanted the tree, so we got it for her, but it all seems to have left no impression on her mind whatever.

"We have got some little presents for the children, but somehow we have no courage left to pack and send them. It is very hard and they are all piled up in the chair in the dining room. Mother is completely worn out and I am strong and well I know and I have been doing the best I could. I have taken care of her at night and worked in the office all day, until I am getting rather tired and nervous, but I guess I'm all right.

"I wish you lived nearer, so you could come home, but of course it's asking too much, because you have your own family to take care of. Of course she has to be kept very quiet and you can see I can't say bring the children, much as I wish you here. You seem to be the only one I can turn to, for somehow Sadie seems so busy. She came out Christmas to dinner and supper, she and Jamie, and that is the first time she has been here since Thanksgiving. I am going to write to George.

"Now then I have got to go into the office and tell them that I will not come in again this week. I have an idea that she will go with the year. Ida she can't possibly last much longer. Mother doesn't know what the doctor says, but I think she realises just how things are and she feels very badly.

"Write to me at the house and I will let you know if any change comes.

"Your sister,

"NETTYE."

Inquiries in regard to the incident about seeing the son Cecil brought out the following facts which ought to have been recorded at the time. But it is evident from Mr. Smead's statement at the sitting that he did not see the pertinence of the situation. Cecil's allusion to his mother's going back quick coincides with certain statements made by the trance personalities in the Piper case about Mrs. Piper during the trance, and Mr. Smead does not know either this fact or its apparent significance, and so thinking that it was nonsense, evidently thought to correct Cecil's understanding of the matter in the remark that his "mother un-

derstands better". I therefore inquired to know if Mrs. Smead had had a vision about that time and the following is the reply to my question:

"Mrs. S. did have such a vision in the morning of the day of the sitting. The vision was about half past five or six in the morning. All the rest were asleep. But Mrs. S. was about half awake when she saw Cecil standing in the doorway. She was just interested in the vision. She looked at him and he said 'Mummie', and when he said this he seemed to double up, as if he had a pain. He may have leaned over. Just then the baby cried (little Nettie). She looked to see him after she attended to the baby and he was gone.

"The reason it was not put on record was that we were all sick with a mild attack of tonsilitis. There was much confusion and it was carelessly omitted. Neither Nettie nor George were ill, but Mrs. S. and George had been ill with a mild attack. Mrs. S. and George and Nettie were in the back room and I was in the front room. The baby's crying was at the time of the vision."

October 23rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All right.) Tell [scrawls.] H. Hyslop. [period inserted.] [scrawls.] (Who is here?) Chesterfield. (Mrs. S. does not believe that there is any spirit here.) Chesterfield greets thee. (Mrs. S. does not believe at all. Write something so she will.) Chesterfield, Hyslop's father * * Sylvester, * * * [apparently 'S Shinnmo' ?] La... (Go on please.) and [?] European Friend. we welcome * * Cheefr [?] (Mrs. S. does not yet believe. She takes no interest in this Chesterfield. Write something that will convince her.) friend myers in our circle, Chesterfield. (What are you here for tonight, Chesterfield?) Chesterfield has a mission to perform. (What is it, Chesterfield?) help unbelieving souls to look to the higher Light. (Very good. Any word for me tonight, Chesterfield.) Good night. (I shall sit tomorrow night, Chesterfield. I have asked my son Cecil to be present.) So let it be. (Shall we stop now. Mrs. S. is tired.) Let it be."

October 24th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(All ready, friends.) B * * Sevuley [?] ['Serenely']? Letrer Better * * ['mee' ?] Let alo... [pencil ran off paper.] (I cannot read it.) You should let it all a to me. (I should let it all alone?) yes. (What do you mean?) Let it alone Chillcon * * (What shall I let alone. I do not understand you.) Let this, Let this, Let this alone. (Why I supposed Cecil would come.) This is not your day. (What day shall we sit?) Later. (When shall I sit?) Let us consider it, friend. (Tell me what to do.) Later one, C."

The following is the account of an experience by Mrs. Smead on the date of November 1st, 1903, a Sunday evening. She made the statement without suggestion of any kind and it was written out by her on November 2nd.

"Mr. S. had stepped out into another room and baby was asleep. I was very tired and so rested a few moments on the lounge. During this time, not over ten minutes, I was sound asleep and dreaming, and it seemed that there were other persons talking that I could not see. They said as follows:

"'In order to do anything with her, we will have to make her very sick at first, then tell her what you want and are going to do.'

"This I heard and of course became very much interested and was repeating what they said, when I saw a sentence written in Latin (this I knew because they said it was Latin). I was repeating what they said it was when Mr. S. awoke me, telling me that I must wake up, as he was to go to meeting.

"'Qint Quint...' This word I could not remember, but thought it was 'Quintana'. There were several other words in the sentence, but I got only the first two 'Qint Quintana'. These words were placed in brackets. I at once told Mr. S. what had happened in my dream and of the Latin words. I had no knowledge of what they meant and asked him to tell me. He said he could not remember, and as I could not get them from my mind I took the dictionary and looked to see if I could find such a word, as I had no memory of ever having heard it used. I was very much surprised to find it: also its meaning, as in psychical research the number five seems to be quite significant."

I do not know of any special significance attaching to the number 5 in psychical research, and I do not know where Mrs. S.

obtained this idea. There is no discoverable word "Quintana", but there is "Quintan" and "Quint", whose meaning in connection with the number 5 is apparent to any one who consults the dictionary. They are not Latin words, though derived from such. J. H. H.

November 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used.

"(Go on friends.) Friends this is better. ('Friends this is better?') yes. no, me? (All right. Go on.) be sure to preach truth. (Exactly. I U. D.) Yes, we do that here. (If that is true, that you preach truth, it is funny that such awful lies come through.) it is not what I said. [I explained what I said.] You said U. D. (That is so, but I do not understand why so many lies come from the spirits.) perhaps you can conceive of there being to [two] persons at work, one receiving and one giving the message. (Yes, I see all that. That is right but it does not explain it. Never mind that any way. What do you want to tell me?) Chesterfield will met [meet] the next day. (What is the word after 'will?') meet. ('Chesterfield will meet?') Yes (All right. Go on.) after the morrow with thee. (What part of the day?) Eleve Eleven. (Anything else, Chesterfield?) will say, thou shalt ask for the special Light to come to thee when thou prayest until then, yes. (Anything else, Chesterfield?) Chesterfield, Sayest Good night, friend. (Good night, Chesterfield.) C h.... C.

[Intermission of about five minutes.] (All ready now, friends.) Good night. (Who is writing?) C. (Do you wish us to stop now?) it is better So."

The allusion to a person sending and one receiving the messages is a very shrewd intimation of natural difficulties as well as an evasion of the issue. It is a curious shifting of the responsibility either on Mrs. Smead's subliminal or on Mr. Smead's understanding.

November 3rd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Mr. S. with hand on same. Prayer as usual.

"(All ready, Chesterfield.) Chester.... we have come to [not clear, 'o' as a scrawl.] to her so we will oooo let her know. (Go

on.) that is all. (I do not get that very clearly, Chesterfield.) Let her know. So we will. (All right. Go on.) Chesterfield Greets thee, friend. (I greet thee, Chesterfield. Be free to write what you wish.) Chesterfield would say that another told the [thee] first of the message to the friend. (I do not understand. What do you mean, Chesterfield?) You cannot know more now. he has gone. (All right. Who has gone, Chesterfield.) a friend that has only been over a few times since. (Chesterfield, did you say 'of no consequence'?) no, a few times Since. (All right, Chesterfield. Tell me what you wish.) * * * * ('Luther'?) no. (Who is it then?) mother, tell her not to think sad thoughts of me. I am all all right and prospering So and that our memories [memories] C [erased.] should be very pleasant and no sadness Should be allowed [written 'all' and then an 'o' superposd on second 'l', as if to erase, and then 'owed' written, so that the word would read 'alooowed'] for we are very sensitive to ['a' written first and then 'to' superposed on it.] all her thoughts. (Is that all?) yes. (Please write your first name.) Sylvester. (Is that my brother Sylvester?) yes. (Did you write that message?) Chesterfield did. (For you?) yes. (Anything else, Sylvester?) he has gone, friend. (Why did he go so quickly?) Let me say our pleasure here is not to please ourselves but to please others and duty calls but once and the reply is spontaneous. that is why c [erased.] we can come and go so quickly, friend. (I do not see the meaning of the reply being spontaneous.) Chesterfield is right. (I should think that the word ought to be 'instantaneous'.) This is queer, you cannot help confussing [confusing] us. (It is very funny to me. That is all. Go on, Chesterfield.) [scrawls.] (Anything else, Chesterfield?) we thought to get our idea clear to you. (Never mind. I guess I understand.) have it better another time. (Any directions for another sitting? Do you want to plan anything, Chesterfield?) no, not at this time. (When shall we sit again?) we can not just tell thee. (How will I know what to do?) a week from this day I will come to thee. (Very well, anything else?) no, Chesterfield greets thee. (Shall we stop now?) [No reply, but planchette moved off the paper and sitting was stopped.] "

November 11th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used. Prayer as usual. Mr. S.'s hand on planchette.

"(All ready, Chesterfield.) I will [written in very large letters.] (All right.) Episcopalian friend. [the 'f' was made like an old fashioned long 's' and then the planchette drew a line through it to signify the cross in a letter 'f'.] (You are welcome.) Chesterfield is willing. (All right, Episcopalian friend. What do you

wish to say?) my views were right when on earth, friend, concerning a future life. (Good. I U. D. Please write your name.)
 Episcopalian friend will suffice for the present. (All right. Go on please.) Episcopalian friend would like to say he thanks you for this opportunity and that could he have the privilege [spelled either 'privalege' or 'privelege' and corrected so as to make the real spelling indeterminate.] of coming often to you. he would like to try some work her [here.] (Is the word 'here'?) yes. (Go on, friend. We think you Myers.) Let it be Episcopalian Friend here please. (But you are Myers.) Episcopalian now. (I will call you Episcopalian friend, as you wish. I know you are Frederick W. H. Myers. Can you find Stainton Moses?) we will endeavor to do as you wish, friend. (All right. Go on.) he will come some time, but at this he cannot come. is there a special message for him, sir? [interrogation point inserted.] (Mrs. S.: Yes, I want to know if 'Chom' is all right?) he said he would come by the next moon. (Who do you mean will come?) whom thou asketh for. (All right. Go on.) Chesterfield is here, friend. (I am glad to greet you, Chesterfield. Good morning. Was that Myers who came?) Episcopalian friend.

(All right I will not press that. Chesterfield, have you ever found out why Luther did not give that message that Hyslop sent to Mrs. Piper?) you get us mixed up in very bad style over there. yes you ask us if we get what you say and then when you are told so you put your own construction on it and it is th [sheet changed] then as if we said it. (Go on, Chesterfield. Explain it more clearly please.) I said, friend, Luther would take it, meaning that message your [scrawl.] friend wanted to give, not meaning that he would carry it, but just that that he would that day receive what messages were sent from our company over there to us here. (Anything else, Chesterfield?) I am very sorry it so happened: for it has injured our progression very much toward the fullment [pause.] filment of the plan that the soul of man lives after it [its] release from the body. (Do not make her unconscious today, please.) it is not easy for us to do this work, but it is good that we try and learn to help our fellow beings. Good Day, Sir. Chesterfield. (When shall we sit again?) when thy friend said. (The next moon?) change of it. (Will it be the first quarter?) [No reply.] "

This explanation by Chesterfield is preposterous. It is strange that it does not even reflect the true conception of the situation at the time of the experiment. The receipt of a "message" from Dr. Hodgson in the name of my father, Robert Hyslop, showed that the subliminal of Mrs. S. had rightly conceived the situation and why this is not realised now is unintel-

ligible. Mr. S. stopped his inquiries too soon. He should have pressed Chesterfield to explain the bringing of that "message" to me, and the result of that psychological situation might have been interesting. But there is apparently no true conception on Chesterfield's part of what I intended by the sending of my message, so that his explanation does not explain.

November 18th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. S. with his hand on the planchette. 11 a. m.

"(All ready, friends.) maume ['Maude'??] is not with us. (What is the first name?) that is Maude's. (Go on, please.) [scrawl.] * * ['estimahweek' ?] Estimate what the cost will be for that and we will try to help it. (Cost of what?) that Our friend has Said so much [sheet changed.] So much about. (Explain more.) Hyslop knows. (All that seems nonsense. How can you help it?) that Endowme [sheet changed.] nt He calls it. (What about that book?) no book friend. (Go on friend. How can you help it?) wait and see. (All right. Hyslop will be glad to have your help. He needs two or three thousand dollars.) say it again. (Hyslop will be glad to have your help. He needs two or three thousand dollars.) Chesterfield thinks best [sheet changed.] hat [that] you do not use this until the light is clearer. (Stop now.) that would be well."

I had written to Mr. Smead that I was engaged in the effort to secure an endowment for the investigations of psychical research, and the fact was evidently talked over between him and Mrs. Smead. I had also written frequently about my efforts to get this case into book form.

November 25th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. Smead's hand on the planchette.

"(All right, friends.) Chesterfield, herein is friend indeed. ('Herein is a friend indeed'.) Yes, Chesterfield. (All right, Chesterfield. I trust you are our friend.) .wellcome, we come to thee this day, come this day. (All right. Glad to greet you. Go on.) Charles came here. (Who is Charles?) Sherman. (Charles Sherman. Is that the name?) no. (Charles?) no. (What was the last name?) Sherman. (S-h-e-r-m-a-n?) yes. (I do not know him.) Chas was another friend. (I do not know him. Was he my

friend?) yes, we could not let him stay. (All right. Go on.) * * [undec. possibly 'the man'.] Claimed he was a friend of yours, friend. (I do not remember him.) Chesterfield has been busy, but it is slow work. we are making some progress [sheet changed.] * * with the restoring of the light. [period inserted.] (Very good. What can we do to help you?) help us best buy [by] being patient kind [sheet changed] kind and *true* praying much [here planchette moved the pencil up and underscored the word 'true', came back to its place and returned again to the word crossing the 't'.] (What is the word after 'and'?) true. [crossing the 't' again.] enjoying the world that God has so graciously placed you in. (All right. What can the light specially do?) Chesterfield is caring for the light, friend. we will not hurt her. (I wish the light took more interest in this. What is the matter with her, Chesterfield?) You must wait. it will take time to replace the broken cords that harmony b [erased.] may once more prevail. (What cords do you mean?) Life cords that have heretofore connected earth souls with us, or the means by which we were better able to talk to you from our side through thi [sheet changed.] this light, Chesterfield. (I understood that as well as I could no doubt. I wonder if the light could do anything to help you, that is all.) that is our mission. (All right. Go on. What is going on down to Mrs. Piper's.) Chesterfield is not there. (Do you know?) not much. (Is there anything about that down there that you will tell me, Chesterfield?) we have at present enough to do. we will leave them for now when the time is right thou will know. (What was written after 'do' above?) we will leave [scrawls.] (All right. Go on.) Chesterfield wishes the thee a good morrow . . . Greetings friend."

Chesterfield is hardly the name under which to display so much pious unction and religious seriousness, but he takes the earnest and sanctimonious view of things which Mrs. Smead takes of life, and reflects as before some characteristics of the trance personalities of the Piper case. There is a curious allusion to the "cords" connecting discarnate with incarnate persons and apparently appropriating ideas more or less common in spiritualistic literature which Mrs. Smead has not read to any extent. I am not sure, however, that I have not made some allusion to this feature of some of the Piper communications as indicating the existence of such a "cord". If I have mentioned the fact as a part of the *modus operandi* of communication the recurrence of the idea here is a good illustration of the delicate subliminal activity going on in this case.

November 26th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mr. Smead's hand on the planchette.

"(All ready, friend.) we will * * ['s wll' ?] we will in a few seconds. (Go on. Who is it?) Should you desire to pass ['poss' ?] * * ['haasluee' ?] (Write the words after 'pass'.) no use. (I cannot read it, friend.) Episcopalian friends Episcopa * * s s s s trying s so us [?] (Cannot you do anything tonight?) friend we can only try. (All right, try. Should I take my hand off?) not this time. Episcopalian is trying to see what he can do. (All right, Episcopalian friend.) Episcopalian friend is here. Chesterfield is a kind friend. he is a very careful one. (Very good I am glad to hear that.) Yes, we are going now, yes, Episcopalia[n].

(It would greatly aid the cause of psychical research, if you, Episcopalian friend, would prove to Hyslop through me that you are Frederick W. H. Myers.) [Pencil moved repeatedly off the paper.] yes, we wish it so friend * * yes."

Mr. Smead is mistaken as to the identity of "Episcopalian friend". In earlier sittings he purported to be Stainton Moses.

On the night of November 27th (1903) Mrs. Smead had a vision of a garter which she describes in the following language:

"Mr. S. had gone to W——. Nettie was sort of sick. I took her up-stairs and I was nervous over her. I did not go right to sleep. I was awake for nearly an hour and I had just dropped into a doze. I was not sound asleep when she moved a little. I opened my eyes to see what the matter was, when about a foot over her body I saw what appeared to be a dark garter. There were two small lights at the ends and a larger light at the center. It was a sort of shock or surprise to me to see lights in that form, so I thought that it must be a freak of the imagination or a work of my subliminal, and began to watch it to see where it would go and what it would do. It moved up toward the ceiling very slowly and went out of sight. The lights were quite clear: the other part, being dark, I could see quite distinctly. There was a small light in the room, a lamp. I took pains to tell Mr. S. this as soon as he came home the next day, and he said that possibly it was connected with Chesterfield, and that possibly he was a member of the Order of the Garter and that this was what was

meant. I thought that it might have some significance with Mr. Myers, but do not know."

November 30th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S., and a Dr. T——, but not at first. Mrs. S. conscious all the time. Mr. Smead's hand on planchette until Dr. T—— came.

"(All ready.) 3 3piscopalian ['3' for letter 'E' as so made backward.] Friend, yes. (I am glad to greet you this evening, Episcopalian Friend. Who is running this?) me, of course. (Can you run this alone without my help?) we will try.

[At this point Dr. T——, a physician, whom I had invited, came in and joined the circle. He said nothing in the way of questions.]

(All right. Go on, friend.) we were surprised, but we must say that we are pleased that Thy friend is willing to believe in us. [Message read aloud.] yes, we have known of him before. yes he is interested in the truth, yes, yes. (Very good. What can you say to him?) [Planchette moved from under Mr. S.'s hand.] wait [pause of three minutes.] what shall I tell [written on side of sheet at right angles to word 'wait'. him. [pause.] my but it does seem good. yes we can come quite near this way. (Dr. T——: Who is writing?) [planchette moved pencil up and down the page.] we will try again. [This reply read aloud.] [Picture of a soldier holding a gun on his shoulder, with a large ball at the left side and lines drawn across the body at the waist.] you know, he says. (Dr. T——: Yes, I think I understand.) yes [planchette moved pencil back to figure of soldier's hat and then wrote:] yes then [or 'the n''] enn yes * * (Dr. understands what the sword means.) [Mr. S. supposed the ball at the left of the figure referred to a sword, Mrs. S. a cup. No attention was paid by the trance personality to his remark.] yes, we said it so, we did it quietly. Friends, you see we must [scrawl.] use care. we could not let thy brother talk alone concerning that trouble, it being his first visit to try, but we have told thee, friend, what he said as quietly as possible, because we must use caution and it m [erased.] would make him too excited, friend, so you must excuse us for our way of talking of the trouble. we will try to do better next time, Chesterfield."

The incidents of this sitting have some interest. This Dr. T—— had a brother who was killed in the late Civil War by being shot through the body with a cannon ball. Mr. and Mrs. S.

knew that such a brother had been killed in the war, but, according to the statement of Dr. T——, they did not know by what means he was killed. Dr. T—— writes as follows:

"At a little past 8 o'clock p. m., Nov. 30th, I called at the home of Rev. W. M. Smead, where I had every reason to believe I was welcome. It appeared at the time of my call Mr. S. and wife were seated at a table and she was writing. I was invited to a seat with them and she continued to write. From what she wrote it appeared to me that I was also welcome to parties that I did not recognize. After expressing a wish to know who was writing I was told to wait. After a pause of a few moments Mrs. Smead drew a picture of a soldier, then it represented the body as being cut in two. Then as if to leave no room for doubt as to who was represented or intended (for I had many friends who were killed in the war of '61 and '65) there was the representation of a ball as though it had passed through the body. It was known to both Mr. and Mrs. Smead that I had a brother killed in the army. But neither of them knew by what means. It was known to myself that he was killed in the manner indicated. He was cut in two by a cannon ball at the battle of Williamsburg, Va., May 5th, 1862.

"A. H. T——."

"Dec. 2nd, 1903."

The reader will remark some evidences of dramatic play in this sitting. The admonition to "wait" was apparently directed to the questioner, and then the question "what shall I tell him" to the "communicator". The explanation of the manner of communication is interesting as coinciding with what is often observed in the first attempts to communicate, and is quite a rational account of the matter, though without evidential significance of any kind.

December 2nd, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer. Mr. Smead's hand not on the planchette. 11 a. m.

"(All ready, friends.) [No reply.] (Try and use her hand.) we ['e' made like a small capital.] were, Chesterfield. but it is your presence that is needed. we can do but little without thee, sir.

(Do you wish my hand on?) [I supposed they were talking to me.] not to you were we talking, but thy good friend Chesterfield, sir. (Very well. Who is writing?) Chesterfield will not. (All right, Chesterfield.) [pause.] [scrawl.] went when we went away we left the light clear. it is not so good this day. but we can say that we were pleased that [it] is so good as it is. (All right. Go on.) I shall need to work more earnestly. (What do you mean?) make more progress. (Yes, go on.) Thy friend's brother was very much elated over the progress made in his behalf, yes. he was a good sort of friend and we liked to help him. we think they were [pencil moved about a point so as to make a large round black spot like the representation of the ball in the previous record.] believers and it always helps us to know it is not in vain. when one was and is now a believer we like to help them. do you know this friend? (I got that all right.) yes, the brother like[d] the one that was left there. that he [line changed, as word 'he' was written too soon.] is why he was so much pleased, he did not expect we could bring him so near to him.

(You did well, Chesterfield. I am greatly pleased with what you have done. I thank you. More of that is what we need.) yes, we are trying for it here. we know it takes much time and patient work, so wht [erased.] with the light it is so poorly we have much to do. so * * so when we can we will try to do our best. (All right. When shall we ask Dr. T—— again?) Wait until we shall tell thee friend. [Mrs. S. became unconscious at this point.] we are going now.

(Do not make her unconscious, Chesterfield. But we are glad to have you here Chesterfield.) yes, but she needs to rest much. [I had planned next Monday for Dr. T——.] not so, friend. (When shall we sit again, Chesterfield.) we will tell thee the same day of the coming week when we think it best. (For Dr. T——, Chesterfield?) yef [yes] for thy good friend. (I shall sit next Wednesday, Chesterfield.) yes, good morning, friend. (Good morning, Chesterfield. Remember me to Mr. Myers.) yes, Epi [sheet changed.] (Yes, I know.) be sure that she rests. (I will.) yes."

This sitting is without evidential interest and explains itself as referring to the preceding experiment when Dr. T—— was present.

December 8th, 1903. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mrs. S. in a semi-conscious state. Mr. Smead's hand not on planchette.

"(All ready, friends. We await your pleasure. We would like to know when Dr. T—— shall sit.) [Long pause.] yes, we work [writing wavy.] resumed. we think it would be after the new year's Greetings. be better for Thy [new line.] friend. (Do I understand after New Year's?) yes. (All right. Very good.) we are agoing to go hence. we leave it until then, no. (Do you want me to have no sittings until after New Year's?) that is it, friend. (I understand.) we said let her rest. (I will.) yes. (Will you release her now.) there is a friend, but we think he had better not try it. (Who is he?) Robert Hyslop. (Let him wait.) yes."

On January 21st of 1904 Mrs. Smead records a vision which occurred twice the same night, but does not specify what date it occurred. Evidently it was previous to the date of its record.

"The first thing that seemed to bring me to consciousness was a very bright *Star* with four other smaller ones in a vertical line, the larger one being [in] the centre (there was sitting at the left of these stars a spirit with a white robe, and I began to wonder what it meant: for it seemed to be in the morning, and the sky very clear, and the grass on the hill side green) when these stars changed their position [position] all but the centre one, which seemed to be stationary and took this position [position] . . .

"I wondered still more and was about to speak, when this spirit raised the wand (or whatever it was in his right hand, about one and one-half feet in length and about one inch thick, and round, of a dark brownish color) up and out, and almost instantly there was a city before me. The houses were of different shapes. Many were round tops while others were square and some oblong. All were of a bluish color. It seemed to me that a curtain had been rolled back and I had been given a glimpse of the other world. During the changing of the position [position] of the stars and the vision of the city this spirit sat in the same place."

January 21st, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Mrs. S. conscious. Hand of Mr. S. on planchette.

"(All right.) [wavy scrawls.] we welcome thee, friend. (All right. What have you to write?) much. (All right. Go on please.) Shall we tell thee that we are much pleased with thy willingness to be united in all points like as we are and were and ever shall be, amen.

(I got that all right. Go on please.) Yes, mama we can do something for you, Cecil. (Mrs. S.: What is it, Cecil? What can you do for me?) Love you papa. (All right, Cecil. Papa loves you. What can you do for mama?) we can help her. we can make her feel better. we help her get well well when she is sick, papa. (All right, Cecil. We are glad to have you here tonight.) my dear good brother. I love him papa and want him to love, Cecil John. (Yes, he does, Cecil. He often speaks of you Cecil.) yes, Tell um a tory, papa, bout bill [Cf. pp. 394, 466.] (Yes, Cecil I will.) [I did so, and about the 500 fishes.] bout when he made his father a chair, papa. (I don't quite remember, Cecil.) and he put a a a lots of cotton on it to make it soft when it fell down, papa. (I think I remember, Cecil. His father chased him and Bill dare not come in. I remember now.) yes. (All right Cleve. That was a good one Cleve.) auntie Bertha is better, but we were waiting for her. Bena and me were agoing to tell her lots of nice things. Bena and me. (What did you write last, Cecil.) [scrawls.] Bena and me. (All right) mama p.... papa, mama, George, papa we love you and all. we are glad to come here. we are very glad that that man lets us talk to you. he helps to make it easy. (Who is it, Cecil?) his name, papa, do you mean? (Yes, Cecil.) he helps uncle vester. (What is his name, Cecil?) yes, it is a long one. sounds something like vester. (Cannot you write it?) Chesterfield, friend. (Thank you, Chesterfield.) your little boy said you had asked for my name, and so I gave it. (That was it, Chesterfield?) my friend, you will do well to foo.... [sheet changed.] follow where thy friends guide thee. we will never harm thee. Episcopalian friends will say thee well. Say thee well. wish thee well, yes, good night (If the way opens I shall enter the Episcopalian ministry.) yes, we know more than thou concerning this matter. (Anything else?) * * ['and' ?] we bid thee good night. (What are the words before 'we'?) we have."

There is nothing evidential in this sitting, but the psychological play is very interesting. The allusion to Bertha, Mrs. Smead's sick sister, is pertinent, and shows the representation of interest on the "other side". Bena is the name of a relative mentioned some years ago in this record (p. 269). It is interesting to note the way she is mentioned and her connection, as she was a Robertson, the maiden name of Mrs. Smead. But the

most interesting incident of the sitting is the reference to the name of Chesterfield. On any theory but that of a pseudonym it is puzzling to know why "Cecil" could not give the name. It would naturally seem that secondary personality would easily give it in such a case. But if the "secondary personality" is only that of the alleged communicator at the time it is as elastic and changeable as the number of "communicators" involved, and there is nothing to prevent this from being the case. Assuming this we could easily understand why "Cecil" could not give the name of Chesterfield. But assuming that Mrs. Smead's mental condition is one in the trance it is hard to comprehend why that name could not be given as easily in a dramatic play as any other name, thus limiting the number of "personalities" and explaining the incidents as natural dreaming or acting. But the giving of that name here has all the appearance of spiritistic reality in which Cecil is usually not near enough to ascertain what it is and has to catch it when he can. The psychological phenomenon here on any other theory is certainly most interesting.

February 3rd, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Dr. T——. Planchette used and Mr. Smead's hand *not* on the same. Prayer as usual. Mrs. S. knew that Dr. T—— was coming, but that is all she knew. I had seen Dr. T—— in the afternoon and he had given me the silver Mexican dollar that was found on his brother's body when he was killed. Dr. T—— had given this silver dollar to his brother as a special personal gift. He told me this fact and I never mentioned anything that Dr. T—— told me this afternoon, and I never told Mrs. S. that I had anything. I put this dollar in my pocket until she was entranced and completely unconscious, and then in the presence of Dr. T—— I took it out of my pocketbook and placed it quietly without any noise on top of the planchette. When Mrs. S. came out of the trance she had no idea of a thing that took place or was written. I know from previous experience with her that she was completely entranced and wholly unconscious. We finally told her about the silver dollar and this was her first knowledge of it, or that we had it, or that it had been referred to in any way by any intelligence.

"(All ready, friend.) [Shaking of hand.] (Go on, friend, we see the hand shake.) welcome welcome here once again. (Yes.) yes, we. [Mrs. S. became entranced.] (Yes.) yes. [Coin placed upon the planchette as described.] what [planchette moved to left to start a new line and then moved toward Dr. T——, paused and wrote a word not certainly legible, but which looks like 'come'.] (Yes, my friend, we are glad to be here. Go on, my friend.) [Change in style of writing.] tell me qui... [the three words inverted writing.] [sheet changed.] (What is it?) [Confusion.] tell me quickly. (Did you tell me 'tell me quickly'?) yes pause. why didn't you, why didn't you tel [tell] us to thy brother [pause.] thy [sheet changed.] thy brother is away and w... [pencil ran off sheet.] and we cannot get him for thee this time. we are [?] sorry ['ssry', Third 's' erased. 'are' doubtful or indistinct.] but we cannot. we were [sheet changed.] we were here soon after thy itme [time] when we told thee. we came to bring him, but [scrawl.] no one came and we went away and we will bring him soon. we will bring him soon. two weeks from this night we will try to have thy brother here. (All right.) thy gift helps. bring some other special token. (What do you mean by that?) that belonged to him on thy side of Life. (What do you mean?) you know friend that you had better keep it in thy [lines drawn as if trying to erase a letter.] ine [thine] owns ['s' erased.] hands. it is better so better so. [passage read over.] yes, yes, yes. [Suggested to Dr. T—— that he ask some questions.] (Dr. T——: Where did I get it? How did I get it?) it was sen... [pencil ran off sheet.] nt [sent] to thee. (Dr. T——: Correct.) yes. (Dr. T——: Have I anything else from him?) you have and we told the [thee] to bring it, yes, and keep it in thy own hands. (What has Dr. T—— that you refer to?) [scrawl.] (Is there anything else tonight, friend?) [No reply.] "

The allusion to the coin as a gift is interesting as taken in connection with the statement that the brother was not present that night. It is perhaps not in any way evidential of a supernormally acquired fact, since it might be a guess, but it purports to tell what the coin was under circumstances that would not be evidential of spirits even if it were supernormal.

February 11th, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used and hand of Mr. S. not on same.

"(All right, friend.) yes, we will try. we'll [apostrophe in-

serted.] do it. you see us. (Go on, my friend.) you see we do not m ['m' erased.] need you sir. [Meant that his hand on planchette was not needed.] (All right. I see. Very good.) you understand we are learning [sheet changed.] we are learning what you do not and cannot know how to do until you get here. (Yes, very good.) then t ['t' erased.] you will not find you can wi [pause about 3 minutes and word finished on next line.] thout help to be able to do [planchette then moved to cross the 't' in the first word 'then' and the first 't' in 'thout'.] (I understand that. Go on. Thanks. Do not intrance her tonight.) yes, we are in a quandry [quandary] as so many come here with words for loved ones over there that we must tell them that we cannot have them here. there are so many we cannot let them stay [written first as 'say' and then planchette at once went back and wrote 'st' so that 's' preceded the 's' in 'say' and the 't' superposed upon the 's' in 'say'.] (I see. Will you kindly remember not to make her unconscious tonight.) It is a struggle we must go then. (I will withdraw my objections. Mrs. S. is willing.) [Mrs. S. then became unconscious and returned again to consciousness in less than five minutes. Planchette moved off the paper three times and writing was resumed after Mrs. S. became fully conscious.]

Charles Sherman Chas l [?] Ch Ch l l ... S S

(This will have to stop. Mrs. S. is too tired to stand this scrawling. If you can write so she will be interested in it, she can stand it a little while longer, but she cannot stand this.) [No reply.] "

Mr. Smead appends the note: "I do not know who this Charles Sherman is. It means nothing to either of us. We never had such a friend so far as we know." It is certainly a mistake on Mr. Smead's part to give and withdraw requests in the manner here indicated, no matter what theory of the phenomena be entertained. His vacillation would ruin any case.

February 13th, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S., and Dr. L—. Mr. Smead's hand not on planchette. Mrs. S. fully conscious throughout the sitting. Prayer as usual. Dr. L—'s first experience at such experiments.

"(All ready, friends. I see the hand shake.) Who is this friend. Is this the time. (This is mirror writing I think.) yes sir.

[The fact is that both statements are *inverted mirror writing*. The planchette moved the pencil from the left to the right side of

the sheet and down to the right hand corner and wrote from right to left, and the sheet has to be turned upside down and then read with a mirror to be read at all. The attempt to read it with the mirror without this inversion results only in showing that the writing is upside down from right to left.]

(This is not the time for the other friends.) that is what we said, yes. (Move your hand over here and I will talk to it.) not my hand. my head sir. (This is Dr. L——, a friend of mine. I have invited him to be here.) we will welcome the [thee] but we must call the [thee] just the Dr. [period inserted.] we cannot say your name every time. it is not a common one, friend. will this be pleasing to thee. [period inserted.]

[Apparently some question was asked here in response to which "yes" is written in the left hand upper corner, and after the writing of the answer to the previous question.

(Dr. L——: It will be pleasing.) thank thee friend. (Mr. S. to Dr. L——: Ask him who is writing.) you need not. I am not afraid friend to tell thee who I am. I am friend Chesterfield. (We are glad to have you here with us, Chesterfield. What can you tell us?) not very much. you see when we told thee when we were to come then we we [were] trying to tell thee what thou a [erased.] hast been desirous of knowing. we did not expect this friend. we do not advise the nightly meetings only as necessary. (Let us read this, Chesterfield.) not yet. I [?] [erased.] had we * * [erased.] expected that thou wert desirous of this friend should come we would have planned for thy friend. we cannot always come on this evening as we should be preparing for the Lord's day. we send out no messen' [erased.] messages for we wish to do the Will of God and it is not as pleasing that our work should be done on this eve, as it is preparatory to the Sabbath.

(Very good. What do you want us to do, Chesterfield? [To Dr. L——:] Never mind that. Go on Dr. Ask questions.)

we will tell the [thee] that [it] is not wise to disobey the Laws of God for He is mindful of thy needs and what is not necessary He will not allow [allow] for we cannot and will not disobey. it is that that causes so much disorder on the earth, and if you wish evil to come to thee thou [written 'thu' first and started to make 'u' for the last letter and then returned and wrote 'o' in superposition on first 'u' and finished the second without repeating the first stroke.] wilt do this. if thou wilt obey God thou wilt keep this commandment to Remember the sabbath day to keep it holy.

(Dr. L——: Has all this any bearing upon Saturday being the Jewish Sabbath?) no, do you know when Our Lord arose from the th [erased.] grave then did our Sabbath begin, friend.

(Dr. L——: Why should Saturday be a day of preparation?) prepare for it. we should always be more in harmony with Him

and therefore we should lay aside all worldly thoughts and desires that would keep our minds and hearts * * [undec. erased.] out of harmony which is the reason for it. this would be well: for thee to consider, friends.

(Dr. L——: I don't see why Saturday specially.) we did not say that this day should be given, but we said this evening and always should it be so.

(Dr. L——: Are there any obstacles in the way of the progress of a spirit?) there is much here friend that we also need to give up and many souls to help and earthly desires to overcome, so it is very necessary that we prepare for the sabbath day. we are going soon. it is now that we should go. when shall we call thee again, Chesterfield?

[The question was debated and finally Dr. L—— thought that the evening would be best.]

if it is best for thee we will come. we..... (Dr. says Thursday of this week in the afternoon, Chesterfield.) the fourth day of the coming week we will come to thee. (All right. Good night, Chesterfield.) [No reply.] "

This sitting has no evidential features save for the influence of Mrs. Smead's normal conviction about the Sabbath upon the contents of the automatic writing. The respect shown for the Sabbath and the need of preparation for it Saturday evening is a reflection of a very common conviction among religious people of a certain class. It was characteristic of my own parents and I have seen it frequently in other families. It was more common in England, I believe, in the last and previous century, especially among the Puritan classes. There is nothing, however, in Mrs. Smead's normal convictions and habits that represent any special addiction to this point of view. She has had no objections previously to experiments of this kind either on Saturdays or Sundays. Hence it is not a direct expression of a prevalent conviction on her part. We should have to suppose that the increased religious interest of these phenomena has given rise to a point of view more familiar to memory than to habits.

February 17th, 1904. 1.45 p. m. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Dr. L——. Mr. Smead's hand not on planchette.

" (All is ready, friends. Dr. L—— is here as agreed. I have

no objection to her being unconscious.) Understandest Thou Friends. We will try. you came and we will try. thou must needs wait a ullle [little] while. (Very well. We will.) What shall i tell him for you yes. [Mr. S.: I read the writing and supposed it to refer to myself.] not you, this lady over here. (Who is it? What lady is it?) she say [Mr. S. began to read the writing.] wait. it is new for him to be looking for light from this source, but [pause.] (Go on, friend.) Andrew Ne.... [clear writing.] has been much [wavy writing.] with me. We have we have [new line begun with repetition.] tried to let you know us. you must take more time to consider how— she needs to rest here. (The last word you wrote is 'how'.) not who you think this lady (Needs to rest?) [scrawl.] yeung [young] whom n mother, yes. now when I ame [came] we must tell thee that lady cannot endure it. it is too much. she called herself mother, but would not tell us her name. she said she would give it to you herself. she wanted to try, so I let her.

(That looks like a dodge, Chesterfield. She ought to tell you something, and you ought to tell us. I don't like the looks of that, Chesterfield.)

we cannot make friends do so. (You must know something about the woman Chesterfield. You ought to tell us something.) if so you will say we get it elsewhere, and we wanted her to do it— Id.... (If you know anything about the woman, tell me, Chesterfield. I will risk the telepathic charge. Tell me something that I do not know and that Dr. L—— does know.) you told me only a short time ago that you would like such evidence and now we are trying to get it so let us alone for a while and see what we can do.

(All right, Chesterfield. Go on.) we will wait for that lady to become accustomed to this work. she has never tried before anywhere and so it was all she could stand. she is feeling exhausted, but as soon as she recovers I will, if you wish, ask her what you like.

(Let her tell something that only Dr. L—— knows. Do you understand me, Chesterfield?) we will ask it for thee. (Very good. Chesterfield.) good day Friends. (I am surprised. Will you go now, Chesterfield.) Chesterfield. we must need tend her. (I do not understand this.) she is unconscious and we must care at [sheet changed] at once fore [for] [her] as it is our duty. (When can we sit again for Dr. L——?) [No reply.] "

Mrs. Smead was conscious throughout. The reference to being unconscious is unintelligible except as referring to the "communicator". Mrs. Smead had a severe pain in the back of her head after the sitting about the spinal cord. It lasted for more than an hour and a half.

February 17th, 1904. 8.30 p. m. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Dr. T——. Mr. Smead's hand not on the planchette. Mrs. S. conscious.

"(All ready. Dr. T—— is here now.) UNDER THE ['under' was written 'uder' and after 'the' was written the planchette went back and placed 'N' between 'U' and 'D'.] TREE. ('Under the tree?') YES. (What do you mean by that?) THEY LEFT ME. (Tell me more about that under the tree' matter.) YES YES. THERE THEY PLACED MY BODY. THERE THEY TOOK THEM FROM me. THEN THEY WENT ON THE DOUBLE QUICK AND WE WERE LEFT TO SEE THAT WE WERE NOT NEEDED LONGER. (Can you tell what you had taken from you besides the silver dollar?) ALL THERE WAS. THAT PICTURE. THERE WERE PAPER STOO, YES, AND—— [pause.]

(Dr. T——: What have I with me that you had?) the brother has gone. the work tired him. he said it was like old times."

This is the third sitting with Dr. T—— present. After the second one had been transcribed and mailed to me Mrs. Smead, who had been called to look after the baby, told Mr. Smead facts that were not recorded until this sitting, but pertain to the one just mentioned. Mr. Smead records the following notes:

"At the second sittings of Dr. T—— Mrs. Smead said she saw a pocketbook about four inches long by two inches and a half wide or thereabouts; brown leather with a strap around it. She saw one of the soldiers down on one knee take this pocketbook out of a soldier's pocket. She saw the grave near by, and that it was dug. She saw something else that was black, but did not know what it was; supposed that it was a pocket knife.

"Mrs. Smead told me of seeing this pocketbook and described it immediately after the second sitting of Dr. T——, and after I had made the transcript and sent it off. The reason that she did not tell me at the time of the sitting was that she was disturbed by the baby waking.

"I asked Dr. T—— if there was any significance in this pocketbook incident and he said it was a description of the one taken from his brother. Dr. T—— does not know whether his brother was buried under a tree or not.

"The statement about the picture in the present sitting is correct. It was a small black one and of the old daguerreotype make. It was in a small black box frame and he had it with him when he was killed and it was taken from him. I knew this fact. Mrs. Smead knew nothing about it. I never mentioned it to her. Dr. T—— says there were probably papers in his pocket, but will have to make inquiries about it."

April 9th, 1904.

After making the above record and notes I wrote to the Dr. T—— concerned and received from him this morning the following letter in reply to questions bearing upon his experiment and the results:

"W——, —, April 8, 1904.

"Mr. J. H. Hyslop,

"Dear Sir:

"Your favor of yesterday is before me. I would say that all that pertains to my brother's death and burial, I have learned by 'hearsay'. The last time I saw him he was alive and well. A comrade who saw him fall and assisted at his burial told me that he was struck by a cannon ball which passed through his hips from side to side, that he fell forward striking his head upon a stump inflicting a wound above one eye, that he was buried under a tree some distance from where he fell. An ordinary dark leather pocketbook was taken from him and sent home. I am told it contained some \$40, which was taken to pay for embalming the body and starting it for home. When I received the pocketbook it contained a few silver coins, a silver dollar that I gave him when I last saw him and he promised to keep. I know of no papers, yet there might have been. His diary was sent home. Twenty-six years after he was killed a comrade sent me a testament that he took from his blouse pocket. I also have a silver spoon with his name on the handle that a comrade gave me saying he picked it up some rods from where the body lay. It was probably in his haversack when the shot scattered its contents.

"A picture of my father was taken from his body which I

subsequently lost at the battle of South Mountain, Sept. following.

"Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew that I had a brother killed in the army and I had said in their presence, I think, that I had a feeling that somehow he might be near me. I have no reason to think that either of them knew anything in regard to *how* he was killed or where he was buried. I did not know that he was buried under a tree until I inquired of a comrade who knew, *after* Mrs. Smead told me.

"My experience in matters pertaining to the spirit world is very limited. I have often heard Mr. Smead speak of you and I would gladly answer any questions I may be able and in a way be looking for 'more light' which is indeed desirable.

"Sincerely yours,

"A. H. T—.

February 18th, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. Planchette used and hand of Mr. S. on the same. Both desired to hear from son Cecil.

"(All ready.) Robert Smead, Smead, you (What spirit is here?) Your friend from the Orient. (I do not know any friend from the Orient. Who is it?) not so fast. (Who is it?) Solomon [Solomon] Porter. (Solomon Porter?) yes, yes. (John Solomon Porter was not in the Orient?) near it * * ['Charles' with letter like 't' or 'l'.] he was home there in the— Italy Rome. (What is the word after 'the'?) Italy, Rome. (All right, go on.) where [here] is Perk coming now. (All right. Perk is welcome.) me too. Porter used to live at Gilead. (That is good. Tell me more that Mrs. Smead does not know and that I do not know.) yes. [period inserted.] we used to have Cheleseak * * [evidently attempt at Chaldaic which was an elective study at the seminary.] (What was the word after 'have'?) meetings at his house sometimes (I don't understand. What is that word?) that is nothing you know about. (Write that again, please. I want to get that word.) I was thinking about G. Talor [Dr. Graham Taylor, who was called G. Taylor by the students.] (I wish you would write that word I did not get.) Solomn Porter is to [too] tired. (All right. Can Perkins do it?) you know. Smead, he is noted for being tired. (That was about right. So he was. It gives me great pleasure to have you here with me tonight.) yes, it

gives us Great Pleasure. (That is good. Please tell me something that Mrs. Smead does not know.) There is a party here that you believe is somewhere on the bank of Maxwellton's banks. (That is good. I understand. Tell me the name, please.) I think it better not be, Smead (Why not?) Smead, * * * * Chaldea ('Chaldaic', is that the word?) yes, that is it. that is——"

The baby disturbed Mrs. S. at this point and the sitting had to be stopped. Mr. Smead records the following notes:

"I do not know whether the John Solomon Porter, spoken of in this sitting, is dead or not. The last I knew of him he was alive and in the missionary work of the American Board in Prague, Austria. He was a young man about my age, and was a graduate of the same theological seminary that I graduated from. We were good friends. I knew, and so did Mrs. Smead, that the Perkins and Maxwell spoken of were dead. But we did not and do not know whether Porter is dead or not. I shall have to find out in some way. The Congregational Year Book for 1903 registers him as alive at that time.

"Chaldaic was one of the studies in the seminary, but it was an elective one and as far as I know no member of my class took it. Certainly Maxwell and Perkins did not. Neither did John Solomon Porter. I cannot understand the reference to Chaldaic. Mrs. Smead did not know that this study was an elective one in the course.

"We did meet socially sometimes at the house of G. Taylor, and Maxwell and Perkins met with the rest of the class."

On the night of February 27th Mrs. Smead dreamed that my father, Robert Hyslop, and my mother were present, and that my father wanted me to come and have a sitting with Mrs. Smead. Mrs. Smead was not willing unless God would give positive evidence that it was his will. My mother seemed to say to her: "Tell James, I want him to go on with his work. It is right. I am doing all I can to help it." The rest could not be recalled. The dream was recorded the next morning.

There is nothing of an evidential sort in this dream. Mrs. Smead knew that I had expected for two years to abandon the work of psychical research and take whatever I could find. Con-

sequently there are earmarks of secondary personality in the dream.

March 4th, 1904. Present Dr. T——, Mr. and Mrs. S. Prayer as usual. My hand not on planchette.

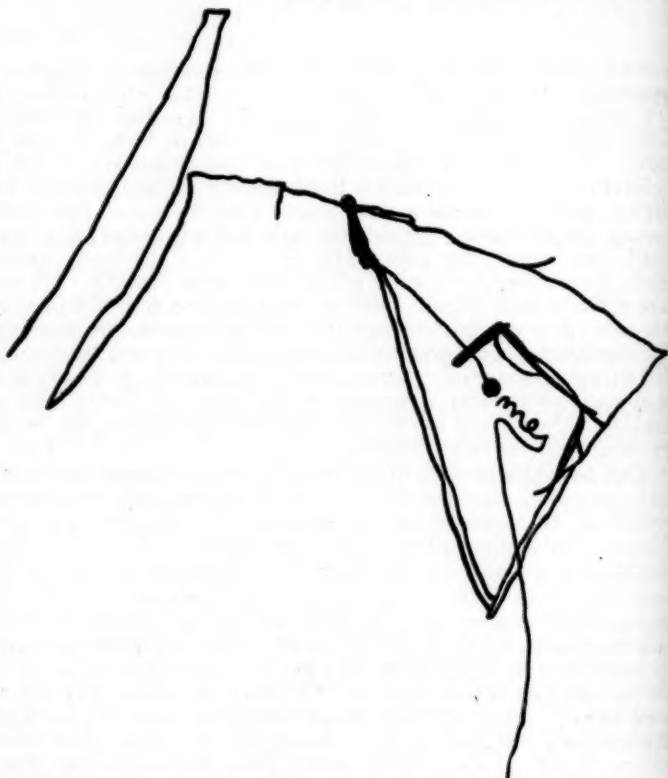
" (All ready friends.) [figure drawn like a canteen in shape and apparently with a handle.] What is it friend. (What is it?) yes, we did it as you said. (Dr. T—— does not understand, neither do I, friend, what it is. I take it back: I think I know.) yes you do, neither of the other friends know. (I call it a canteen. Dr. T—— says it looks like it.) it was one that we carried with our provision Cart, yes. (Dr. T——: The commissary wagon carried provisions: each individual carried a canteen.) we carried our cups. (Dr. T——: Cups were carried beside the canteens.) (Go on, tell us some more, friend.) you too have much to learn friend. we boys were used to getting rations in that way, that was part of our fun. (You were in the battle of Williamsburg. Could you draw a map of the forts and battlefield? Tell us some more facts.) yes, make it not alone. it would need us all together to make it complete and we are quite divided just at this time. the roll call has not u [erased.] been complete yet. some are missing in our ranks, brother.

[An attempt was made at this point to draw a map of the battlefield, apparently after Dr. T—— had drawn one and asked where the 2nd N. H. regiment was. I reproduce the planchette map, Dr. T——'s evidently not having been preserved.]

(Near what road was the 2nd N. H. Regiment?) Mrs. S. at once said: "the brother was nearest the Yorktown road." The planchette then wrote: yes, it is where they left me. (What do those back lines mean on the map you made?) that was where we came up together, yes, we came up all right and some went back again. yes we told you before about it. (Probably he means that not all were killed.) yes. (Please tell us something about the battle of Williamsburg that Mrs. S. and I do not know.) there is not much for me to tell. I came out so soon. there are others that know much more. I do not recall much after I was shot, only what I can think back before it. we weready [were ready] to take the rebs by storm, and I [scrawls.] was sorry to lose my chance at them so soon. I was ready, yes, I was ready with the rest to do my part. we expected some would fall, but I wanted to give them more o—— [sheet changed.] of our powder. (Who was colonel of your regiment? Who was commanding general that day?) [We looked

at the clock and saw that it was half past nine, and some one spoke that it was possible that Mrs. S. was tired.] taps. [Control then ceased.]

(Anything else tonight?) Chesterfield has been pleased to let thy brother try [scrawl.] once again, friend, but he was getting over tired, so that he gave it up for this time. he will try again.



it is hard for friends here at first to get used to this way of talking and so you must not be disappointed as there is so much that they leave unsaid that they try to say. yes good night, friends. (When shall we have another sitting?) not for the present ['presen' written and planchette moved to begin next line and returned writing 't'

in its proper place.] we will try the m [erased.] next ['t' crossed.] week after the one coming the same day. we do not wish any other meetings as we cannot come."

Dr. T—— knew nothing about the pertinence of the reference to "under the tree", February 17th, and neither did Mr. and Mrs. S. It appears from the message that the reference meant something pertaining either to the brother's death or to his burial. But whatever it was it was unknown to Dr. T—— and to Mrs. and Mr. S. Dr. T—— wrote to a comrade regarding his brother's death, evidently inquiring about the place where he was killed or buried and the following is his reply:

"Keene, N. H., 3—12—1904.

"Mr. A. H. T——.

"Dear Sir: Yours received and in reply will say that I will draw a line as near as I can remember across the card, as our regiment lay in front of Fort Magruder, and make an X in about the place your brother was killed. I cannot say in regard to the junction of the roads, but Company A lay to the right facing Fort Magruder in a lot of fallen timber supporting a battery. We had orders to fall back to go on the left of the road where the rebels were flanking us and just as we were falling back your brother was killed. On the left of the road was standing timber where we were skirmishing, and there Nathaniel F. Lane was

killed. I will mark where Lane fell with



mark as near as I

can remember. I will mark



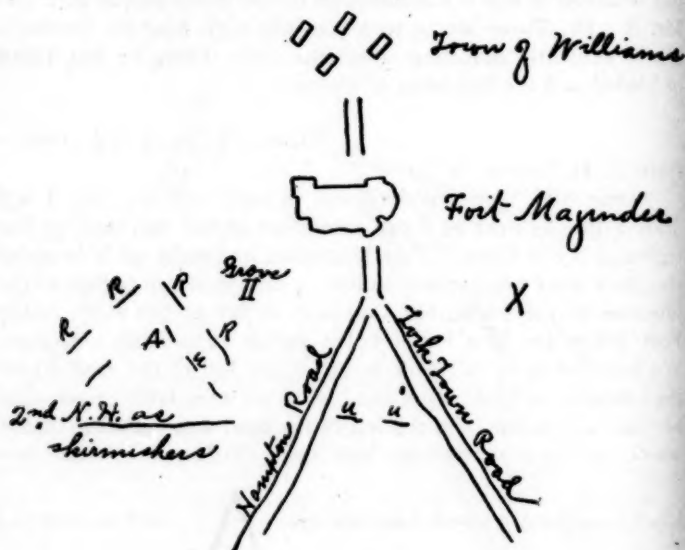
grave where your brother was buried in edge of the woods to the left of the road to the best of my recollections. You will excuse this mixed mess. I can give you a better explanation when I see you.

"Very truly yours,

"WILLIAM WHIPPLE."

March 18th, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Dr. T——.
Planchette used and Mr. S.'s hand not on same.

"(Dr. T—— is here. All ready friends.) We are late. (Yes, go on.) Too late for much work. (Yes, I get that. Go on.) Yes. [hand shakes and draws wavy lines.] o [?] Yankee Doodle went to town a riding [scrawls.] (Go on friend.) * * ['we are ?] here, yes we are [very wavy.] tell H it is us all right. ('Tell it is us all right?') yes. (Is Dr. T.'s brother here tonight? Who is writing?) The Brother is but cannot [cannot] use the light this way. (What can we do to help him. we would say wait * * (What is the matter, friends, tonight?) yes [?] we would



* * * (Why not bring her to consciousness?) come to [?]
 * * yes, let her. (She is now conscious. What shall we do?)
 [No reply.] "

The writing in this experiment shows difficulty and was often wavy and hard to decipher. The allusion to Yankee Doodle explains itself and is not in any way evidential. The use of the word "light" as applying to Mrs. S. is apparently a reproduction from the Piper record.

March 22nd, 1904. Present Mr. and Mrs. S. and Mr. Martin

A. B., selectman of W——. My hand not on planchette. The experiment was arranged without Mrs. S.'s knowledge. She was unwilling to hold the sitting because of much work. She finally gave her consent expecting a failure. Before the sitting she became quieter and more willing to try.

"(All is ready, friends.) Yes, why not before for thy friend. thou should not be afraid to speak for us. (Sentence read aloud.) when thou meetest a friend why dost thou fear—— no, meetest—— [Apparently unrecorded question asked as to reading of word.] (Who is the friend?) thy friend. (This man present?) yes, this one wh [erased.] we could have done much for him. (When?) no him. (When?) no. (We do not understand. Please tell us what you mean by it? we could have given his friends he [apparently erased.] here y opportunities to and he [?] will be well [planchette moved back and wrote 'well' just before 'will'.] (All right, go on.) we are glad to greet thy friend. yes why didnt, no didntst thou bring him before. we [sheet changed.] we could have done much for him. (I judge this is Chesterfield.) the same as thou hast said. (I did not know this man was interested in these matters until lately, Chesterfield.) we are very sorry. (Try and bring some of his friends here.) they cannot at this time. (Why not?) it takes time for preparation. we need it to get the right cords in motion. (Where are these cords?) the [they] are connections between thy world and and this. it takes time to get the friends near enough to use them rightly. (All right, Chesterfield, tell us something else.) we could have done much with this friend, for the friends here are very near at times. they do not always remain, but sometimes are very near. (Tell me the names of some of these friends.) that would not be wise. (Why not?) they would say thy light did it. (We will risk that.) dost thou know we gave thyne [thy] other friend not names but facts. (I remember. Give us some facts.) we are only letting [evidently not read at time.] letting the friends here do it for thy friend [sheet changed] is there. no, we are only letting *friends*, yes, here do it for those friends there. we are now working differently than heretofore. (Mr. B—— expressed his regrets that he had not had opportunities before to sit.) we are sorry. (I wish you would give us some facts that we might know.) no do not ask us to go back to our old way. we are fulfilling our mission, yes. (Write something to us to prove that you are a spirit.) why dost thou [written 'thy' and then 'ou' written over 'y'.] continually doubt. (It seems to me that it might be a good plan to do something to prove it Chesterfield.) that I have done. (That is so. I hope you will do more.) yes. (Go on please.) whose beads were they [sheet changed] they. (Did you say 'beads'?) yes, whose. (Mr. B——: Where are those

beads now?) I saw them last night. they were large ones. (Mr. B——: Were they mother's?) yes, yes. [written in wavy and agitated manner.] (Mr. B——: Explain still more.) where. (Where have those beads been kept?) [No reply.] (Where are those beads now?) [No reply.] ”

“At this point the baby cried and Mrs. S. was compelled to come out of the trance. My hand was not on the planchette and there was no contact with Mr. B—— in any way. Mr. B—— was a total stranger to Mrs. S., as she had never met him before. I knew him but slightly and know nothing about his affairs except that his wife is dead.”

Mr. S. adds in a further note that at the first of the sitting Mrs. S. saw the face of a lady and the figures 1871. No statement is made whether this number has any significance or not.

I myself (J. H. Hyslop) made inquiries by letter of Mr. B—— in regard to the incidents of this experiment and the following is his reply:

“W——, N. H., April 11, '04.

“Mr. J. H. Hyslop,

“My dear Sir:

“Your kind letter came to me a few days ago. Unfortunately I was only permitted to enjoy one sitting at Mr. Smead's. This was on the evening before her final departure from town when she naturally would not be in the best physical condition. I had never met her previous to that night. My acquaintance also with Mr. S. was very limited, being confined mostly to chance meetings on the street. On one occasion, perhaps two or three weeks before he was to leave town, having heard it reported that he had a little interest in this subject, I ventured to relate to him a little experience I had had in Boston a few days before at a sitting. From this recital came our interest in each other and hence my invitation to his house.

“I have reason to believe that neither Mr. nor Mrs. S. had the slightest knowledge of my family. Neither of them ever knew where I lived. The facts about the beads are these. These gold beads came down from my grandmother to my mother, who died in 1890, aged 87. She sometimes wore them, say 40 or 50 years ago, and was much attached to them. Before her death she

gave them to my wife, who died last December. For years they had been kept in a little pasteboard box in my safe. The night before the sitting I had occasion to visit the safe on some trivial errand, but did not pay any attention to the little box containing the beads, but the safe was opened and the little box was in sight when the door opened. The beads were quite large ones. They would afford as prominent an object to connect with the family as anything that could be thought of. At the time mention was made of these by the medium, they were not in my thoughts. The impression I got was that some one tangible and prominent article must be quickly thought of, which would be associated with the family, otherwise there might seem to be too long a halt for the satisfaction of the listener. I was much disappointed over the necessity of Mrs. S. being compelled to break off at this very interesting stage, because it seemed to me that we were on the very point of getting something of value. I am very glad to give you this information and I have tried to make it complete. The whole had for me the highest interest.

"Yours very truly,

"M. A. B—,

"W—, N. H."

ADDENDA TO THE SMEAD CASE.*

By James H. Hyslop.

In the publication of the Smead Case covering its origin and development up to the stage in which clearly evidential matter was manifested, I explained that I left it as it had been written at an earlier date. I began the record in 1900 and put a part of it into shape for publication as early as 1902. The English Society rejected it, tho offering to publish a summary of it, which I would not permit. I then offered it to a well known publisher and he rejected it with better reason: namely, that it would not pay for itself. This I knew well enough, but hoped to get into print a record that was extremely valuable in the study of the border-land stage between secondary personality and mediumship. I then sought to have it published by the Carnegie Institution and was advised to let Dr. John Billings who was one of the Executive Committee see the report. I gave it to him with the distinct explanation that it was *not* spiritistic, but a case of secondary personality with considerable interest. After examining it he returned it with the verdict that it had no evidence for spirits in it! This was the very reason why I wanted it published and the man showed that he had no scientific perspective in his judgment of the case. He was really in pursuit of spirits while pretending he was not. He did not see that he had a case by which difficulty could be proposed for spiritistic interpretations and that the sceptic would welcome a thing of the kind.

This was before the case assumed better credentials for spiritistic phenomena. I had little more to sustain a spiritistic interpretation than the brief summary of the facts on page 156 of

*Since this Report was set up in type Mr. Smead has expressed his willingness to have his real name known. The actual name is Rev. Willis M. Cleaveland, now an Episcopal clergyman. He is connected with the Church in the State of Illinois. He was at one time in New England and went thence to Virginia and afterwards to his present call. He was the author of the Report on Miss Wright, published in the *Journal*, Vol. V, pp. 497-529.

the report. The mass of facts was either overwhelmingly in favor of secondary personality with some possibility of doubt about those really or apparently on the other side, or was so explicable by that hypothesis, so far as it explains anything, that the spiritist would have to urge his claims against the evidence. But time has been on the side of getting the case upon public record. It was completed in its present shape by 1905, and later much more material of much better evidential value was obtained. In 1907 some good sittings were held in which fairly good evidence of the supernormal was obtained, tho exceedingly fragmentary and confused, and then in 1910, after the death of Professor James, more of the same kind, with perhaps some improvement in quality and quantity, was obtained. Both these records have long since been published and showed the spiritistic character of the case after its better development. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, pp. 525-722, and Vol. VI, pp. 822-939.

But in spite of this changed evidential character I resolved to leave the original record of the earlier stages as it was written at the time. I postponed the publication of it because certain important cases required more immediate attention, more particularly because they fitted the psychological moment better, and tactical questions had to be considered. But when the time came I resolved to publish the report just as it had been written at the time and long before it became provably spiritistic. In the meantime I had changed my views regarding some of its features without altering those regarding others, and yet I deemed it best to leave the report as it was written, tho the interpretation of it had been greatly modified by the other two reports on it and by such material as has been printed on the Thompson-Gifford case (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. III), and the Doris Fischer case also a case of secondary personality (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vols. IX, X, XI), and some cases less voluminous in their contents. I deemed it important to preserve its historical place in the problem both for myself and for psychic research.

The difficulty which I had to meet in the discussion of the case at this early period was its baffling character. It was neither one thing nor the other in all its details. The Miss Beauchamp case, as it was reported by Dr. Morton Prince, left no doubt about its character, tho there are hints in it of something more than Dr.

Prince recognized, and perhaps if he had published the whole of it or investigated it with somewhat different methods, it might have turned out to be equally baffling, or to have developed mediumship as similar cases have done right under my eyes. But that is a matter which we cannot determine at present. As published the case left no clear room for spiritistic interpretations. On the other hand, the Piper case appeared to be at the opposite extreme. It was clearly unlike that of Miss Beauchamp. It had such overwhelming masses of the supernormal that it made a spiritistic hypothesis at least possible and pure secondary personality was out of the question. The Smead case, however, had elements of both in its make up, at least superficially, and no one theory seemed applicable to the whole of its contents. In its form and claims it was exactly like that of Mrs. Piper and other mediumistic phenomena. In its contents, it had some resemblance to that of Miss Beauchamp, tho not dramatically like it or so interesting for the psychological student. Hence if one contended that it was wholly a case of dual personality, he would be confronted with data that seemed to contradict that view. On the other hand, if he maintained that it was spiritistic, he would be confronted by the demand for adequate evidence. The consequence was that I saw the borderland character of the phenomena, and they suggested to me the hypothesis that secondary personality or the subconscious was the medium or vehicle for inter-relation between the normal and the transcendental, instead of being a rival and alternative explanation of spiritistic phenomena. Prior to the study of this case I had supposed that the choice had to be made in all cases between the subconscious and spirits, and I never thought of the possibility that the subconscious or secondary personality might be the condition of securing evidence for spirits. The moment that this possibility presented itself to me I saw a new method or way of approach to all supernormal phenomena, and from that time on the case became as valuable for scientific study as Mrs. Piper or any similar case where the supernormal was evident. Readers of the report on the Smead case will notice that I stated this view in it as far back as 1905 or even earlier. I began at once to study it from that point of view, and later experiences and investigations everywhere have confirmed that view of the case and probably of all mediums.

It was impossible to apply the hypothesis in detail to the record at that time. It was too new to do this and the accumulation of evidence was too small to do so. Moreover the general attitude toward the problem, lay and scientific, was too clearly defined toward a choice between all spirits or all subconscious to press a combination of both hypotheses combined. A compromise of this type at the time would have looked like begging the question. But as further study and investigation proceeded it became more and more plausible that this was the true solution of the case and now we are in a position to make it more probable, tho I leave the case as is was discussed at the time.

The subject of secondary personality has not been adequately analyzed by those who discuss it. It has sufficed usually, even in our own discussions of it, to mention it as a scape-goat for spiritistic interpretations of certain phenomena. Distinction between secondary personality and subconscious action has been made perhaps clearly enough often, the one being an organized and dramatic form of imitating a real personality and the other as a name for sporadic phenomena not apparent in normal consciousness but separated from it by amnesia. Secondary personality also represents the same cleavage as subconscious phenomena, but it simulates the characteristics of a real personality independent of the organism in all but the actually spatial independence, while subconscious action does not necessarily simulate a real personality. But while this distinction is clear enough to most persons who have studied the subject at all, the term secondary personality has been appealed to without distinguishing adequately between the types of it. It is always assumed to find the source of its ideas in normal experience and that suffices to cast out of account the hypothesis of a foreign origin for things once known to the subject. Critics of the spiritistic theory have not always been ready to recognize its types. The whole impulse of attack against the hypothesis of spirits has been directed toward an original source of the information in the normal experiences of the subject and special cases have not been examined for different types of manifestation. The evidence for its existence at all has to be in the tracing of actual secondary phenomena in normal experiences forgotten, but resurrected in some way from their grave in subconscious depths.

But there are some phenomena which cannot so be traced and which at the same time are not evidence of spirits or transcendental agents, and which have been lumped under secondary personality without qualifying in evidence of normal experience. These are slurred over or the question begged regarding their source by emphasizing cases in which the knowledge is provably normal. But I shall insist that we must distinguish between two types of secondary personality, with one of them still to be proved to exist. The first of these I shall call *reproductive* secondary personality and the second *fabricative* secondary personality. This second type is still to be proved, or at least cannot be proved in the same way as the first. By *reproductive* secondary personality I mean the type in which the phenomena are reproductions of past normal experiences that have been forgotten: that is, separated from normal memories by amnesia. I assume here that the phenomena assume the form of a distinct personality and are not merely sporadic subliminal incidents. But they are resurgent memories of normal experience, and when secondary personality is proved these facts must be provably connected with normal experience. We must trace their origin to actual sensory or other mental experience. Now this is the only kind of secondary personality that has been distinctly proved. Indeed it is hard to see how any other kind can easily be proved. We have a right to assert it positively when we have found the secondary states to have been primary ones at some time. The evidence for secondary personality is thus found in the connection, the identity, between present and past mental states, tho dissociated from each other by amnesia. But in the second type of secondary personality we have no such proof. *Fabricative* secondary personality has no such proof. Its very conception implies that there is no proof of identity between present and past mental states. It can have at best the rank of a mere hypothesis, unless other evidence that a connection between its data and past experience can be produced. But we cannot produce evidence in it of past experience without converting it into the reproductive type. The consequence is that, unless we can prove reproductive secondary personality we can only suppose the fabricative which has not yet received any scientific proof of itself. At best it is but conjectural with the proof still to find. It is, of course, not impos-

sible, but when it is proposed the sceptic has the right to demand evidence. So far that is not forthcoming. The simplest and most conclusive type of evidence for it cannot be obtained: namely, identity of facts between the primary and secondary states. In the study of the present case this circumstance must be kept in mind.

We could not in the early stages of our investigation insist upon a distinction between the *explanatory* and the *evidential* problem. The whole issue had to be evidential assuming that the explanatory process might be granted. The public mind was ready to admit that spirits might explain anything in this field, if we had evidence for their existence. This assumption was not correct, but it was made and many people still make it. Only the scientific man refuses to explain everything by anything that comes along. He demands relevancy between hypothesis and facts. The fact was that there was no *a priori* reason for explaining the phenomena in the present case by spirits, tho it is true that spirits might explain many things that are not evidence of their existence or actual presence. But there were too many things explicable or referable to secondary personality, and too few really or apparently inexplicable by it to insist on a spiritistic explanation for any of the facts, unless that hypothesis had been well established by other cases. Moreover, there is no reason for holding that it would explain all the facts because it might explain the crucial ones. It depends on our knowledge of what the conditions are which affect the action of such agents, and we do not yet know what these conditions are. The whole issue was primarily whether there was any evidence for the supernormal at all in the case, and secondarily whether it had relevance to spiritistic suppositions of any kind. Hence it was impossible to insist upon the importance of that theory. It could not supplant the hypothesis of subconscious action in those facts which Mrs. Smead knew and these were so numerous that, if the standard of truth were quantitative, secondary personality would carry off the verdict.

On the other hand, it does not follow from the application of secondary personality to some of the phenomena either that it will explain all of them or that it excludes further investigation into its own applicability in detail. Critics of spiritistic theories have been too prone to assume that, because they could prove the

presence of the subconscious, we knew all about the facts. They never act as if secondary personality were itself a phenomenon still to be investigated. They too hastily assume that we know all about it. The very contrary is true. We know very little about it. In fact it is little more than a bottomless pit into which we can throw mysteries of all sorts. It is a convenient subterfuge for a confession of ignorance. All that we know about it is that there are subconscious mental operations that, to some extent at least, may imitate the normal processes of mind. But that they are one-tenth as capacious as is supposed we do not know. It is convenient for explaining the recurrence of forgotten events which we do not recognize when recalled, or of which we are not conscious until they are recalled. They may not be recognized at any time, but we may obtain evidence that they were once consciously in the mind. That is about all we know about them, save that certain emotional disturbances or other influences may bring them to the surface. But the definite laws affecting them we do not yet clearly know. Hence it is not yet completely explanatory, or may itself require explanation. This must always be kept in mind when dealing with it as an hypothesis in such cases. It may serve a very useful purpose in classifying certain facts, in distinguishing them from well known normal facts, or in determining evidential limitations for supernormal theories. But this is all that we can yet accomplish by the conception. It clearly has this function, but this fact does not justify us in assuming that it is explanatory of all that occurs in such cases. Let us examine this claim somewhat in detail.

I shall take up the Martian phenomena as the most important ones that can be invoked for the influence of secondary personality. In the discussion of theories of these phenomena (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. XII, pp. 46-60, 140-155, 182-214) I called attention to certain facts which pointed unmistakably to the actual or possible influence of subconscious memories on the production of the Martian incidents. This is precisely what the critic of spiritistic explanations would do and the facts had to be recognized as the price of obtaining any consideration of them at all. But I did not attempt to apply the hypothesis to all the details. Had I done so I should have exposed myself to attack by the spiritist and have been as vulnerable as I would

have been if I had wholly denied the presence of subliminal influences. But it is due to science and to truth lovers frankly to admit the limitations of secondary personality in the problem. As I have shown, we do not wholly exclude spirits because we find that secondary personality is present, and we do not assure ourselves that all the facts fit any special form of the hypothesis of secondary personality.

The fact that Martian phenomena had interested the public for a long time and that men were curious about Mars possibly being inhabited was sufficient to explain the appearance of statements about it. But a most important assumption of this theory is the fact that *it rests upon the reproduction of normal memories in a subconscious manner*. I shall not say that the theory of secondary personality is based exclusively upon this assumption, for if it were, it would not go far in the explanation of this or any other case of the kind. But its chief evidential reliance is and always must be upon the subconscious reproduction of normal memories. This part of the hypothesis, however, does not go very far in explaining the Martian phenomena of Mrs. Smead. The appeal to the articles in the *Atlantic Monthly* and the *Golden Rule* about that time does not even assure an explanation by that means. We have no assurance that Mrs. Smead saw them. Indeed, her testimony is that she has seen neither of them, and it is not certain that it was even possible to have seen the *Golden Rule* before some of the Martian incidents were mentioned in her automatic writing. If we were absolutely sure that she had seen both articles, the sceptic would have a fact that would have to be explained away. But the very basis of his application of the hypothesis is not assured, and we have a scientific right to note this fact, especially when he insists on disqualifying statements on the other side that are not evidentially intact. But suppose that the *Zeitgeist*, the state and interest of the public mind about the planet Mars, which would hardly be wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead, might account for the mention of the subject in the subconscious work with the planchette, this would not explain the details. For they are certainly not reproduced memories and they are no part of the articles mentioned. The theory that the facts are reproductions of normal memories will not hold water for a minute. Nothing is clearer than that fact: for they are totally differ-

ent from any discoverable incidents in the same connection. You will have to add subliminal imagination to the idea of subconscious memories, or substitute this hypothesis for the other. Now we know far less about subliminal imagination than about subliminal reproductive powers. Of course, it is not impossible to employ such an hypothesis on a large scale, but we have no such evidence for its existence as we have for the reproduction of normal memories and hence it is largely an *a priori* hypothesis, legitimate enough perhaps, but still requiring scientific proof before we apply it dogmatically.

The Martian airship is not the product of reproduced memories. It anticipated all practical applications of aeronautics. It has certain resemblances to Zeppelins which were not built at the time it was conceived. "The bag of air" on which a part of it was supported suggests the method of the dirigible with its use of gas. Then there are the sails on it which seem also to have been used in the Zeppelin. But all this was before the world had any example of it. The resemblance may not go beyond chance coincidence, but it is not the product of normal memories: that is, of sensible objects with which we are familiar, whatever we may choose to attribute to imagination. No doubt thousands of imaginative people have dreamed about aerial navigation and so we may suppose that Mrs. Smead was no exception to this, whether it was done consciously or subconsciously. But the result is not the reproduction of any actual airship seen. Secondary personality conceived as reproduction of normal memories certainly does not apply to this Martian incident.

Take the Martian clock as another instance. It is certainly not the result of reproduced memories. It is no help to the explanation of the whole that we should surmise that the *Atlantic Monthly* and the *Golden Rule* should suggest Martian ideas. We require to know why the particular form of clock should be produced. Mere reproduction of previous knowledge should have confined the incidents to what had been read in the sources named. But this clock is not mentioned in those articles. Of course in the process of constructing a scheme of life and reality in another planet it might be natural enough to imagine a clock, but this is not reproduced memories, unless the clock represents our own type. The incident, however, does nothing of the kind. The

clock is quite original and but for the fact that it is, like the perpetual motion, mechanically impossible, the imagination would not be an explanation. But suppose a clock were made in which one spring was strong enough both to run the time indicators and to wind up another spring which might be released at a given time to take up the task for a period of time, until the first spring required winding. This would not be an impossible thing. The very conception of the clock, tho mechanically impossible in terms of our own models, makes allowance for that fact and does not reproduce *in toto* the absurd conditions of the perpetual motion machine. It is at least ingenious, and is not the reproduced memory of some actual clock in existence.

Again take the language. This is certainly not a reproduction of anything we know. It is no help to suppose that Mrs. Smead had looked at Flournoy's "From India to the Planet Mars"; for the language there ascribed to Martian people was alphabetic, not hieroglyphic. It is true that the Smead production in this respect included an alphabetic language, but the hieroglyphic was affirmed to exist also, and from what we know of hieroglyphic languages here, we could conceive a transitional civilization in which both might exist side by side, so that Mrs. Smead's production is not altogether anomalous. It is quite conceivable. It only lacks proof of being a fact. It is, however, most certainly not a reproduction of anything read by her, and especially from Flournoy's work, which there is some evidence that she had not read at all. Take the names for the continent and zones on Mars. They again are certainly not reproductions from any language Mrs. Smead knows. She knows only English and a few words in Latin and perhaps parts of the Greek and Hebrew alphabets, picked up by contact with Mr. Smead who knew something of these languages. We can hardly even suppose that they are phonetic approximations of words in such languages which she has heard read aloud. It is quite possible that she had heard Greek and Hebrew words read or spoken aloud and that these might, in a secondary state, suggest attempts to reproduce the sounds in English. But I think no student of either Greek or Hebrew would detect any resemblance either phonetically or visually to those languages in these names or in any other words asserted to be Martian. The only hope for the hypothesis of secondary

personality is to make the work a product of pure imagination. Of that we may require to give as good evidence as for spirits.

One hardly need repeat that the Martian house and curtains were certainly not reproductions of memories, as they are original in both design and execution. This does not prove them supernormal or spiritistic, but it does prove that they are not reproductions. It would require a very intimate acquaintance with the day dreaming of Mrs. Smead to determine whether they are reproductions of what may have been imagined at some time. This is conceivable, but it is not reproduction of past sensory experience.

The Martian incidents have an interesting character. They are systematic and have all the superficial appearances of representing a supernormal source. They only lack confirmation to prove that they are genuine, if not in their exact form, then in their source. We might well suppose that they were modified in their transmission, both from Martians to others and then from these through Mrs. Smead to us. But we have no reasons to apply a complicated hypothesis like this in order to escape the theory of secondary personality. We might well apply it if we had any evidence whatever that there was any truth in them. Prof. Percival Lowell's opinion that Mars is inhabited is no help in such a matter. He has not proved his claim and students in his own field have no confidence in his theory. It is not impossible, but he lacks evidence quite as much as we lack it in this instance, and until we could obtain corroboration either of Lowell's opinion or of the allegations here we cannot stretch things in favor of a possible spiritistic origin. Secondary personality may not explain the facts. But we are not obligated to suppose spirits if secondary personality fails, nor are we obligated to suppose secondary personality, if spirits fail. We may remain in ignorance about it. We are not obliged to explain the facts. If we explain at all, we must select that hypothesis which is nearest what we know and hold that view only in so far as the facts justify it.

There is a possible view of the facts which would explain them spiritistically without supposing them to be true at all. The objective truth of the statements would certainly prove a spiritistic origin. But their falsity would not disprove a spiritistic theory and would not prove secondary personality. There are two sup-

positions on which we might conceive a spiritistic explanation. (1) Suppose some tricky spirit was fabricating the whole affair for the purpose of fooling the Smeads. (2) Suppose that some cranky or semi-insane spirit believed all this and was transmitting it as a serious belief, tho it was the same kind of delusion that we find in similar theories among the living.

If we have evidence enough independently of the Smead case for (a) the existence of spirits and (b) for the fact that some of them are as cranky as some living people are, we might well apply this hypothesis as a possibility to the case. The fact is there is overwhelming evidence in other cases for the first of these views and if we preserve our personal identity in the next life we shall probably start with the same character as when we leave this life, and there are plenty of people who would indulge in such tricks on others among the living. On the other hand, there is no reason to believe from this fact of retaining identity that the crank would be transformed by death and at once into an intelligent person with rational theories of the cosmos. Such a person, if he were given a chance to communicate might present just such a theory of Mars as a fact. On the other hand, in our work on obsession, we have had at least some evidence that spirits may deliberately play tricks on the living, if given a chance, impersonating dead relatives or lying about things just to have the pleasure of deceiving credulous people on this side. That view is not so well proved as is the fact of survival, but there is enough evidence for it, after having survival proved, to justify keeping on the alert for its possible application. But granting either supposition we have a perfectly feasible explanation of the facts. Of course, the record itself gives no evidence for such an hypothesis and, if we entertain it at all, it must be from its having been proved in a sufficient number of other instances to justify the classification of this one with them on other resemblances as well as this one.

Now there is a hint of evil spirits in the case from one of the communicators. On November 2nd, 1895, Mr. Smead, in a tolerant mood, gave the right to draw the devil if it pleased the communicator. A head was drawn with horns, big jaw teeth and staring eye. On being asked who had drawn it the answer came that it was the devil. Then the names of the three deceased children were given and Mr. Smead asked who was writ-

ing then. He received the answer: "Maude", which was the name of his deceased daughter. Inquiring of her, who drew the head, the reply was that it "was a bad spirit," (p. 190) and the statement made that she did not know the name of it. It was soon after this that the Martian episodes ceased until five years later. Now of course there is no evidence in the record that the message has any such source as is claimed in any of the cases. But it coincides with exactly the same type of phenomena in other instances; namely, the sudden intrusion of other personalities to play tricks. It is conceivable, tho not provable, therefore, that the hypothesis put forward might possibly be true and secondary personality not applicable. What such a theory implies is that the falsity of the facts or their coincidence with what a subliminal imagination might produce is no final proof that they are not spiritistic. The facts might be as false as you please and not represent anything whatever in a transcendental world and yet come from spirits. Before we can be sure that subconscious fabrication is true we have to exclude the possibility that tricky spirits are not impersonating and lying.

But we require more evidence to justify the application of evil and deceiving spirits to these phenomena. I am putting the possibility of them only to show the limitations in the evidence for secondary personality. It is too generally assumed that the preposterousness of the statements or the falsity of them is evidence that the statements cannot come from spirits and must be subliminal. But secondary personality cannot get off with so easy a conquest. We may have to reckon with as much deception by spirits as by living people. But I repeat that we have to get better evidence for such an hypothesis than is presented in the Smead case. The scientific spirit requires us to suppose secondary personality until other hypotheses can be vindicated and applied, and tho the fact is that we cannot prove secondary personality in this instance without assuming that fabrication and imagination are the main sources of the whole Martian episode, as reproduction of memories is disproved, we have also to grant that this has not been proved and is largely an *a priori* assumption, receiving its preference only because of the stubborn prejudices against spirits. It might not help us to suppose spirits unless we could render probable the adjunct hypotheses necessary to render the phenomena

intelligible or to exhibit the processes by which they effect their ends. But it is certain that spirits will not be any more *a priori* than is subliminal fabrication about which we know as little as we do about spirits, in spite of the fact that we have reason to believe that subliminal imagination is apparently a proved fact in some instances, tho limited in its activity.

But it is not necessary to decide the case between these possible hypotheses. We may regard any theory of the Martian episode as unproved and demand that we wait for further information. If we had no other cases for comparison there is no doubt that secondary personality would be forced upon us as the more likely from default of evidence for spirits. But other instances show that the Smead case is a borderland one and that means that we may as well suspend judgment upon the theory of secondary personality to account for the whole of it as to suspend it on that of spirits for the same reason. Were we as familiar with the processes of the subconscious as of the normal consciousness it might be otherwise, and altho the subconscious consists of the same functions as the normal mind minus sensory perceptions, its behavior as a whole, in most of its products at least, shows less appreciation and adjustment to actual reality, especially in its automatic tendencies, so that we may well wonder whether its action and products are not as dependent on stimulus as normal sensibility and perception. In that case, we should expect it to be as accessible to transcendental stimuli as the normal is to physical, and that view would admit all sorts of subjective contributions while it assumed external and foreign influences.

The study of the Martian episodes shows that we cannot suppose that they represent reproductive secondary personality in its details whatever suggestions may have come from general ideas, and the result is that, if we apply secondary personality to the explanation, it must be of the fabricative type, tho there is no evidence in the phenomena that this is the fact, unless the use of a hieroglyphic for the article "the" be regarded as evidence of this. That fact is not conclusive, tho it suggests that hypothesis. It remains, therefore, to examine secondary personality in the Harrison Clarke incidents under the distinction between reproductive and fabricative secondary personalities.

In the crucial incidents for a spiritistic theory Harrison Clarke

broke down in the matter of evidence. The story he told was not true. I laid the emphasis upon this fact to show the weakness or incompetency of the spiritistic hypothesis, at least for the special incidents in which he failed to satisfy the necessary demands for such a theory. But there was one incident in which reproductive secondary personality proved the only hypothesis acceptable and that was the vision of the 125th New York Regiment about which I had told Mrs. Smead before she had the vision (pp. 76, 359). Here was a connection of identity between the normal and the subliminal consciousness. But the other incidents had no such evidence for their secondary character. They were not true, but falsity is not conclusive proof of secondary personality. We may suppose spirits to be mistaken, lying or having lapses of memory. It is necessary to prove that the incidents told by Harrison Clarke were actual incidents in the life of Mrs. Smead and that cannot be proved. Hence in all but the vision of the 125th Regiment of New York the incidents would have to be treated as fabricative instead of reproductive. Harrison Clarke is therefore not a case of reproductive secondary personality; whatever we may surmise regarding the personality as fabricative or fabricated. There is not one iota of evidence that the personality is reproductive and only one fact would suggest its fabrication. Non-evidence of its spiritistic nature is not evidence of its non-spiritistic nature. It may justify applying the hypothesis, but it does not prove it. We can only say that we should prefer secondary personality to the hypothesis of spirits and impose on the believer the duty to furnish better evidence of a spiritistic source. But that limitation of spiritistic explanations does not supply evidence for secondary personality. We may well suspend our judgment and demand evidence for secondary personality as the believer in this hypothesis demands evidence for spirits. In other words we may confess ignorance on both sides. But it is certain that the believer in secondary personality for the Harrison Clarke personality has no evidence for this view either as reproductive or fabricative, except in the one instance of the vision of the 125th Regiment of New York. Whatever we say and hold regarding this personality as secondary must be maintained without specific evidence. We should require to have proved in other cases that secondary personality required this

extension of its application to this special case and without specific evidence of it in this instance. We cannot invoke the falsity of the claims, because mischievous spirits might well lie about the facts to secure control, and there is some evidence that they will do such things. It may not be sufficient as yet to urge the view too strongly against Harrison Clarke, but it is sufficiently possible to restrain the dogmatism of the sceptic about the secondary character of that personality. That is to say, scepticism has the same rights against secondary personality that it has against spirits. We may as legitimately demand conclusive evidence for the one as for the other.

It is easy enough to *explain* Harrison Clarke on the spiritistic hypothesis. We can suppose him to have been a personality that wished to conceal his real identity and in fact his statements toward the end of his career, when he had been proved guilty of falsification, assume that interpretation of him. It is clear that the personality expected credence of his claims from the mere marvelousness of his graphological performances. He had no conception of the problem, or if he had it, no readiness or no ability to subscribe to the conditions of it. He may have been like Dr. Phinuit in the Piper case, whose reality was guaranteed by Emperor and George Pelham: namely, a spirit who had lost his sense of personal identity and assumed the name used. We have no evidence of this view, but it is one of the possibilities in the case and that suffices to check dogmatic scepticism in favor of secondary personality when there is no proof of its reproductive character. Yet to my judgment it would be more plausible that he knew well enough who he was, but wished to conceal the facts and to secure control without a revelation of his identity. His behavior would favor this view, had we better proof elsewhere that such phenomena occur. There is evidence, but many people question its adequacy and perhaps with some justice. But it is quite conceivable and we only await further investigation to decide the issue. In the argument with the sceptic we have to assume, for lack of positive evidence, that Harrison Clarke is a secondary personality. But concession of this in an argument is no concession of the *fact*. It merely allows the sceptic to believe it which he usually does without evidence! When it comes to really scientific claims Harrison Clarke presents no evidence for

his being a secondary state of Mrs. Smead. He may be this for all that, but the proof is wanting. Even the vision of the 125th Regiment of New York does not prove it. The incident only shows that we have no right to import spirits into it, if personal identity be the criterion of that view. I can well understand how the subconscious of Mrs. Smead might, even under spiritistic stimulus, interpose with an incident of the kind. But I do not invoke such an explanation. I mention it only to show the extent of our ignorance as to exactly what does go on. We must never forget the distinction between the policy of converting the sceptic and the scientific character of the problem. The conversion of the sceptic requires us to concede *ad hominem* things which we do not admit *ad rem* at all. The policy avoids a change of issue and forces the sceptic to explain facts which are undoubtedly not of the nature of secondary personality. But we may at any time choose the vantage ground of testing his scientific duties by demanding evidence where he believes without it. The scientific problem requires evidence, even tho we have no ground to believe in spiritistic agencies of any kind in such a case, and intelligent men know well enough in other matters that false facts which prevent belief in spirits are not evidence for secondary personality. We may prefer agnosticism to either of the other two alternatives and in fact that is often the wiser course. We are not obliged to adopt explanations. There is too much of a tendency even among scientific men, and perhaps in people who pride themselves in scepticism, to feel obliged to explain everything that comes to them. This is a wholly mistaken policy. The more intelligent policy is to confess ignorance when there is not adequate evidence for our theories. We might even feel a preference for secondary personality in any case, according to the general circumstances, and yet be forced to admit that we had not adequate evidence for it. Since the spiritistic hypothesis has been adequately proved in other instances this, I think, is particularly true of the Harrison Clarke personality. We might well maintain that it has not been proved to be secondary because there are presumptions from other cases that he is a spirit, tho the specific evidence is wanting in this instance.

The whole upshot of the matter is that, taken as a whole, the positive evidence for Harrison Clarke being a secondary person-

ality is absent, whatever we may choose to maintain regarding a spiritistic theory of it. One circumstance and the character of the language employed, at least in most instances, might indicate a secondary element in the whole, as we find in all mediumship and even in evidential incidents. But as a whole the personality has not been scientifically proved to be secondary. We could only concede the sceptic the right to believe it in an argument for a spiritistic theory as complicated in other personalities of the case.

Now when it comes to the issue of secondary personality in the case of other communicators, the evidence for the supernormal is present, tho it may not be as plentiful as may be desired. By far the larger amount of the cases and incidents were facts which Mrs. Smead knew and the sceptic has complete immunity in the claim that they can be explained as resurrected memories of Mrs. Smead and there is no appeal from that judgment as a fact. It is unquestionably true, taken as isolated incidents and wholly out of relation to the general character of all automatism purporting to be spiritistic, that what Mrs. Smead knew might have been subliminally reproduced, only we lack the proof that it was so reproduced. In the evidential question they could not count for a spiritistic theory, but the manner in which they are often complicated with incidents which she did not know somewhat affects the strength of the case for secondary personality. For instance, in the case of Maude L. Janes, who was the first to break through the argument for subconscious reproduction, several of the facts may credibly be believed to have been unknown by Mrs. Smead and so to have weakened the claim for secondary personality as an explanation of the personality as a whole. Cf. pp. 83-89, 281-288, and 307-312. The correct articulation of known and unknown incidents in these instances is so much in favor of one origin for all of them and that origin the one which is determined by the incidents unknown to Mrs. Smead and perceptibly not due to guessing or chance coincidence. There are other instances equally good for the same conclusion. Cf. the Keliher case, pp. 351-352 and the Morse case, pp. 95-97 and 299-301. The same is true of others which I need not quote here. Some of the facts were not referable to secondary personality even by the sceptic

and we may well question whether any of them were, in spite of Mrs. Smead's knowledge.

The only incidents which were overwhelmingly in favor of secondary personality, and perhaps more or less of the fabricative type, were the attempts at cross reference with Mrs. Piper. Cf. pp. 615-623, and possibly the "Bitter Sweet" incident, pp. 493-495, 529-530, 556 and 601. The latter is not so clear as the former, which has no claims whatever to being spiritistic. It lacks all suggestions of such a source. Had the Piper controls intimated their knowledge of what was going on, the case might be greatly altered. But the records show that they were either absolutely ignorant of the attempt or could not influence the subconscious of Mrs. Piper sufficiently to indicate their knowledge of it. The latter view is conceivable, because it has been shown conclusively that Mrs. Piper had a normal prejudice against admitting that any one else could give evidence for spirits and also that subconsciously she had denied communication where we had good proof that it was a fact. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 181. But apart from such a supposition the incident cannot be apologized for as evidence for spirits. The preference must be for subconscious fabrication, even tho unintentional, and to that extent vitiates the conclusiveness of many incidents for the supernormal.

It is certain that the incidents which Mrs. Smead knew of various personalities are not *fabricative*. Their truth and accuracy are so much against that type of secondary personality and its habits. The very limitations reflected in these, and especially in the greater difficulty of giving what she did not know, are so much against fabricative secondary personality all the way through. There is no evidence whatever for this proclivity or habit on her part, even tho we concede certain incidents such an origin unconsciously. The true incidents which she knew so exclude guessing and chance coincidence that fabricative personality has no standing. If we assume secondary personality at all in those instances it has to be reproductive, and were there absolutely nothing unknown in the record the case would stand irrefutable for secondary personality, even tho we were not able scientifically to prove it. But there are so many incidents not known and that articulate so nicely with the known that something super-

normal has to be conceded. This is especially true of later developments of the case, whose data are not in this record. The consequence is that the known incidents can be explained as easily by spiritistic agencies as the unknown, tho we may not be able to prove that it is a fact.

The possibility that known incidents may be actually spiritistic, tho not provably so on their own credentials, is well illustrated in the several cases which have been recorded and discussed in the *Proceedings* and the *Journal*. I referred to them in a Footnote to the Preface. Cf. p. 9. The Thompson-Gifford case is one of the best. On its own credentials we could not escape a subjective explanation. There was no adequate evidence in the man's personal experiences that the dead Gifford was causing his hallucinations. But this origin was indicated by cross reference with Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Rathbun. What appeared to be subjective and fabricative or reproductive in the man's own experience was undoubtedly supernormal in the work of the several mediums with whom I experimented. The same was true with the de Camp-Stockton, and the Ritchie-Abbott cases. What had to be explained by secondary personality on its own credentials obtained evidence by cross reference that it had a foreign origin. It therefore becomes quite possible, to say the least, that the known incidents with Mrs. Smead also had a foreign source. All that we lack is sufficient evidence in other cases to make this more probable than a subjective source.

The whole case is best illustrated in the Doris Fischer Case which has been discussed so exhaustively. Cf. *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vols. IX, X and XI. Here was a case which did not even purport to be spiritistic either on its own credentials or on the resemblance to cases which did advance such claims. There were five personalities involved and none of them save one offered any data that would suggest spirits, and that one did not make out an adequate case. Margaret made no claim to being a spirit. She knew nothing whatever except what the girl knew, unless we except the real or apparent telepathy. Sleeping Margaret claimed, after denying it, that she was a spirit, but she was absolutely ignorant of anything not known by the girl. Cross reference experiment revealed the fact that Margaret was a spirit, tho there were no superficial evidences in the girl's experience

for such an hypothesis. Margaret's knowledge was absolutely limited to that of the girl, with the one exception just mentioned. Yet experiment with Mrs. Chenoweth showed that these experiences were associated with a personality that appeared as a spirit through Mrs. Chenoweth. Strange to say the same source indicated that Sleeping Margaret was a secondary personality directly against her own claims. In any case, what had to be regarded as secondary on its own credentials became at least plausibly spiritistic by cross reference, and assuming that verdict we should have strong evidence for referring the known incidents in the Smead case to a foreign source.

The Spiritistic Theory.

The disproof of a theory of subconscious origin does not imply a foreign one, and neither does the absence of evidence for secondary personality involve this foreign origin, unless the alternatives are only two. We may be ignorant, as I have shown, of all explanations. Consequently what I have said about the limitations of secondary personality in the Smead case does not act for the spiritistic. We may have to suspend judgment on that point. Hence I do not wish here to be understood as begging any questions about spiritistic liabilities, unless the evidence is provable for them.

Moreover it must also be understood that I admit subconscious elements in the case, even in connection with incidents that are supernormal. I believe that all cases of mediumship, no matter how pure they may be in the character of the messages received, are complicated with subliminal coloring. The consequence is that, when I discuss a spiritistic theory of any case, I assume that we cannot wholly escape subliminal factors. It is only a question of their interfusion and complication. I alluded to this view of it in the Preface, p. 7. But I wish to examine the extent to which spiritistic influences may be admitted as at least possible in the case.

The Martian episodes are plainly without evidence of a transcendental source. I have shown, however, that they cannot be regarded as reproductive secondary personality, at least in regard to their details. The only hope of the sceptic of spiritistic theories regarding them is to make them fabricative. Of that,

however, he has no more evidence than opponents could be said to have for spirits, and certainly the facts do not support a spiritistic interpretation. Yet there is a conceivable way of making the phenomena spiritistic, tho we may have no evidence in the case at hand that this is the fact.

Suppose that the communicator of the incidents was an earth-bound personality who, in life, believed in the possibility of communicating with the planet Mars or that it was inhabited. Let such a person, retaining such views after death, get into rapport with a psychic, it would be probable that these views would be transmitted to the living. Or suppose that some mischievous spirit took it into his mind to play tricks on both the deceased children of the Smeads and the deceased brother of Mr. Smead, or even to intrude their messages so as to suppress his control, we should then have exactly the conditions for such episodes. We, of course, have no evidence in the case that such things as are here imagined take place. But the cases of secondary personality like that of Doris Fischer prove beyond a doubt that such mischievous personalities act in such a manner even without claiming to be spirits and conceal their real nature by appropriating only the knowledge and memories of the subject. Arguing from such cases we might contend for the possibility that the Martian incidents had such an origin and we should be within our rights scientifically in presenting the possibility, even tho we were not able to prove it. There was one fact that occurred in the Martian period that supports this view. It was the drawing of a representation of the Devil (pp. 49 and 190). Mr. Smead was definitely told, after allusion was made to his children, that it "was a bad spirit" that did this. While we should have to suppose that the subconscious might have made the statement to exempt the children from blame for it, the allegation is so consonant with what has so often been observed in the alleged messages of trespassers on the control's influence that it is quite possible that some invader had intrenched upon the action of the children. Assuming this we could easily imagine that the whole Martian episode was an intrusion or a deception by mischievous spirits. There is nothing to disprove this supposition. On the other hand, there is nothing in the Smead case positively to prove it. Nevertheless the bare possibility that such a thing might take place, reinforced

by evidence that it has taken place in other instances, is enough to limit the confidence a man might have about secondary personality being the explanation. In converting the sceptic we should have to concede this, but not in weighing the case for the alternative theories of spirits and subliminal production. Scientific possibilities do not require us to adopt any explanation without evidence.

All that this possibility of spiritistic influence in the Martian episodes means is that secondary personality for them is not scientifically proved. It does not mean that secondary personality does not explain them. It only indicates that it has still to be proved, tho the only hypothesis that a rational defender of spirits in any case can assume in his argument with the sceptic is that the subconscious is responsible for the product. All that I should contend for is that spiritistic explanations do not require us to maintain that the whole product of such cases is derived from spiritistic agencies. We may interpose secondary and subliminal factors with them as the facts require. It is not necessary to choose between spirits doing all of it and secondary personality doing all of it. We may either combine them or confess ignorance in regard to both of them. But if other cases establish a preference for spiritistic theories it is legitimate to make the effort either to combine the two sets of phenomena in an interfused product or to show how the hypothesis based upon the evidential phenomena may be extended with subsidiary suppositions to the non-evidential phenomena. The hypotheses which explain such cases as the Doris Fischer, the Thompson-Gifford, the de Camp-Stockton and the Ritchie-Abbott cases will also explain the Martian phenomena and so show that we may not require to make the interfusion one of subjective and objective factors distinguished by the line between evidential and non-evidential phenomena, but crossing these and admitting subliminal influences only as they are present in all cases whatsoever. Just in so far as this is true does the case for secondary personality as a whole in this instance become non-proven, and the spiritistic explanation is not necessarily limited to the evidential facts.

But readers must not suppose that I am defending the application of the spiritistic explanation as a fact to the Martian phenomena, unless an argument can be imported from other and

better accredited cases can make it possible. I conceded that there is not adequate evidence in the Smead case itself to justify asserting it to be either a probability or a fact. We can as easily conceive the imagination of Mrs. Smead's subliminal as doing it as to conceive foreign intelligence doing it, either as lying or transmitting a belief, and in certain circumstances we should be forced to prefer such an interpretation, whatever the possibilities of spiritistic influence. But this latter always remains conceivable and that is all we are contending for at present. The endeavor is to show how the phenomena may articulate with the existence of the supernormal that is actually present in the case, without importing mechanical and artificial explanations into it. To make the Martian phenomena a product of Mrs. Smead's imagination only, would be necessary if they were all that there was in the case. But we have the supernormal to reckon with and it is hardly probable that the dividing line between the two would be so sharp and well defined as to make two sets of phenomena exactly alike in their characteristics and yet have totally different in causes assigned to them, only on the ground that one of them was evidential and the other non-evidential. It is the unity of the facts that is important to science, no matter how complex the processes involved in causing them. If there were no supernormal in the case the problem would be different. But we have to reckon with its presence and the unity of the whole can be obtained only by adjusting the hypothesis which explains the supernormal to the phenomena that superficially present no evidence for this characteristic. If the unity of the phenomena could be found in secondary personality we should be obliged to accept that solution. But the presence of the supernormal prevents finding that unity in subconscious activity alone and we are then scientifically obligated to search for hypotheses which will show the unity of the whole. The intrusion of either mischievous or self-deceived and earth-bound spirits would establish this unity, and while the case by itself affords no evidence of this invasion other and better accredited cases do render it possible.

When it comes to the Harrison Clarke phenomena the case can be made much stronger for the hypothesis that he is a spirit and not the creation of Mrs. Smead's subliminal. I do not say that it

can be proved. That is another matter. But we do not require to go wholly outside the record to find facts which enable us to question the sufficiency of secondary personality. These facts, of course, are not his history of himself. This history has to be treated as false, or true only for some one else than himself. As I have already remarked, however, this falsity of the facts does not prove secondary personality. It only vitiates the claims, evidential claims, for spirits and leaves them unexplained except by hypothesis, and that hypothesis is provably not *reproductive* secondary personality, at least in form and unity of the incidents given. As I have already remarked several times, the only incident which is evidential of subconscious intrusion is the vision of Harrison Clarke in the 125th Regiment of New York. That has no other explanation, unless we can import the use by spirits of the subject's own knowledge into the case, and there is everything in the Doris Fischer case to support that view. But I shall not urge this at present. The main point is that there is no other positive evidence for secondary personality in the Harrison Clarke phenomena, and our theory of interfusion between foreign and domestic personality covers that situation. The primary question is whether Harrison Clarke as a whole or in the main can be treated as a spirit rather than as a creation of Mrs. Smead's subliminal.

Now of course, Harrison Clarke's history of himself is incompetent as evidence. But in the course of the communications so-called this personality makes statements which coincide with what has come through other cases about which Mrs. Smead knew nothing at the time. In presenting these statements readers must remember that Mrs. Smead was brought up as a strictly orthodox believer of the Methodist type. She belonged to a group of people whose thought and reading never took in spiritualism and its literature, and even if they had, the form of the statements and their environment in the record do much to preclude the reproduction of any past reading. As a child she had done work with the planchette through the intervention of her father, and both parents seem to have been exceedingly careful not to let her know anything about their beliefs on this matter. Indeed, we have no distinct evidence that they believed anything

but the orthodox Methodist doctrine. At any rate it is tolerably certain that she had no reading or contact with the subject to any extent that would provide her with the ideas expressed by Harrison Clarke. Those ideas are not even the general burden of spiritistic literature and will rarely be found in any but the most obscure books on the subject. Tho I have seen a rather large literature on the subject, I have not seen half a dozen books that even mention some of these ideas. Mrs. Smead has seen none of them, at least to her recollection, and her education and environment bear out the probabilities on this matter. Hence we may safely appeal to certain statements by Harrison Clarke as demanding unusual explanation. They are statements bearing usually on conditions in the after-life and evoked by queries from Mrs. Smead.

The first incident of the kind is Harrison Clarke's account of what takes place in hypnotism. Mr. Smead asked him to explain the "subconscious self and hypnotism," and Harrison Clarke replied at length, maintaining substantially that, in hypnosis and subconscious states, the soul was put into a trance by spirits and the body occupied by a spirit who performed all the acts observed. (Cf. p. 236.) He had the day previous maintained that there was only one soul and that there "was no dividing it up", so that the view maintained regarding hypnosis is consistent with this previously expressed idea and might even be regarded as a logical deduction from it. But the important fact is that the view here taken of hypnotism is exactly the same as was taken by Phinuit in the Piper case, a fact of which Mrs. Smead was totally ignorant. Perhaps it is not beyond her intelligence to conjecture this view, especially as she was exceedingly sceptical of the existence of any subconscious. But the development of the idea by Harrison Clarke shows more naturalness and semblance of observation than would be expected of Mrs. Smead from what I know of her modest views. While no one can say that it is absolutely impossible for Mrs. Smead to have such a view, her knowledge of hypnotism was too small to express herself in the way it is done here. The whole machinery of control and obsession is outlined in the account, as it has been determined by very elaborate experiments many of which had not even been made by any one at the

time of her work and none of which she knew anything about. I quite concede that the general outline of the ideas expressed might have been conjectured by her from very little observation of hypnotized patients, but she had seen little or nothing of the phenomena and no such detailed knowledge of the problem had ever come to her, as in fact the ideas had not been published by any one that I know. Still I must not be dogmatic regarding this. Those who do not know Mrs. Smead would accept any possibility rather than the supernormal character of these ideas, but a little acquaintance with her personally would disillusion their prepossessions on that point.

The next day (p. 237), Harrison Clarke boasted that, if Mrs. Smead would only "throw every thought out of her mind" he could speak through her. Again the conception of the process which is assumed in his statement had to be learned by the comparison of many cases of mediumship and Mrs. Smead knew nothing whatever about them or the psychology of the matter. The whole thing is correctly indicated here and is just what can be inferred from what we observe in the Piper, the Chenoweth and other cases. Mrs. Smead had no knowledge of the facts and I would say also that I had none of such matters at the time of this record.

Of course, the difficulty with all this is that Prof. Xenos, who knew something of the subconscious and who had witnessed many of the sittings, of which this was one, may have discussed the subject in Mrs. Smead's presence inadvertently and without reckoning with suggestion. Hence there is no absolute assurance of Mrs. Smead's entire ignorance of the subject. But yet the view expressed is not what Prof. Xenos held. He was not a believer in the spiritistic theory at the time and did not accept what had been taught through Mrs. Piper about such things.

On the same date (p. 237) Harrison Clarke said to this Prof. Xenos that the soul never rests, but that the body does, and that the soul is outside the body instead of in it. Both ideas are different from the common one. Most people think sleep is a suspension of consciousness, but psychologists now hold that the mind or brain is subconsciously active during sleep and that the rest is of the bodily activities, if that be the proper expression. Mrs.

Smead knew nothing of these doctrines at the time, tho it is conceivable that she might have casually heard them. But her ideas were simpler than these as shown by the fact that she did not believe there was any subliminal or subconscious. Besides she, with most people, more naturally accepted the prevailing view that the soul was *in* the body, not outside it. It is claimed by some spiritualists and mediumistic communications that the soul is outside the body, especially in sleep, and experiments with the aura by Dr. Kilner seem to support that view, if we are entitled to identify the aura and the soul.

On the next day Harrison Clarke compared dreams to the hypnotic state, rather correctly, but in contradiction with the views which Mr. Smead held. When Mr. Smead objected that dreams were caused by excessive food, Harrison Clarke asked him how it came that we dream when there is no food in the stomach and Mr. Smead had to change the subject. Mrs. Smead might well know enough to answer his objection in this manner, but she did not know enough about the hypnotic state to compare it as she did with dreams. The condition is exactly like spontaneous somnambulism which has always been regarded as identical with hypnosis, but Mrs. Smead knew nothing about the scientific doctrine on this point. Mr. Smead might have known it, but he did not.

On page 253 Harrison Clarke answered the question of Mr. Smead whether the "spirit had a body", at first, in a sort of confused way, but soon corrected himself and made the following interesting statement, expressing original ideas consonant with what has been said elsewhere, but not within the reading of Mrs. Smead. I quote the passage.

(Has a spirit a body?)

Not here. We h — [this part erased.] Not your kind. It is one that leaves the earth body.

(Explain more.)

Yes, when we leave the earth there is a covering that covers the soul, so that it is called a body, and it resembles the one just left, and that is how we can remember our friends. For if we were just round or square lights, how do you suppose we could ever know each other.

We may conceive Mrs. Smead conjecturing from the doctrine of St. Paul, with which she was no doubt familiar in her biblical teaching and reading, some such ideas as are here expressed. But the allusion to "round or square lights" is a conception outside that teaching and consonant with what often appears in séances and is recognized there as spirits. Mrs. Smead knew nothing about this fact, tho we may conceive her imagining the comparison. But the whole passage so reflected spiritualistic ideas outside her ken that it is entitled to some weight in estimating the claims of Harrison Clarke.

One statement by Harrison Clarke is quite striking (p. 257.) It refers to questions which Mr. Smead asked. I quote the record.

(Are those that die conscious while they are dying?)

Yes, but sometimes the spirit is taken from the body, so that they are away from it before it ceases moving.

(What do you mean by 'moving'?)

To move, yes. (What moves, the spirit?) No, the body.

(How is it about people that are stunned, etc.?)

Yes, only the body is affected, and while they are in that condition the spirit is out of it, and it takes up its work where it left when it returns.

(How is it in cases of unconsciousness by ether or chloroform?)

The spirit sometimes can know and watch what is being done to the body.

These statements coincide with the more advanced views of physiology in regard to death: namely, that actual death, the total disappearance of consciousness, may be prior to the suspense of vital functions. The phenomena are matters of common knowledge, but it is usual to suppose that death has not taken place until the vital functions cease. What we are told here is consonant with more accurate observation of the facts. Then the statement that a spirit may watch what is being done to the body in a state of coma or suspended consciousness is apparently true from accounts of what occurs under anæsthetics. Mrs. Smead may have casually heard of such a case, but she was not disposed to specu-

late about the subject and its confirmation, by actual experiences on record on the threshold of death and by occasional communications regarding the fact, tends to sustain the spiritistic claims of Harrison Clarke tho it does not prove them.

On page 258 there is a remark by Harrison Clarke which reveals a conception of the process of communicating wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead. Mr. Smead had banded him to do some mind reading and he refused. He added: "I will say that were you here in my place and trying to write with another's hand that you would have all you could do to listen and write at the same time." I have always noticed in the work of Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth that writing and listening at the same time are not easy, and this is as true in taking messages from other spirits as it is in receiving what the sitter says. No doubt it is a simple psychological law well known to all of us. But it is not natural to mention it as an excuse against trying telepathy, because we have not been accustomed to think of it as involving any kind of "listening" and writing at the same time. But from what we know independently of Mrs. Smead's work the complication of both sending messages and receiving them by controls illustrates exactly this difficulty. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of what characterized other cases in this respect.

This difficulty and the whole complex mechanics of the process was illustrated later on another appearance of Harrison Clarke, after he had left Mrs. Smead for a time. When he was baffled about the scepticism regarding his claims, he had remarked that he could help others communicate who could prove their identity and that they would vouch for him, as was done for Phinuit in the Piper case by George Pelham and the Emperor group. When Harrison Clarke thus returned, he undertook this task for Mrs. Miller's father who was the communicator. Harrison Clarke complained that he could not understand the "lady" who was helping the father evidently, and showed difficulty in getting what she wanted as well as what the communicator was trying to give: namely, his name. Cf. p. 358. Apparently the sitter's mother was trying to communicate for the father and finally got the name through, but Harrison Clarke experienced all the difficulties of Rector in the Piper case and of controls in that of Mrs. Chenoweth in getting a message to be delivered. This

machinery was not necessary on any theory of secondary personality, and coincides so accurately with what occurs elsewhere and was not known at the time to Mrs. Smead that it is more natural on the spiritistic theory than on any other.

There are a few other things in Harrison Clarke's work that point in the same direction, but they have less evidential force. The force of those quoted is not so great as is desirable, but owing to the limitations of Mrs. Smead's knowledge they have some weight, and accumulatively more. The insistence on Harrison Clarke's part that he could not prove his identity and that he was really not lying, when accused of it, and the stubborn challenge which he issued against any refutation of his claims constitute an interesting psychological phenomenon consistent with his claims, and not natural to Mrs. Smead, who realized as well as any one that his story was not true. But in spite of this interesting feature of his communications we cannot make it of prime importance in proving him to be a spirit, tho it is more than consistent with that hypothesis. However, the unity of his personality in this respect with the supernormal data that come from other personalities deserves notice and emphasis as explicable by the same general theory as the supernormal incidents.

The case of other communicators is much stronger than that of Harrison Clarke. Some of them are more distinctly implicated in evidential matter, tho it is not my purpose to collect the incidents of this here. The reader may be expected to have noted them in the record. I wish merely to collate those instances of remarks which are of themselves non-evidential, but that, like some of Harrison Clarke's, are confirmed by other records than that of Mrs. Smead.

On page 393, in the communications of Mr. and Mrs. Smead's child Cecil, a curious incident occurs. The boy had died under very painful circumstances and suffered much agony. It is noticeable very frequently that communicators, consciously or unconsciously, reflect the mental states of their malady, and especially of their dying moments. It occurs so often that it is not due to chance, and is often evidential of identity. In this instance, Mr. Smead asked Cecil to tell what disease he died of. The question was absurd, as we cannot assume that any spirit knows this, unless informed of it before death, and it was more especially absurd to

ask a young child. But the question was asked and the boy refused, saying "it hurts." It is not natural to suppose physical pain in the spiritual world and no normal experience of Mrs. Smead would give her this idea. She knew nothing about the phenomena which I have just described, her acquaintance with spiritualism being limited to her own mediumship, and mainly that part not connected with a trance. But the child here unconsciously reproduces the law, if law it may be called, characterizing such phenomena: namely, the vivid and realistic experience of the mental states while communicating that attended his death. It represents a fact not easily explained under the circumstances by subliminal reproduction.

On page 431 the same communicator, Cecil, asked Mr. Smead if his mother saw him. There is no excuse for this query on the hypothesis of secondary personality. The mother knew whether she did or did not, but the boy, assuming him to be real and not an hallucination of the subconscious, might not know whether she had or not. That is to say, the question is more natural on the spiritistic theory than on that of subliminal production. The same query was asked a second time (p. 437).

The incident about "Uncle Jogle" is a most striking one. Cf. pp. 389, 432 and 433. Cecil when dying apparently had an hallucination of a man whom he tried to prevent taking him. Under ordinary circumstances no other interpretation of the phenomenon would be possible. But when communicating he remarked that he thought "Uncle Jogle" was his uncle Vester. The two were brothers of Mr. Smead and both dead. Mrs. Smead, of course, knew the fact well enough. Cecil had only seen the picture of Sylvester (Vester) and had never seen either a picture of "Uncle Jogle" or the man himself. When the message came Mr. Smead thought there was no resemblance between the two brothers, but on examining the pictures found that they did resemble each other. Here, then, we have a complicated phenomenon. The communication probably identifies the man seen when the boy was dying with his "Uncle Jogle", showing that, if an hallucination at all when dying, it was a veridical one. Then he reports what would be true of himself and not true of the knowledge of Mrs. Smead, as she knew something of both. The only way to escape the force of this is to say that her subconscious

had dexterously adapted itself to her knowledge and the ignorance of Cecil. But psychologically the incident is more natural on the spiritistic hypothesis than on the other.

Perhaps the incident of asserting that a certain dog was present at the sitting (p. 447), may be classed as not natural on the theory of secondary personality, as Mrs. Smead knew well enough that he was not and had no such theory of such things as is held by some people; namely, that the soul of anything could leave the body and be present elsewhere. In this instance, the statement of Cecil assumes this conception of the case and he insists on it in a curious way against the vigorous denials of Mr. Smead. I do not mean to assume the truth of that doctrine, because I might assume (1) that Cecil had no space perceptions to regulate his judgment as we should and (2) that the presence may have been merely a veridical hallucination on his part. But in any case, the phenomenon is not natural on the hypothesis of secondary personality as it is usually known.

The statement that children grow bigger but not old (p. 448) may be classed with those just mentioned. It is not a natural product of normal knowledge or belief, as we would perhaps assume the reverse to be true. Ordinary theories of the hereafter tend to reverse this view.

One communicator (p. 451) stated that different spirits might use different brain centers in the effort to transmit messages. This was not a natural belief of Mrs. Smead. Moreover it coincides with what has been said through both Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth, and in fact was actually illustrated by certain phenomena in the mediumship of Mrs. Piper. We might well conceive this to be true on the spiritistic theory and not a natural suggestion of secondary personality whose normal conception would either not think of any brain center or would not trouble itself about the brain at all in such a matter.

Right in connection with this allusion to different brain centers as subject to use, there occurred another important statement. It came in answer to a question by Mr. Smead. I quote the passage.

(Is life continuous?)

With some they are like being unconscious. To you they are

sleeping for awhile. They are not unconscious though. They need rest after a sad struggle with life in the body.

This doctrine is found in the *Spirit Teachings* of Stainton Moses, a book which Mrs. Smead had not seen or heard of at this time. The same idea is found elsewhere, but as Mrs. Smead was not familiar with the literature or the beliefs of spiritualists generally, she was probably entirely ignorant of the view here indicated. Some such idea is conveyed in the Biblical doctrine of the period anteceding the resurrection, but that is neither reproduced here nor is the idea expressed by the communicator really identical with that. It is much more scientific and represents conceptions with which only the expert psychologist is familiar in the shade of distinctions implied in this passage. It also coincides with the general doctrine of the spiritualist, as based on frequent communications, and not known to Mrs. Smead so that its significance must have some weight against secondary personality and for spiritistic ideas.

Immediately following this (p. 452) Mr. Smead asked where the soul of the medium was when she was in a trance. The communicator misunderstood the query and replied that she was not in a trance, which was the fact at the time. He then repeated the question and received the reply that she "was between heaven and earth, that is, neither here or there" and denied the identity of the trance with hypnosis, when further asked about it, making the silly things done in hypnosis the distinguishing mark of the state. But the idea of the trance being a state intermediate between "heaven and earth" exactly expresses the incomplete trance or rapport of Mrs. Smead in her mediumistic work. She was neither sufficiently in contact with the etherial world to get the best results nor normally adjusted to the physical world, so that there was confusion between the two stimuli and the mind was active enough to interfuse its own states with those transmitted from foreign agencies. The idea was wholly unfamiliar to Mrs. Smead. Indeed I myself had never suspected it until I had carefully studied the Smead phenomena, and the conception is even yet wholly unfamiliar to scientific men and the general public, so that it cannot be reproductive secondary personality.

On page 609 a curious incident occurred. The control ap-

parently did not know the name of the Smeads and when asked by Mr. Smead if he should tell him his "earth name", the control replied saying: "We already have it from the little light", evidently referring to Cecil, the deceased son. There is no excuse, from the standpoint of secondary personality, for such a statement. It is consonant with the problems connected with proper names in communications about which Mrs. Smead knew absolutely nothing, save the fact that it was difficult to get them, and with conditions of communication about which she was equally ignorant, but which have been intimated in similar phenomena elsewhere. The whole thing is an unconscious duplication of conditions not generally known, and quite conceivable on the spiritistic hypothesis.

On page 610 the control remarked when Mr. Smead felt some concern about the things going on and made the statement that he was "taking the soul up higher", signifying that he was trying to produce a deeper trance. The conception is related to the one just quoted about the spirit hanging between heaven and earth and unconsciously defines the trance. Mrs. Smead had no normal ideas of the kind.

This development of the trance continued for some time. Indeed it had been going on for a year or two and Mr. Smead, like myself, was a little impatient with the slow progress in it. The control on the occasion to be quoted remonstrated with Mr. Smead against admitting communicators promiscuously because it admitted all sorts of spirits to a case which was not yet ready for such work. The control then added the following (pp. 630-631).

"We will try to develop this light more so, when we say we do not want others, it is because it needs renewing. And then you do not wish earthly spirits, those that have not tried to develop their own light to come into contact with it. They use it so rapidly, and [it] does not help to do good but only satisfies their own pleasure. We are trying to help this and so do not want or wish any to come that we do not ask for the present."

The whole conception of the Emperor group in regard to the development of mediumship is here, tho Mrs. Smead knew nothing about it. Nothing had even been published on it at this time.

The influence or even existence of "earth spirits" was not known or suspected by Mrs. Smead, especially in any such conception of them as later facts have shown. The view is quite foreign to her normal consciousness, so that it is not reproductive secondary personality. It coincides with teaching which Mrs. Smead did not know, and confirms experience with other psychics.

One more passage is of interest, especially as it was connected with the desire of Mrs. Smead to have certain persons communicate, the very thing that the proper development of Mrs. Smead prohibited. The following is the incident (p. 665).

(Try and bring some of his friends here.)

They cannot at this time.

(Why not?)

It takes time for preparation. We need it to get the right cords in motion.

(Where are these cords?)

They are connections between thy world and this. It takes time to get the friends near enough to use them rightly.

There is here the whole doctrine of the methods employed in the Piper case to establish communication between the two worlds. Nothing had been published at this time on the subject as communicated there. Apparently the same group of controls are active here and we should naturally expect the same methods and the same statements about them. Rector, I think it was, who stated that an etherial cord had to connect the spiritual with the physical world in order to communicate, and Mrs. Piper often complained that "spider webs" connected her head with something and tried to brush them away. Similar intimations have occurred with Mrs. Chenoweth and others, so that we have repeated here, without previous normal knowledge on the part of Mrs. Smead, the *modus operandi* of creating mediumship and operating it. There is no reproductive secondary personality in it and its articulation with the growing improvement of Mrs. Smead's trance and mediumship makes it more consonant with the spiritistic than with any other theory.

I have selected isolated and sporadic incidents in the communications and such as are non-evidential in themselves, but

which in fact represent cross references with other cases, in order to show how the spiritistic hypothesis articulates with them. I might have laid the stress on the evidential phenomena which are more frequent in the latter part of this record than in the early stages of it. But I could not take the space to repeat what the reader can observe for himself by careful study of the records. They show direct evidence for the supernormal without appealing to other cases and show spiritistic influence active in the case by itself and without regard to the question of interposing secondary personality.

There are general facts which point as strongly, if not more strongly, to spiritistic interpretations. I can only summarize them and then proceed to give the general conclusion. Among these general facts is the occasional dramatic play which is noticeable. It is most apparent in the transmitted conversation of the children, Maude and Cecil, of Mr. and Mrs. Smead regarding the toys and articles left by Cecil at his death, and one incident in the communication of another person. Cf. pp. 454 and 462. These were modes of communication not at all habitual with the work and began to manifest only after the Emperor group began to intervene in the case. These cases of dramatic play represent thoughts communicated with each other among the spirits and they slip through unintentionally, owing to the more or less mechanical process of communicating, like cross wires in telephony when messages which A is sending to B are mechanically and unintentionally communicated to C who has accidentally tapped A's and B's wire. This can be worked out by the reader into its details. But it is the accidental communication of what is going on in the other world when not trying to communicate with us, but with each other.

There is also the fundamental change of characteristics with the alteration of controls. This cannot be discussed here at length, as it would require the repetition of large parts of the record. But compare the Martian epoch with that of Harrison Clarke; the character of the children's messages with those of other persons; the complete modification of the contents and manner with the intervention of the Emperor group. All these reflect the influence of outside intelligence, whatever we assign to the subconscious. They point more distinctly toward spiritistic

agencies than to anything that we know of secondary personality alone.

But it must not be assumed from these arguments that I am trying to induce the reader to believe that spirits explain the case to the exclusion of secondary personality in all respects. The argument only shows that it cannot be the exclusive explanation. Hence to make my position clear I shall summarize the whole case.

(1) It is demonstrable that *reproductive* secondary personality will not explain the whole case and its details, either individually or collectively. This is clear in the Martian phenomena and the history of Harrison Clarke. No reading gives the details of these phenomena as reported, some of which are wholly false. The Martian episodes are absolutely fatal to the hypothesis of reproductive secondary personality. The only possible claim for that view would have to define it as *fabricative*. Mrs. Smead had done no reading and had no knowledge of the facts as represented, and indeed it would be safe to say that they did not exist outside her mind, unless in the mind of spirits.

(2) It is equally demonstrable that *fabricative* secondary personality will not explain the whole, as is proved by the existence of the supernormal in this case. The incidents representing this are unquestionably not due to chance coincidence or guessing and are exactly what we should expect on a spiritistic hypothesis. They could not have been invented. Consequently fabricative secondary personality is thrown out of court for the record as a whole, whatever we may suppose regarding certain isolated incidents.

(3) The hypothesis of fabrication has not been scientifically proved in any case. It has simply been invented and believed in order to escape more natural and simple hypotheses. It is conceivable enough from what we know of the imagination, but we have no scientific proof that it is a fact in any single case. It is simply more credible to minds who find other theories less credible, even when they cannot explain the facts invoked as proof.

(4) If the fabricative theory be assumed to account for the Martian episodes it is subject to two fundamental difficulties.

(a) It is without evidence of any kind that Mrs. Smead has any such constructive imagination to effect it, to say nothing of our ignorance about subconscious imagination in general. Her nor-

sponse to stimulus and the transmission of transcendental information. With this supposition we have a clear idea of the imperfections of Mrs. Smead as a medium and the meager amount of foreign matter, while we admit the existence of spiritistic stimulus. It is a perfect explanation of the case. And in fact it is nothing more than a law which we observe every day in normal psychology. A stimulus of any kind will resurrect certain memories, whether the stimulus is clear and understood or not. If it be not clear, the resurrected memories may be wholly irrelevant to the intention of the outside force. But suppose the mediumship has developed far enough for the subconscious to recognize or believe that the stimulus is spiritistic, it might well come to know in any situation that a certain person was communicating or trying to do so, and if the way were not clear for proper transmission resurrected memories would be more frequent and even transmitted messages understood only or more frequently when memory helps in the interpretation of the stimulus. This is a commonplace in ordinary conversation and is constantly illustrated in telephonic communication. The constant presence of phonetic and visual analogies and influences in the phenomena confirm this hypothesis. The mind is limited in its perceptions or the interpretation of stimuli by the degree of clearness with which they occur and the amount of our knowledge of the facts which the other person is trying to convey to us. In mediumship there is no exception to this law and we should naturally expect undeveloped mediumship to conform to the law. We have no right to assume that mediumship is so unique as to disregard all the laws of mind and stimulus. This law and the interpreting powers of the mind, whether conscious or subconscious, show all sorts of limitations, and experience with psychically disposed people shows all degrees of these limitations. The analogies in ordinary life are plentiful. Vague stimuli do not have their exact meaning detected and may excite mental states wholly out of proportion with the nature of the stimulus. Then they may be clear enough to suggest the correct conception of them as a cause and at the same time arouse the correct associations without giving an exact conception of incidents associated with them as a cause. I have many a time read the street car sign before I could see it distinctly enough to recognize it as

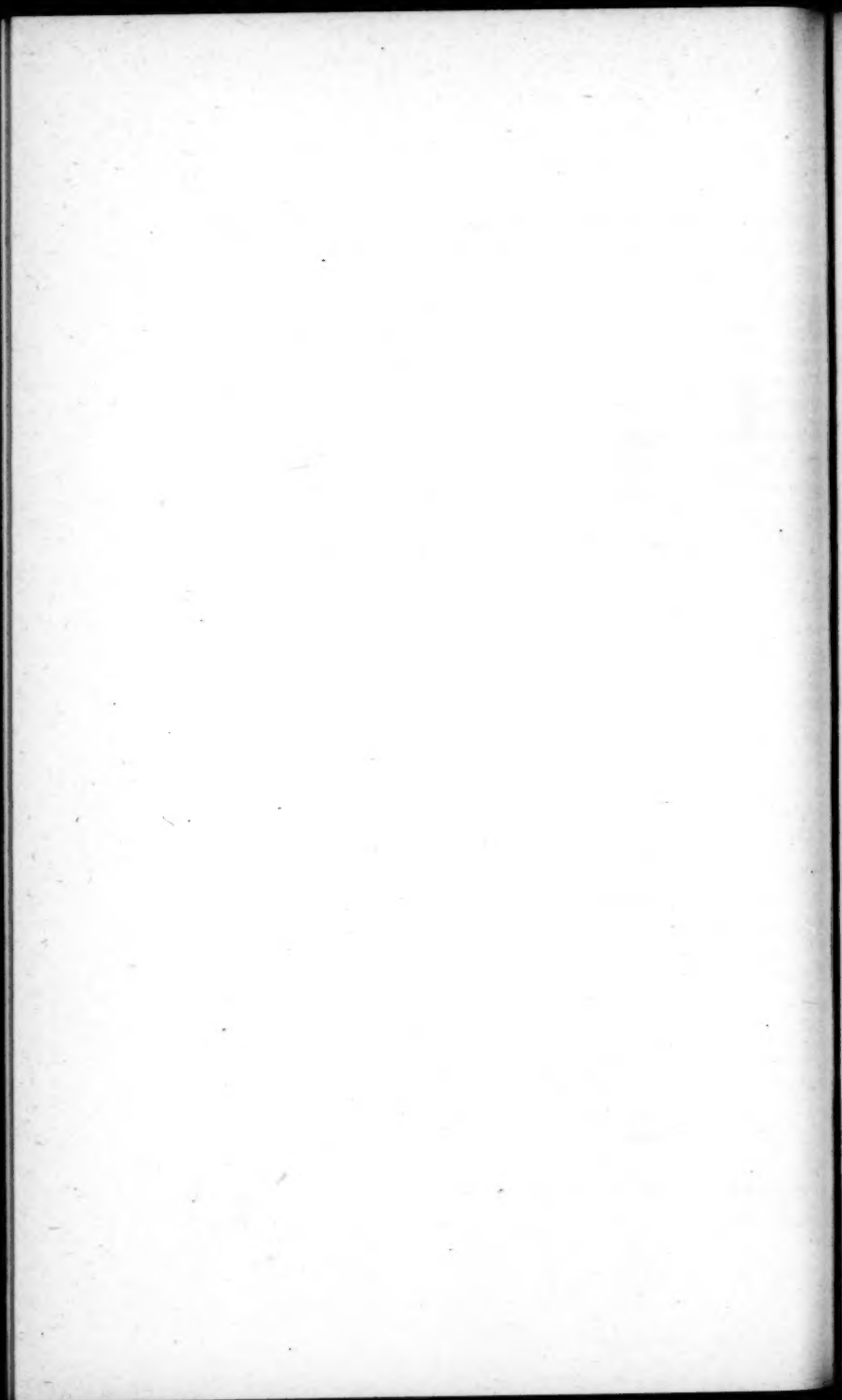
correct. Here was a subconscious perception of the facts and I had to wait until the car was nearer to see the name assuredly. I have heard a noise which I took for thunder, but found presently that it was a car passing over a bridge. I was correct in regard to the general nature of an external stimulus, but wrong in the interpretation of the phenomena until the sensation could be corrected. It had aroused memories of similar sounds which distorted the real character of the impression. I could not distinguish for a time the subjective and objective factors of the whole.

In imperfect mediumship the rapport with the spiritual world may be so imperfect that, altho the subject can be assured that the stimulus comes from without it, he or she may not be able to distinguish the source of the ideas instigated, and may actually take resurrected memories for transmitted messages. I have witnessed this in many instances. In the subliminal stage of Mrs. Chenoweth's trance she often gets names and incidents whose origin she cannot assign. Habit of doing this sort of work makes her suppose that any name or thought which emerges abruptly into the mind may be transmitted and she so represents it and usually is correct. But there are times when she has no conception of what the source is. She merely knows that the thought came into her head, and assuming that it is the usual message, it is expressed. But if she happens not to think this she may not utter it at all. When asked who or what told her any incident she often remarks that she does not know and shows distinct evidence of having merely received something of whose source she is as ignorant as the sitter. Occasionally in this condition her own memories are aroused and taken for transmitted messages when they are, in fact, stimulated ideas, perhaps representing correctly the general idea of the intended message, but yet not the specific thing sought. I have more than once called attention to the incident in which a man by the name of Fry was communicating in the deep trance and when the subliminal came Mrs. Chenoweth heard the name Calvin and it had no meaning for me. The subconscious, when I so indicated, at once remarked that it knew a Calvin Frye who had been Mrs. Eddy's coachman. Here was a stimulus correctly appreciated without having it interpreted fully, and a resurrected memory taken for a foreign message. A.

similar thing occurred in another case where the psychic spoke and repeated the words "car bunk" and then asked the sitter if her father had died from carbuncle. She replied that he had died with paralysis. After she came away from the sitting she recalled that her father was the inventor of the "Car Bunk" which had never been patented and was not known to the public, as the inventor had been anticipated by the Pullmans. Here the mind of the medium sought to interpret a correct message in terms of her own memories of what the sounds meant.

It is quite possible that the imperfect rapport of Mrs. Smead in the earlier stages of her mediumship made it difficult to receive transmitted messages not known to her, but that the mind could appreciate the stimulus sufficiently to recall correct and associated incidents that were known and tho they are secondary personality factors or explicable by that, they may have been instigated rather than transmitted. A minute study of the record will afford some evidence of this explanation, tho more of the incidents that were known to the subconscious may have been actually transmitted than this hypothesis assumes. There is evidence of this fact. As much depends upon the knowledge of what the problem is by the communicator as upon the capacities of the medium. But we know that the mind can recognize a known fact much more easily than an unknown one. This is not only apparent in telephonic conversation, but was frequently illustrated and demonstrated by my experiments through a tube, published in the *English Proceedings*, Vol. XVI, pp. 624-634. Passages which the receiver has been familiar with were easily understood, while those that were unfamiliar were greatly confused. Hence in the panoramic impressions which the mind of Mrs. Smead would get from the communicator she might more easily interpret those that were known than the unknown. Assuming this conception of the situation we have a very clear explanation of the phenomena, consistent with the spiritistic hypothesis and an understanding of the combined character of secondary personality and foreign influence. I emphasize the position that I do not assume, as the sceptic's attitude usually does, that secondary personality and spirits are necessarily opposed to each other. They are not mutually exclusive. We are not obliged to choose between them for the entire explanation of the phenomena. They are quite

capable of combination and in fact the phenomena themselves show that this is the fact. Hence the true explanation is not secondary personality only nor spirits only, but a combination of secondary personality and spirits. It may be impossible in any or all cases to apportion the share of each cause, but we cannot assign the whole product to either one of them. It is an interfusion of foreign and domestic contents, combined with a similar interfusion of subjective and objective functions or processes. The processes are probably just as complex as the product. At any rate, the only hypothesis here defended is that secondary personality and spiritistic influences are combined in the case in such a manner as to explain both imperfect mediumship and the union of foreign and domestic agencies in the result.



INDEX

- A.; 506, 508.
 A—; Mr.: 37.
 "Abnormality" of Mrs. Smead; 444.
 Absurd; "Secondary Personality" frequently: 77.
 Adams; Walter: 564, 565.
 Adams Street; 100, 471.
 Addie's grandmother; 283.
 Adeline; 269, 270.
 Adolphus, Gustavus; 572.
 Advice *re* sittings; 509.
 Albany, N. Y.; 72, 252, 253, 254.
 Alcohol; 392.
 Bathing in: 634, 635.
 Alfred; 84.
 Alfred the Great; 422, 424, 561.
 Alfred; Marian: 281, 285.
 Alpha; 506, 508.
 Alphabet backwards; Using the: 282.
 Alphonso; 269, 270.
 Alvord; Marian: 84, 281, 285.
 America; Map of N. and S.: 190.
 American slang by English communicators; 590, 626.
 Ames; Mrs. B.: 418, 419.
 Anæsthesia; 25, 128.
 Tests for: 22, 316.
 Anæsthetics; 696.
 Andrew; 656.
 Angels; 205.
 Teach the little ones; 192, 276.
Annals of Psychical Science; 5.
 Annie; 177, 415, 511.
 Aunt: 402. Sister: 629, 632.
Annie Laurie; 632.
 Apparition; 29.
 Aunt; A. of: 126. Aunt Sarah; Apparition of: 402, 403, 404. Cases of A.; 28, 29, 33, 34, 35, 38, 41, 42. Church: A. of white: and cemetery; 316. Clark; Harrison: A. of: 166. Face in veil; A. of: 33. Girl; Little: A. of: 497. Grandmother; A. of: 35. Hyslop; Robert: A. of: 338, 364. Indian; A. of: 35. King or Emperor; A. of an early Christian: 306. Lady who sat near J. H. Hyslop in group; A. of: 151, 166. Lady; A. of very old: 402. Lady with white hair; A. of: 126. Letter; A. of two spirits with: 529. Man in cellar; A. of: 28. Origin of A. in "subliminal action"; 307, 339. Sarah; Aunt: A. of: 402, 403, 404. Seeing through an A.; 41. Soldier; A. of: 379. Spirits with letter; A. of: 529. Subliminal action; Origin of A. in: 307, 339. Vision or A.; 306.
 Apparitions; Secondary Personality and: 130, 180.
 Appointments; Communicators keeping: 442, 443.
 Arithmetic done psychically; 33.
 Arlington Heights; 100, 471.
 Arm: Use of the: in communication; 451, 464.
 Arm-chair; Vision of: 567.
 Armenian; 536.
 Arrow and heart; Drawing of: 456.
 Arther; 548, 460.
 Arthur; 119.
 Ashland; 418, 419.
 Express to: 109, 430, 431.
Atlantic Monthly; 48, 144, 675, 676.
 Atwater; Mr. and Mrs.: 86, 284, 288.
 Augusta; 561.
 Augustine; Saint: 133, 154, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 567.
 Imperator "might be": 154.
 Augustinus Aurelius; 569.
 Aunt; Apparition of: 126, 156. Sarah; Apparation of: 402, 403, 404.
 Auntie; 413.
 Aura; Dr. Kilner's experiments with the: 695.
 Aurelius; 133, 569.
 "Chesterfield is:" 569.
 Austen; 100. Mrs.: 472.
 Austine; 559, 560.
 Austins; The: 100, 470, 471, 474.
 Austria; 660.
 Automatic Writing;
 Backwards; A. W.: 195. Communicators: Conversation between: appearing in the A. W.; 455, 547, 647, 656. Inverted A. W.; 17, 59, 72, 195, 231, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365, 652.
 Mirror A. W.; 17, 25, 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357. Backward M. A. W.; 237. Inverted: 510.

Automatic Writing.—Continued.

Pencil; A. W. with: 303. Slowness of the A. W.; 376. Subconscious muscular action and A. W.; 379. Vertical A. W. with planchette; 436.

See *Planchette*.

Automatisme Psychologique; by

Pierre Janet; 169.

Auto-suggestion; 77.

Avery; Walter: 565.

B. B. H.; 94, 289.

B.; Miss: 233.

B.; Mr.: 491.

B. Sw.; 604, 605.

B—; 177, 178, 407, 421, 467, 482, 483.

B—; A. F.: 420.

B—; C. H.: 420.

B—; Medium in: 421.

Babies' heaven; Jupiter as the: 50, 56, 143.

Baby; 326, 543.

Girl; Aunt Emily wants Baby to be called Fannie; 180. being hatched; 461.

Baby's finger; Ring on: 461.

Backwards;

Alphabet: Using the: 282, 286.

Automatic script written: 195.

Spelling: 235.

Bacon; Ham and: 546, 547.

Ball; Playing: 112, 447, 449.

Baltimore, Md.; 72, 126, 402.

Baptist church; Fourth: 96, 97, 299, 300.

Barber; Addie: 282, 286, 287. Hu-

bert: 284. Mrs. Hubert: 286, 287,

288. Wilber: 282, 286.

Barker; Elsa: Criticism of J. H.

Hyslop's Piper Report; 551.

Barker; Evline: 86, 284, 288.

Bartholomew; Mr.: 86, 284, 288.

Baseball team; 564, 565.

Batch; Mr.: 282, 286.

Battle:

of Shiloh; 73, 240, 242, 256, 259, 261, 263, 266. of Williamsburg; 647.

Beads; 665, 666.

Beauchamp Case; 669.

Bed; Vision of person in: 611.

Beetle; Vision of: 519, 526.

Bena; 113, 269, 270, 528, 571, 650.

Bena Maude; 448.

Bennett; James Gordon: 239.

Berry; Annie: 30.

Bertha; 432, 634, 635, 636.

Bertha; Auntie: 650.

Betsey; 103, 358, 366, 419.

Bible; Mrs. James's: 308, 312.

Bill; tory about: 466.

Billings; Dr. John: 668.

Billy; 89, 342, 445, 457, 498, 551, 552, 554, 558, 608, 627, 632.

Bird; Drawing of a: 292, 461.

Bird; W. M. Smead a: 90, 292.

Birth of child; Prospective: 114.

Bishop; Mrs.: 128, 294, 295, 296.

Bishop; Sarah: 407.

Bitter Sweet; 495, 529, 556, 557, 571, 588, 601, 603, 605, 606, 621, 632, 686.

Bitter with the sweet; 632.

Bl—; 14, 15, 302.

Blessed fish; 466.

Boat; Drawing of: 194, 195, 419.

Body; 15, 179.

moved; Ida Maud Smead asks to have her: 178. Spirit: 451. Spirit leaving the B.; 257. Spirit World; B. in: 253.

Boles; 448.

Bolton, Conn.: 119, 121, 124, 294, 296, 302, 459, 460, 461, 483, 484, 485, 574.

Book; 428, 503.

Cecil's: 455.

Bornes; Mr.: 100, 470.

Boston; 122, 123, 127, 128, 297, 298, 305, 398, 423, 425, 441, 462.

Boston Herald; 538.

Boston and Providence R. R.; 127, 297.

Boston; South: 32, 96, 300.

Bottles; 546, 556, 558, 560.

Bowes; Mr.: 397.

Bowles; Dr.: 111, 112, 433, 434, 435.

Mr. C. H.: 106, 112, 447, 448.

Talkativeness of: 448. George:

113, 447. Mr.: 396, 397, 419, 448.

Mrs.: 396, 419, 448.

Box; 114, 454, 503.

Box; Movement of: 30.

Boy; 291, 362, 517.

Boy in white night-gown; Vision of: 526.

Bragg; 73, 240, 266.

Brain:

Light in her: Mrs. Smead saw a: 477. "Soul looking through the:" 477. Use of the: in communication; 451, 464, 465.

Brain; Mrs.: 378, 384.

See *Braine*.

Braine; Auntie: 377, 378. See *Brain*.

Brazil; 350.

Bread; Gunny: 629.
 Bristol; 277, 294, 297.
 Brother; 453, 465, 592.
 Brother's wife; 630.
 Brover; 431, 432, 465, 544.
 Brown; Blanche: 30.
 Brown; Emma: 294, 296.
 Bristol, Conn.; 294, 297. Brown;
 George: 294, 297. Brown; Oliver:
 294, 297.
 Brown; Eunice: 294, 295, 406, 407.
 B—, Conn.; 407. Bishop;
 Mrs.: 294, 295, 296. Bishop;
 Sarah: 407. Bolton; 294, 296.
 Congregationalists; 407. Gilead,
 Conn.; 407. Guilead; 295, 296.
 Merchant; Mrs.: 294, 295, 296.
 Plummer; Mr. Thomas: 407.
 Sarah; 295, 406, 407.
 Brown; Genie: 127, 275. George:
 294, 297. Joseph: 127, 275. Mar-
 tha: 127, 275. Mrs.: 128. Oliver:
 294, 297.
 Bryant; Mr.: 283, 287.
 Building; Vision of cross on large:
 522.
 Burch; Fannie: 269, 270.
 Burch; Aunt Emily Frances: 124,
 180.
 Burtis; Fannie: 180.
 Butter cheese; 617, 621.
 C—; 39.
 C. H.; 609.
 C—; George: 552.
 C—; (Rev.) G. M.: 552, 553, 554.
 Caldwell; Mr.: 97, 301, 303.
 Calvin; 342.
 Cameron; Jim: 628.
 Can; 628.
 Canada; 116, 348, 349.
 Cancer; 118, 458.
 Candlin; Albert: 124, 484.
 Candlin; Rev. Joseph: 122, 123, 124.
 Candlin; Mr.: 463, 464.
 Candlin; Rose: 302, 482, 483, 484,
 485, 546. Hysteria; 483, 485.
 Candlin; Ruth: (Mrs.); 483, 484
 Cannon-ball; 646.
 Canteen; 661.
 Capel; Willie: 85, 156, 281, 285
 Carbunk; 710.
 Caroline; 349.
 Carrie; 280, 349.
 Catlin; Minerva: 282. Mrs.: 281.
 Willis: 281.
 Cecil; 421, 431, 432, 445, 486, 517,
 531, 542, 629.
 Cecil J.; 428.

Cecil John; 497, 501, 531, 650.
 Celelee; 98, 351, 352.
 Celia; 160.
 Cemetery; 84, 281, 285.
 Apparition of a: 316. Vision of:
 522. West P—: 519.
 Centralville, Mass.; 538.
 Centre Sandwich, N. H.; 542, 543.
 Cewens; W.: 526.
 Chaldaic; 659, 660.
 Charles; 537, 659.
 Charles; 290.
 Charlestown; 31.
 Cheese:
 Butter: 617, 621. Hodgson wants
 thee to get ...: 135.
 Chenoweth; Mrs.: 687.
 Chesterfield; 133, 135, 174, 562, 565,
 567, 569, 575, 579, 581, 582, 585,
 592, 594, 595, 597, 598, 600, 601,
 602, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609,
 610, 611, 613, 617, 619, 623, 625,
 638, 640, 641, 642, 643, 646, 665.
 American slang; 590, 626.
 Augustine; Saint: 563. "Aure-
 lius; C. is:" 569. C. H.; 609.
 Cecil's grave; Flowers for: 598.
 Communicator: Exhausted; 656.
 Unconscious; 656.
 Communicators: can do but little
 without C.; 647. Improper treat-
 ment of: 656.
 Connections between the two
 worlds; 665. "Cords in motion;
 Need to get the right:" 665.
 Cross: Sign of: made by C.; 595,
 597, 600, 602. Dress and hat; 626.
 Episcopalian; 571, 578, 579, 583,
 590. Friend; 642. Friends will say
 thee well; 650. Moses; 575. Rec-
 tor; 594, 596, 597.
 Is R; 595. Is +; 595.
 Imperator; 583, 602, 624.
 "a little black-eyed man"; 624.
 Imperator Group; 625. Memor-
 ies of: shaken; 623. C. says I. G.
 have been to Mrs. Smead; 623.
 Inverted mirror writing; 653.
 Life cords; Broken: 644.
 Light: Ask for L.; Thou didst
 not: 602. not clear; 613. Devel-
 opment of L.; 631. The Higher L.;
 638. "Little L. grows"; 625.
 "Pray for:" 592, 631.
 Luther; 591, 625. "is busy";
 571. "Friend L."; 626. "greet-
 s thee"; 597. "Hyslop pertinent:"
 617. C. asked to bring: by W. M.
 Smead; 585.

Chesterfield.—*Continued.*

Manners; 566. Manoreal; 588.
 Manorell; 626. Manse; 565, 566.
 Mary; 588, 592, 597, 598, 600.
 "Pray often for light"; 592.
 Prayer; 611. Prayer by C.; 597.
 Prudens; Says that he is P.; 593.
 Says that he is not P.; 624.
 "Prudent man; A." 593. R.; 619.
 Rector; 597. Rector; Episcopalian; 594, 596, 597. Sabbath; Keeping the; 654. "Secondary Personality" of Mrs. Smead; C. told that he is a; 623. Slang; American; 590, 626. Smead, Cecil; C. writing for; 641.
 Soul; 582.
 "Pray that her S. may be moved very easily from the body"; 598. "Up higher; Taking her S."; 610. "Talk to the:" 582.
 "Subconscious mind"; C. as Mrs. Smead's; 626. V. D.; 610, 614, 623. V. D. H.; 600. William; Chesterfield; 594. Writing; Inverted mirror; 653.
 Chicago, Ill.; 72, 242.
 Child; Vision of a; 386.
 Children; Christ's relation to; 143. in the Spirit World; 448, 449.
 Still-born; Knowledge displayed by; 145.
 Childs; Fred; 122, 123, 462, 464.
 Chom; 550, 551, 576, 642.
 Christ:
 not God; 276. S. I. Smead sees C. often; 276. Vision of face of; 612.
Christian Work and Evangelist; 610.
 Chum; 630.
 Church; 439.
 Apparition of a white; 316.
 Cincinnati, Ohio; 467.
 City; Vision of a; 648.
 City Point; 441.
 Civil War; 239.
 Clairaudience; 639.
 Clairvoyance; 387.
 at seven or eight years of age; 24, 28.
 Clairvoyants; Use of crystal bad for; 354.
 Clamens; M.; 458.
 Clara; 119, 458, 460.
 Clark; Harrison:
 in Company H. of 50th Illinois Infantry at Battle of Shiloh; 259.
 in Company E. of 125th New York in 1862; 260.

Clark; Mrs.; 286, 287.

Clarke; Harrison; 7, 11, 15, 16, 23, 24, 26, 58, 72, 101, 102, 140, 191, 231, 247, 249, 250, 252, 253, 255, 257, 258, 283, 331, 353, 354, 356, 364, 366, 367, 371, 681, 683.

Adopted by Aunt Mary Clarke; 239. Albany, N. Y.; 72, 252. Apparition of; 166.

Automatic writing;

He developed Mrs. Smead in; 90. Inverted; 59, 72, 231, 232, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365. Mirror; 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357. Mirror; Backward; 237.

Backwards; Spelling; 235. Baltimore, Md.; 72. Banishment of H. C.; Unfortunate result of; 90. Battle of Shiloh; 73. Bennett; James Gordon; 239. Betsey; 103, 358, 366. Body; Spirit leaving the; 257. Born in Illinois; 239. Bragg; 73, 240, 266.

Clairvoyants; Use of crystal bad for; 354. Communication; Difficulties of; 258, 697. Communications; Confusion in; 262. Communicator tired; 358. Crystal makes H. C. dizzy; 357. Objection to; 354, 355, 356, 357. Seen in; 354. Use of; bad for clairvoyants; 354.

Death of; 240, 242. Deserted N. Y. regiment; 262, 263. Died in 1862; 239. Dreams like hypnotism; 238.

Gnilrats; 233.

Illinois; Born in; 239. Incorrect statements; 73. Inverted writing; 59, 72, 231, 232, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365.

J. B. & Son; 239. Jesus Christ; 257.

Memories; Difficulty in recalling; 239. Mind; Unconscious; 237.

Mirror writing; 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357.

Backward; 237.

Name: Real; not Clarke; 239. New York City; 72. *New York Herald*; 12, 72, 73, 233. New York Regiment; 241, 245, 246.

Planchette; When H. C. is not present, Mrs. Smead cannot write without; 262, 265. Position of Mrs. Smead; Directions re; 248. "Prevarication" of; 267.

Clarke; Harrison.—Continued.

Regiment; New York: 241, 245, 246. Regiment; Vision of: 76.
 Return of H. C.; 353.
 "Saviour"; Believing on the: 257. Secondary Personality; 74, 261, 265, 267. called a S. P. by J. H. Hyslop; 147, 148, 683, 684. W. M. Smead thought H. C. might be S. P. of Mrs. Smead; 263. Shiloh; Battle of: 73, 240, 242, 256, 259, 261, 263, 266. "Shot; I am:" 251. Sitters seen by H. C.; 248. Sleep; Soul during: 238. Smead; W. M.: broke promise to H. C.; 256. re-proved for his treatment of H. C.; 90. imagined that H. C. might be a "Secondary Personality" of Mrs. Smead; 263. Treatment of H. C. by: Improper: 261, 262, 266. Smith; General C. F.: 73, 243, 266. Soul: 694. never rests; 237. during sleep; 238. during "trance"; 254. Spelling backwards; 235. as a spirit; 691. Spirit body; 695. Spirit leaving the body; 257. Statements; Incorrect: 73. "Sub-conscious self"; H. C. denies existence of the: 236. Mr. Smead questions H. C. about the: 235. Trance; Soul of Mrs. Smead during: 254. Typesetter; 233. Unconscious mind; 237. Vision of H. C.; 166. Vision of regiment; 76. Writing; Inverted: 59, 72, 231, 232, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365. Writing; Mirror: 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357.
 Clarke; Harrison: (No. 2) in Company A. of 64th New York Volunteers; 268. Harry: 253. Aunt Mary: 239.
 Cleamens; Stella: 458, 460.
 Cleave; 454.
 Clegg; Grace: 304.
 Clemens; Arthur: 118, 458. Harriet M.: 119, 468. M.: 458. Martha: 467. Stella: 120.
 Clements; Harriet May: 460. Martha: 118, 119, 120, 458, 459, 460, 467, 468.
 Cleve; 107, 407, 437, 454.
 Clevie; 429, 473. S. J.: 428.
 Clifford; 591.
 Cloud; Mrs. J.: 405.
 Communication;
 Confusion in: 303. Difficulties

of: 258, 697. Hyslop; J. H.: C. from: 450. Impatience of sitter stops: 278, 293. Methods of: 117. *Modus operandi* of: 644. Mortal; C. from a: 370, 450. "Passive Secondary Personality necessary to C."; 167. "Secondary Personality a necessary element in C."; 171. "Secondary Personality the instrument of C."; 7. Success in: Conditions of: 547. "Subconscious" called the instrument of: 7. Talking interferes with: 385.
 Communications; Confusion in: 115, 262. "Subliminal" source of: 417, 463, 513, 517, 527, 529, 541, 642.
 Communicator;
 Imperator: Attempts to get: as: 514, 524, 536, 566, 568, 579, 583, 585, 593. Name; C. who does not remember his own: 436. tired; 358. Unconscious; 656.
 Communicators;
 Appointments kept by: 442, 443. Chesterfield; C. can do but little without: 647. Conversation between: appearing in the "Automatic" script; 455, 547, 647, 656. Secondary Personality; C. make fun of J. H. Hyslop's ideas about: 24, 74, 90, 91, 92, 261, 265, 267, 292, 304. "Subliminal"; C. make fun of J. H. Hyslop's ideas about the: 462. Time; Inability of C. to measure: 161. Treatment of C. by J. H. Hyslop; 253. Treatment of C.; Improper: 90, 261, 262, 266, 274, 278, 550, 652, 656. Vision of would-be: 502.
 Conclusions; J. H. Hyslop's theories and: 137.
 Confusion; in communications; 115, 303. through trying to remember incidents; 104.
 Congregationalists; 407.
 Connecticut; 349.
 Connections between the two worlds; 665.
 Conscious: Mrs. Smead not: of contents of communications; 25.
 Consciousness; Returning to C.; Difficulty in: 91. Unity of: 6.
 Construction; Wrong: put on words of communicators; 642.
 Contact; Planchette writing without; 32.
 Control; Change of: 606, 614. in Smead Case; 130.

- Conversation between communicators appearing in the "automatic" script; 547.
 Cooper; 156.
 Cooper; J.: 99, 469, 471, 472, 474.
 Cooper; William Fischley: 100, 472, 473.
 Cord; Ethereal: 703.
 Cord as part of the *modus operandi* of communication; 644.
 "Cords in motion; Need to get the right:" 665, 703.
 Corliss; Cyrus: 519.
 Cornwall Hollow; 272, 282, 285.
 Cotton; Mrs.: 284, 288.
 Death of: 86, 156.
 Craig; Grace: 92, 155, 165, 304.
 Cramp in leg; 537.
 Crandall; Dr. Floyd: 316.
 Creation; "Subliminal": 146.
 Cregg; Grace: 92.
 Cross;
 Apparitions of a: 132, 133. Sign of the: 134, 153, 500, 595, 597, 600, 602, 609. Vision of a: 506, 511, 513, 514, 517, 522, 523, 525, 535, 567, 568, 586, 591, 609, 610, 620. Vision of Greek: in yellow light; 500.
 "Cross Reference"; 687. Attempts at: 686. Experiments for: 80, 128, 134, 135, 617.
 Crossing; Messer's: 304.
 Crown; Vision of a: 612.
 Crystal; 337.
 Clarke; Harrison: made dizzy by: 358. Clarke; Harrison: seen in: 354. Objection to: 354, 355, 356, 357. Use of C. bad for clairvoyants; 354.
 Curtains; 205.
 Cushions; 590.
 D. A.; 556.
Daily Food; 109, 114, 428, 455, 456.
 Dark; Fear of the: 115, 475.
 Darkness; Sense of: 525.
 Death; 696.
 Unconsciousness after: 700, 701.
 Deception; "Subliminal": 81, 335.
 "Defence" made by "the subliminal" of Mrs. Smead; 627.
 Delirium; 352.
 Dennison; Edward B.: 472.
 Dennison; Frank B.: 471.
 Dennison; Mrs.: 471.
 Desk; 408, 410, 439, 455, 565.
 Devil; 182.
 Devil; Drawing of the: 49, 190, 216.
 Dewey; 110.
 "Diabolic Secondary Personality"; 168, 169.
 Dickens; Charles: Vision of: 598.
 Difficulties of communication; 258, 697.
 Diphtheria; 486, 487.
 Disease; Communicator hurt by thinking of: 393.
 Dog; 107, 112, 397, 447, 700.
 Doll; 440.
 Dollar; Mexican: 651.
 Door opened; 39.
 Doris Case; 687, 689, 690.
 Dowsing; 95, 156.
 Dramatic play of personality; 162, 173, 456. in dreams; 173.
 Draper's; 399.
 Dream;
 of Mrs. J. H. Hyslop; 589. of Mr. and Mrs. Robert Hyslop; 660. of F. W. H. Myers; 619. of George Smead; 450, 519, 520. of horses and wagon; 519. Vision; 589. Hypnotism; D. like: 238.
 Dudley; 96, 97, 300. Charlie: 302.
 Lizzie: 299, 301, 302. Lottie: 96, 300, 301, 302, 403.
 Earth spirits; 702, 703.
 Earthbound; Illusions of the: 689.
 East Hartford, Conn.; 128, 350.
 East K—; 15.
 East L—; 39.
 Eleanor; 536.
 Electric current; Sensation as of: 511.
 Elisa; 574.
 Elisabeth; 574.
 Elizabeth; 395, 396.
 Ella; 84, 281, 284, 286, 288.
 Elsie; 180.
 Embarrassment of Mrs. Smead; 166.
 Emeries; 112, 440.
 Emerson; Lydia (Lida): 270.
 Emerson; Winnie: 270.
 Emily; 85, 86, 282.
 Emperor; Apparition of Early Christian: 306.
 Emporia, Kan.; 379.
 Ennis; 395, 396.
 Episcopalian; 133, 569, 571, 578, 579, 583, 590, 645. "better light"; 570.
 Episcopalian Friend; 641, 642, 645.
 Cannon-ball; 646. Chom; 642.
 Moses; W. Stainton: E. F. supposed to be: 645. Meyers; F. W. H.: W. M. Smead insists that E. F. is: 642, 645.

- Equeal; 151.
 Essie; 344.
 Ester; 183, 191, 452.
 Esther; 179.
 European; 567.
 friend; 638.
 Evelyn; 92.
 "Evidence":
 for a future life; 232. for Secondary Personality in Smead Case; 142, 379, 383. for Supernormal in Smead Case; 174.
 Evil spirits; 679.
 Express to Ashland; 109, 430, 431.
 Express train; 156.
 F.; 401.
 F. J. P.; 633.
 F.; Mr.; 258.
 F—; Marian; 440.
 F—P; 632.
 Fabrication:
 "Subconscious;" 680, 686. "Subliminal;" 59, 147, 580, 587, 588.
 Face: Apparition of: in veil; 33.
 Drawing of: with spectacles and moustache; 535. Vision of: 504.
 Vision of: on pillow; 508. Faces; Hideous; Vision of: 515.
 Failure; "Preposterous" explanation of: 642, in sittings with Mrs. Smead; 312, 494.
 Fannie (Burch); 269, 270.
 Fanny; Aunt; 35, 183.
 Farm; 270, 395.
 Fever; 508.
 Field; Jennie; 125, 369, 370.
 Filley; Arthur; 120, 458, 460. A. N.; 120. A. N.; Wife of: 458, 460.
 Frank; 118, 120, 458, 460. Harriet; Mary; 120, 460. Mary Clemens; 119, 458.
 Fish; Blessed; 466.
 Flammarion; C.; *The Unknown*; 15.
 Fletcher; Chester; 563.
 Florence; 371.
 Flournoy; Th.; *From India to the Planet Mars*; 12, 203.
 Flowers; 550, 598.
 Drawing of: 198, 469. on grave of S. I. Smead; 373, 374.
 Foreknowledge *re* sittings with Mrs. Piper; 530, 531.
 Fr.; 606.
 Frank Miller; 108, 119, 128, 350.
 Brother; 458. Father of: 467.
 Uncle; 413.
 French; Mrs. Smead ignorant of: 347.
From India to the Planet Mars; by Th. Flournoy; 12, 203.
 Fry; 323, 324, 327, 334.
 Frye; 416, 588.
 Frye; Calvin; 709.
 Frye; Mary; 416.
 G.; 606.
 G—; Dr.; 425. G.; Miss; 15.
 Garland; Dr.; 111, 433, 435.
 "Garments; She must have looser;" 512.
 Garter; Vision of: 645.
 Geometrical figures and "demonstrations"; 156, 308, 309, 310.
 Geometry; 89, 311.
 Mrs. Smead's ignorance of: 89, 311.
 George; 342, 343, 401, 630.
 (Bowles); 113, 447. (Brown); 294, 297. (C—); 552. Hall; 416. Uncle; Mrs. Miller's; 156. Washington; 328, 330.
 Georgie; 191.
 German; 376.
 Germany; 380, 381.
 Gertie; (Gillett); 486.
 Gibbons; Mr.; 442.
 Gilead, Conn.; 407, 659.
 Gillett; 126, 486.
 Girl; Apparition of little; 497.
 Gnirats; 233.
 God; 192, 474.
 Faith in: 548. Laws of: 654.
Golden Rule; 144, 185, 675, 676.
 "Goose Multiply"; 114, 465.
 Goss; Flora; 484.
 Gramie; 490.
 Grandmother;
 Addie's; 283. Apparition of: 35.
 Grandpa; 399, 490, 538, 542.
 Grant; General; 73, 243.
 Grave; Decoration of: 156, 373, 374, 598.
 Vision of a: 522.
 "Greek" words seen by Mrs. Smead; 560.
 Greeley; Clarissa Pratt; 473.
 Grimes; 628, 629.
 Guessing; "Subliminal"; 473.
 Guilead; 295, 296.
 Gunny bread; 629.
 Gustavus Adolphus; 133, 154, 571, 572, 573.
 Bitter Sweet; 571.
 H.; 313, 526, 533, 600, 633.

- H—; 83, 87, 177, 271, 273, 281, 283, 287, 288, 310, 311. C—: 290.
 Professor: 285.
 H— Academy; 285.
 H.; Father: 602.
 H. C.; 255.
 H. C. J.; 596.
 H. K. S. P.; 632.
 Hadley; South: 86, 87, 284, 288.
 Hail; 585.
 Hall; 415.
 Vision of a beautiful: 386.
 Hall; Betsey: 104, 358, 366. Carlton: 367. Charles: 367. George: 367, 416. "too much surprised to write"; 366. George Washington: 129, 328, 330, 331.
 Hallucination;
 "Subliminal": 438. "Veridical": 29.
 Hallucinations; 43, 438.
 "Suggested": 166.
 Hamel; Evelyn: 93, 306.
 See *Sargent*.
 Hand;
 Drawing of: 294, 411, 412, 461.
 Drawing of foot or H.; 303.
 called "head" by communicator; 654. "Light; H. seemed to be all:" 501, 547. "listening to the invisible"; 335. Numbness of H.; 522. "Prayer; H. in an apparent position of." 614, 615. Shaking of H. and head; 521, 524. Transparent; H. seemed: 541.
 Hands; Drawing of: 190. locked together; 529.
 Hanson; E. C. E.: 116, 347. Lillian: 430. Thomas A.: 116, 347, 348.
 Hanson incidents; 156.
 Harmon; 380.
 Harmond; 380, 381, 382.
Harper's Magazine; 82.
 Harriman; Mrs.: 519.
 Harris; Mazie: 30.
 Hartford, Conn.; 349. East: 350. Seminary; 35, 350.
 Harwinton, Conn.; 461.
 Hastings; Charles: 119, 121, 459, 461.
 Harvey W.: 461. Morris: 119, 121, 459, 460, 461. William: 119, 459, 574. William Harvey: 119, 121, 459, 460, 461.
 Head: Hand called H. by communicator; 654. "It hurts my:" 251. Pain in: 656. Snapping in: 534, 559, 600, 620.
 Heard; Mary: 537, 539, 542.
 Heard; William: 542.
 Heaven; 257, 454.
 "Hebrew":
 Characters; "Subliminal connection" with H.: 535. letter; Vision of: 567.
 Hedding, N. H.; 440, 497.
 Hedengran; Annie: 403.
 Helen; 270, 490.
 Helena; 278, 372.
 Hell; 182, 257, 276.
 "Help me God, love me man"; 618.
 Henry; 273, 422, 432, 564.
 Henry; Thomas: 390, 392, 423, 426, 487, 488.
 Hern; Rosa: 127, 163, 298.
 Herbert; 462, 464.
 Hersey; 125, 128, 368.
 Hester; 526.
 Hewitt; Mr.: 92, 304.
 HHCLS; 569.
 Hickey; Harry: 363.
 Hill Street; 99, 469, 471.
 Hillside Street, or Road; 471.
 Hislop; 532, 567, 569.
 Hodge; Dr. F. C.: 272.
 Hodgson; Richard: 135, 335, 474, 493, 529. Butter cheese; 617, 621. "Cheese; Hodgson wants thee to get..."; 135. Cross Reference experiment; 617. Message to R. H. from J. H. Hyslop; 618.
 Hogg; James: 551.
 Hogg; Margaret: 550.
 Holden; Professor: 147.
 Holland; J. G.: 495.
 Hollis; Rev. C. J.: 510, 511, 513, 516, 518.
 Hopkins; Charles: 626.
 Horses and wagon; Dream of: 519.
 Houston; J.: 106, 389.
 Hoyt; 161. B. Burleigh: 16, 87, 94, 156, 161, 255, 289. Death of: 95. Dowsing: 95. Paralysis; 95. George; 94, 289. Lydia: 289.
 Hubbell; Florence: 39, 156, 283.
 Hubbell; Mrs.: 271, 285, 288.
 Hubbels; Mr.: 281, 285.
 Huckins; Dr.: 579, 580.
 Hudson; Thomson Jay: 130.
 "Hundred; Good old:" 628, 629.
 Hurlbut; Brigadier-General: 243, 266.
 Hyde Park; 551.
 Hypnotic state; Trance and: 117, 452, 457.
 Hypnosis; "Secondary Personality" and: 169.

Hypnotism; Clarke: Harrison: and; 152, 693. Discarnate and; 152, 236. Dreams like: 238. Dr. Phinuit on: 693.

Hyslop; 505, 516, 540, 567, 569.

Communication; 532. "pertinent Luther"; 617. Vision of the name: 567. George H.: 326, 603. H.: 638.

Hyslop; James H.:

Apparition: of Harrison Clarke; 166. of lady who sat near J. H. H. in group; 151, 166. Origin of A. in "subliminal action"; 307, 339.

Apparitions and Secondary Personality; 130.

Auto-suggestion; 77.

Beauchamp Case; 669.

Chenoweth; Mrs.: 687. Chesterfield; 174. Chesterfield and Prudens; 153. Children; Christ's relation to: 143. Children: Stillborn: Knowledge displayed by: 145.

Clarke; Harrison: 7, 140, 191, 331, 681, 683.

Communicators:

Limitation of C. to friends of the sitters; 170. Time: Inability of C. to measure: 161. Treatment of: by J. H. H.; 253.

Conclusions; Theories and: 137. Consciousness; Unity of: 6.

"Cross Reference"; 687.

Attempts at: 686. Experiment for: 80, 617. Idea of: 704.

Doris Case; 687, 689, 690.

Dramatic play of personality; 162, 173, 456. in dreams; 173.

Earthbound; Illusions of the: 689. Evidence for the supernatural in Smead Case; 174.

Fabrication; Subconscious: 144, 680, 686. Fabrication; Subliminal: 587, 588. Frye; Calvin: 709.

Golden Rule; 144, 675, 676.

Guessing; Subliminal: 473.

Hallucination;

Subliminal: 438. Veridical: 29.

Hallucinations; Suggested: 166.

Hodgson ... butter and cheese; 155. Hodgson; Richard: J. H. H. tries to send message to: 618.

Hypnotism; Dr. Phinuit on: 693.

Hyslop; Robert: J. H. H. asks Harrison Clarke to find: 244, 250.

Hyslop; Robert: Pass sentence of: 80, 82, 158, 321, 325, 328, 329, 331, 335.

Hyslop; James H.—Continued.

Imagination; Resources of: 49. "Subconscious"; 138. "Subliminal:" 676, 681.

Imperator; Vision of: 166.

Impersonation; 680. Impersonation and Secondary Personality; 154. Incorrect names in Smead communications; 174. Interfusion; 711.

Keliher; Mrs.: 685.

Limitations of the subconscious; 707. "Lying; Subliminal:" 691.

Mediumship; Secondary Personality and: 668. Memories; Subconscious: 676. Memory; Subliminal: 551, 565. Mind-reading; 697. Misunderstanding words of communicators; 642.

Names; Mistakes with proper: 6, 174.

"Obsession"; 679. Evidence for: 9. Ideas on: 693. Secondary Personality and: 9.

Opinion: Change of: on the Smead Case; 668, 669.

Personalities: Changes of: in a sitting; Objection to absence of: 170.

Personality; Primary: Normal consciousness the: 138. Personation; "Subliminal": 339. Phinuit; Dr.: 78, 130, 683.

Piper Case; 670.

and spiritistic theory; 173. used as a standard; 172.

"Possession"; 106. Prince; Morton: 669. Prudens; Chesterfield and: 153.

Rapport; Degrees of: 707, 709. Rathbun; Mrs.: 687. Reflection; Subliminal: 589. Reincarnation; 59.

Scepticism: Temptation to: with regard to the Smead Case; 163. "Scientific" world and telepathy; 159.

Secondary Stimuli; Thoughts operating as: 166. Spirit body; Harrison Clarke on the: 695. Spiritism; Telepathy and: "Choice has to be made between": 157.

Spiritistic theory; 688.

Facts in favor of the: 161. Objections to: 162. Piper Case and: 173.

Spirits; Evil: 679. in Smead Case; 288. Telepathy or: 22. Telepathy versus; 155.

Hyslop; James H.—Continued.

Subconscious:

action; Secondary Personality and: 671. "the instrument of communication"; 7. "the medium of communication"; 670. Fabrication; 144, 680, 686. Imagination; 138. Information; S. "will appropriate casually acquired;" 154. Limitations of the: 707. Memories; 676. Memories "masquerading as spirits"; 6. Mentation; 144. Mentation: Resources of subconscious: 141. Muscular action and automatic writing; S.: 379. Powers of the: Supposed: 129. identified with Secondary Personality; 670. "virtually synonymous with Secondary Personality"; 138.

Subliminal; 444, 640.

action in Smead Case; 347. Action; Origin of Apparition in S.: 307, 339. activity; 644. Adaptability of the S.; Rich: 343. "associations" and communication; 612. Communications in the Smead Case; "S. source of:" 417, 463, 513, 517, 527, 529, 541, 642. Creation; 146. "Deception"; 81, 335. "Elastic capacities" of the: 143. "Exhibition of what the S. can do"; 451. "appropriation of normal experience"; 145. "Fabrication"; 59, 147, 587, 588. "guessing" of Mrs. Smead; 473. Hallucination; 438. Hebrew characters; S. connection with: 535. "imagination"; 576, 676, 681. "Imitate; S. attempting to:" 588. "interpreting the object" of J. H. H.; 622. "lying"; 691. Memory; 456, 551, 555. "Personation"; 339. "reflection"; 589. "simulation" of Imperator Group; 620. of Mrs. Smead; 642. Mrs. Smead's idea of the: 463. "virtually synonymous with Secondary Personality"; 138. "Suspicion; S. attempting to escape:" 213.

Suggestion:

"Post-hypnotic S."; Attempts at: 315, 319. influencing the results in Smead Case; 191, 264.

Supernormal:

Evidence for the: in Smead Case; 174. Idea of the: 152. "knowledge"; 129. acquisition of knowledge; 156.

Hyslop; James H.—Continued.

Telepathy; 137, 139, 155, 202.

versus spirits; 155.

Theories and conclusions; 137.

Verdict on Smead Case nullified by later facts; 175.

Hyslop; Mary: 81, 129, 317, 376, 377, 380, 382, 414, 494, 598, 608.

Annie; 415. Braine; Auntie:

377, 378. Fry; 323, 324, 327.

Frye; 416, 588. Frye; Mary: 416.

George Hall; 416. German; 376.

Germany; 380, 381. Grammar;

Bad: 380. Hall; 415. Harmon;

380. Harmond; 380, 381, 382.

Leipsic; 380, 381. Mary; 322, 331,

415, 588. Music; 376, 380, 381.

Ring; 598, 599. Telegraph operator;

317. Tired; 381. "Vivi amarem amis"; 609. "Vivi amarem amare"; 590. VIVI Mary

Bitter Sweet; 588, 589.

Hyslop; Mary Winifred: 326, 372.

Hyslop; Robert: 129, 314, 338, 341,

492, 493, 494, 495, 540, 555, 591,

601, 602, 605, 606, 615, 622, 648.

Apparition of R. H.; 338, 364.

B. Sw.; 604, 605. *Bitter Sweet*;

495, 556, 557, 601, 603, 605, 606.

Dream about R. H. and Mrs. R.

H.; 660. Name of R. H. upside

down; Vision of: 614. Pass sentence;

80, 82, 557. Password; 479,

495. R. H.; 315, 320. Remember;

479, 493. Remember; 479, 601, 603.

U. D.; 602.

Hyslop; R. H.: 314, 556.

Hysteria; 483, 485.

I. s.; 133.

I. S. D.; 134.

I. s. R.; 133, 595.

I. s. +.; 595.

Ida; 36, 41, 85, 180, 432, 441, 445,

528, 556. Aunt: 570.

"Ida's mother is sick"; 528.

Identity;

Communicator "not to be taken

for a spirit till he can prove his

I."; 122. Personal I.; Proof of:

173.

Ignorance of psychic matters; 684.

Imagination; Resources of the: 49.

"Subconscious": 138. "Subliminal"; 576, 676, 681.

Impatience of sitter stops communication; 278, 293.

Imperator; 131, 132, 133, 134, 153,

306, 502, 508, 529, 583, 586.

Imperator.—Continued.

Advice *re* sittings; 509. Alfred the Great; I. supposed to be: 422, 561. Augustine; Saint: I. supposed to be: 154, 561, 562. Communicator; Attempts to get I. as: 514, 524, 536, 566, 568, 579, 583, 585, 593. Cross; 134, 500, 609. "Hail Imperator;" 585. I. s.; 133. I. S. D.; 134. I. s. R.; 133. Prayer in I. style; 133, 134. Sunday; I. objects to writing on: 502. U. D.; 134, 135, 609.

Imperator Group; 94, 605, 608.

Excuses of the: 551. Memories of I. G. shaken; 623. Smead; Mrs.: I. G. said to have been to: 623.

Impersonation; 680.

Cases of: 134, 136. Secondary Personality and: 154.

Incorrect names; 6, 93, 99, 100, 101, 118, 119, 123, 125, 174, 304, 348, 369, 372, 383.

Incorrect statements; 73, 119, 120, 125, 128, 181, 295, 296, 302.

Indian; Apparition of an: 35.

Interfusion; 711.

Introduction; 11.

"Introspective power; Secondary Personality has no:" 169.

Inverted writing; 17, 59, 72, 195, 231, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365, 537, 632, 633, 652, 653.

Irving; 632.

Isabel; 327.

Italy; 659.

Jack; 107, 112, 397, 447.

James; 318, 323, 324, 373, 375, 416, 492, 540, 588, 601, 603, 606.

"can never get well"; 540. "not well"; 569.

James; E. D.: 116, 348, 349.

Jamie; 432.

Jane; 101, 291.

James; Emily Maude: 87.

James; Maude L.: 15, 16, 39, 83, 156, 161, 271, 272, 281, 308, 370, 685.

Backwards; Using alphabet: 282, 286. Bible; Mrs. James': 308, 312.

Cemetery; 84, 281, 285. Cornwall Hollow; 282, 285. Geometrical

drawings; 308, 309, 310. Geometry; 89, 311. Mutton squash; 84, 281. Pneumonia; 281.

James; Minnie: 84, 281, 308, 311.

James; Mr.: Visit to: 88.

Janes; Mrs.: 271, 281, 308, 311.

Death of: 285.

Janney; 101, 291.

Jeffrey; Mr.: 39.

Jennie; 102, 103, 384, 385, 508.

Jenny (Miller); 362, 467, 468.

Jentian; 392.

Jersey City, N. J.; 280.

Jess; 591.

Jessie; 395, 486.

Jesus; 182, 185, 278.

Birthday present for: 452.

Christ; 257. Vision of the word: upside down; 508.

Jogle; Uncle: 110, 390, 432, 434, 435.

John; 122, 123, 177, 269, 270, 463, 464, 469.

Baby: 108, 109, 413. Cecil: 497.

Clevie; 473. Houston; 389. Uncle: 108, 109, 413.

Johnnie; 486.

Johnson; Fannie: 283, 287.

Johnson; Rev.: 38, 39.

Joie; 93, 373, 374, 560, 629.

Jones; Carrie: 30.

Joseph; 102. Uncle: 432, 434.

Junior League; 455, 456.

Jupiter; 14, 47, 184, 205.

Angels on J. "teach little babies about God"; 192. the babies' heaven; 47, 50, 56, 143, 205. Baby sister on: 192. Map of: 184. People on J. know more than we; 47, 184.

K—; 491.

Kansas City; 278, 377.

Keliher; Mrs.: 97, 160, 351, 685.

Celelee; 98, 351, 352. Clelee; 98, 351. Death of Mrs. K.; 352. Delirium; 352.

Kilner; Dr.: Experiments with the aura; 695.

King; Apparition of Early Christian: 306.

Knife; 496, 497, 581.

Knowledge; Supernormal: 129. Supernormal acquisition of: 156.

L. H.; 516.

L—; 287.

L—; Dr.: 653, 655.

Lamp; Old-fashioned: Vision of an:

513.

"Latin" sentence; Vision of a: 639.

Laura; Aunt: Vision of: 515.

Lawrence; 304, 352, 418, 419, 553.

League; Junior: 455, 456.

Leg; Cramp in: 537.

- Leipsic; 380, 381.
 "Letters"; 528. Vision of: 535.
 Vision of: in a blue light; 508.
 Lettie; 91, 127, 163, 297, 303.
 Life: Cords; Broken: 644. is to be
 fought for; Her: 446.
 Light; 134, 531, 621.
 Ask for: 602. Brain: Mrs.
 Smead saw a L. in her: 477. Blue
 cross with halo of L.; 506. "Hand
 seemed to be all L."; 501, 547. Lit-
 tle L. grows; 625. Restoring of
 the: 644. Semi-circle of bright L.;
 501.
 Lights; Little: 570. W. M. Smead
 sees: 44. Mrs. Smead sees: 40, 41,
 45, 254.
 Lilla; 368.
 Lillian; 372, 373, 430.
 "Little ones love to come;" 590.
 Lizzie; 96.
 Lobdell; Dr.: 635.
 Longfellow; Vision of: 598.
 Lottie; 96.
 Lowell; 98.
 Lowell, Mass.; 351, 352, 538.
 Lowell; Percival: 144, 678.
 Atlantic Monthly; 186. Mars;
 48, 147, 186. Martians; 187.
 Lowell; Rosa: 98, 351.
 Lowell; Rose: 98, 351.
 Lowell; Mrs. Stearn: 98.
Lowell Morning Citizen; 538.
 Lowery; George: 400, 403, 438.
 Lowery; Mary: 634, 635.
 Lowery; Mary Rebecca: 277, 634,
 635.
 Luther; 560.
 "Luther; Martin;" 131, 133, 135, 154,
 498, 499, 561, 567, 572, 585, 595,
 597, 606, 608, 625, 626.
 ASt; 558. AststA; 558. Aug-
 tine; Saint: 569. Augustine; Saint:
 559, 567. Augustinus Aurelius;
 569. "Aurelius; Chesterfield is:"
 569. Austine; 559, 560. Chester-
 field; 570. "Hislop is here"; 569.
 "Hodgson wants butter cheese";
 617, 621. "Hyslop pertinent
 Luther"; 617.
 Lydia; 94.
 "Lying; Subconscious;" 691.

 M.; 313.
 M.; Dr.: 15, 244.
 M. H. H.; 609.
 M—; Mrs.: 37, 346.
 McKinley; Man who looked like:
 512.
 Mabel; 486, 488.
 Madonna and child; Vision of: 505.
 Maine; 381.
 Malden, Mass.; 300, 395, 530.
 Mama; 482.
 Mamie; 414, 417.
 Man; 441.
 Apparition of M. in cellar; 28.
 Drawing of: 425, 426, 562. Vision
 of a: 515.
 Manchester, England; 127.
 Manchester, N. H.; 348.
Manchester Union; 539.
 Mann; Mr. and Mrs.: 28.
 Map:
 of American continent; 190.
 Drawing of: 425, 426. of Jupiter;
 184. of Mars; 48, 185, 188.
 Margaret; Sister: 550.
 Marshall; Elmar Charles: 537.
 Marion; [Marian]; 440.
Marmaduke Multiply; 114, 115, 465,
 466.
 Mars; 184, 191.
 Communications ostensibly from:
 13. Curtains instead of doors on
 M.; 205. Days: Longer: on M.
 than on Earth; 200. Dog House
 Temple; 50, 194. Dress on M.;
 51. Geography of: 144, 185.
 "Gliding" on M.; 199. *Golden
 Rule: The*: Article from: on M.;
 186. Government; Democratic: 52.
 Holden; Professor: on M.; 147.
 Horses: No: on M.; 199. Inhab-
 itants of: 48, 147.
 Lowell; Percival: on M.; 48, 147.
 article on M. in *The Atlantic
 Monthly*; 186.
 Map of: 48, 185, 188, 215. Mar-
 ried men work: Place where the:
 on M.; 209, 222. "Marry; Men
 work in fields before they:" 209.
 Mountain on M.; Drawing of: 203.
 Rulers chosen by the people on M.;
 198. Run on M.; People don't: 50.
 Sawmills: No: on M.; 50, 194.
 Vision of people on M.; 360.
 Water-lilies on M.; Drawing of:
 202. Women: Married: keep their
 own names on M.; 208. Zones on:
 48.
 Marshall; 537.
 Marston; Dr.: 539, 543.
 Marston; Elisha: 538, 543.
 Marston; George H.: 538, 539, 542,
 543.
 Marston; Mary: (Mrs. William
 Heard); 537, 538, 542, 543.

- Marston; Melburn Mary: 537.
 Marston; Westerly: 537.
 Martha; 467.
 Martian:
 Airship; 53, 57, 145, 146, 201, 207, 219, 676. Alphabet; 61. Boat on lake; 194, 195. Canals; 144, 186. Chicken; 56. Chief Ruler; 204. Clock; 53, 200, 218, 676. Clothing; 196.
 Communications; 140, 176.
 and Secondary Personality; 144.
 Curtain; 56, 57, 146, 206, 221. Dress; 199, 217. Dress; Embroidered; 52. Embroidery; 52, 146. Episodes; Th. Flournoy and Mlle. Hélène Smith; 5. Flower; 51. Flower; Drawing of M.: 198. Flowers; 207. Flowers; Water: 54. Foods; 204. Goat cart; 52, 200. Hens; 204. Hieroglyphs; 209. Home of single men; 58. House; 51, 55, 58, 196, 203, 207. House of man Chief Ruler; 206. Language; 145, 146, 209, 223 to 230, 677. Language; Signs in M.: 65. Man; Drawing of M.: 195, 196.
 Man Chief Ruler; 195.
 House of: 206. Palace of: 206.
 Map; 15, 215. Map of Martian zones; 144. Mountain; 54. Observatory; 54, 55, 203. Palace; 56, 206, 220. Ruler; Chief: 195, 204, 206. Serpent; Drawing of M.: 196. Ship; 50, 192, 193. Ships "made of trees"; 193. Signs in M. language; 65. Single men; Home of: 58. Tower; 57. Vase; 207. Veil; 58, 146, 207. Words; 62. Zones; Map of M.: 144.
 Martians "like Indians"; 144.
 Martin; 570.
 Martin; A. B.: 664.
 Mary; 101, 102, 291, 299, 302, 322, 331, 362, 365, 385, 398, 405, 406, 415, 458, 467, 468, 481, 588, 592, 597, 598, 600.
 Sister: 574. Sister to: 458, 467.
 Mary Ellen; Aunt: 277.
 Mason; Master: 96, 97, 300.
 Maud; 408.
 Maude; 96, 299, 486.
 (Smead); 96, 113, 117, 191, 413, 432, 437, 455, 457, 473, 475, 564, 587.
 Maxwell; 660.
 Maxwellton's Banks; 660.
 May Eva; 413.
 Medford; 99, 100, 469, 470.
 Medford Hillside; 471, 472.
 Medford; West: 99, 100, 469, 470, 471, 472.
 Medium:
 in B—; 421. Soul of: "between heaven and earth"; 117, 452, 701.
 Mediumship; Secondary Personality and: Borderland stage between; 668.
 Memories;
 Difficulty in recalling: 239. Subconscious: 676. Subconscious: "masquerading as spirits"; 6.
 Memory; 456.
 Subliminal: 456, 551, 555.
 Memphis, Tenn.; 128, 436.
 Men in robes; Vision of two: 615.
 Mentation; "Resources" of subconscious: 141.
 Merchant; Mrs.: 294, 295, 296.
 Merrill; George: 122, 123, 463.
 Merrimac River; 538.
 Messer's crossing; 304.
 Methuen, Mass.; 374, 627.
 Millbury, Mass.; 301.
 Miller; 161.
 Miller; Betsey Jane: 102, 290, 291.
 Mother of: 291.
 Miller; Frank W.: 101, 291, 357, 362, 365, 384, 398, 406.
 Confused by trying to remember incidents; 104. Mary; 101, 102, 291, 362, 365, 385, 398, 405, 406.
 Miller; Jennie: 102.
 Miller; Mrs. Frank W.: 101, 130, 291, 357, 361, 362, 365, 370, 384, 385, 398, 404, 412, 414.
 Uncle George: 156.
 Miller; George: 367. Jennie: 102, 103, 357, 404. Jenny: 467, 468. J. L.: 384. Laura: 467, 468. May Eva: 101, 102, 103, 291, 357, 361, 362, 365, 366, 370, 384, 385, 398, 414.
 Ouija Board; 105, 406.
 Miller; Minnie: 378.
 Miller; Dr. W. O.: 377, 379.
 Emporia, Kan.; 379. Kansas City; 377. Miller; W. S.: 378.
 Minister; 378.
 Mill; 364.
 Mind;
 Rest of: 547. "Subconscious": Chesterfield as Mrs. Smead's: 626. "Unconscious": 237.
 Mind-reading; 81, 82, 83, 697.

- Minerva; 282.
 Mines; 342, 436.
 Man killed in the: 128, 436.
 Minnie; 84, 281, 308, 311, 370, 378.
 Mirror writing; 17, 25, 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357, 632.
 Backward M. W.; 237. Inverted M. A. W.; 510, 633, 653.
 Missions; 116, 348, 349.
 Mittens; 109, 430, 431.
 Mollie; 630.
 Montreal; 275.
 Moons; 423.
 Moore; Mr.: 36.
 Morse; 161, 156.
 Morse; George H.: 16, 96, 685.
 Baptist Church; Fourth: 96, 97, 299, 300. Death of: 96, 97, 299, 300. Dudley; 96, 97. Dudley; Lizzie: 299, 301, 302. Dudley; Lottie: 96, 300, 301, 302. Mary (Morse); 299, 302. Mason; Master: 96, 97, 300. Paralysis; 97. Pneumonia; 96, 97. Prophecy of death of wife; 96, 299.
 Morse; Mary: 96, 97, 156, 299, 302.
 Moses; 624.
 Episcopalian: 575.
 Moses; W. Stainton: 133, 563, 575, 585, 594, 597.
 Episcopalian Friend supposed to be W. S. M.; 645. "Imperator! Hail:" 585. Rector asked if he is W. S. M.; 597.
 Mother; 373, 630, 656.
 Mother Goose; 114.
Mother Goose Rhymes; 115, 465, 466.
 Mountains; Drawing of: 294.
 Movement of box; 30.
 Murch; Josie: 294, 296.
 Muscular action: "Subconscious": and "Automatic" Writing; 379.
 Music; 376, 380, 381.
 Musical:
 Sounds heard by Mrs. Smead; 37, 38. Staff; Drawing of: 478.
 Mutton-squash; 84, 281.
 Myer; 135.
 MYERS; 135.
 Myers; 619, 620.
 Friend: 638. Vision of name: 616.
 Myers; F. W. H.: 606, 607, 638.
 Dream about F. W. H. M.; 619.
 Episcopalian Friend called F. W. H. M.; 642, 645. Message to R. Hodgson; J. H. Hyslop asks F. W. H. M. to take: 618. Name; Vision of: 616.
 N.; 314.
 Name:
 of Chesterfield; W. M. Smead asks for N.: 592. Rector's concealment of his: 597. upside down; 614.
 Names; Incorrect: 6, 93, 99, 100, 304.
 Nannie; 515.
 Nashua; 425.
 Neck; Pain in: 563, 602.
 Nest; Drawing of bird in: 461.
 Nettie; 35, 42, 441.
 (Robertson); 402. (Smead); 491, 533. Aunt: 528.
 Neuralgia; 610.
 New Britain; 284, 288.
 New Haven; 85, 281, 286.
 New York; 72, 92, 109, 122, 416, 425, 426, 430, 431, 433, 462.
New York Herald; 12, 72, 73, 233, 259.
 Nicolls; Ida: 163, 297.
 Night pants; 109, 430, 431.
 Numbness; 504, 525, 534.
 of hand; 522.
 Observatory; Martian: 55.
 Obsession; 679.
 Evidence for: 9. J. H. Hyslop's ideas of: 693. "Secondary Personality" and: 9.
 Oliver (Brown); 294, 297.
 Organism; Communicators using different parts of the: 117.
 Orient; 659.
 Ouija Board; 105, 406, 414, 417, 586, 587, 593.
 P. B. S.; 569.
 P—; 15, 425, 427, 440, 478, 587.
 Pain:
 in head; 656. in neck; 602. in neck and side; 563.
 Papa dadie; 407, 411.
 Papers; 657, 658.
 Paralysis; 95, 97.
 Pass Sentence; 80, 82, 158, 321, 325, 328, 329, 331, 335, 557.
 Password; 479, 495, 588.
 Patterson; John: 177.
 Pease; Guy M.: 128, 428.
 Pencil; 114, 438, 455, 456.
 Penuines; Mr.: 407.
 Pere; 348.
 Perkins; F. J.: 632, 633.
 Perkins; Mr.: 350, 659, 660.
 Noted for being tired; 659.

- Personality; Play of; Dramatic: 162, 173, 456. Primary; Normal consciousness: 138.
 Personation; "Subliminal": 339.
 Philadelphia; 238, 425, 426.
 Philbrick; 577, 578.
 Pinuit; Dr.: 78, 130, 683.
 on hypnotism; 693.
 Picture; 438, 657, 658.
 Piper Case; 670.
 Spiritistic theory and the P. C.; 173. Standard; P. C. used as a: 172.
 Piper; Mrs.: 5, 134, 422, 498.
 Chesterfield does not wish Mrs. Smead to see: 597. Comparison with phenomena of: 605. Luther: Martin: undertakes to carry message to: 614. Prejudice of: 686. Smead: Cecil: asked by W. M. Smead to go to P.; 473. Subliminal prejudices of P.; 160. Thought-transference; 159.
 Piper Report; J. H. Hyslop's: 551.
 Planchette; 373, 597.
 Clarke; Harrison: P. used after banishment of: 262, 265. Fatigue; P. used to lessen: 11. Use of the P.; 23, 394. Use of the P.; Early: 13, 14, 24, 692. Use of the P.; First: 30. Writing; Illustrations of P.: 548, 549.
 Planets; Visiting other: 182.
 Plants; Drawing of: 294.
 Plato; 151, 344, 346.
 Pleasant Plaice; 441.
 Plummer; Mr.: 407.
 Pneumonia; 96, 97, 281, 296.
 Pocket-book; 108, 411, 412, 455, 657.
 Vision of a: 657.
 Pollard; Ann: 483. A. E.: 489.
 Mary Alice: 124, 483. Mary E.: 480, 482, 483. Mary; 481. Somers, Conn.; 481, 482, 483. Somersworth, Conn.; 481, 482, 483.
 Porter; John Solomon: 659.
 Austria: 660. Bank; 660. Chal-daic; 659, 660. Chal-deak; 660. Charle...; 659. Cheleseak; 659.
 Portland, Me.; 273.
 Position of psychic; Directions for: 248.
 Possession; 106.
 Potter; Ella: 122, 123, 463, 464.
 Potter; Herbert: 122, 123, 462, 464.
 Prague; 660.
 Prairie-wagon; Vision of a: 567.
 Pratt; Clara: 100, 470, 472, 473.
 Pratt; Frank: 471.
 Pratt; George: 100.
 George Franklin: 472.
 Pratt; John: 469, 472.
 Austins; The: 100, 470, 471, 474. Cooper; J.: 99, 469, 471, 472, 474. Hill Street; 99, 469, 470. Medford; 99, 469, 470. Medford; West: 99, 100, 469, 470, 471, 472. Pumping Station; 469, 471, 472, 473.
 Pratt; Sarah: 471.
 Pray to Imperator; W. M. Smead told to: 559.
 Prayer; 133, 134, 153, 354, 523, 533, 548, 568, 569, 571, 577, 592, 597, 598, 611.
 Preach; 459, 552, 553.
 Precocity of children in Spirit World; 143.
 Prentice; Paul: kicked by horse; 520.
 Prince; Morton: 169, 669.
 Prophecies; 96, 180, 299, 425.
 Prudens; 80, 335, 336.
 Chesterfield and; 153. Chesterfield says he is: 593. Chesterfield says he is not; 624. Smead: Mrs.: Light of: "not from the other world"; 81. "Subliminal deception"; 81. Thought-transference; 81, 82.
Psychology of Suggestion; The: by Boris Sidis; 169.
 Questions; Absurd: asked by sitters; 457, 564, 579, 587, 596.
 Quint Quintana; 639, 640.
 R.; 313, 314, 619.
 R. H.; 315, 320.
 R. W. S.; 85.
 R. W. Z.; 282.
 R—; Alphonso: 31, 32. John Houston; 31. Mr.: 33. Susan A.: 31.
 Railroad; 127, 297.
 Rand; Mr.: 105. Mrs. Carrie: 405. Mrs. Catherine F.; 406.
 Rapport; 707, 709.
 Raps; 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 43, 402, 420, 594.
 Rashness of sitter endangers the psychic; 584.
 Rathbun; Mrs.: 687.
 Rector; 133, 335, 336, 337, 597, 621.
 Moses; W. Stainton: R. asked if he is: 597. Name; W. M. Smead asks R. why he conceals his: 624. Smead; Mrs. W. M.: a "so-

- Rector.—*Continued.*
 called "Light"; 80. Light of: not from the other world; 81. Strictness of R. on: 80.
 Subliminal deception; 81.
 Thought-transference; 81, 82.
 U. D.; 622.
 Rector; Episcopalian: 594, 596, 597.
 Regiment;
 New York: 241, 245, 246. Vision of a: 76.
 Reincarnation; 59.
 Rember; 332, 479, 493, 501.
 Rembers; 587.
 Remember; 479, 578, 601, 603.
 Reproofs administered by communicators; 248.
 Rest; 558, 568.
 Get the: 554. Head: 554. Psychic's need of: 544, 547, 549, 556, 557, 568, 609, 648.
 Revere Beach; 127, 340, 440.
 Reynolds; Levis: 281. Lewis: 85, 281, 285.
 Ridicule ideas of J. H. Hyslop; Communicators: 24, 74, 90, 91, 92, 261, 265, 267, 292, 304.
 Ring; 108, 114, 461, 598, 599.
 Drawing of hand with: 411, 412, 461, 579.
 Riversmith; Henry: 275.
 See *Smith*.
 Robbie; 550.
 Robbin; 552.
 Rubena; 270.
 Robert; 351. Friend: 569.
 Roberts; Mr.: 92, 155, 304, 305.
 Robertson; Alphonso: 269, 270, 277.
 Bertha: 610, 611. George S.: 343.
 John: 269, 270. John Houston: 31, 32, 389, 596. (H. C. J.) John W.: 519. Miss: 96, 124, 299. Mr.: Senior: 33. Mrs.: 515. Nannie: 515. Vision of Mrs. R.: 515. Nettie: 395, 402. Washington: 270.
 Robinson; Mr.: 471, 472. Nettie: 395.
 Rockwell; Brother: 467, 469.
 Rockwell; Frank: 120, 467.
 Rogers; John: 156, 278, 280.
 Rome; 659.
 Ropes; Apparition of men throwing: 387, 390, 414.
 Rose; 177.
 Roslindale, Mass.; 127, 297.
 Ross; John: 564.
 Rossiter; 344, 346.
 Rosstor; 344, 346.
 Rowers; John: 279, 280.
 Rubena; 486.
 Rubie; 205.
 Rubie Ruth; 192, 193, 452.
 Russell; 97, 351. Billy: 94, 269, 270, 422. Henry: 113, 452, 453, 564.
 Lewis: 564, 565. Mrs.: 86, 87, 283, 284, 287, 288. Robert: 98, 160, 351, 352.
 Ruth; 486.
 S.; 609. Dr.: 633. Jessie: 395.
 S. C.; 282.
 S. I. S.; 517.
 S. R.; 527.
 S—; 15, 271, 273, 352.
 Sa—; 191.
 Sabina; 280.
 Saco, Me.; 273, 274.
 Sadie; 508. Aunt: 571.
 St. John; Dr.: 84, 272, 281.
 Samuel; 342.
 Sand; 31, 112, 440.
 Sandwich; 94, 98, 289.
 Sarah; 295, 406, 407, 634, 635. Aunt: Apparition of: 402, 403, 404.
 Saranac Lake; 417, 425, 426.
 Sargent; Evelyn: 93, 155, 165, 304, 305.
 See *Hamel*.
 Sargent; Minnie: 165.
 School; 123.
 Sd—; 15.
 "Second Self" of Mrs. Smead; 90, 91, 92, 292, 304.
 Secondary Personality; 6, 20, 23, 56, 59, 60, 74, 76, 101, 113, 115, 116, 121, 141, 152, 153, 157, 161, 162, 172, 180, 189, 269, 273, 275, 330, 337, 339, 341, 345, 346, 355, 370, 378, 379, 383, 384, 394, 397, 409, 412, 417, 422, 425, 427, 429, 430, 435, 451, 466, 473, 495, 500, 540, 571, 599, 603, 605, 620, 622, 651, 661.
 "Absurd; Frequently:" 77. "Active": 164, 165. Apparitions and: 130. "Capacity" of Mrs. Smead for; 174. in the case; 20. Chest-erfield told he is Mrs. Smead's; 623.
 Clarke; Harrison:
 and S. P.; 267. on S. P.; 74, 261, 265. called a S. P. by J. H. Hyslop; 147, 148, 683, 684. told by J. H. Hyslop that he "had to be treated as the S. P. of Mrs. Smead"; 90. W. M. Smead thought H. C. might be a S. P. of Mrs. Smead; 263.

Secondary Personality.—Continued.

- Communication; S. P. the "instrument" of: 7.
 S. P. "a necessary element in": 171. S. P. the "medium" of: 670.
 Communicators make fun of notions about: 24, 74, 90, 91, 261, 265, 267, 292, 304.
 Definition of: 138. Evidence for: 142, 672. "Evidence of S. P.; Clear:" 383. "Evidence of S. P.; Fine:" 379. "Fabricative": 672, 681, 686, 705. Hyslop; James H. on S. P.; See *Hyslop*. Impersonation and: 154. Inception of: 27. "Introspective power; S. P. has no:" 169. and "Martian" communications; 141, 674, 688. Mediumship; "Borderland stage between" S. P. and: 668. Obsession; S. P. and: 9. "Passive:" 164. "Proof" of S. P.; Absolute: 150, 154. "Reproductive": 672, 681, 686, 705. Ridicule S. P.; The discarnate: 90, 91, 92. "Self-consciousness; S. P. has no:" 169. Smead Case; S. P. in the: 706. Smead; Sylvester I. and S. P.; 155. on S. P.; 24, 90, 91, 292. Smead; W. M.: on S. P.; 47, 56, 296. Subconscious action; S. P. and: 671. Subconscious identified with S. P. by J. H. Hyslop; 670. Subconscious and Subliminal "virtually synonymous with S. P.": 138. "Subterfuge; S. P. a convenient:" 674. Suggestion and S. P.; 164. "Supernormal"; Not: 153. Thought-reading and S. P.; 155. Thought-transference; S. P. and: 131, 136. "Traces" of: 183, 186. Types of: Two: 164, 672. Writing in automatic script as an indication of S. P.; 148.
- Secondary Stimuli; Thoughts operating as: 166.
 "Self; Second:" 90, 91, 92, 292, 304.
 "Self-consciousness; Secondary Personality has no:" 169.
 Serpent; Drawing of: 196.
 Seymore; 127, 349.
 Shaking of hand and head; 521, 524.
 Sheldon; Ruth: 550.
 Sherman; Charles: 643, 652, 653.
 Sherman; General: 73, 243.
 Shiloh; Battle of: 73, 240, 242, 256, 259, 261, 263, 266.
 Ship; 533. Vision of sailing: 612.
 Ships; Vision of: 518.
 Sidis; Boris:
 The Psychology of Suggestion; 169. Secondary Personality "has no self-consciousness or introspective power"; 169.
 Sievers; John C.: 280.
 Sievers; 280, 281.
 Siewers; Sabina: 280.
 Simonds; Daisy: 125, 156, 163, 368, 369.
 Simulation; 534. "Subconscious": 620.
 Sinclair; Mrs.: 471.
 Sister; 486.
 Annie; 629, 632.
 Siveres; 281.
 Siveres; Carrie: 280.
 Slang; American: by "English" communicator; 590, 626.
 Sleep; Soul during: 238.
 Smead; Calvin: 467, 468.
 Smead; Cecil J.: 43, 106, 114, 173, 388, 393, 394, 399, 407, 410, 412, 428, 429, 431, 432, 437, 439, 445, 452, 453, 454, 455, 465, 473, 477, 489, 496, 497, 501, 503, 504, 517, 525, 527, 531, 542, 586.
 Adams; Walter: 564, 565. Apparition of: 111, 444. Ashland; Express to: 109, 430, 431.
 Baby being hatched; 461. Baby John; 108, 109, 413. Ball; Playing: 112, 447, 449. Baseball team; 564, 565. Bena; 113, 571, 650. Bena Maude; 448. "Bill; Tory about:" 466. Bird in nest; Drawing of: 461. Birth of child; Prospective: 114. "Blessed Fish"; 466. Book; 114, 455. Books; 428, 503.
 Bowles; Dr.: 111, 433, 434, 435. Playing ball with: 112.
 Bowles; George; 113, 447. Box; 114, 503. Box; Can talk "easier" when Mrs. Smead holds his: 454.
 Brother; 592.
 Cards and stamps; 411, 412. Children in Spirit World; 448, 449. Chesterfield; 641, 650. Clairvoyance; 387.
 Daily Food; 109, 114, 428, 455, 456. Dark; Fear of the: 115, 475. Darkness; 465. Death of: 105, 385, 387, 389, 433. Desk; 408, 410, 439, 455, 565. Dewey; 110. Dog; 107, 112, 397, 447.
 Drawing:
 of animal in cage; 394. of bird in nest; 461. of hand with

Smead; Cecil J.—*Continued.*

ring; 411, 412, 461. of locomotive; 408. of musical staff; 478. of tubes; 407.

"Duty calls but once"; 641.

Edie; Aunt: 478. Emeries; 112.

Express to Ashland; 109, 430, 431.

Express train; 156.

Fear of the dark; 115. "Fish; Blessed:" 466.

Garland; Dr.: 111, 433, 435.

George (Bowles); 113, 447.

George (Smead); 107, 112, 408, 409, 410, 412, 432, 433, 452, 453, 455, 473, 489, 490, 496, 501, 527, 533, 587, 592, 634, 650.

"is going away"; 447. "wants to come here"; 437, 438. C. S. warns Mrs. Smead of danger of G. S.; 491. C. S. watches over G. S.; 438.

Gla; 490. "Goose Multiply"; 114, 465.

Heaven; 454. Hurt by thinking of disease; 393, 699.

Imperator; 564, 579.

Jack; 107, 112, 397, 447. Jogle; Uncle: 110, 390, 432, 434, 435, 699.

John; Baby: 108, 109, 413. Junior League; 455, 456.

Knife; 497.

Locomotive; Drawing of: 408. Loie; 564.

Marmaduke Multiply; 114, 115, 465, 466. Mars; 565. Mars; Map of: 448.

Maude (Smead); 113, 413, 455, 475, 564, 587.

"is big as me"; 437. "isten"; 473.

Mittens; 109, 430, 431. Mother Goose; 114. *Mother Goose Rhymes*; 115, 465, 466. Musical staff; Drawing of: 478.

Nest; Drawing of bird in: 461. New York; 109, 430, 431, 433.

Night pants; 109, 430, 431.

Pencil; 114, 438, 455, 456. Pocket-book; 108, 411, 412, 455. Puzzle; 408, 409. Puzzle; 107.

Ring; 108, 114, 461. Ropes; Apparition of men throwing: 387, 390, 414. Russell; Henry: 113, 452, 453, 564. Russell; Lewis: 564, 565.

Sand; Selling the: 112, 440. "Sees me lots of times; Mama:" 437, 438.

Smith; George Dewey: 111, 432, 433. Spirit World; Children in:

Smead; Cecil J.—*Continued.*

448, 449. Stainton; 590. Stamp book; 114. Stamps; 454, 456.

Trunk; 107, 156, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412. Tubes; Drawing of: 407.

Uncle Jogle; 110, 390, 432, 434,

435, 699. Uncle Vester; 108, 113,

413, 432, 434, 435, 448, 650.

Valentine; 114, 455, 456. Vester;

Uncle: 108, 113, 413, 432, 434, 435,

448, 650. Vision of C. J. S.; 586,

634, 637, 638. Vision of name of

C. J. S. in blue and gold; 534.

Watch; 109, 114, 428, 429, 455, 456, 587.

Smead; Esther May: 46, 176, 178, 179, 183, 184, 190, 206, 269. Birth

of; 277. "Georgie looks like"; 191.

Smead; George: 15, 36, 40, 104, 106, 107, 112, 126, 408, 409, 410, 412,

432, 440, 444, 465, 473, 478, 486,

488, 489, 490, 491, 496, 501, 527,

533, 551, 587, 592, 634, 650.

Dreams about: 450, 519, 520.

"Ester; Georgie looks like:" 191.

Horse; Dream of G. S. being killed by a: 519, 520. Knife; 496, 497.

Smead; Helen: 489.

Smead; Ida Maude: 15, 46, 106, 113, 114, 117, 143, 173, 176, 177, 184,

190, 237, 269, 413, 444, 454, 455,

457, 475.

America; Map of North and

South: 190. Angels, on Jupiter,

teach little babies about God; 192.

Automatic Writing; Inverted or

backward: 199.

Birth of: 277. Boat on lake;

Martian: 194, 195.

Canals; Martian: 186. Cat's

head; Drawing of: 191. Clock;

Martian: 200. Clothing; Martian:

196. Curtain; Martian: 206.

Devil; 182. Dog House Tem-

ple on Mars; 194.

Drawing:

of cat's head; 191. of flower;

198. of hands; 190. of house;

196. of men; 195, 196. of ser-

pent; 196.

Dress; Martian: 199.

Embroidery; Martian: 199.

Everywhere; Says she is: 182.

Geography of Mars; 185.

House; Drawing of Martian:

196.

Inhabitants of Mars; 48.

Jesus; 182, 185.

Smead; Ida Maude.—*Continued.*

- Jupiter; 47, 184.
 Angels on J. teach little babies about God; 192. the "Babies' Heaven"; 47. Baby sister on: 192. Gone to: 205. Map of: 184. People on J. said to know more than we; 47, 184.
 Man; Drawing of Martian: 195, 196. Man Chief-Ruler; Martian: 195. Map of North and South America; 190. Map of Jupiter; 184. Map of Mars; 48, 185, 188.
 Saw-mills on Mars; No: 194. Serpent; Drawing of: 196. Ships; Martian: 193.
 Temple: Dog House: on Mars; 194.
 Zones on Mars; 48.
 Smead; Joseph: Senior: 271, 291, 342, 489, 510, 527.
 Smead; Mrs. Joseph: 489.
 Smead; J. S.: 526
 Smead; Lucy: 400.
 Smead; Nettie: 491.
 Birth of: 478, 479.
 Smead, Senior; Mr.: 34, 544, 546, 557, 558, 560, 608.
 Smead; Ruth: 497, 511.
 Smead; Samuel: 401.
 Smead; Sylvester I.: 13, 46, 47, 90, 101, 105, 110, 117, 165, 173, 177, 184, 253, 269, 277, 303, 342, 373, 389, 405, 413, 467, 498, 517, 526, 544, 545, 569, 638, 650.
 Angels teach the little ones; 276.
 Augustine; 560.
 Billy; 89, 445, 457, 498, 552, 554, 558, 608, 627, 632.
 "Bird"; 90.
 Drawing of a: 292.
 Bitter Sweet; 556, 557. Bottles; 558, 560.
 Chesterfield; Asked about: 629. Chesterfield calls S. I. S. Mrs. Smead's subliminal; 583. Christ 276.
 Death of: 89, 92. Drawing of man; 632. Drawing of map; 425, 426.
 Evelyn; 92.
 Faith in God; 548.
 Grave of; 156, 373, 374. Grimes; 628, 629. Gunny bread; 629.
 Hamel; Evelyn: 93. Hell; 276.
 Hyslop; J. H.
 to die in New York City; 426, 427. Objects to: 390.

Smead; Sylvester I.—*Continued.*

- Light "hurt" by bottle of smelling salts; 426, 427.
 Mars; Gone to: 183.
 Sargent; Evelyn: 93. "Second self"; Ida's: 90, 91, 292, 304.
 Secondary Personality; 24, 90, 91, 92, 155, 292, 304.
 Smead; William Calvin: 277.
 Smead; Willis: 15, 46, 89, 176, 184, 190, 269, 531.
 Smead; W. M.:
 Alfred the Great; 424. Apparition; Seeing through an: 41. Chesterfield; 593, 623, 626, 650. Chronic trouble; 591.
 Clarke; Harrison: 90, 256, 260, 262, 266.
 Fabrication; subliminal; 580.
 Lights seen by; 44.
 Moses; W. Stainton: 597.
 Prayer at sittings; 354, 523, 533.
 Promise to Harrison Clarke broken by S.; 256. Prudens; 593.
 "Secondary Personality"; 47, 56, 296, 346, 355, 422, 623.
 Soul called "subliminal" by W. M. S.; 582. "Subconscious mind"; 626.
 "Unconscious mind"; Working of the: 506. Work of: on the case; 26.
 Smead; Mrs. W. M.:
 Anesthesia; 22, 25, 128. Apparition; Cases of: 28, 33, 34, 35, 38, 41, 42, 111, 126, 132, 151, 156, 166, 364. Arithmetic done psychically; 33. Aunt; Apparition of: 126, 156.
 Automatic Writing:
 Harrison Clarke developed Mrs. S. in: 90. always continuous; 16. Trance during: 19.
 Auto-suggestion; 77. Blue lights seen by S.; 254. Brain; Saw a light in her: 477. "Brain; Soul looking through the:" 477. Character of: 18.
 Clairvoyance; 254.
 Arithmetic and: 33. Spelling and: 33.
 Clairvoyant at seven or eight years; 24, 28.
 Clarke; Harrison:
 Apparitions: 166. developed Mrs. S. in automatic writing; 90. Result of banishing: 90, 262, 265. called a "Secondary Personality" of S.: 90, 147, 148.

Smead; Mrs. W. M.—*Continued.*

Conscious; Not: of contents of communications; 25. Cross; Apparitions of the: 132, 133. Cross Reference; Experiments for: 128, 134, 135.

Dream of black cloud and wreath of black roses touching George Smead; 450.

Footsteps; Sound of: heard by: 39. French; Ignorant of: 347. Geometry; Ignorance of: 89, 311. "Greek words" seen by: 560. Hallucinations: 43. Head; Snapping in: 534, 559, 600, 620. Imperator; Meaning of: S. did not know: 307. Imperator; Vision of: 166.

Lights:
Seen by S.; 40, 41, 45, 254. "went away; All L.:" 567.

Mars; Vision of people on: 360. Mirror writing; 25. Numbness; 534. Piper Case; Comparison of "trance personalities" with those of: 620.

Planchette; 11, 13, 14, 23, 24, 30, 262, 265, 692. Raps; 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 43. Rector on mediumship of: 80. Regiment; Vision of: 76. Rember; 332. Rest; Need of: 544, 547, 549, 556, 568. "Second self" of S.; 90, 92, 292, 304. Secondary Personality; 82, 101. Snapping of head; 534, 559, 600, 620. Soul of S. during trance; 254. Spelling; Incorrect: 151. Subliminal deception; 81. Subliminal; Views of Mrs. S. on the: 463. Suffering when regaining consciousness; 293. Trance; 244, 246, 254. Visions; See *Vision*. Voices heard by: 37.

Smelling salts; 426, 427.

Smith; Carrie: 273. General C. F.: 73, 243, 266. George: 110. George Dewey: 111, 432, 433. Grandma: 269. Hélène: 20, 59, 72, 78, 203. Martian observatory; 55. Mrs. B. F.: 429, 430. Henry: 127, 273, 274, 275, 422. Henry, Jr.: 273. Mr.: 284. Mrs.: 111, 421, 433. Mrs. B. F.: 429, 430. Solomon: 284, 288.

Snapping of head; 534, 559, 600, 620. Soldier; 646.

Apparition of a: 379. Soldiers; Vision of: 359. Somers, Conn.; 123, 481, 482, 483. Somersville, Conn.; 123.

Somersworth, Conn.; 123, 481, 482, 483.

Soul; 582.

Body; Removing the S. from the: 598. "Brain; S. looking through the:" 477. Harrison Clarke on the: 694. "Higher; Taking her soul up:" 610, 702. Location of the: 694, 695. Never rests; 237. during sleep; 238. called "subliminal" by W. M. Smead; 582. "Talk to the:" 582. Trance; S. of psychic during: 254.

Souls; Two: 152.

South Boston; 32, 96, 300.

South Hadley, Mass.; 86, 87, 284, 288.

South Side; 535.

Southington, Conn.; 483.

Sparling; Robena: 113.

Spelling:

Backwards; 235. Psychic: 33. of Mrs. Smead; 151.

Spirit:

body; 451, 695. leaving the body; 257. Cecil J. Smead sees a: just before death; 387, 414. in white robe; Vision of a: 648.

Spirit Teachings; by W. Stainton Moses; 551.

Spirit World;

Body in: 253. Children in the: 448, 449.

Spiritistic Theory; 688.

Facts in favor of the: 161. Objections to: 162. Piper Case and: 173.

Spirits;

Earth: 702, 703. Earthbound; 689. Evil: 679. with letter; 529. Rest needed by: 451. Smead Case; S. in the: 288. Telepathy or S.; 22. Telepathy *versus* S.; 155. Tricky: 680. Unconscious; Some S. as though: 451.

Stainton; 576, 590.

Stamps; 454, 456.

Cards and: 411, 412.

Stanley; Charlie: 119, 121, 459, 461.

Stanton; 133, 575.

Star; Vision of a: 500, 514.

Stars; Silver: 411. Vision of: 648.

Stearn; Mrs.: 351.

Stearns; 98, 160, 351, 352.

Stearns Manufacturing Co.; 99, 352.

Steele; Mrs.: 178, 179.

Steimes; 488.

Stella; 118, 120, 458, 460.

Stevens; Henry: 94, 422. Hester: 526. Judge: 304.

Stilenburger; Mr.: 478.

Stilliam; 488.

Stillwell; 436.

Stimes; Rebecca: 128, 488.

Subconscious;

Automatic Writing; S. muscular action and: 379. Communication; S. "the instrument of:" 7. Communication; S. "the medium of:" 670. Fabrication; 680, 686. Imagination; Subconscious: 138. Information; S. will appropriate casually acquired: 154. "Limitations of the S.": 707. Memories; 676. Memories "masquerading as spirits"; 6. Mentation; Resources of subconscious: 141. Mind; Chesterfield as Mrs. Smead's S.: 626. Muscular action and automatic writing; S.: 379. Powers of the S.; Supposed: 129. Secondary Personality and S. action; 671. Secondary Personality identified with S. by J. H. Hyslop; 670. Secondary Personality; S. "virtually synonymous with:" 138.

"Self; Subconscious:" 235.

Harrison Clarke denies existence of the: 236. W. M. Smead asks Mary Hyslop if she is Mrs. Smead's S. S.: 416.

Subliminal; 640, 586.

Action in Smead Case; 347. Activity; 644. "Adaptability" of the S.: 343. Apparitions due to "S. action"; 307, 339. Associations and communication; S.: 612. Chesterfield calls S. I. Smead Mrs. Smead's S.; 583. Communications; S. source of: 417, 463, 513, 517, 527, 529, 541, 642. Communicators make fun of notions about the S.; 462. Deception; 81, 335. "Defence" made by "S." of Mrs. Smead; 627. "Exhibition of what the S. can do"; 451. Experience; S. appropriation of normal: 145. Fabrication; 59, 147, 580, 587, 588. Hallucination; 438. Heard: Mary: called Mrs. Smead's "subliminal"; 542. Hebrew characters; S. connection with: 535. Imagination; 576, 676, 681. Imitate; S. attempting to: 588. "Lying"; 691. Memory; 456, 551, 555. Personation; 339. Unknown communicator wishes he were Mrs. Smead's S. for a while; 443.

Suffering when regaining consciousness; 293.

Suggestion:

"Post-hypnotic S.": Attempts at: 315, 319. Results influenced by S. in Smead Case; 191, 264. Secondary Personality and: 164.

Summary; General: 11.

Sunday; "Imperator" objects to writing on: 502.

Supernormal:

Evidence for the S. in Smead Case; 174. Idea of the S.; 152. "Secondary Personality; not:" 153.

Sweden; 364.

Sylvester; 342, 569, 638.

Sympathy; Psychic: Suffering through: 91.

T.; 348, 609.

T—; 37, 40, 272, 283, 287.

T—; Dr. A. H.: 646, 648, 649, 652, 657, 661, 663.

Battle of Williamsburg, Va.; 647.

Dollar; Mexican: 651.

T—; Dr. A. H.: Brother of: 652, 661, 664.

Body of: 657. Canteen; Drawing of: 661. Death of: 658. Drawing of "map" of Battle of Williamsburg; 661, 664. Papers; 657, 658. Picture; 657, 658. Pocket-book; 657. "Taps"; 662. Tired; 657, 662. Under the tree; 657, 663. Whipple; William: 663. Yankee Doodle; 664. Thompson; Miss: 127, 163, 340.

Revere Beach; 340. Thomas; 340.

T—; (Mrs.) Annie L.: 632.

Talking:

interfering with communication; 385. Sitter reproved for: too much; 594.

Taps; 662.

Taylor; Dr. Graham: 659, 660.

Taylor; John: 120, 123, 467.

Te; 348.

Teacher; 308, 312, 368, 378.

Telegraph:

clicking; 541. operator; 317.

Telepathy; 137, 139, 155, 157, 159, 202, 307. Mind-reading confused with: 697. Spirits or T.; 22.

Telephone; 352.

Tennessee; 436.

Th—; 85, 272, 282.

Theo; 348.

- Thomas; 340.
 Thomas Henry; 426.
 Thompson; Miss: 127, 163.
 Thompson-Gifford Case; 687, 690.
 Thought-reading; 93, 96, 97, 119, 155.
 Thought-transference; 81, 82, 83, 97, 119, 131, 157, 165, 202, 306, 336.
 Piper communicator and; 159.
 Rector on: 82. Secondary Personality and; 131, 136, 296. Thoughts operating as "secondary stimuli"; 166.
 Thurston; Mrs.: 28.
 Tick-tack; 92, 155, 304.
 Tiger; 394.
 Time; Inability of communicators to measure; 161, 442.
 Tired; 381, 657, 662.
 Psychic too: 550.
 Tokens; 652.
 Toys; 503.
 Train; 453.
 of cars and engine; 31. Express: 156.
 Trance; 244, 246, 701.
 Hypnotic state and: 117, 452, 457.
 Psychic not in; during some communications: 117, 451. Soul of psychic during: 254, 701.
 Trunk; 107, 156, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412.
 Tubes; Drawing of: 407.
 U. D.; 134, 135, 153, 600, 602, 609, 610, 614, 622, 623.
 Uncle:
 Frank; 413. Jogle; 110, 390, 432, 434, 435, 699. John; 432, 434. Joseph; 432, 434. Vester; 108, 113, 413, 432, 434, 435, 448, 650. Willis; 570.
 "Unconscious mind"; 237, 506.
 Unconscious after death; 700, 701.
 Undertaker; 282, 286.
 Unknown; *The*: by C. Flammarion; 15.
 Unknown Friend; 116, 189, 441, 446, 449, 451, 456, 458, 462, 463.
 Appointments; Communicators keeping: 442, 443. Arm of psychic: Use of: by communicators; 451, 464. Arrow and heart; Drawing of: 456. Boston; 122, 123, 441, 462.
 "Brain; Some use the:" 451, 464.
 Candlin; Mr.: 463, 464. Candlin; Rev. Joseph; 122, 123, 124. Childs; Fred; 122, 123, 462, 464. Communicate; Some cannot: 118. Communication; Methods of: 117.
 Hypnotic state; Trance and: 117, 452, 457. Medium between heaven and earth; Soul of: 117, 452. Organism; Communicators using different parts of the: 117. Spirit body; 451. Spirits as though unconscious; Some: 451. Subliminal self; Never found a: 443. Subliminal: Mrs. Smead's: wishes he were: for a while; 443. "Time: Don't have: as you do"; 442.
 Trance: and hypnotic state; 117, 452, 457. Medium not in T. during communication; 117. "She is not in a T."; 451.
 Urmenian; 536.
 Valentine; 114, 455, 456.
 Vertical Automatic Writing with planchette; 436.
 Vester; 47, 108, 113, 183, 413, 432, 434, 435, 448, 650.
 Vet; 42.
 Vision;
 Apparition or V.; 306. Arm-chair; V. of: 567. Aunt Laura; 515. Bed; person in: 611. Beetle; 519, 526. Boy in white nightgown; 526. Building; cross on large: 522. Cemetery; 522. Child; 386. Christ; face of: 612. City; 648. Communicators; would-be: 502. Cross; 506, 511, 513, 514, 517, 523, 525, 535, 567, 568, 586, 591, 609, 610, 620. Cross on large building; 522. Cross; Greek: in yellow light: 500. Crown; 612. Dickens; Charles: 598. Dream V. of Mrs. J. H. Hyslop; 589. Face; 504. Face on pillow; 508. Faces; Hideous: 575. Garter; 645. Grave; 522. Hall; a beautiful: 386. "Hebrew" letter; 567. Humming-bird: 519, 526. Hyslop; Mrs. J. H.: Dream; 589. Hyslop; the word: 567. Hyslop; Robert: name of: upside down; 614. Jesus; Word: upside down; 508. Lady; face of: 666. Lamp; Old-fashioned: 513. "Latin" sentence; 639. "Letters"; 535. Letters in a blue light; 508. Longfellow; 598. Madonna and child; 535. Man; 515. Man: in Prince Albert coat; 606. Men in robes; two: 615. Myers; name: 616. Pocket-book; 657. Prairie-wagon; 567. Regiment; 76, 682. Robertson; Mrs.: 515. Rocks; lonely soul on: 518. Room; Peculiar: 513.

Vision.—*Continued.*

- Roses; 538. S. A. P.; 568. Ship; sailing; 612. Ships; 518. Spirit in white robe; 648. Star; 500, 514. Stars; 648. Stickney or Strickly; the word; 567. V; V. of a; 567. Woman: Dark: lying on couch; 511. Woman with hair in net; 612. 1871; figures: 666.
- Visions; 14.
- Vivi; 588, 589, 590, 609.
- Voices heard by Mrs. Smead; 37.
- W—; Eudora I.: 31. N. H.; 491.
- Wahrhibive; 294.
- Wallace; Brigadier-General Lew; 73, 241, 243, 261, 266.
- Waltham, Mass.: 484.
- Warfield; 350.
- Warning of danger; 491.
- Watch; 109, 114, 428, 429, 455, 456, 587.
- Water; Finding; 95, 289.
- Waterbury, Conn.: 486, 487.
- Watkins; Grandmother: 278.
- Watkins; Mary Jane: 124, 125, 270.
- Webster; Mary Ellen: 124, 125, 277.
- Weir; Charles N.: 150, 345, 346.
- Weis; 338. Charles N.: 150, 345, 347.
- Wesley; John: 610.
- West Medford; 99, 100, 469, 470, 471, 474.
- Westerly; 537.
- Wheeler; Lilia: (Lila); 270, 271.
- Whipple; William: 663.
- White; 125, 369.
- White; Eva: 125, 156, 368, 369.
- Whitney; Mary H.: 415.
- Willett; Miss: 125.
- William; Chesterfield: 594.
- William; Little: 542.
- William; Uncle: 512.
- Williams; Elizabeth D.: 574.
- Williams; William: 575.
- Williamsburg; Battle of: 661, 664.
- Willis; 191, 452, 531.
- Wilson; A. G.: 283, 287.
- Wilson; D. C.: 283, 287.
- Wilson; Mary: 87, 156, 308, 312.
- Wilson; Mrs.: 282, 286.
- Winnie; 270.
- Wires; 352.
- Woman:
- Dark: lying on a couch; Vision of a: 511. Drawing of: wearing "Napoleon" hat; 523. with hair in net; Vision of a: 612. with large full-fashioned shirt; 254.
- Worcester; 125.
- Worcester; 369.
- Writing; Comparison of: 557. difficult at times; 456. Sitter asked if he hears the W.; 103, 362, 568, 604, 618. Inverted: 59, 72, 231, 232, 233, 234, 243, 244, 245, 247, 258, 353, 364, 365, 632. Mirror: 72, 74, 233, 234, 236, 237, 238, 241, 255, 353, 357, 632. Mirror: Inverted: 510, 653. Secondary Personality and: 148. On table-cloth; Mrs. Smead sees W.: 541.
- X.; James Eugene: 125, 277, 278, 279.
- X.; Mr.: 377.
- X.; Mrs.: 15.
- X.; Mrs. J. E.: 420.
- X.; Professor: 13, 15, 18, 125, 232, 233, 237, 244, 258, 296, 356, 364, 370, 377, 379, 385, 444, 445.
- Experiments with Mrs. Smead; 202. "Intrusion" of X.; 379. Subconscious; 694. Thought-transference; Attempts at: 202.
- Xi; 506, 508.
- Zeitgeist*; 675.
- Zion's Herald*; 406.

